

The Cronicles of Englonde with the debes of popes and emperours and also the description of Englonde.





Table

There begynneth a booke which sheweth
Cable, in to sheweth the names of
man shall please by to see the best booke.

Folio. i.

The Prologue. *Book of the*
Folio. ii.

The Worke of the first. *by the*

Joan the first man.

Eua the first woman.

Seth son to Joan.

Deboia syber to Abel.

Abel son to Joan.

Cain and Calumna syber and wyfe

to Cain.

Enos.

Chanam.

Galathei / Jarrah / Enoch of the lyne

of Chyrt.

Parusale / Lemeth of Chyrt's lyne.

Folio. iij.

Enoch the first graue.

Jabe founde the first paupyr.

Juball founde the first scale to playe

upon instruments.

Armoa founde first wrupage.

Joe the wyffe the ravenome.

Cham / Ben / and Japhet first founde.

Japhet and his chylde.

Chus and his chylde.

Shale and his son.

Enos and his chylde.

Folio. iij.

Phaleg.

Tacen / Benmor / and Benmor

the buylders of the Tower of Babel.

How gentylmen began.

How of Chyrt's lyne.

Belus kyng of Babilon.

Amus kyng of Babilon.

Folio. ii.

Cham of the lyne of Chyrt.

There begynneth the booke of the

Parryshed.

Folio. b.

Abraham and his brethren's booke
progeny.

Abrahams wyfe.

Belchisdech kyng of Babilon.

Memicanis kyng of Babilon.

Amus kyng of Babilon.

Armus kyng of Babilon.

Place of the lyne of Chyrt / and of his
wyfe and his son.

Of Comorra / and of the wyfe of Loth.

Jacob of the lyne of Chyrt / and of his
wyfe and progeny.

Exley kyng of Babilon.

Armaucire was kyng after hym.

Belorus kyng of Babilon.

Enochus the first kyng of Syer.

Phemimus was kyng after hym.

Judas of the lyne of Chyrt.

Folio. iii.

Belus kyng of Babilon.

Armus an ghyngyng.

Arapis kyng of Syer.

Armus kyng of Syer.

Omogires put first open to the plough.

Belus kyng of Babilon.

Pharao kyng of Egypt.

Amus kyng of Babilon.

Pharao kyng of Egypt.

Armus of Chyrt's lyne.

Job the holy man.

Armus the judge of Israel.

Jaron the byshop.

Armus kyng of Babilon.

Cycrops kyng of Athens.

Amus kyng of Chyrt's lyne.

Armus the first judge.

Jaron the first byshop.

Pharao kyng of Egypt.

Armus line to Amus.

Armus the judge of the land of Egypt.

Armus of the lyne of Chyrt.

Jaron the byshop.

11

Tabula.

Daniel kynge of Jewes.
 Ozer byshop and prophete.
 Joel, Ananias, and Azarias prophetes.
 Zacharias kynge of Israel.
 Phafis kynge of Israel.
 folio. xvi.

Boysan & Condag byges of Bityayn.
 Reynolde, Eubodian, Jernes & Popes
 kynges of Bityayne.
 How foure kynges helde all Bityayne
 and of theyr names.

Scater and Balwalper kynges.
 Rubar and Cloren kynges.
 Douebant kynge of Bityayne.
 folio. xvii.

Dyeme and Beign kynges of Bityayn.
 folio. xviii.

Combiatus kynge of Bityayne.
 Joathan kynge of Jewes.
 Imperias byshop.
 Olimpias were set in Gyce.
 Icham kynge of Jewes.
 Ichitob byshop.
 Ozer kynge of Israel.

There begynneth the thyrde part, and
 cōtynueth unto the Ratiuite of Chyff.

folio. xviii.

Rome was buylded by Romulus.
 Cerebias kynge of Jewes.
 Sadoch byshop.
 Amassies kynge of Jewes.

folio. xix.

Sellum and Echias byshoppes.
 Ruma kynge of Rome.
 Amon kynge of Jewes.
 Josias kynge of Jewes.
 Iustas byshop.
 Tobias the holy man.
 Tullius kynge of Rome.
 Rabugodonosor kynge of Babylon.
 Ancus kynge of Rome.
 Danuell the prophete.

Joarhas kynge of Jewes.
 Joachim kynge of Jewes.
 Samias byshop.
 Joachim kynge of Jewes.
 Menechias kynge of Jewes.
 Joliverch byshop.
 Ibaruk prophete.

The transmygracyon.
 Pulcus Tarquinius kynge of Rome.
 Rabugodonosor and Enymicrodach
 kynges of Babylon.

folio. xx.

How the playe of Chesse was founde.
 Salathiel of the lyne of Chyff.
 Seruus Tullius kynge of Rome.
 Regular, Sabulardach and Balchafar
 kynges of Babylon.
 Monarchia Persiarum.
 Darius kynge of Babylon.
 Cyrus emperour of Perses.
 Babylon was destroyed.
 Carquinius superbus kynge of Rome.
 Lucretia wyfe.

How the gouernance of Rome was
 changed after the kynges.

Bithoua lady Eldre.
 Zorobabell the duke.

Eldas prest.
 Cambyles kynge of Perses.

folio. xxi.

Encriides & Tarius kynges of Perses.
 Abiuth of the lyne of Chyff.
 Joachim byshop.
 Senatours of Rome were ordeyned.
 Artaxarles & series kynges of Persie.
 Megdianus kynge of Persie.
 Elyac of the lyne of Chyff.
 Eldas an holy man.
 Accurias the butler.
 Dermecades, Moerates, Democritus,
 and Procras philosophers.
 Asor of the lyne of Chyff.
 Elyas byshop.
 Camillus dictatur of Rome.
 Darius kynge of Persie.

TABLE

Pyro a philosopher.
 Titus dictator of Rome.
 Cereus a Senator.
 Marcus Valerius a Senator.
 Anaxerxes, Arrianus & Darius kyn-
 ges of Persie.

Judas and Johannes byshoppes.
 Aristotles & Socrates philosophers.
 Gensibilis, Seyssil, Syrus, Saluan,
 & Syrach kynges of Syrtayne.

folio. xxi.

Grandobodiam, Artogail and Hespder
 kynges of Syrtayne.

Folio. xxiii. kynges reigned in peas eche
 after other in Syrtayne.

Lus kynge of Syrtayne.

Sadoch of the lyne of Chyrt.

Judas byshop.

folio. xxii.

Cecus byshop.

Manlius & Fabius Consules of Rome.

Monarchia Syrtayne.

Alexander kynge.

Ichon of the lyne of Chyrt.

Symon and Eleazar byshoppes.

Dolobella, Emilius, Marcus, Curius,

Genutius Consules of Rome.

Ptholomeus kynge of Egypte.

Cind of the lyne of Chyrt.

Omas and Symon byshoppes.

Demipponius, Syrtius, Clausius, and

many moe Senators of Rome.

Ptholomeus kynge of Egypte.

Hanyball kynge of Penonun.

folio. xxv.

Lucius, Symipponius, Valerius &c.

were Consules at Rome.

Epiphanes kynge of Egypte.

Antiochus kynge of Syrie.

Quas and Symon byshoppes.

Cicero of the lyne of Chyrt.

Omas byshop.

Quas, Syrtius, Senators of Rome.

Ptholomeus kynge of Egypte.

Sadochus an holy man.

Judas Sadochus and Johannes his
 brother byshoppes.

Antiochus kynge of Syrie.

Quintus, Marcus and Cicerus were
 Senators of Rome.

Marion of the lyne of Chyrt.

Symon and Johannes byshoppes.

Publius, Lucius, Lucius and Lucius
 Senators of Rome.

folio. xxv.

Ptholomeus kynge of Egypte.

Aristobolus kynge and priest.

Alexander byshop.

Scerius, Lucius, Fabius Senators
 of Rome.

Ptholomeus kynge of Egypte.

Jacob of the lyne of Chyrt.

Alexandria wyfe and byshop.

Hircanus kynge of Jewes.

Uirgell the great poete.

Dratius and Solustius historians.

Quintus & Cereus Consules of Rome.

Pompeius, Marcus and Julius were
 dictatours of Rome.

folio. xxvi.

Carhon philosopher.

Cassibolon kynge of Englonde.

Indrigen kynge of Englonde.

Joseph of the lyne of Chyrt.

Inchigonus byshop.

folio. xxvii.

Citus, Lucius and Dindius historians.

Octavianus emperour.

The husbondes of Isaret Dine.

Herode Hiclonia kynge of Jewes.

Kymbalyn kynge of Englonde.

Here begynneth the fourth parte & con-
 tynneth into the compynge of the Saxons.

folio. xxviii.

The Statute of Chyrt.

folio. xxix.

Quintus, Rufus, and Valerius Syrtius
 byshoppes.

Pylatus the Judge.

Tabula.

Of pylates nauite.
 Quirinus Gale.
 Tiberius emperour.
 Matthe the apostle.
 Iudas Iscariot.
 folio. xxix.
 The makinge of the Credo.
 The foure euangelistes.
 Peter the first pope.
 Cayus emperour.
 Cynder kynge of Englonde.
 folio. xxx.
 Armauer kynge of Englonde.
 Westmer kynge of Englonde.
 Copll kynge of Englonde.
 folio. xxxi.
 Claudius emperour.
 James the more the apostle.
 Nero emperour.
 Seneca Neroes mayster.
 Iuuenalis and Lucanus poetes.
 James the lesse the apostle.
 Linus a martyr and pope.
 Galba emperour.
 Otho emperour.
 Vitellus emperour.
 Vaspasianus emperour.
 Cletus a martyr and pope.
 Titus emperour.
 folio. xxxij.
 Domitian emperour.
 Clemens a martyr and pope.
 Nerva emperour.
 Traianus emperour.
 Inasletus a martyr and pope.
 Plinius Orator.
 Euacritus a martyr and pope.
 Alexander a martyr and pope.
 Sixtus a martyr and pope.
 Iulianus and Eustachius emperours.
 Thelesphorus a martyr and pope.
 folio. xxxiii.
 Ignatius a martyr and pope.
 Anthonius emperour.
 Pompeius hystoriographus.

Pius a martyr and pope.
 Anicetus a martyr and pope.
 Caligula a lecher.
 Marcus and Lucius emperours.
 Lucie kynge of Englonde. *first kynge*
 Alepades kynge of Englonde.
 Copll kynge of Englonde.
 folio. xxxiiii.
 Constance kynge of Englonde.
 Constantyne kynge of Englonde.
 Vespasian kynge of Englonde.
 Maximian kynge of Englonde.
 folio. xxxv.
 Of the. xi. thousande birgyns.
 Gaius a martyr and pope.
 folio. xxxvi.
 Constantyne kynge of Englonde.
 Constance kynge of Englonde.
 Soether a martyr and pope.
 Cleutherius a martyr and pope.
 folio. xxxvii.
 Marcus Antonius and Lucius Co-
 modus were emperours.
 Helius emperour.
 Victor a martyr and pope.
 Zepherinus a martyr and pope.
 Eugenius the noble clerk.
 Calistus a martyr and pope.
 Anthonius emperour.
 Anthonius Marcus emperour.
 Alysaunde emperour.
 Urbanus a martyr and pope.
 Pontianus a martyr and pope.
 Anteros a martyr and pope.
 Maximianus emperour.
 Gordian emperour.
 Phylipp emperour.
 Decius emperour.
 Fabianus a martyr and pope.
 Cornelius a martyr and pope.
 Lurinus pope.
 Gallus and Valerianus emperours.
 Valerian emperour.
 Stephanus a martyr and pope.
 Sixtus a martyr and pope.

Table

Dionysius a martyr and pope.

folio. lxxviii.

Felix a martyr and pope.

Claudianus emperour.

Cuticianus a martyr and pope.

Durcius emperour.

Caricus emperour.

Diodus emperour.

Cicrus and his two sons emperours.

Dionisius emperour.

Marinianus emperour.

Calixtus pope and martyr.

Ursellinus a martyr and pope.

Marcellus a martyr and pope.

Eusebius a martyr and pope.

Heliodorus a martyr and pope.

Valerianus emperour.

Julianus pope.

Constantine emperour.

Maximilian.

Inastatius bishop & he made Qui-
rines his felix etc.

Marcius pope.

Julius pope.

Constantinus emperour.

folio. lxxx.

Liberius pope.

Felix pope.

Julianus apostata emperour.

Domitianus emperour.

Valentinian emperour.

Damianus pope.

Valens emperour.

Augustinus rethorick.

Marcius pope.

Theodosius emperour.

Claudianus poeta.

Gratianus emperour.

Marcius emperour.

Themas the baron.

Maximilianus.

Johnnes Crisostomus.

Inastatius pope.

Maximilianus pope.

Maximilianus pope.

folio. xi.

Bonifacius pope.

Celestinus pope.

Theodosius emperour.

Marcius and Leo popes.

Marinianus and Valentinianus empe-
rours.

There begyneth the b. part & comy
much unto the comyng of the Danes.

folio. xi.

Engylt.

folio. xli.

Uostiger kyng of Englonde.

Uostimer kyng of Englonde.

folio. xliij.

Uurilambros kyng of Englonde.

folio. xliij.

Uterpendragon kyng of Englonde.

folio. xliij.

Arthur kyng of Englonde.

folio. xliij.

Constantyne.

Uostimer.

Uostimer all kynges of Englonde.

folio. xliij.

Uostimer.

Conan.

Uostimer.

Uostimer all kynges of Englonde.

folio. xliij.

Uostimer.

Uostimer.

Uostimer.

Uostimer all kynges of Englonde.

folio. xliij.

Uostimer.

Uostimer.

Uostimer.

Uostimer.

Uostimer all kynges of Englonde.

folio. xliij.

Uostimer kyng of Englonde.

folio. xliij.

Uostimer.

Table

Obysht.
 All knyghts of Englonde.
 folio. lviij.
 Saput Comode.
 Cell.
 Cypre all knyghts of Englonde.

There begynne the popes and emperours & other notable chieftes in figure of the Emperours bepage in Englonde.
 folio. lviij.

Leo the fyfth emperor.
 Leo pope.
 Valerianus pope.
 Simplicianus pope.
 zeno emperor.
 Felix pope.
 Gelasius pope.
 Anastasius emperor.
 Anastasius pope.
 Simachus pope.
 folio. lxx.

Clodius knyght of France.
 Hormuda pope.
 Justinus emperor.
 Valerianus grammarian.
 Johannes pope.
 Felix the fourth pope.
 Justinianus emperor.
 Bonifacius pope.
 Johannes the seconde pope.
 Agapitus a confessor pope.
 Soluerius a martyr pope.
 Marghin pope.
 Synodus quarta.
 Delagius pope.
 Johannes the thyrde pope.
 Justinus the seconde emperor.
 Cyberius the seconde emperor.
 Benedictus pope.
 Delagius emperor.
 Theodorus emperor.
 folio. lxx.

In what tyme saynt Austyn came in to Englonde.

Totus emperor.
 Gregorius the fyfth pope.
 Maximianus pope.
 Bonifacius the thyrde pope.
 Bonifacius the fourth pope.
 Heradius emperor.
 Deus debet pope.
 Bonifacius the fyfth pope.
 Spachomyte the duke of Saragusa.
 folio. lxxi.

Constantyne the thyrde emperor.
 Martinus the fyfth pope.
 Eugenius pope.
 Vitellianus pope.
 Theodorus pope.
 Constantyne the fourth emperor.
 Demus a Romañe pope.
 Bonifacius pope.
 Agarho pope.
 Leo pope.
 Benedictus the seconde pope.
 Justinianus the seconde emperor.
 folio. lxxi.

Johannes the fyfth pope.
 zeno pope.
 Sergius pope.
 Saynt Beda.
 Leo the seconde pope.
 Liberius emperor.
 Leo the thyrde pope.
 Johannes the fyfth pope.
 Johannes the seventh pope.
 Justinianus emperor.
 Gyslinus pope.
 Constantyne pope.
 Phylipp the seconde emperor.
 Anastasius the seconde emperor.
 Gregorius the seconde pope.
 Theodosius emperor.
 folio. lxxii.

Leo and Constantyne emperours.
 Gregorius the thyrde pope.
 Constantinus emperor.
 Zacharius pope.
 Stephanus the seconde pope.

TABLL

Benedict a Roman pope.
 Constantine the firste pope.
 Harold Magnus.
 Stephanus the thyrde pope.
 Sylvester pope.
 Leo the fourth pope.
 Constantinus emperor.
 folio. lxxi.
 Ricobertus emperor.
 Ricobert emperor.
 Harold Magnus the fyfth & last.
 Leo pope.
 Ludouicus emperor.
 Stephanus the fourth pope.
 Pascall pope.
 Eugenius the fourth pope.
 Valentinus pope.
 Gregorius the fourth pope.
 Lotharius pope.
 Sergius the seconde pope.
 Leo pope.
 Benedictus a Roman pope.
 folio. lxxv.
 Ludouicus emperor.
 Johannes a Roman pope.
 Nicotus pope.
 Romanus pope.
 There begynneth the. vii. part. whiche
 sheweth howe the. vii. part. whiche
 folio. lxxv.
 Hurco kyng of Englonde.
 folio. lxxvi.
 Johannes the. viii. pope.
 Harold the seconde emperor.
 Stephanus pope.
 Romanus the thyrde pope.
 Stephanus the. ix. pope.
 Harold the thyrde emperor.
 Ricobertus emperor.
 Ricobertus pope.
 Benedictus pope.
 Stephanus the. x. pope.
 Johannes the. xi. and. xii. pope.
 Stephanus pope.

Johannes the. xi. pope.
 Benedictus the fourth pope.
 Leo pope.
 Charolus the fyfth pope.
 Ludouicus the thyrde emperor.
 Berengarius a Constantine emperor.
 Colard kyng of Englonde.
 Stephanus the. xii. pope.
 Ricobertus pope.
 Laude and Johannes pope.
 folio. lxxvii.
 Ricobertus emperor.
 Ricobertus kyng of Englonde.
 Ricobertus kyng of Englonde.
 Ricobertus kyng of Englonde.
 Ricobertus kyng of Englonde.
 Leo the. xiii. pope.
 Stephanus the. xiii. and. xiiii. pope.
 Ricobertus the thyrde pope.
 Ricobertus pope.
 Johannes the. xiv. pope.
 folio. lxxviii.
 Ricobertus kyng of Englonde.
 folio. lxxviii.
 Berengarius the thyrde emperor.
 Ricobertus emperor.
 Berengarius the fourth emperor.
 Leo the. xiv. pope.
 Johannes the. xiv. pope.
 Benedictus the. xiv. pope.
 Otto the. xiv. emperor.
 Otto the. xiv. emperor.
 folio. lxxix.
 Of saynt Colard kyng of Englonde
 and marry.
 Ricobert kyng of Englonde.
 Ricobert kyng of Englonde and of Dan
 mark.
 Ricobert pope.
 Benedictus pope.
 Benedictus pope.
 Johannes the. xv. and. xvi. pope.
 Gregorius the. x. pope.
 folio. lxxx.
 Otto the thyrde emperor.

Tabula.

Edmeester the seconde pope.
 Johannes the xxviij. and xx. popes.
 Henricus the first emperor.
 Benedictus pope.
 Johannes the xx. pope.
 Knoght kynge of Englonde.
 Edmond Irensyde kynge of Englonde.
 folio. lxxi.

Knoght kynge of Englonde.
 Benedictus the ix. pope.
 folio. lxxii.

Conradus emperor.
 Harolde kynge of Englonde.
 Hardynoght kynge of Englonde.
 Of the bylant that the Danes dyd by-
 to the Englyshmen.
 Of Godwyn the fals traptour.
 Blured martyr.
 folio. lxxiii.

Edmeester the thyrde pope.
 Damasius the seconde pope.
 folio. lxxiiii.
 Saynt Edward kynge of Englonde
 and confessor.
 folio. lxxv.

Victor the seconde pope.
 Henry the seconde emperor.
 Stephanus the ix. pope.
 Benedictus pope.
 Henricus the thyrde emperor.
 Nicolaus the seconde pope.
 Alexander the seconde pope.
 Harolde kynge of Englonde.

Here begynneth the. viij. parte & con-
 tynieth unto our dayes & that is to saye
 unto kynge Edwardes reigne the fourth
 the. xxiii. yere.
 folio. lxxvi.

William conquerour.
 folio. lxxvii.
 Gregorius the viij. pope.
 Victor the thyrde pope.
 Nicholas pope.
 folio. lxxviii.

William Rous kynge of Englonde.
 Pascall pope.

folio. lxxix.
 Henry Beauderke kynge of Englonde.
 folio. lxxx.

Henricus the fourth emperor.
 Gelasius pope.

Calixtus pope.
 folio. lxxxi.

Honorius pope.
 Lotharius emperor.

Hugo de sancto Victore.
 The orde of saynt Iohn Baptyst.

Innocentius pope.
 folio. lxxxii.

Stephen kynge of Englonde.
 folio. lxxxiii.

Celestinus the seconde pope.
 Lucius pope.

Eugenius the seconde pope.
 Petrus Lombardus byshop.
 Petrus Comestor.

Fredericus the first emperor.
 Anastasius pope.

folio. lxxxiv.
 Henry the seconde kynge of Englonde.
 folio. lxxxv.

Innocentius the fourth pope.
 Alexander the thyrde pope.

Lucius the thyrde pope.
 Urbanus the thyrde pope.

Gregorius the viij. pope.
 Clemens the thyrde pope.

folio. lxxxvi.
 Rycharde the first kynge of Englonde.
 folio. lxxxvii.

Henricus the fifth emperor.
 Celestinus the thyrde pope.

Innocentius the thyrde pope.
 William of Barry.

Franciscus an prelar.
 folio. lxxxviii.

John kynge of Englonde.
 folio. lxxxix.

Fredericus the seconde emperor.

Table

Boniface the eighth pope. folio. lxxxviii.
 Henry the thirde kyng of Englonde. folio. lxxxix.
 Gregory the. ix. pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Celestinus the fourth pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Innocentius the fourth pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Thomas de Aquino. folio. lxxxix.
 Albertus magnus. folio. lxxxix.
 Eustacius. folio. lxxxix.
 Bonaventure. folio. lxxxix.
 Alexander pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Urbanus pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Richardus emperour. folio. lxxxix.
 Clemens the fourth pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Gregorius the. i. pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Innocentius the. ii. pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Adrianus pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Johannes the. xxi. pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Nicolaus the thirde pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Rodolphus emperour. folio. lxxxix.
 Martinus the fourth pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Nicolaus de lyra. folio. lxxxix.
 Bonifacius the fourth pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Sixtus the fourth pope. folio. lxxxix.
 folio. lxxxix.
 Edward the first kyng of Englonde. folio. lxxxix.
 Celestinus pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Bonifacius pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Benedictus the. xi. pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Rodolphus emperour. folio. lxxxix.
 Albertus emperour. folio. lxxxix.
 Clemens pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Johannes the. xxi. pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Henry the sixth emperour. folio. lxxxix.
 folio. lxxxix.
 Edward the fourth kyng of Englonde. folio. lxxxix.
 Innocentius emperour. folio. lxxxix.
 John Wycliffe a heretic of phylsophy and a knyght. folio. lxxxix.
 Benedictus pope. folio. lxxxix.

folio. lxxxix.
 Edward the thirde kyng of Englonde. folio. lxxxix.
 Clemens the sixth pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Carolus the fourth emperour. folio. lxxxix.
 Innocentius the sixth pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Urbanus the sixth pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Gregorius the. xi. pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Wenceslaus emperour. folio. lxxxix.
 Urbanus pope. folio. lxxxix.
 folio. lxxxix.
 Bonifacius the. ix. pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Richard the second kyng of Englonde. folio. lxxxix.
 Innocentius the. vi. pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Robert emperour. folio. lxxxix.
 Johannes the. xxiii. pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Sigismundus emperour. folio. lxxxix.
 folio. lxxxix.
 Henry the fourth kyng of Englonde. folio. lxxxix.
 folio. lxxxix.
 Martin the sixth pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Eugenius pope. folio. lxxxix.
 folio. lxxxix.
 Henry the sixth kyng of Englonde. folio. lxxxix.
 folio. lxxxix.
 Felix the sixth pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Albertus emperour. folio. lxxxix.
 Fredericus the thirde emperour. folio. lxxxix.
 Nicolaus the sixth pope. folio. lxxxix.
 folio. lxxxix.
 Henry the sixth kyng of Englonde. folio. lxxxix.
 folio. lxxxix.
 Calixtus the thirde pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Where the pryng of booke first began. folio. lxxxix.
 Paul the fourth pope. folio. lxxxix.
 folio. lxxxix.
 Paulus a venecyan pope. folio. lxxxix.
 Sixtus the fourth pope. folio. lxxxix.
 And in the latter ende of these prestes Cronycles ben descriptions of Englonde Wales Scotlande & Irelande. folio. lxxxix.
 Thus endeth the table of this booke. folio. lxxxix.

The prologue.

. alio primo.

In so moche þat it is necessary to
all creatures of christen reli-
gion: of fals religion: of gen-
tyles & machomyres to knowe
they: pynce of pynce þat regne
þpon them: & them to obey. So it is co-
mmodious to knowe they: noble actes &
deedes: & the circumsaunce of they: lyues.
Therefore in þat pte of our lorde. 33. xxx.
lxxxij. the. xxiij. pte of þat regne of kyng
Edward the fourth at saynt Albons. so
that all men may knowe þat actes namelly
of our noble kynges of englonde: is com-
pyled togyder this boke: & more ouer is
translated out of latyn in to englyshe. fro
the begynnyng of þat worlde: the liguage
of Christ fro Adam tyll it be comen to Da-
uid: & fro Dauid: the kynges of israel: &
of iewes: þat hye bysshops in they: dayes
with þat iudges & pphetes. The. iiii. pun-
typall realmes of the worlde. þat is to say
Babylon: Perte: Grece: & Rome: & all þat
emperours of Rome: & popes by oþer: &
they: names: & many a notable fader: w
certayne of they: actes: as more playn-
ly ensuech. And here ben reherced þat na-
mes of þat auctours þat translated these cro-
nycles specially. Geffrey Rymoch mon-
ke in his boke of Bute. saynt Bede in þat
actes of englonde. Also Bede in his boke
of tymes. Gylas in þat actes of Brutayn.
Wynsam Malinesbury moke in þat actes
of kynges of englonde & bysshops. Cassi-
der: of þat actes of emperours & bysshops
Saynt Just in de ci. dei. Cir: Luus de
gestis romanor. Martyn penitencyary
to þat pope in his cronycles of emperours
& bysshops: & namelly Theobaldus car-
tuliensis cōteynnyng in his boke þat pro-
gresse of all notable faders: fro þat begyn-
nyng of þat worlde vnto our tyme: w the
notable actes of þat same. ¶ In this new
translation are cōteyned many notable &
meruaylous thynges: & those ben allegi-
ged by auctourte of many famous

kes. And þat every man may knowe how
these cronycles be omyed: yf shal under-
stande þat this boke is deuysed in to. vii.
partes. Of þat whiche the first parte con-
teyneth fro Adam tyll Bute came in to
Brutayn. The seconde parte cōteyneth
fro Bute came first in to englonde vnto
to the cite of Rome was buryed by Ro-
mul: The thyrde parte cōteyneth syth
Rome was buryed vnto Christ was
borne of our lady burgyn Marye. The
fourth parte fro thens vnto þat comyng
of þat sarons in to englonde. The. v. parte
from thens vnto the comyng of danes.
The. vi. parte fro thens vnto þat comyng
of þat normans. The. vii. parte fro þat nor-
mans vnto our tyme: whiche is vnder þat
regne of kyng Edward þat fourth. xiii.
pte: whiche noble cronycles by custome
may not be seen. ¶ And so in every part
of these. vii. parties be shewyd þat moost
and necessary actes of all the kynges of
englonde: & they: names wyrtten aboute
in þat margene: þat every man may fynde
them soone. And after þat kynges of eng-
londe: actes ben wyrtten: there is wyrt-
ten þat liguage of Christ fro Adam tyll þat
christ was borne of our lady: w the hye
bysshops & iudges þat were in þat tyme: &
certayne of they: actes necessary: tyll it
be comen where Christ was borne: & af-
ter that christ was borne: & Peter was
pope of Rome: is shewyd by oþer þat na-
mes of all þat popes & emperours of Ro-
me afore: & after: with certayne of they:
actes breuely: & many other dyuers
thynges & meruayles in those menys
dayes fallynge. And it is shewyd every
thynge in his place: how many pte it fel
after þat begynnyng of þat worlde: & how
lōge afore þat Christ was borne: & when
þat I come to Christ was borne: & how
lōge any thynges fell after þat
natyuite of Christ. And this is þat booke
of this boke: & of thynges spoken of.



The prologue.

Asin as to men desyring to haue a very knowlege of these cronycles of any other / it is necessary to knowe the thynges. ¶ The fyrst is þe states of thynges / & those be two. One is fro þe begynnynge of þe worlde vnto Chyrist / whiche is called the state of demeracyon. The seconde is fro Chyrist to þe ende of þe worlde / the whiche is called the state of reconciliacyon. ¶ The secōde thyng is the diuysyon of tymes / & those be thre. One is afore the lawe of Moyses / & an other is vnder the lawe of Moyses / an other is vnder the lawe of grace after Chyrist dyed. ¶ The thyrde is þe gouernynge of kyngdomes. And as for that ye must knowe / þe though there were foure principal kyngdomes / that is to saye / of Babilon / of Perses / of Grekes / & of Romaynes.ouerthele as to þe course of the worlde / & þe ordre of holy scripture / þe fyrst gouernynge was vnder fathers / fro Adam vnto Moyses. The secōde vnder iudges / from Moyses vnto Saul. The thyrde vnder kynges / from Saul vnto iobabel. The fourth vnder bishops / fro iobabel vnto Chyrist. ¶ The fourth is þe diuersite of lawes / & those were foue. The fyrst was þe lawe of nature / & that was comyn to all men. The secōde is þe lawe of custome of gentyles / whan þe vnder kyng Ayno began þe people to worship falsse goddes. The thyrde is vnder the lawe wyrten vnto the lawe of ieremes / whan euerysyn deuyned þe ieremes fro other peple. The fourth is vnder chyrist vnto þe lawe of christen men / whan sayth and grace of þe sacramentes enforchid þe lyfe of men. The fyfth is vnder spachowise vnto the lawe of sarakyns & turkes. ¶ The fyfth is the noblenesse of benedictions in lawes. And as to these / it is to knowe that / be persones ben rebde / of whome the lawes many tymes are had comynge to þe dayes. That is to wote

of a pynce in his realme / of a knyght in batayle / of a iudge in his place / of a byshop in the clergie / of a polypke man in the people / of an husband man in the hous / & of an abbot in his church. And of these are wyrtten many tymes / the laudes of good men / and the punyshmentes of the cursed men. ¶ The syxth is the true countynge of the yeres. And to that / it is to be knowen þe there were thre maner of nombrynge of countynge of the yeres. Thre after the Hebrewes. Thre after the Grekes. One of the Romaynes. And one now is after the chrysten men. The Hebrewes thre maner of wyse begynneth they yere. After the Hebrewes there is the yere vsuall begynnynge at January / & whiche they ble in cournautes and bargeyns making. And the yere leyfull begynnynge at Marche / the whiche they ble in theyr ceptmonyes. And the yere Emergens from Ayno begynnynge / whan they wente from Egypte / they ble in theyr cronycles & calculacions. ¶ The Grekes noblyth they yeres thre maner of wyse. fyrst to the glory & hope of theyr victory consisteth they yeres from the destruction of Troie. The fyrst & secōd / the thyrde / and the fourth. &c. ¶ Chan after the chryualte began at the hyl of Olympus they notyfied þe yeres after the same Olympiads. And what Olympiades is / ye shall knowe after in the booke. The thyrde whan they began to haue lordshyp of all the worlde they notyfied they yeres thes maner of wyse. In the yere of the regne of Grekes / the fourth / the .x. the .xv. &c. as it is open in the booke of Spachabrey. ¶ Chan after the Romayns gouernynge the worlde / countid & noblyd they yeres (as byde coōdita). ¶ The last of all chryst men countid they yeres from þe Incarnacion of Chyrist. And because for be chryst men

We be moost to nombr from þ begyn-
nyng of the worlde unto Chyrl was
borne. And fro Chyrl was borne unto
our tyme. And this orde is obserued &
kepte in all the boke of euery thyng in
his place as is sayd before.

Explicit prologus.

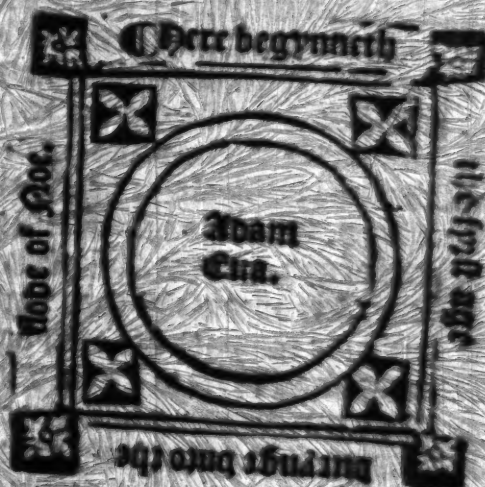
Incipit fructus temporum.

Because of these boke made
to tell what tyme of ony thyng
ge notable was. Therefore þ
begynnyng of al tymes shoul-
d be touched. For the whiche after
doctours it is to be knowen that four
thynges were made fyrst & in one tyme
of one age that is to wyte the heuen
unperpall/ angels nature the matere
of the four elemetes & tyme. And that
doctours call werke of the creation the
whiche was made (afore ony daye or
nyght) of þ myghty power of god and
was made of no thyng. Then after
foloweth þ werke of diuynon the whi-
che was made in thre of þ fyrst dayes
in whiche is shewed þ hygh wysdom
of the maker. Then after foloweth þ
arapenge of this werke in þ whiche is
shewed the goodnes of the creatour the
whiche was made thre of þ nexte daye
folowyng. We patet clare interu grā. i.
The fyrst daye god made & deuyned
the lyght from the darknes. The se-
conde daye god made & ordeyned the fir-
mament & diuyned the water from the
water. The thyrde daye god made
in the whiche he gadet the waters in
to one place and the erth the apperco.
The fourth daye god made in þ whi-
che daye he ordeyned þ sunne the mone
and the sterres & put them in þ firm-
ment. The fyfth daye god made in
the whiche he ordeyned fyshes & fou-
les & grete whales in þ water. The

sixth daye god ordeyned in the whiche
he made beest & man. The. vii. daye
god made & in þ day he restid of all ther
kyng that he had ordeyned not as in ther
kyng daye lorry but he ceased to ma-
ke no newe creatures. Vide pla gen. i.

Adverstande ye that Adam the
fyrst man of whome it is wy-
ten in this fyrst age nexte folowynge is
ued. ix. hondred yere and. ccc. And gate
xxx. soncs and as many daughters.

Anno mundi primo. Et ante Christi
natiuitatem. b. ap. C. lxxxix.



In the first yere of þ worlde
the sixth day god made and
formed Adam in the seide da-
masene & Eua of his rib-
bes puttyng them in paradys & bare
them to kepe his commaundment that
they shoulde not ete of þ fruyt of tre vn-
der the payne of deeth. And þ same daye
þ they had synned anone he cast them
out of paradys to þ soe of curlesones
that they shoulde tyme tyme wyllyng
a sorow till they dreed. Vide pla gen. i.
This Adam was an holier man all þ
dayes of his lyf grete penitenc he dyd.
And he commaunded his chylde-
ren to true ryghe dety & namely that they

holde awayde in all wyse from the com-
pany of Carn & his chylde. But that
they shold not marry with none of them
¶ This was Adam was our first father
& for one tyme put out of paradys.
But through his holy conuersacion & pe-
nauce / he gaue us ensample to come to
the kyngdome of heuen. And he shold
not folowe his holy conuersacion & exam-
ple for one tyme / ryght wyse he can not
complayne on hym / as we doo many.
¶ Seth sone to Adam was borne after
the begynnyng of shoulde. C. and. xxx
yeres & lyued. ix. C. and. xii. But shoul-
des ouershypped an hundred of those / in
the whiche Abel wepte in shoulde of plo-
ration nygh Ebon. This Seth for the
oyle of merry to be gotten went to para-
dys. ¶ Delboia was sister to Abel.
Abel was slayne of Carn his brother.
This Abel the first martyr began the
chirche of god. This man after Justyn
made shoulde cite of god / & he was shoulde cite
syn of shoulde cite. And because he was right
wyse / our lord receyued his offryng.
¶ Calmana was wyse to Carn. This
Carn was a curled man & he made the
first earthly cite that euer in this world
was / in shoulde whiche he put his people for
dwelle / in so moche as he bled rauyne &
violence. For he trusted such thinge to
be done to hym as he dyd to other / there-
fore he put hym and his into a sure plas-
se. This man slew his brother Abel for
enue / and he was punished of god / &
martyred aboute in despayre. And was
slayne of Lamech a blinde man.

¶ Anno mudi. lxxv. C. xxxv. Et ante xpi
natiuitatem. lxxv. C. xxxv.

¶ Adam of the lyne of Chyrist lyued
ix. C. yeres & b. And began to call
the name of our lord. He myght happe
he had the same name of ppyer / & was

be sone ymagined for god to be shoulde
peter as now is in the church. Chanam
lyued after. ix. C. yeres and b.

¶ Anno mudi. vii. C. lxxxv. Et ante
Chyristi natiuitatem. vii. C. lxxxv.

¶ Adam of the lyne of Chyrist ly-
ued. vii. C. & lxxxv. yeres. Ja-
cob of shoulde lyued. ix. C. lxxv. ¶ Enoch
of shoulde lyued. vii. C. yeres. lxxv. and
was a ryght wyse man & pleased god.
And for his grete holynes our lord tras-
lated hym in to paradys / where he ly-
ueth in shoulde in grete rest of body & soule
till the comyng of Antechyrist. Chan
they shall go forth for the confortacion of
good men. And they shall be crowned in
the crowne of martyrdome.

¶ Metale of Chyristes lyne lyued
ix. C. lxxv. yeres. And was shoulde
man shoulde euer any scripture hath mde of.
For when he had lyued nygh. b. C. yeres
our lord sayd to shoulde. Burde shoulde an hous
& thou wilt / for yet thou shalt lyue true
hundred yeres. And he answered & sayd.
For shoulde tell a tyme as. b. hundred yeres
I shoulde buyde no hous. But rested un-
der trees and hedges / and there slepte /
as he was wont to do for a tyme.

¶ Anno mundi. q. lxxv. C. lxxv. Et ante
Chyristi natiuitatem. q. lxxv. C. lxxv.

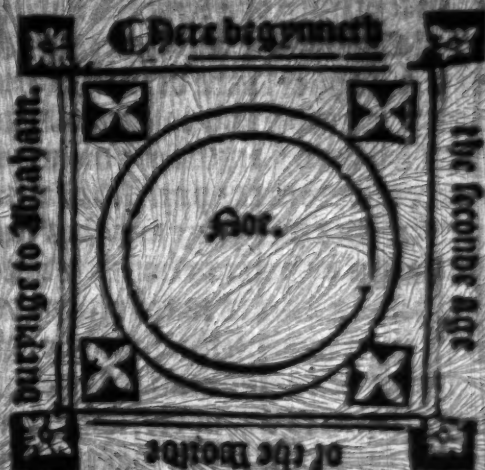
¶ Lamech was of the age of. vii. C.
lxxv. yeres. This Lamech was
the first agaynst nature & good maners
that ordeyned shoulde a man might haue two
wyues in dowrye his auowte. And he
was sore punished of god / for they gaue
shoulde many a strepe. For it is so shoulde by what
thinge a man synned by the same he is
punished. This Lamech slew Carn
not wysefully. But when he was olde &
blinde he was ladde of a chylde shoulde

the troved þ he had seen a wyld beest /
 & sayd to his mayster þ he shold shote /
 so he stode Capn / wherfore for anger he
 stode the chyld also. ¶ And it is to be
 knowen that all craftes of stences ly-
 beral / of hande craftes / of of philosophy
 upnge to þ curiosite of man are rebde þ
 they were fouden in the children of La-
 meth. And for they dradde the peryll to
 come of the fode & of the fyre. Therfore
 Tubal graued the same craftes in two
 pyllers / the one was of marbie / & that
 other of tyle or byrche. Tubal foud first
 the crafte to werke gold & spuer & yren.
 And was the fyist grauer þ euer was.
 ¶ Tabe foud fyist tectoia for shepcher-
 des / & paupious for other men. ¶ Tu-
 bal foud fyist þ crafte to playe vpon an
 harpe & organs / & other musycal instru-
 mentes he vled. ¶ Noema foud fyist
 the crafte for to weue lynnyn & wollen
 cloth / & to draue threde of woll & flaxe.
 And afoze that tyme the people vled the
 saynnes of beestes for theyr clothes.

¶ Anno mundi. 99. vj. C. xliij. Et ante
 Christi natiuitatem. iij. 99. b. C. lviij.

The wypppe of Noe had in length
 iij. C. cubytes in bryde. l. in alty-
 tude. xxx. wyde p la gest. vij. ¶ Knowe ye
 after doctours / that a conuenient payne
 this tyme was ordeyned to the worlde.
 for than lechery habouiden the whiche
 defouled mennes bodies. And there by
 water perch was washyd & clensed / in
 segne of þ promysse þ god made to man
 that there sholde be such a fode
 agayne. And the saynbowe hath two
 pseynt colours the whiche represent
 the two iudgements. The water co-
 lour representeth þ fode that is passid.
 The fyre colour heretheneth the iudge-
 ment to come / & fyre the whiche we cet-
 tainly abyde in the ende of this woelke

bycause courtysse shall habodde by fyre
 it shall be byente as golde and spuer by
 the fyre is wont to be clensed.



Noe was a rightwysse man
 & foud grace arunkt god. Whan
 Noe was. v. c. p. of age he had
 gotten Cham / Sem and Japhet. That
 tyme by þ comaundement of god he be-
 gan to make a wypppe / & he made it per-
 fyte in an. C. pere / & the. C. pere coplete
 our lord appered agayne to hym / & co-
 maunded þ he shold his wyffe & his chyldren
 & þ wyues of them shold entre þ wypppe
 with all maner of beestes / & al maner of
 foules also. 9c. And anon þ fode came
 and shode about all byles. i. cubytes.
 Wyde plura gen. viij. ¶ After the fode a
 greet bronkenness berd unto Noe. And
 through the ocrasion of that bronkenes
 he dyspylled his two sones. Sem and Ja-
 phet. for þ faders honour that they had
 to him / & for the honest shame that they
 couered in hely theyr faders members
 whan he was slepyng. And his sone
 Cham for his stouryng & his butene-
 tence he cursed. ¶ And here after saynt
 Austyn is made þ fyist mencyon of bon-
 dage / and of noblenes contrary to it. for
 Noe sayd that Cham sholde be seruant
 in bondage to Sem and Japhet for his

Para prima.

heretofore. For which cause ye shall not
 trave that all that descended of Cham
 were brutish men / & of no power. For
 they began first to be myghty men of
 earth. As it is open of Semroth and the
 kynge of Chanaan & Elipsum. For all
 of Sem & Japhet were vertuous & no-
 ble & myghty men. Whan almost eue-
 rycheone fell into þe crime of ydolatre /
 and were oshentymes oppressed of other
 men. But this blessing and this cur-
 syng hath a respecte to vertue & vice /
 for þe whiche a man is called truly a no-
 ble man or an unnoblemann. For he that
 is vertuous is a noble man / and he that
 is unvertuous is not noble. The same
 manner of wyse those that foloweth the
 saythe of Abraham rather were called
 his chyldren than the Jewes / the whi-
 che carnally descended from hym. Ac-
 cordinge they had a spiryтуall pray-
 le of god for the fathers merites and
 his blessing. And of these three sonnes of
 Noe he begate alyue (after the bystory
 of Phylons) were borne. xxiiij. and
 an. C. men / without women and chy-
 lren. And they had on them thre myn-
 ces / Semroth / Jettan / and Sulphen.

*¶ Anno mundi. ij. m. ij. c. xliij. Et ante
 Christi nativitate. ij. m. vj. c. lviij.*

Sem sone to Noe the seconde yere
 after the flood gate Arphaxat / &
 other whyle he is called Melchisedech /
 the whiche lyft after þe flood made the
 cite of Helem / & now is called Iherusa-
 lem. Cham his brother overthrew Al-
 frick / & gate two sonnes / Chus & No-
 raym / & these two gate sonnes & daug-
 ters / and many a region they inhaby-
 ted wherunto to be in occidentall parte.
 Japhet was brother unto Cham / and
 was lyfted of his father. And this Ja-
 phet had three sonnes / as Gomer / Ma-

gog / Japhay / Janam / Tubal / Mosog /
 and Jeas. And these. vij. gate sonnes &
 daughters / and of them came many a
 region. Thus plura genesis. xij. Ar-
 phaxat sone to Sem lyued. CCC. and
 xxx. yere / and gate Cham / Shur / Lude /
 and Ham / & they gate many chyldren.
 Ut patet gene. ¶ This Shur because
 he wolde not rebell agaynst god in the
 edyfyng of the towre of Babylon / as
 Semroth dyd / therefore he was dyscuen
 unto the londe of Sennaar londe / whi-
 che was ryght straige to hym / & was
 not before inhabyted / the whiche was
 called after his name Shuria / and there
 he edyfied a cite afterwarde named Ni-
 nine / the whiche was the metropolys
 tane of all the kyngdome of Shuriora.
 ¶ Thus sone unto Cham was fader to
 Semroth / this Semroth was a graut
 of. x. cubytes longe / and he began to be
 myghty in þe worlde / and he is called a
 bofous hunter before god. This man
 began that wyttched byce of couetous-
 nes by his tyranny / with þe whiche vice
 euermore after this worlde is fulfilled.
 And þe pryncypallest kyngdome that he
 had was Babylon / & he had Archade /
 Eopssa / Seientia / & the londe of Sen-
 naar. ¶ Sone to Arphaxat lyued
 CCC. and. xxiiij. yere / and of hym in
 scripture is nothyng wyrtten / but that
 Moyses nombred hym in the lyne that
 cometh of Chrys. This Sone gate a so-
 ne that was named Heber / the whiche
 after the Hebreues had the spiryte of
 prophete. And of this Heber the He-
 breues be named. For the Hebreues
 tongue abode alone in his house in þe con-
 fusion of the language. And that lan-
 guage was called manes language / the
 whiche every man bled alow the towre
 of Babylon was buylden. ¶ This He-
 ber had two sonnes / and one was called
 Jettan / and that other Phaleg. This

Neetan throught ensample of Nemroth descendynge fro Cham toke the prynces hode vpon the chyldren of Sem. And he had. xiiij. sones. But these people after Jerome are not knowen of vs for serues of the cositree. or mutacyon and chaungynge of þ people. or elles of some other maner cause.

Anno mundi. li. ap. bi. C. xliij. Et ante Christi natiuitatem. li. ap. b. C. lvi.

Turris Babilonis.



Two hondred and. xxxij. yere lyued Shaleg. This Shaleg was the yonger sone of Heber. & in his dayes was made the confusyon of languages. for in his hous abode the olde tongue alone and that was hebrewe. Wherefore after saynt Malyn in hym appered a grete desirableness of ryghtwysnesse. for this hous was free of that payne. as not the scrupynge to the buydynge of the toure. Et from Aug. there was. lxxij. genera-

cyons. & so there were. lxxij. languages. Neetan broder to Shaleg of Sem. Nemroth prynce of Cham. Sulphen of Japhet. these thre prynces with theyr people gadered them togyder in þ londe of Sennaar. buydynge the toure to come agayn sayd. Let vs buyde a toure that shall reche to heuen. &c. Gen. xi. Our lord seynge the folyshenes of þ people tofouled theyr togues for theyr synnes. In so moche þ none understode othyr. & so they were disperpled throught all the worlde. Of þ malice of this Nemroth bookes ben wyrtten full. And after þ confusyon of þ language he went to þ londe of Bette. and there he taught them to adoure the fyre as god. He left his son Belus in Babylon. whiche succeeded after hym. And so his progenye obtained that realme after many yeres. In this tyme began many kyngdomes. & the moost of all thole kyngdomes was the kyngdome of Scitaru. But there were so many rude people in it þ the cite was no worshipped. yet was it a myghty regyon of dystaunce. And about this tyme began þ kyngdome of Egypte. the whiche was changed many tymes with dyuers alteracyons. & also it is spoken of many tymes i scripture. Nobles or gentylmen began about this sayd tyme. And this noblenes or gentylmen was ordeyned for many causes. The first cause was necessite. for wha manynge grewe sore & men were prompter & redy to do hurt & domage to othyr. it was very necessary to withstande þ grete malice of þ cursed and wyrted people agaynst good & ryghtwysse men. Therof a man is called gentylman. or a noble man. as before othyr in vertues notable. wherof saynt Jerom sayth. Ife nothyng els in noblenes. or in gentylmen. but þ they are bounden in a certayne necessite. þ they shall not recede fro the vertue. & the gen

tynges of theyr noble auctours. ¶ The
second was þe dyuers worshypping of
the people for no man worshypped thā
but as his naturall reason gaue & they
knewe not deely what they shold wor-
ship for they were so dull of wytte that
they coude perceyue no grete thyng but
that was publyshed by the comyn peo-
ple. Wherefore it was expedient for theyr
peace to be kepte that they shold haue
prynces of noble byrthe. ¶ The thyrde
cause pcedeth of some singular strength
Many tymes þe comynaltees were gre-
ued through enemyes comynge vpon
them & than they sayd þe who someuer
we shold defende them fro those perylls/
he shold haue the right of noblenes for
him & for his heires for euermore. And
in this maner of wyse many are redde
to be noble men. ¶ The fourth cause of
noblenes was haboundaunce of goodes.
Somtyme þe people were holden with
grete penury of meet & drynke & than
they toke them & theyrs to some ryche
man that through that couenaunt they
shold temple þe grete straitnes of theyr
honger & after that they shold knowe
hym as theyr lord & a noble man. Also
there be sonde certayn noble men by the
purposon of god though they were but
felow of þe whiche som abode i vertue as
Dauid & some sayed anone as Saul
and Jeroboam. And it is redde þe many
were noble men by tyrany of þe whiche
some were destroyed anone & some abo-
de in noblenes as paynims myght.

¶ Anno mundi. ii. m. lxx. C. v. Et ante
Christi natiuitate. ii. m. ii. C. lxxxiij.

Souch synnally descended fro our
fader Adam to Abraham. And
Abraham was his sonne & he lyued an. C.
and. xliij. yere. And aboute this tyme
the world began myghtely. And ysere

uolue & loke þe bystoires / ye shall fynde
that thre thynges princypally brought
men to ydolatre / that is to wyte the as-
fetyon that they had to beed larn. Dye-
de and flaterynge anent theyr prynces.
And the dyligence of crafty men about
sculptures or grauynges. Wycked spi-
rytes than entred in to ydolles and ga-
ue answeres vnto the people / and these
wycked spyrtes confermed the erroir
of the people myghtely. In soo moche
that who someuer wolde not conferme
hym to theyr reason / he shold greuous-
ly suffre the payne of dethe. Also there
was added and put to these thynges /
the deceyvinge laude and praysonge of
poetes / the whiche wretches and dam-
pned men in to heuen with theyr gawe
wytynges exalted. And that same ty-
me when deuylles began to speke soo
fayly and so mekely to man / the good
lorde of his grete mercy sente his an-
gelles / that they shold speke vnto his
electe men in bysyle maner / lest that
all mankynde shold peryshe with that
myscheuous erroir. ¶ Belus sonne to
Nemroth this tyme was kynge of Ba-
bylon & he was the fyrst kynge of this
worlde. And this man was he whome
the erroir of the people fyrst byleued
shold be a god. Wherefore dyuerse peo-
ple named hym dyuersly / and some cal-
led hym Bell / some Baal / some Baa-
lan / some Beelphegor / and some Beel-
sabub. And this unhappy erroir stode
in mankynde more than two thousande
yere. ¶ Ninus sonne to Belus the secon-
de kynge of Babylon or of Assurum
regned. liii. yere. And this Ninus de-
syred to haue lordshyp & worshyp / and
to that entent that he myght be lord of
all the countree aboute hym / he gaue ba-
tyle to all that dwelled nye aboute hy.
And because that tyme the people were
rude / and had not the conynge of spgh:

syng noꝝ armure / anone he subdued him
 to hym all Asyem. And there was ma-
 de the fyrst Monarchye in þe west partye.
 And whā his herte was soꝝ for þe deeth
 of his fader Belus / he made to be made
 to hym for his cōsofte an ymage of his
 fader / vnto whome he gaue so myghty
 reuerence / þe what someuer gilty man
 had dedde to that ymage / there sholde
 no man do hym no hurte / & he pardoned
 him of al his trespase. And thꝛough his
 ensample many a man began to woꝝ-
 shype the deed ymage of theꝝ dere frē-
 des . Than these malpetyous spirytes
 seynge the curiosite of the people / hyꝛde
 them withyn them / and gaue answeres
 vnto þe people & sayd they were goddes.
 And cōmaunded them to do reuerence
 to them as vnto goddes. Thus that vn-
 happy synne of ydolatry was brought
 in / the whiche repugned myghtely to
 goddes mageste. And in so moche this
 madnes grewe / that he shold suffre the
 payne of deeth that sayd they were men
 but goddes.

Anno mundi. iij. M. C. xliij. Et ante
Christi natiuitatem. ij. M. lxxxv.

There lone to Anchor liued.ij.C.
and. b. yere. This Thare after
the deeth of Abram went fro Ur of Calde
and passed in to Charrain w his chy-
lren & his newewes. And it is sayd by
cause he wolde not woishpp the fyre as
Sennoth had taughte / he was banys-
shed the countrey. And s compyn oppnyon
of the Hebrwes is. Sennoth regned
there the whiche was called an other
name / Amraphel s kyng of Sennaar/
whome soe tyme after this Abraham
ouercame. He bicth Genesis. xiiij.

Anno millesimo. cc. lxxviii. Et an-
 no Christi natiuitatem. ij. cc. xv.



The deuoute & holy story begyn-
neth here of holy patriarches &
whiche worshipped & serued god
and in theyr worshypping they taught
it. Vnde psal. cxi. bless no fane. This
Abraham a faithfull louer of god was
borne the. xiiij. yere of Nimus kyng of
Babylon. And knowe ye that the. lxxxv.
yere of Abraham by goddes goodnes &
woorde of mercy descended on mankynde
for than began to appere & maner of
promesse of god. Vnde aug. xvi. de ci. del.
Itt ge. x. for this tyme appered to vs
holy aungels in fourme of mankynde.
Isaac & Jacob were Abrahams bre-
therne & Isaac gave Loth a rightwys
man & an holy. And he deserved to be vi-
sited w aungels as his fadir Abraham
was. And for this Loth Abrahams smore
iii. wyfes for they toke Loth. Genesis
xiiij. Of whom one was sayd to be fadir
loth / but here he is called Amraphel.
¶ This Abrahams had many wyues as
Sara and Agar. And his chyldren and
his bretherne had many chyldren. But
for vs & wyte cronycles it is not need-
ful to speke of all men but of the noble
faders. And vnde psal. i fine gen. ¶ Wel-
chillederth this tyme was kyng of Ieru-
salem. This man was called a rightwys
kyng for his exceeding holnes. And

Dars prima.

he offered breed & wyne to Abraham in
signe of a mystry. He was in lyke wyse
the priest of þe hye god. ¶ Semiramis
the chyde kynge of Babylon ordeyned
an army & went in to ynde & obteyned
the countree. And so by all Asyem & the
kyngdome of Assurionum was bylated
And he multiplyed the cite of Babylon
myghtely / and made walles aboute it.
¶ This Semiramis had a wyfe / & he for
soke her. And it is wyrtten that she was
dayne of her sone Sinus / because she
prouoked hym to þe vyleful concupiscence
¶ Sic di. Aug. xviij. de ci. dei. And þe may-
ster i his boyes sayeth þe wedded her
owne sone / & he gate a childe on her / the
whiche ordeyned Babylon to be þe heerd
of all this realme. ¶ Sinus the fourth
kyng of Babylon was sone to grete Si-
nus. Of this man I tell is wyrt / but þe
he newe his owne moder / as is said afo-
re. ¶ Terz was þe fyfth kyng of Baby-
lon. And vnder hym was bozne pñac.

Aso pñac sone of Abraham of þe
lyne of Chyrist lyued. C. lxxx. yere.
¶ This pñac had a wyfe called Reber-
ca / and on her he gate two sones Esau &
Jacob. This Esau sold his enherytance
to his bruder Jacob. And he was the
fader of Iourneyn / & he had in posses-
sion the hyll of Sey / & put first mares
to asses / wherof was engendred mules.
¶ About this tyme. xxx. lordshyps and
Somoria for they horrible synne were
overthowen. The wyse of Leth lokyn-
ge backwarde / turned into a salt ston /
the weth that no man in the wyse of de-
lyberacyon sholde desyre chynge past.
¶ Her Aug. de ciuitate dei.

¶ Anno mñdñ. lxx. iij. C. lxxij. Et ante
Chyristi natiuitate. 93. viij. C. lxxij.

Iacob lyued. C. xlvij. yere. This
Jacob had four wyues of some

concubynes / þe is to wyte / Lyam / Balā /
zeipham / & Rachel. Lyam was þe fyfth
wyfe / & she was thre yed / & she bare
þe. vi. sones. Judas / Ruben / Simeon /
Leuy / ysachar / zabulon / & a daughter þe
hyght Dyna. Balā seruante to Lyam & co-
cubyne to Jacob bare hym two sones /
Dan & Aseptalon. Rachel þe secōd wyfe
to Jacob was barayn longe tyme / & at
the last she bare him two sones / Joseph
& Beniamyn. zeipha seruante to Rachel
bare Jacob. ii. sones / Gad & Asar / & eue-
ryche of these made a tribe / of whom in
this place is not necessary to speke. Vi-
de pñā in gesi. ¶ Joseph sone to Jacob
was bozne. lxxx. yere of his faders age
& he lyued. C. i. yere. ¶ This tyme zee-
ses was kyng of Babilon / vnder whom
was bozne Jacob / & he was þe seuenth
kyng of Babylon. ¶ Armaucire was
kyng after him. And after saynt Justin
in þe mānes dayes our lord appered to
pñac pmyssyng hym those thynges þe
whiche he pmyssed to his fader. ¶ Belo-
cus the. ix. kyng of Babylon was after
this man. And vnder Belocus or in his
tyme our lord spake w Jacob / promy-
syng hym þe he had pmyssed to his fader
the whiche were two. The possession of
the londe of pmyssyon & Chanaam / & þe
benediccyon of all þe people in his seed / þe
whiche is our lord Jesu chryst. ¶ Abra-
ham aboute this tyme decessed / & was
buryed in Hebzon. ¶ Inachus the first
kyng that euer was in Grece was this
tyme / for than the kyngdome began.
¶ Phodomus was kyng after hym / &
he ordeyned lawes to the Grekes. &c.

¶ Anno mñdñ. 93. iij. C. lxxij. Et ante
Chyristi natiuitate. 93. viij. C. lxxij.

Iudas sone of Jacob descended of
hym / & of this trybe of Judas ca-
me þe kynges pgenpe / & at þe last Chyrist

our lord. Judas gate Phares / & Phares Elron / & of these men lytel is had in scripture: but Mathew reherfeth them.

Belus in this Phares dayes was kynge of Assurion / or of Babylon / & he was p. r. kyng / vnder whom ysaac de- cased. Achias p grete astronomer was this tyme / p whiche is lykened to bere bp heuē on his sholders / bycause of his knowynge in sterres.

Sarapis was the thyrde kynge of Arguion / or of Grece / & this Sarapis was otherwyle called Apis / & he came into Egypt in a mighty nauy / & there decesed / and was made of p blynde gentyles p egypciens the gretest god amonge them. And p tyme began a meruaylous superstyon in ydolatry of a calfe of two colours / whiche they called Apem / & p calfe dyed / the deuylles procured a lyke calfe to p for to be made / p they myght deceyue p rude people. And after p the children of israel dyd so in lyke wyse (be paty) And what thysge coude be moze wretched or folishe in man haupng reason.

Degus was p fourth kyng of Grece / after whome p noble cite of Arg^o toke his name. Cicropheg edyfied Athenes in Grece / & this cite was p nourysshur of liberal scyence & of many philosophers / yet they were deceyued by deuils / & grete supersticioste in p cite was made (vide Aug^o . & mirabile fabulā repies)

Omogires was p fyrst man p put oxen to p plough. **B**elus this tyme was kyng of Babylon / & he was the .x. kyng of p region / & vnder hym dyed ysaac.

Pharao was kyng of Egypte / whiche receyued Joseph / & exalted hym for thinterpretacion of his dreames (vide sciz pulcherrimāq histo- riā. gen. xlii. & c.)

Amichus was the xii. kyng of Babylon / vnder whom dyed Joseph a blisfed man in chastite. **P**harao Emopphis about Emopmis dayes was kynge of Egypte / & this Pharaon

knewe not Joseph / ne none of his kyn- rede / & he comanded p chyldren of israel to be dyntoned / as it is had Exodi. i. Pe clerkes may loke that boke / and the lay folke wyll loke to cronycles / but aboute this tyme the story of Exodi began.

Anno mundi. iii. m. b. C. xliii. Et ante Christi natiuitate. m. b. C. ix.

Aram sonc to Elrom of p lyne of Chyrl was about this tyme / & he gate Amynabab & Raalon / of these men is lytel wyrtten in scripture / & therfore I ptebe to other. **J**ob p holy m^a ensample of all patience this tyme was borne of p lyne of Racho: broder of Abra ham / & he lyued many yeres / & after p god had assayed hym in his patience he lyued an. C. & xi. yere (p Aug. gre. & lix) **M**oyles about this tyme was borne / & the children of Israel were in grete per- plexite / & Moyles was put in p water to be dyntoned. **A**aron aboute this tyme was borne. **D**astus was the .xiii. kyng of Babulon / & Moyles was borne vnder hym in Egypte. **C**itrops was the fyrste kyng of Athenes. And after saynt Austyn the Grekes wyote many lesynges in theyr doctres that tyme / for of a lytell thysge they make a grete fame for to shewe they: conynge / for there was the bouresure of Greces.

Anno mundi. iii. m. b. C. lxxviii. Et ante Christi natiuitate. m. b. C. xi.

This tyme was Amynadab of chri- stes lyne sonc to Aaron / whiche after Moyles in a full sayth entered in to the reed see / & bradde not whā many an C. were afterde lest they sholde haue ben dyntoned / & therfore he deserued to byn- ge fourth p kynges lygnage / of whome descended our lord Jesu Chyrl. **M**oy- ses was the fyrst iudge of Israel p eue

was and he was iudge. xl. yere. This
Moses was þe moost excellent pphete
that euer god made. & the moost notable
wyrt of Moyses / & of his lounge be-
um & erth speketh. for he sawe our lord
de face to face. whiche here in scripture
was none founde but he & Paule the a-
postle. ¶ Aaron þe first bysshop lyued an
C. xlii. yere. This Aaron was called of
god in to þe dignite of þe hye pcest. or of a
bysshop. & was ordeyned þe eternal testa-
ment to hysse & them þe came after him
for þe grete power of pcesthode. Whan
he was an. C. xlii. yere of age he dyed
& was buryed in þe hyll of Hor. And his
sone Eleazarus succeeded in þe bysshop-
ryche. ¶ Pharaos Bocaris this tyme
was kynge of Egypte / & this Pharaos
wolde not here þe comaundement of god /
ne deliuer the children of Israel. wher
fore he was punysshed with. x. plagis.
¶ At þe p. 1000. And after he wold all his hoost
were drownded in the reed see. ¶ Alon
sone to Amynadab was prince of þe try-
be of Juda in þe deserte. And about this
tyme þe lawe of god was gyven in þe hyll
of Synay. and þe boke of Leviticus was
wyrtten. & another boke was called Nu-
merus. & the tabernacle was ordeyned.
The boke of deuteronomius was made.
Balaam was prophete & was gayne.

¶ Anno mudi. iij. M. vii. C. lxxv. Et an-
te Christi natiuitate. M. iij. C. lxxiiij.

Salmon of the lyne of Christ was
aboute this tyme. & had a wyfe
that hight Reab. Moyses aboute this
tyme deceased. þe water of some Jordan
was drye. Jerico was taken. the sonne
stode in þe firmament vnnuuable (Histo-
ria li. Josue incipit et Judicu) Josue þe
second Judge of Israel was a mighty
man in batayle. & the fyrst in deserte. he
ouercame Amalech. & after Moyses he

was ordeyned of god iudge of Israel of
whome þe batayles the doctores & þe re-
ligious lyfe. ye may se in þe boke of Jo-
sue wyrtten. ¶ Eleazar was the secunde
bysshop. & he & Josue deuyded the londe
of promysse to the children of Israel.
¶ He descended almost all þe bysshops
vnto Christ. ¶ Othoniel of þe trybe of
Juda was þe thyrde iudge. & this man
deliuered þe children of israel by batayle
from þe realme of Mesopotamye. This
man toke Ham to his wyfe. þe whiche
asked þe vale londres. aboue & bynether of
her fader Caleph. At þe p. iudic. i. ¶ Oth
was the fourth iudge of Israel. This
man subdued Eglon þe kyng of Moab. &
deliuered the children of Israel. This
was a myghty man in batayle. & he bled
the one as well as þe other for his ryght
hande. About this tyme þe kyng of Pta-
lye began. & many tymes they names
be chaunged. of þe whiche pgenye þe Ro-
maynes shewe more clerely. ¶ Janas
was þe first kyng in ptalye. & after ward
of þe rude gentyles he was worshypped
as god. saynyng he to haue two faces
for they worshypped his feet in þe begyn-
nyng of þe yere. as he were þe ende of the
last yere. & þe begynnyng of þe fyrst. And
of hym þe moneth of January hath his
name. ¶ Amictus was þe viij. kyng of
Babylon. vnder whome Josue deceased.

¶ Anno mudi. iij. M. vii. C. lxxv. Et an-
te Christi natiuitate. M. iij. C. lxxiiij.

Bos sone to Salmon of þe lyne of
Christ was this tyme. but of hy
is lytell wyrtten. saue þe Mathewe nom-
beth him in þe genealogye. As doctours
saye. there was made chypnyng of na-
mes bytwene Boos & Oth. for at the
last bytwene them were. ii. C. lxxij. yere
The whiche tyme to one man may not
be referred. & therfore here many chyn-

ged is spoken of: I come agayn to þe lyne
of Chyph. Nicolaus de lyra brq̄ sit erex
Boon un' post alii. ¶ Wangar was þe
iudge of israel but he lyued no yeres.
¶ Deboia was þe. iij. iudge. This De-
boia was a woman / & for þe grace of her
pphocy was gyuen to her honour þe
iuge of israel. She by þe commandement
of god killed Baruch þe holde go light
wile þe enemyes of israel / & þe chyldren
of israel gate þe victory agaynst Jabin
kyng of Chanaan / & Elazar þe pryncce
of his chyualry / & he destroyed them. We
pyndeth. iij. ¶ Othenies was bysshop
And this Othenies was a ponge man for
goddes sake drew many lecherous men
& therfore our lord was pleased w' hym.
¶ Saturnus this tyme was kyng in
yralpe / & he was þe secunde kyng there /
this Saturnus is sayd to come from þe
londe of Cretens in to yralpe / whome by
p'phocy through a mercurious bynd-
nes they sayd he was no man but a god
And yet they sayd that he reigned upon
them as they kyng / & he taught men
to song thei kydes. And of Saturnus
the Romayns were called Saturnians.
¶ Picus was sone to Saturnus / & o-
he was kyng in yralpe he was kyng
in Laurentyn / & after his decess of the
gentyles was worshypped for a god.

¶ Anno mundi. iij. m. vij. C. lxxv. Et
ante Chyph natiuitate. m. iij. C. xliij.

O Edeon the. iij. iudge of israel
was this tyme this Edeon sub-
dued. iij. kynges. Orb. jebec. jeb. and
Babiana. And he subdued Babian to
israel. Vide p'la. Judic. vi. vij. et. viij.
¶ Bocci was bysshop in israel than.
¶ Abimelech the. iij. iudge in israel
was natural sone to Edeon / & he was
not called of god / but malyciously call-
ed on hym the pryncer of israel. And

he drew. lxx. of his bietherne / wherfore
he ended his lyfe myscheuously. We py-
ndeth. ix. ¶ Tola was the. ix. iudge of
israel / & this man guided hym after þe
old gouernance of iudges by þe maner of
direction & consyle / more than by domi-
naris. ¶ Bocci was bysshop about this
tyme / but of hy is lytel wyrtien. ¶ Japh-
the. x. iudge of israel had. xxx. sones /
whome he made prynces of. xxx. cyties
And bycause there were good men & tu-
led to þe pleasure of god. Therfore in the
dayes of those two men israel dwelle
to our lord / & therfore all thyng came &
was in prosperite & weith. ¶ Samus
was the. iij. kyng of yralpe / & he was
kyng of Laurentyn also. ¶ Larnus was
kyng in yralpe after samus / & of this
Larnus was þe goddom called Larnus.
¶ And Carmelis daughter to Euandri
foude first larnus letters. ¶ Chauranus
about this tyme was kyng of Babylon
or of Assyrye / & under this man Troye
was destroyed first. The occasyon of þe
batayle of Troy began for a lytel chynce
in so moche as Lamydon kyng of Troy
receyued not Hercules & Jason to due
honour as they sholde haue be receyued
& of so lytel a respace how many bar-
mes & hurtres grewe. ¶ Sibilla delphi-
ca afore þe batayle of Troy prophced
how a childe sholde be boine of a virgyn
wout mannes seed. ¶ Lamydon kyng
of Troy was slayne / and his daughter
Creona was taken in to Gyckes londe.
For þe whiche folowed myghty batayle
& moost ferefull myscheuns. Vide hys-
torem troianum. Hercules with Jason de-
stroyed Jyn of Troy the whiche none
after was buydd of Pyrramus sone to
Lamydon. This Hercules dyd many
mercurious thynges / & many myghty
batayles / & in yralpe l'p'nges ben say-
ned on hym. At þe last whi he had ouer-
come moche people he was betrayed by

Wars prima.

A Herte þe Dejanira his wyfe sent him
antonyment / & whā he myght not suffice
the payne / he ranne in to a fyre & brante
hymselfe / & whā he was deyd / he was
wothpypped of the gentyles for a god.

Circa annū mundi. lii. 99. ix. C. lxxv.
Et aſſi Chriſti natiuitate. 99. ij. C. xliiij.

After the deeth of Jai: Judge of
Iſrael / the people of Iſrael ad-
ded newe ſynnes to theyr olde / and our
lorde toke them in to the power of þe phis-
licians / & to the chyldren of Amon. xliiij.
yere / & they were greatly oppreſſed: & thā
they cryed to our lord. Thā Jether was
enſpyred with almyghty god / & faught
agaynſt Amon & the ſchyprouſ people
of þe hyl of Eſtraym. And for an unpri-
dent boyce he ſelwe his owne daughter
ſolymly / & dyd ſacri. ce to god with her
Judic. xi. et. xij. **C**dyr this tyme was
biſſhop in Iſrael / & he was of þe ſced of
Aron by þe lyne of Eleazari / the whiche
deyd / through þe prouſpion of god þe biſ-
ſhopryche turned to þe lyne of Phamar-
an. C. 7. xx. yere / in þe whiche lyne hely
was the fiſt bygh biſſhop / & Abiathar
was the laſt. **C**Ebeſſam was iudge in
Iſrael. lii. yere / & he was the. xii. iudge
& he was named othe wyſe Boos / the
whiche wedded Ruth. **C**Abiſalon þe. xiiij.
iudge of Iſrael was iudge. x. yere. And
vnder theſe tymes þe chyldren of Iſrael
were quyet / & therfore no notable thy-
ges were done in theſe dayes. **C**Abdon
the. xliiij. iudge gouerned in Iſrael. liiij.
yere. And about this tyme þe hystory of
Ruth was wyten. **C**Duthamis this
tyme was kyng of Aſſurion. And Pri-
amus kyng of Troy ſone to Laomedon
buylded his cite agayne meruaylouſly
ſtrong / & began batayle wth the Grekes
to his owne hurte / & he had a ſone was
called Hector / a leyfull gotten ſone by his

wyfe Ecuba. This man was ſaythful
& wyſe / & incōparable of ſtrength & no-
bienes. This Priamus had an other ſone
that was called Paris / the whiche toke
away fro þe lorde of Grekes Helena wyfe
to Henclaus þe kyng. **C**Agamenon the
kyng broder to Henclaus þe lorde of al þe
Grekes hoſt faught agaynſt Troy / & at
the laſt he wanne þe cite ſaiſly / & to þe gre-
kes moost ſhame & ſclaudore þe myght be.
for certaynly þe myght be called an vn-
happi batayle where no man giueth lo-
uyng to þe Grekes / but euery man repoz-
teth ſhame. **C**Eneas was kyng in yta-
lye. iij. yere. And this Eneas after that
Troy was deſtroyed of þe Grekes came
in to ytalie with. xx. ſhyppes / and dyd
myghty batayles there. And this man
had wedded Priamus daughter Cindu-
ram. And he was made a god through
the errour of the comyn people / & of this
man came Julius cezar & Octavianus
Augustus. **C**Uliſes an eloquent man
amonge all the Grekes after many pe-
rylles on the ſee / went home to his De-
nelopein the moost ſaythful & the moost
chaſte woman that is redde of. And the
Grekes perillyſhed wretchedly after that
they had deſtroyed Troie boche on the
water and on the londe as they wente
homewarde agayn. And that was the
pynnyſſall date of theyr wyptynge af-
ter that byctory. for they wrote theyr
hystories and other wyptynges thus.
Anno primo ū ſecūdo. 32. poſt Troiam
captam. And that was the thyrde yere
of Abdon iudge of Iſrael.

Circa annū mundi. liiij. 99. xx. Et
ante Chriſti natiuitate. 99. C. lxxviij.

O Beth of Chyſtes lyne ſone bnto
Boos is reherſed in Parbebe.
CDaniſon þe. xii. iudge regned. xx. yere
this Daniſon was þe moost ſtroggeſt man þe

ever was / & he deliuered Israel from
the Philistines / & for his mercurialous
strength men crowed he had ben Hercules.
Et ei^m mirabilia opa vide iudic. xiiij.

Anno mundi. iiii. m. lxxv. Et ante
Christi natiuitatem. m. C. xiiij.

Iesse sone to Obery of the lyne of
Christ / otherwoyle called ysay sa
der to Dauid this tyme lyued a notable
man in honeste / no kyng ne grete gouer
nour. But of him many tymes is made
mencon in holy scripture. for of hym
descended Christ our sauour. This
tyme Hely was iudge & bisshop in israel
the whiche had. iiij. sones / Ophni & Phi
nees / & for he corrected them not suffici
ently / he & they were punished bothe of
our lord / for they were slayne of p^rhi
listies / & Hely fell of his sete & brake his
neck. This Hely was iudge next after
Samson / & not of the lignage of Aion p^r
was fyrst byshop of god electe / but of
p^rhamar the lignage dured an. C. x. y.
pere / in p^r whiche lignage Hely was the
fyrst byshop / & Abiathar the last. Vide
plura. i. regum.

At this tyme Saul was kyng in
Israel after the mayster in his
hystories / & Iosephus in his. viij. boke
This Saul was p^r fyrst kyng in Israel
& reigned. xx. pere / the whiche o^r he was
kyng was a good man & electe of god /
but afterwarde wretchedly he fayled / &
he was slayne and his thre sones on the
hylles of Gylboi. In p^r tyme of Saul
Samuel was iudge & pphete in Israel
an holy man / & borne of a barayn moder
many a daye / & he mynystrid afore our
lorde from a chyld to his age / and was
not bygh byshop / but he iudged Israel
all p^r dayes of his lyfe / & was p^r very pro
phete of god. Two kynges he enoynted
Saul fyrst / & after Dauid. This Da-

uid alone and Moyses are credde / that
they prayed for thei^r enemyes in all the
olde testamet. Of this Samuel & Saul
ben dyuers oppynons. Floder sayth p^r
Samuel & Saul ruled Israel. xl. yere.
And Iosephus in his. viij. boke / & the
mayster in his stories sayen Samuel
to be iudge. xii. yere alone. And after by
Saul to regne. xx. yere. Vide plura. i. re
gum.

Ascanus the. viij. kyng of ytalp
was sone to Enas / & buyded p^r
cure of Albion / & he was called the kyng
of Albanay. This Ascanus gate Scy
uius the. viij. kyng of ytalp / the whiche
Suluis was sader into Britte kyng
of Byrtayn now called Englonde. And
I leue of the kynges of ytalp / for they
dyd but lytell noble thynges tyll it be co
men to Romul^s & Remus p^r buyded Ro
me / & than shall those kynges come a
gayn. And now to perde to p^r cronicles
of Englonde / for p^r whiche namely this
boke is made. Cuenys & Padua were
buyded about this tyme of p^r resydur of
the Troiang. Homere p^r grete poete
about this tyme was / p^r whiche wyete
& fapned gloriously many a lesyng.

Incipit regnum Britannie /
nunc dicitur Anglia.



Whiche that I wyll speke of hute
it shall be shewed how the lorde of
englonde was fyrst named Albion
& for what cause it was so named.

In the noble londe of Britte there
was a noble kyng & myghty & a
man of grete renowne & was called Dio-
clesian that well & worthely by gover-
ned & ruled throughe his noble chivalry.
So & he conquered all the londes about
hym so that almost all & kynges of the
world to by were attendaunt. It befell
thus & this Dioclesian spoused a geyll
damosel & was wondrous fayre & was
his only daughter Labana & she lo-
ved hym as reason wolde / so & he gate
on her. xxxij. daughters / of & whiche &
eldest was called Albine / and these da-
moselles whan they came unto age be-
came so fayre & it was wonder / wherof
Dioclesian anon let make a somynge
& commaunded by his lettres that all the
kynges & heide of hym sholde come at a
certayn daye as in his lettres were con-
teyned to make a feest royal. It whiche
daye theyer they came & brought with
them admyrals / princes / dukes & noble
chivalry. The feest was royally arayed
and there they lpyed in ioye and myght
ynough & it was wonder to wyte. And
it befell thus & Dioclesian thought to
mary his daughters amonge all those
kynges & were at & solempnite. And so
they spake & dyd that Albine his eldest
daughter & all her sisters rychely were
maryed to. xxxij. kynges & were lordes
of grete honour at this solempnite. And
whan this was done every kyng toke
his wyfe & ladde them in to thei owne
countrie & there made them quenes. And
it befell thus afterward & this dame Al-
bine became so stoute & so sterne that she
tolde lpye pryce of her lorde / & of by had
scope & helppyt & wolde not do by wyll

but she wolde haue her owne wyll in by
used matres. And all her other sisters
everychone bare them so euill agaynst
thei lordes & it was wonder to wyte.
And for as moche & them thought that
thei husbondes were not of so hie pa-
rentage come as thei father. But those
kynges & were thei lordes wolde haue
chastysed them with sayre maner vpon
all loue & frendshipp & they shold amende
thei euill condicions. But all was for
nought / for they dyd thei owne wyll in
all thyng & them lybed & had of power
wherfore those. xxxij. kynges vpon a
tyme & often tymes bette thei wyues
for they wende that they wolde haue a-
mended them & thei tatches & wyched
nes. But of suche condicions they were
that for sayre speche & warynge they
dyd all & worse & for betynges cnyones
moche the worse. Wherfore the kyng &
had wedded Albine wyote the tatches
and condicions of his wyfe Albine &
the letter sent to Dioclesian her father.
And whan the other kynges herde that
Albines lorde had sente a letter to Dio-
clesian / anon they sente lettres sealed
with thei scales the condicions & tat-
ches of thei wyues. Whan the kyng
Dioclesian sawe & herde so many com-
playntes of his daughters / he was sore
ashamed and became wonderly angry
and wroth to ward his daughters / and
thought how he myght amende it that
they so mysdyd / & anon sent his lettres
to the. xxxij. kynges & they sholde come
to hym / & byngt to them thei wyues
everychone at a certayn day / so he wol-
de there chastyse them of thei wyched
nes & if he myght in any maner wyse. So
that & kynges came all at & tyme & daye
that tho was set bytwene hym and the
kynges. Dioclesian receyued them in
moche honour / & made a solempne feest
unto all that were vnder thei lordes

Thypp. And the thyppes were after that so-
lempnise þe kyng & doctesyan sent after
his xxxij. daughters þe they shold come
& speke with hym in his chambere. And
whā they were come, he spake to them
of theyr wyckednes & of theyr curthe, &
angery them reproved & blamed & said
to them. That yf they wolde not be cha-
stysed, they shold lose his love for ever-
more. And whā þe lorde herde all this
they became abashed & greatly ashamed
& sayd to theyr father þe they wolde make
all amēdes. And so they departed out of
theyr fathers chambere. And Albyne that
was þe eldest syster laboure them all to her
chambere, & tho made to voyde al þe wyte
therin, so þe no pson was amonge them
but she & her systers toggyder. This sayd
this Albyne. My fayre systers, well we
knowe þe the kyng our father ys hath re-
proved, blamed & despyed, for he cause
to make us obedyent to our husbondes
but certaynly þe shall I neuer whyles þe
I live, syth that I am come of a more
hyer kynges blode than myn husbonde
is. And whā she had thus said, all her
systers sayd þe same. And than sayd Al-
byne. Well I wote fayre systers, þe our
husbondes haue cōplayned unto our fa-
ther upon us, wherfore he hath us thus
foule reproved & despyed, wherfore sy-
sters my cōseyle is þe this nyght whā
our husbondes ben a bedde, all we shold
allene to kyttre theyr throttes, & than we
may be free of them, & better we may
do this wither our fathers power thā any
where els. And anon all þe ladyes con-
sented & granted to this counseyle. And
whā nyght was comen, the lordes & la-
dyes went to bedde. And anon as they
slepe, they kyttre all theyr
husbondes throttes, & so they slewe them
all. Whā doctesyan theyr father herde
of this thyng, he became wroth ryght
furyously agaynst his daughters, & a-

none he wolde them all have bent. But
all the barons & lordes of thatre coun-
tey, not so for to do suche straungnes to
his owne daughters, but shold voyde þe
loure of them for evermore, so that they
never shold come agayne, & so he dyd.
And doctesyan þe was theyr father ano-
ne cōmaunded them to go in to a shyppe,
& despyred to them viarles for halfe a
petr. And whā this was done, all the
systers went in to the shyppe & caried
forth in þe see, & betwix all theyr frendes
to Appolyn þe was theyr god, & so longe
they sayled in the see tyll at the last they
came & arryved in an yle þe was all wy-
dernes. And whā dame Albyne was
come to þe londe & all her systers, this Al-
byne went first forth out of þe shyppe, &
sayd to her other systers. For as moche
as I am þe eldest syster of all this cōpa-
ny, & first this londe haue take, & for as
moche as my name is Albyne, I wyl þe
this londe be called Albyon after myne
owne name. And anon all her systers
granted to her with a good wyll. Than
went out of þe shyppe all þe systers & take
the londe Albyon as theyr syster called it,
& there they went by & dwelt, & founde
neither man ne woman ne chyld, but
wyde beestes of dyvers kyndes. And
whā they viarles were dyspryded &
sayled, they fedde them with herbes &
fruytes in season of þe petr, & so they ly-
ued as they best myght, & after þe they
toke fleshe of dyvers beestes & became
wonders fatte, & so they despyed manes
company, & manes kynde them sayde.
And so; here they were dwoundes con-
ragious of kynde, so that they despyed
more mannes company, than any oþer
solace or myght. Whā the devyll þe per-
ceyved them by dyvers cōntres, & toke
a body of þe petr, & lyhyng natyres shad-
ow of men, & came in to þe londe of Albyon,
lay by those women & shad the natyres

upon them & they conceived & brought forth grates. Of which one was called the dogmagog & another Langerigan. And so they were named by dyuers names & in this manner they came forth & were borne by verbe grates in Albion. And they dwelled in caves & in hylls at theyr wyll & had the londe of Albion as them lyth. Unto þe tyme that Spute arrived & came to Ceneas þe was in the yle of Albion & there this Spute conquered & distroyed þe grates about sayd.

Explicit prima pars.

There begynneth now how Spute was gotten & how he slew fyrst his moder & after his fader. And how he conquered Albion that after he named Bityayne after his owne name that now is called Englonde after the name of Cugylt of Anconye. This Spute came into Bityayne aboute the .xviij. yere of hys.

Ye it knowen that in þe noble cite of grete Troy there was a noble knyght and a man of grete power that was called Ceneas. And when þe cite of Troy was tyn & destroyed through them of Grece. This Ceneas with all his meny fledde thens & came in to Lombardy. And the was kyng & gouernour of that londe a kyng that hyght Latyne. And another kyng there was þe hyght Turrocyne that strongly warred upon this kyng Latyne. & oftentimes dyd hym moche harme. And when this kyng Latyne herde þe Ceneas was come he receyued hym with moche honour & hym with helpe for as moche as he had herd of hym & dyd well þe he was a noble knyght and a knyght of his body & of his deede. This Ceneas helpe kyng Latyne in his warre & shortly for to kill so well &

so shortly he dyd that he slew Turrocyne & dycomfited hym & all his people. And when all this was done kyng Latyne gaue all þe londe that was Ceneas to this noble man Ceneas in mayage with Latyne his daughter the most fayrest creature that any man dyd. And so they lyued together in ioye and myght all the dayes of theyr lyues. And after Alcanus sone to Ceneas married a wyfe and upon her he gate a sone that was called Philune. And this Philune when he coude some reason of man bulyfing his fader and agaynst his wyll acquyented hym w a damoy. sei that was cosyn to Latyne that was kyng Latynes daughter þe quene that was Ceneas wyfe and brought the damoysele with chyld. And when Alcanus his fader it wyll anone let enquire of the wyfeliest maysters and of the gretest clerkes what chyld the damoysele sholde bynge forth. And they answered and sayd that she sholde bynge forth a sone that shold kill bothe his fader and his moder. And so he dyd. for his moder dyed in beryng of hym. And when this chyld was borne his fader let call hym Spute. And þe maysters sayd that he sholde do moche harme and sorowe in many dyuerse places and after he sholde come to grete honour and worship. This kyng Alcanus dyed when god wolde and Philune his sone receyued the londe and made hym wonderfull well beloued among his people. And so when Spute that was Philunes sone was .xv. yere olde he went upon a daye with his fader for to playe & solace. And as Spute shold haue thate into an hart his arrowe myshapped & glanced and so there Spute slew his fader.

How Spute was dyuen out of the londe & how he helde hym in Grece.

And when this misfortune was befallen all þe people of the londe made grette sorrowe / and were sore dyspleased. And because therof they dyous Brute out of þe londe / & wolde not suffre hym amonge them. And when he sawe that he might not abyde there / he went from thens into Grece / & there he founde his thousande men that were of þe kynrede of Troie / and were comen of grette blode as the story telleth / as of men and women & children the whiche were all holden in thraldome & bondage of kyng Pandras of Grece / for þe deth of Achilles that was betrayed & slayne at Troy. This Brute was a widders fayre man and a stronge & huge of his age / and of gladde chere & semblant / & also worthy of body / & was well beloued amonge his people. This kyng Pandras herde speke of his goodnes & condicions / & anone made hym to dwell with hym. So that Brute became widders prey & moche beloued with þe kyng / & dwelled longe tyme with the kyng. So at þe last they of Troy & Brute spake toggyder of kynrede & lygnage & of acquyntaunce / and there complayned thym vnto Brute of theyr sorrowe & of theyr bondage / and of many other shames þe kyng Pandras had done to them / & to Brute they sayd vpon a tyme. Pe be a lord of our lignage & a stronge man & a myghty / be pe our rappytaine & gouernour / & we wyll become your men / & shal fyll al your commaundement / & bynges vs out of this wretchednes & bondage / & we wyll fyght wth the kyng for trouth / wth the grace of þe grette god we shal overcome hym / & we shal make you kyng of this londe / & to you do homage / & of you we shal haue as evermore. Brute had the grette pryce of theyr homage þe they were brought in / & myrryly went fra þe kynges court / and the that were of Troy went & put

them into woodes & into mooraynes / & helde them there / and sente vnto kyng Pandras that he sholde gyue them licence for to departe safely out of his lode and kyngdom / for they wolde no longer dwell in his bondage. When kyng Pandras herde this / he was sore dyed and anoyed / & the swore that he wolde see them euerychone / and ordeyned a grette power / and went towarde them for to fyght wth them. But Brute and his men manly them defended and sperryd fought / & slawe all the kynges men that none of them escaped / and toke þe kyng and put hym in pryson / and ordeyned a counseyle amonge them selfe what they myght do wth the kyng. And some sayd that he sholde be put to deth / and some sayd that he sholde be cryed out of the londe / & some sayd þe he sholde be hient. And then spake a wyse knyght þe was called Symppis & sayd to Brute & to all them of Troy. If kyng Pandras wolde yelde hym & haue his lyfe / I counseyle þe he gyue vnto Brute (that is our duke & our souerayn) his daughter Gennogen to wyfe / & in maryage with her an hundred myppes well arayed / & all his treasours of golde & syluer / of coine & of wyne and as moche as we neede of one thyng & other / & than go we out of this londe and ordeyne vs a lode eis wher / for we nor none of our kynrede þe come after vs shal neuer haue peas in this londe amonge them of Grece / for we haue slayned so many of theyr knyghtes & of other frendes that evermore warr & dyscord shal be amonge vs. Brute the & all his folke consented gladly to þe counseyle / and this chfge they tolde to kyng Pandras. And he for to haue his lyfe / granted as moche as they demaunded / and anone gaue vnto Brute the fayre lady Gennogen his daughter to wyfe / and an hundred myppes wth as moche as thym

And when Bute had this an-
swer of Diane the goddesse / a-
none he lett her be by the ancre & capten
in the hye see. And whan he & his men
had sayled / they were more they fonde
land betwixt the wood of the see a. ap. men of
the wynter of Troy / & they founde a new
maner was called Copen. And when
Bute sayd whens they were / he toke
them in moche love in to his shippes / &
so he ladde them forth with hym. This
Copen there became Butes man / & to
by by damage. And so lōge they sayled
forth in the see tyll they came in to Gal-
loyn / & anone they arrived in p. haven
of L. pegers / & there they dwelled. viij.
dayes for to rest them / and to amende
theyr sayles there as they had neede. Ty
bynges loone came to kyng Goffar that
was wyf of that londe how that moche
people of Graunge londe were arrived
in to his londe in the haven of L. pegers
wherefore he was sore angryd & awped
that they came and arrived in his londe
without his lycence & his leue. And a-
none ordeyned hym a grete power for to
byrue out Bute & to destrope hym & all
his people. But it was so p. kyng Gof-
far was bytomyted & all his people / &
hymselfe fledde in to fraunce for to haue
helpe & socour. And in p. tyme reigned in
fraunce. xij. kynges / and. xj. of them as-
sembled a grete power for to helpe Gof-
far / & so to fyght against Bute. This
Goffar dwelled in the hynges of fraunce
half a yere & more. And in the meane
tyme that Goffar was in fraunce / Bute
& his company destroyed all the countie of
Galloway / and let take all the treasure
that was in Goffar / & made it to be
brought in to his shippes. And this
Bute made in that londe a fayre place
and a new maner / & there he let make a
fayre castell and a stronge. And whan this
was all done / kyng Goffar came from

And when Bute had this an-
swer of Diane the goddesse / a-
none he lett her be by the ancre & capten
in the hye see. And whan he & his men
had sayled / they were more they fonde
land betwixt the wood of the see a. ap. men of
the wynter of Troy / & they founde a new
maner was called Copen. And when
Bute sayd whens they were / he toke
them in moche love in to his shippes / &
so he ladde them forth with hym. This
Copen there became Butes man / & to
by by damage. And so lōge they sayled
forth in the see tyll they came in to Gal-
loyn / & anone they arrived in p. haven
of L. pegers / & there they dwelled. viij.
dayes for to rest them / and to amende
theyr sayles there as they had neede. Ty
bynges loone came to kyng Goffar that
was wyf of that londe how that moche
people of Graunge londe were arrived
in to his londe in the haven of L. pegers
wherefore he was sore angryd & awped
that they came and arrived in his londe
without his lycence & his leue. And a-
none ordeyned hym a grete power for to
byrue out Bute & to destrope hym & all
his people. But it was so p. kyng Gof-
far was bytomyted & all his people / &
hymselfe fledde in to fraunce for to haue
helpe & socour. And in p. tyme reigned in
fraunce. xij. kynges / and. xj. of them as-
sembled a grete power for to helpe Gof-
far / & so to fyght against Bute. This
Goffar dwelled in the hynges of fraunce
half a yere & more. And in the meane
tyme that Goffar was in fraunce / Bute
& his company destroyed all the countie of
Galloway / and let take all the treasure
that was in Goffar / & made it to be
brought in to his shippes. And this
Bute made in that londe a fayre place
and a new maner / & there he let make a
fayre castell and a stronge. And whan this
was all done / kyng Goffar came from

france and .xj. knynges with hym and
brought w hym .xx. M. men for to fyght
with Brute & his company. And Brute
had but .viij. M. and .iij. C. men & neuer
cheles whan þe two hostes mette togy-
der. Brutes folke through helpe of hym
seife & of Turyn his colyn & of Cozyn þe
well & manly hym defended so þe within
a whyle they had slayne of þe frenshmen
moore than two. M. Inone all tho þe were
alyue fledde away. And in this batayle
Turyn Brutes colyn was slayne & Bru-
te let bury hym worthely whan he had
space in þe castell þe he had made & tho let
call þe same castell Tours for bycause of
the name of Turyn þe there was buryed
And yet vnto this daye there is a noble
cite þe is called Tours. And whan kynge
Goffar dyed þe Turyn was deed he ca-
me agayne w his men & gaue a stronge
batayle to Brute. But Brute & his men
were so wery for fight þe þe they might
no longer endure & than went in to his
castell w all his men & made þe gates fast
for to saue them & toke counseyle amoge
them what they sholde do. Brute & Co-
zyn gaue counseyle & ordeyned ppyuely þe
Cozyn shold go out and busshie hym in a
wode tyll on þe morowe so þe in the mor-
nyng whan Brute sholde fyght w his
enemyes Cozyn shold come w his folke
on þe one syde & see & do all þe harme þe he
myght. And on the morowe at the daw-
nyng of þe daye Brute wente out of the
castell & fought fyrst w his enemyes &
they manly defended them. But within
a lytell tyme Brute & his men slewe .viij.
hundred of kynge Goffars men & than
came Cozyn w the busshemete & he & his
company smote to the grounde all those þe
wolde stande or abyde so þe kynge Gol-
far & his company were discomfyted &
fast they began to flee. And Brute & Co-
zyn with theyr company fyrstly them
pursued and slewe moore of them in the

kynges than they dyed in þe batayle. And
in this maner Brute had þe victory ne-
uertheless Brute made moche sorow for
his colyn Turyn that there was slayne
& other also that he had lost of his men
that is to saye .viij. hundred and .xv. the
whiche nobly he buryed in the same cas-
tell of Tours there wher that he had
buryed Turyn his colyn.

¶ Hollo Brute arrived at Cornes in
the yle than called Albyon and of the
wastying that was by twene Cozyn
and Gogmagog.



¶ Ad wha all this was done
Brute wold no longer dwell
there for to fyght & lose his
men. For kynge Goffars peo-
ple myght eury day increase moore and
moore & Brutes men lessed & therfore he
toke all his men & wente vnto the see &
had wynde & wether at theyr wyll. And
the fyrst daye after they arrived in an
hauen at Cornes & came in to this re-
sime þe than was called Albyon wher
they founde neyther man nor woman
saue grete gyautes & they dwelled in
mountaynes & in cauernes. And Brute

Salve the londe was saye and at his ly
henge and was good also for hym & for
all his people as Diane þ goddess had
begged hym. And therof was Bute
wonders gladd and let assemble upon
a daye all his folke to make a solemne
sacrifice and a grete feast in þ honour &
rauerce of Diane the goddess. Whiche
had counselled hys frys to come in to this
londe. And whā they had done they so
lequite as they late at they meet upon
a daye there came in upon them. xij. gy
auntes and xlv. of Butes men.
Bute & his mē anone stert vp & fought
with the gyauntes / & lewe them eue
rychone saue one þ was called Gogma
gog & he was mayster of all þ gyauntes
& he was stronger & hyer than ony of the
other & Bute kepte hym for to wrastle
with Cozyn his man for he was greter
and hyer than ony of Butes men from
the gyauntes dwarde. Gogmagog &
Cozyn undertoke there for to wrastle / &
so togyder they went & wrastled a lōge
tyme / but at the last Gogmagog helde
Cozyn so fast þ he brake two rybbes in
his syde wherfore Cozyn was sore an
gry / & there he toke Gogmagog by twes
ne his armes & cast hym do wne upon a
roche / so that Gogmagog brake all co
peres / & so he dyed an euyl deth / & ther
fore the place is called yet unto this day
the saute of Gogmagog. And thā after
Bute gaue all that countree vnto Cozyn
And than Cozyn called it after his name
Cozynwyle / & his men ben called Co
zynwyles / & so sholde men of that coun
tree be called for euermore. And in that
countree dwelled Cozyn & his men / and
they made colones and houses / & enha
byted that londe by they oſſone wyll.

¶ Chā Bute buyded London / & cal
led this londe Bytayne and Scotlande
Deyre and Wales Cambar.



Bute & his men wente forth
and saue aboute in dpuerle
places where þ they myght
fynde a good place and coue
nable that they myght buyde and ma
ke a cyte on for hym and for his folke.
And so at the last they came by a sayre
ryuer whiche now is called Temmes /
and there Bute began to buyde a say
re cyte and called it ne we Trope / in re
membraunce of grete Trope / from the
whiche place all they lagnage was co
men. And this Bute let sell do wne woo
des / & let ere & so we londes / & let ma we
dowen medowes for þ sustenance of hys
his people. And thā he departed þ londe
to them / so þ eche of them had a parte &
place to dwell in. And thā Bute let call
all this londe Bytayne after his name
and his folke Bytons. And this Bute
had goot on his wyfe Gennogen. iij. so
nes þ were worthy of dedes / þ first was
called Lozyn / þ seconde Albanah / & the

chynre Cambar / & Bute bare crowne
in the cite of newe Troy. xx. yere after þ
eyne that þeyre was made. And there
he made the lawes þ the Britons holde
And this Bute was wonderly well be
loued amonge all his people. And Bute
tes sones also loued wonderly well to
gyder. And whan Bute had fought all
the londe in length & bryde / he founde a
londe þ ioynd to Brytayne in the north
And that londe Bute gaue to Albanak
his sone / & let call it Albanie after his
name / þ now is called Scotlonde. And
Bute soude an other countree towarde
the West / and gaue that to Cambar his
other sone / & let call it Cambar after his
name / and now it is called Wales. And
whan Bute had reigned. xx. yere / than
he dyed in the cite of newe Troy.

How Lotryn that was Butes sone
entred with moche honour / and gouer
ned the londe well and worthely.

After Bute reigned Lotryn his
sone / that was þ seconde kynge
in Brytayne. And he began to reigne the
seconde yere of Samuel. This Lotryn
was crowned kyng w grete solempnite
of all Brytayne. And after whā he was
crowned kyng / Albanak & Cambar his
bretherne departed in to theyr owne coun
treys / & there they lyued with moche ho
nour and worship. And Lotryn reigned
well & wysely / & was moche beloued of
his people. And it befell so þ as Albanak
dwelled in his owne londe w moche ho
nour & worship / there came kyng Hum
bar of Hunlonde with a grete power / &
reigned in Albanie / & wold haue conque
red the londe / and began to warre upon
Albanak / & so they fought in batayle. Whan
Albanak was deed / the people of þ londe
fledde unto Lotryn / & tolde hem bycause
he was kynge of Brytayne how þ his

broder was slayne / & prayed hym of his
helpe & socour for to auenge his broders
deyth. Lotryn thā anon let assemble all
the Brytons of hene / of Douer vnto Des
rewent / of Dorsethe & Suffolke / of Here
sen & Lyncestry. And whan they were
assembled / they sped them fast towarde
theyr enemyes for to gyue them batayle
And Lotryn had sente to Cambar his
broder þ he sholde come vnto hym with
all þ power that he myght make / for to
helpe hym to auenge his broders deyth.
And so he dyd with a good will. Whan
they came togider they toke theyr waye
pryncely for to go seke kynge Humbar
where they myght fynde hym. And so
it befell that this kynge Humbar was
besyde a water that was a grete riuere
with his folke for to dysporte hym. And
there came Lotryn & Cambar his bro
der with all theyr folke sodeynly / & that
ony of theyr enemyes wist. And whan
Humbar sawe them come / he was sore
afraid / for as muche as his men wist it
not afore / and also they were barmyd.
And anon Humbar for drede lepte in to
the water / and drowned hymselfe / and
so he dyed / and his men were all slayne
in so moche that there escaped not one
awaye on lyue. And therfore is that wa
ter called Humbar / and euermore shall
be as longe as the world standeth / for
bycause that this kynge Humbar was
drowned therin. And after that Lotryn
went to his shippes & toke there golde
and syluer as moche as he founde vnto
hymselfe / & all that other prynces he gaue
vnto other folke of his host. And they
founde in one of the shippes a fayre da
moyzell whiche was kynge Humbars
daughter / and she was called Estyde.
And whan kynge Lotryn sawe her / he
toke her with hym bycause of the grete
beaute and faynes that he sawe in her
And for her he was ouertaken in loue /

so moche power & so moche humylyte / so
moche noblesse & so moche riches / so
grete a charge of souldiers thynges / & so
pure & honeste & contemplatyve of spi-
rytuel thynges / so many men to see / &
so many crowes to wepe for his decesse.
The p̄sa. i. regū. ¶ Wherfor this
tyme was byshop / & he sate for Saul
unto Dauid / & he was glorious w̄th
hym all his dayes. Gad / Nathan / and
Asaph were prophetes than. And Na-
than was broder sone to Dauid.

**How Demetrius sate his
broder Paulyn.**

This Demetrius & his broder Pau-
lyn sate fast for the londe. And
Demetrius began to regne the. xxv. yere
of Dauid: & for bycause that he was the
eldest sone he wold haue had all þe londe /
and Paulyn wolde not suffice hym / so þe
they toke a day of loue & accorde / and at
this daye Demetrius let kyll his broder
throughe treason / & hymselfe after ward
helde the londe / & anone let croune hym
kyng & regned / & after became so lycher
a man þe destroyed w̄m a whyle all þe
men of his londe. And at the last he be-
came so wyched & so lecherous þe for-
soke his owne wyfe & used the synne of
sodomie / wherfore almighty god was
gretly displeased & wyroth w̄th hym / &
vpon hym toke vengeance because of
his wychednes. For vpon a daye as he
wene forth on hunting in a forest there
he lost all his men þe were w̄th hym / &
wist not what he wold do / & so he went
vp & dwelle hymselfe alone / & cryed af-
ter his mē / but they were gone / & there
came thounes anone & all to dreme hym
asprees / whan he had regned. xxvi. ye-
re. And w̄th his people herde þe he was
so wroth / they made for hym thyngh
and anone made Chas his sone kyng /
and he regned w̄th moche honour.

**Anno mundi. lliij. 99. C. lxx. Et ante
Christi natiuitatem. 99. xxxij.**

Solomon the kyng of p̄nt of the
gyfte of our lord had a synghuler
excepyng about all men þe euer was in
this world / but alonely god in wysdom
& in cychele / in deuytees & in gloze / & fa-
miliarite w̄ god. And all though Moy-
ses & Dauid / Peter & Paule / Jerome &
Austyn / & other moo excelled hym in ho-
lynes / but yet they excelled hym not in
gloze & cychele. And this man so exce-
pyng all men / w̄tchedly fell. Of this
Solomon is reorde in an epylle of saint
Jerome / þe he gaue a chyldre on þe doughter
of Pharao at. xi. yere of his age. The
p̄sa regū. ¶ Sadoch this tyme was
byshop / & for he deuynd not to þe parte
of Abonie Dauids sone / but was w̄th
Nathan for Salomon / & Abiathar on
the other parte was deposed.

**Anno mundi. lliij. 99. ij. C. v. Et ante
Christi natiuitatem. 99. C. lxxviii.**

Boas succeeded Salomon his fa-
der in his kyngdome / but not in
wysdom. He was deuynd throughe þe
cōsple of yonge men / & lost. i. crytes /
in so moche as he answered not w̄tely
the people / as it is open. ierem. regū.
¶ Achimias was byshop / and was þe
sone of Sadoch. The p̄sa. i. Paralipo.

Reges Israel incipiunt.

Ieroboas regned kyng in Israel
xxij. yere / & he was first of þe hous
holde of Salomon and a good man / but
w̄th he was made kyng he was a mys-
chewous man in ydolatre / & made israel
to synne in ydolatre / & many grete mys-
uencytes were done almost to the des-
truction of all israel. For he was þe fyr-
gure of Achan. The p̄sa. iij. regū.
¶ Robias þe son of Boas regned in þe

Truly this year, and every year, as a
good man & helper to you, & others, he
watched & helped in poverty, & then
saw our hope shattered by the war, our
lives in pain. We go, in, right, or, it, pass.

¶ Anno mudi. lxxx. .9. .n. C. xlv. Et ante
Christi nativitatem. ix. C. lxxij.

Asa the sonne of Abias reigned
xviij. yere / in the begynnyng of
his regne he was a ryght wys man / &
walked as Dauid dyd / & he overcame
the Ethiopes / & destroyed ydolles. But
after that he was sworne to the kynge of
Sury Benedab / for Baasa kynge of Is-
rael than began warre agaynst hym / &
whiche displeased god / wherefore he sent
hym & prophete Anani / whome he put
in pryson / and therfore he had the godde
strongly & dyed therof. Ut ptz. iij. regu.
ij. para. Azarias sone to Achontas was
bysshop. ¶ Nadab kynge of Israel reg-
ned two yere / & whiche began to regne
the seconde yere of Asa kynge of Jewes /
& dyd not as his fader. And Baasa ouer-
threw hym / & reigned for hym. Ut pa-
tet. iij. regum. ¶ Baasa kynge of Israel
reigned. xliij. yere / the whiche began to
regne the thyrde yere of Asa kynge of Je-
wes / & he walked in the synnes of The-
roboam / and slew Jehu the prophete.
¶ Asa the sone of Baasa reigned in Is-
rael two yere / & Samri slew hym & reg-
ned. viij. dayes. ¶ Omri reigned. xij. yere
& hyd nought as his predecessours dyd.
¶ Acha sone to Omri reigned on Israel
xxij. yere / & aboue all & were afore hym
he was cursed / for wycked Iesabel cu-
led more than he / and moued hym to fol-
lowe her. Ut patet. iij. regum.

Colong Charles the first he began to
reigne the .xiiij. yere of Dauid / and both
he conquered fraunce.

This Chace rigned in yere a he
 was a strong & a myghty man
 withough his myght & helpe of his kny-
 ghts & squiers all made a towne there
 so made gold & silver & when he came
 agayne into this londe he made a cite &
 after his own name called it Chace & it
 now is called Cwercyke. And this knyng
 made þe castell of maydens & now is cal-
 led Cornburgh. This knyng had .xx. son-
 nes & .xxij. daughters by diuers womē
 gotten and these sonnes were called as ye
 shall here. Byrte grenewelde / Wargand
 Seiscil / Worchwode / Slengham / Bla-
 dud / Jak / Rindar / Roselin / Wpabogh
 Godeherl / Thormman / Silbaugh / For-
 langbur / Paibor / Ketin / Rother / Raier
 and Almaruch. And þe daughters byght
 as foloweth. Elegine / Pmoge / Oghdas
 Guenbian / Suardich / Augarel / Guent-
 hold / Cagustel / Gorgho / Michel / Wed-
 han / Mailour / Ondur / Cabriedan / Ba-
 gan / Renthely / Arest / Cheghan / Skal-
 dud / Glad / Heberhyn / Ibalaghe / and
 Blandan & these were the .xxij. dought-
 ters. And the byetherne became all good
 knyghtes & worthy in many countrees.

Of kynge Bute grenewelde the
first sonne of kynge Ebur.

After þe deth of kynge Ebyac regi-
ned Byute grenewelde his sone
xxx. yere / whiche was Ebyacs first sone
that well & nobly reigned / & when tyme
came he dyed / and lyeth at yorke

¶ Of kynge Leyl that was Brute
greueldeys sone.

Ald Johan kynge Brute greth
 that was deed regned his sone
 Leyll. xxi. yere / and he made a fayre
 towne and let call it Harleyll after his
 owne name. And he was a wyllyng man

And well beloved of his people / & when
he had reigned. xxiij. yere he dyed & lyeth
at Marley. ¶ And in this tyme reigned
kyng Salomon in Ierusalem / & made þ
noble temple. And to him came Sibelle
quene of Saba for to here & se if it were
soth þ me spake of þ grete & noble wyte
& wysdome of kyng Salomon. And she
foude it sothe that men had her tolde.

¶ Anno mudi. iiii. m. lxxvi. Et ante
Christi natiuitatem. lx. C. xliij.

I Osaphat kyng of Iewes was a
good man & a ryche / & a deuout in
the waye of our lord / & reigned. xxv. yere
and dyd none yll / but to þ cursed kyng of
Israel gaue helpe / & other lytel thynges
And therfore our lord was w hym. ¶ At
p. ii. para. ¶ Helias the grete pphete
was this tyme an holy man þ was lyf-
ted vp in to paradyse w grete solace in a
chayre. ¶ Pachas & Abdias prophesied
with hym. ¶ Ochozias sone of Achab
reigned in Israel two yere / and sente to
Belsabub god of Achaban to be helde /
for the whiche he dyed / after þ sayenge
of Helie. ¶ At patet. iiii. regum.

¶ Of kyng Lud Ludibrias that
was kyng Leyses sone.

And this kyng Lud Ludibrias
made the cite of Caunterbury &
Wynchestre / & he reigned. xxxij. yere / &
than he dyed / & lyeth at Wynchestre.

¶ Of kyng Bladub that was Lud-
bias sone / how he reigned and was a
good man and a nygromancer.

After this Lud ludibrias reigned
Bladub his sone a grete nygro-
mancer / & throug his craft of nygro-
mancy he made a meruaylous hote bath

as the Iest telleth / and he reigned. xxi.
yere / and lyeth at nether Trope.

¶ Anno mundi. iiii. m. lxxvi. Et
ante Christi natiuitatem. lx. C. viij.

Ioram kyng of Iewes sone to Jo-
saphat reigned. viij. yere. this Jo-
ram was a cursed man / and had a good
fader / he serue his brethren / & myghty
ly lyued as dyd the kynges of Israel /
therfore he was sore tormented and dyed
vnhappely. ¶ At p. ii. para. ¶ This ty-
me Helias was rauysched in to para-
dyse. ¶ Ochozias or Alarias kyng of
Iewes reigned one yere / & liued nought
as his fader dyd / & anone was slayne w
all the hous of Achab. ¶ Achalia moder
to Alarias toke the kyngdome / & serue
all the kynges blode / & reigned. x. yere / &
the. viij. yere of Joiada byshop she was
slayne. iiii. reg. ¶ This Alarias & his sone
Joas & his newewe Amazia. ¶ Achete
the euangelyst putteth not in the lyne of
Christ for they myfdebes. ¶ Joram
kyng of Israel reigned. xij. yere / & whi-
che began to regne the. xvij. yere of Jo-
saphat for his broder Ochozias / & cursed-
ly he lyued / & was slayne of Iehen w al
his faders housholde. ¶ At p. iii. ¶ Iehen
anoynted of þ chyld of Helie vpon Is-
rael serue Achariam þ kyng of Iewes
& Joram the kyng of Israel / & Iesabel
moder to Joram / &. lxx. children of Achab
and. xliij. brethren of Jari / and all the
preestes of Baal / & he reigned. xvij. yere
¶ Achalia moder to Jari kyng of Je-
wes / daughter to Achab reigned on the
Iewes. vi. yere / & serue þ kynges blode
of Joram / excepte Joas þ sone of Jari
the whiche was kepte amonge shepe-
herdes / and after she was slayne.

¶ Anno mundi. iiii. m. lxxvi. Et ante
Christi natiuitatem. viij. C. lxxxiij.

I Sam lone to Jebusie regned in y
 Jehu. x. yere. In home Joab a
 bisskop crowned king at. vii. yere of age
 And he lyued well as longe as he was ru
 led by Joab. but after he forsoke god
 & married Haras p tunc bisskop one
 to Joab. for he blamed hy p he forsoke
 his god. Vide pfa. ii. para. c. Joas has
 lone to Jehen regned in israel. xvi. yere
 in whole dayes Heise p prophete dyed
 & he began to regne the. xx. yere of Joas
 Vide pfa. iiii. reg. C Joam lone to Joa
 chas regned i israel. xviij. yere & he trou
 bled Amasia. Vide pfa. iiii. regu. xii.

Of kyngge Ley: lone to Bladud / & of
 the answer of his yongest doughter
 that graciously was maryed unto the
 kyngge of fraunce.

After kyng Bladud regned Ley
 his lone. and this Ley made p
 colone of Lyncester. & he let call p colone
 after his name. & he governed p colone
 well & nobly. This kyng Ley had thre
 doughters. p first was called Gorgul
 the seconde Bigan. & p thyrde Cordeill
 and the yongest doughter was fayrest
 & best of cōdicions. The kyng thei fa
 der became an olde man. & wolde p his
 doughters were maryed on p he dyed
 but first he thought to assay whiche of
 them loued him moost & best. for she p lo
 ued him best sholde best be maryed. And
 he axed of p first doughter how well she
 loued hy. And she answered & sayd. bet
 ter than her owne lyf. How times sayd
 her fader. p is a grete lone. Tha he axed
 the seconde doughter. how moche she lo
 ued hym. And she sayd moze & passynge
 all p creatures of p worlde. Per ma for
 sayd her fader. I may no moze axe. And
 than he axed of p thyrde doughter how
 moche she loued hym. Certes fader sayd
 she. my systers haue tolde you glofing

woyde. but I shall tell you trouthe. for
 I loue you as I ought to loue my fader
 And for to byngge you moze in certayne
 how I loue you I shall you tell. as mo
 che as ye be worth. so moche shall ye be
 loued. The kyng her fader wrode p she
 had scownd hym. and became wonderis
 moth. & swore by heud & erth she shold
 neuer haue goode of him. but his dought
 ers p loued hym so moche shold be well
 auanced & married. And p first doughter
 he maryed to Daugles kyngge of Scot
 londe. & the seconde he maryed to Hane
 mos erl. Cornewayle. & so they ordey
 ned & spake bytwene them p they sholde
 departe p realme bytwene them two af
 ter p deth of kyng Ley. thei fader. so p
 Cordeill his yongest doughter sholde no
 thyngge haue of his londe. But this Cor
 deill was wonderis fayre & of good cōdi
 cyons & maners. that p kyngge of fraunce
 Agape herde of her fame. & sent to kyng
 Ley her fader for to haue her vnto his
 wyfe. & prayed hym therof. And kyngge
 Ley her fader sent him woerde p he had
 departed his londe & gyue all to his two
 doughters before said. & sayd he had no
 moze lond wherwith her to mary. And
 whan Agampe p kyngge of fraunce herde
 this answer. he sente anone agayne to
 Ley & sayd p he asked no thyngge w her
 but onely her clothinge & her body. And
 anone kyng Ley sent her ouer p see to p
 kyngge of fraunce. And he receyued her w
 moche worship. & w solempnite he spou
 sed her. & made her quene of fraunce.

How kyng Ley was dyruen out
 of his londe through his folke. And
 how Cordeill his yongest doughter
 helped hym at his neede.

And it befell afterwarde p thei
 the eldest doughters wolde not
 abyde w Ley. thei fader was deyd

but warred vpon hym whyles that he was on lyue / & dyd hym moche sorow & shame / wherfore they toke fro hym all þe realme / & bytvene them had ordeyned þe one of them shold haue kyng Lery to sojourn all his lyfe tyme w. lx. knyghtes & squyers / þe he myght worthypfully go & ryde wheder þe he wolde / & in to what countree þe hym lyked to playe & to solace. So þe Daugles kyng of Scotland had kyng Lery with hym in þe maner as is aboue sayd / & oz a yere was passed Cornil þe was his eldest doughter & queene of Scotland was so anoyed of hym & of his people / þe anone she & her lord spake togyder / wherfore halfe his knyghtes & his squyers went fro hym / & no more were leste w. hym but. xxx. And whan this was done Lery began for to make moche sorow for bycause that his estate was empayred / & men had of him more scozne & despyte than euer they had before / wherfore he dyd not what to do. And at þe last thought þe he wold go in to Cornelwayle to Rigan his other doughter. And whan he was come þe erle & his wyfe that was Lerys doughter welcommed hym / & w. hym made moche ioye / & there he dwelled w. xxx. knyghtes & squyers. And he had not scarly dwelled there a yere but þe his doughter of hym & of his company was wery / & her lord & she of hym had grete scozne & despyte / so that fro. xxx. knyghtes they brought vnto. x. and afterwarde had he but. v. & so they left hym no moo. Than made he grete sorow / & sayd soze wepyng. Alas that euer I came in to this londe & sayd yet had it ben better to haue dwelled w. my fyrst doughter. And anone he went thens to his fyrst doughter agayn / but anone as she sawe hym come she swore by god & by his holy name / & by as moche as she myght that he shold haue no more w. hym but one knyght yf he wold

there abyde. Than began Lery agayne to wepe and made moche sorow & sayd Alas now to longe haue I lyued þe this sorow & myschefe is to me now fallen. For now am I poore þe somtyme was ryche / but now haue I no frende ne kyn that to me wyl do ony good. But whan I was ryche all me me honoured & worshipped / & now euery man hath of me scozne & despyte / & now I wote wel that Cordeil my yongest doughter said trouthy whan she sayd / as moche as I had so moche sholde I be loued / & all þe whyle þe I had good / so longe was I loued & honoured for my rychesse / but my two doughters glosed me tho / & now of me they set lytel pryce / & sothe tolde me Cordeil / but I wolde not beleue yf ne vnderstande / & therfore I let her go fro me as a thyng that I set lytell pryce of / & now wote I not what to do syth my two doughters haue me thus deceyued þe I so moche loued / & now must I nedes seke her þe is in an other londe þe lyghly I let go fro me wout ony reward or gyftes / and she sayd that she loued me as moche as she ought to loue her fader by all maner of reason / & tha I sholde haue at her no more / & those þe me other wyse bebraght through theyr fals speche now haue me deceyued. In this maner Lery longe tyme began to make his mone. And at the last he shope hym to þe see / & passed ouer in to fraunce / & asked & espyed whete the queene myght be founde. And men tolde hym whete she was. And whan he came to þe cite that she was in / pryncy he sent his squyer vnto þe queene to tell her þe her fader was comen to her for grete nede. And whan þe squyer came to þe queene he told her euery dele of her sisters from þe begynnyng vnto the ende. Cordeil the queene anone toke gold & syluer plente / & toke it to þe squyer in coueyse þe he sholde go in to a certayne cite and hym araye &

Wasthe/ & than come agayn to her/ and
 bynge with him an honest company of
 knyghtes. xl. at the lest w they meryn
 and than he wolde sende to her lorde the
 kynge & ferne that he were comen for to
 se & speke with his daughter & hys. And
 so he dyd. And whan the kynge and the
 quene herde that they came/ with mo-
 che honour they hym receyued. And the
 kynge of fraunce than let sende throughe
 all his realme & comaunded that all men
 wolde be as entendaunt to kynge Lery/ &
 quenes fader in all maner of thinges as
 it were unto hymselfe. Whā kynge Lery
 had dwelled there a moneth & more he
 tolde to hys kynge & to hys quene his dought-
 ter how his two eldest doughters had
 serued hym. Agayne anone let ordeyne
 a grete host of frenshmen & sent in to Brit-
 ayne w Lery/ & quenes fader for to con-
 quere his kyngdome agayne. And Cor-
 deil also came w her fader in to Britayn
 for to haue the realme after her faders
 deeth. And anone they went to shyppe &
 passed the see & came in to Bityayne/ &
 fought w the felons/ & discomfited them &
 slewe/ & than had he his londe agayn/ &
 after lyued thre yere & helde his realme
 in peas/ & after ward dyed. And Cordeil
 his daughter him let bury wiche moche
 honour at Lyecestre.

Anno mudi. iiii. M. iiii. C. xlii. Et an-
 te Christi natiuitatem. viii. C. liii.

Amasias sone to Joam regned
 on the Jewes. xxix. yere/ after hys
 whiche hys kyngdom of Jewes was wout
 kyng. xiiij. yere. This man worshypped
 the goddes of heyn. At ps. ij. para. xxb.
 Jeroboam sone to Joam regned on
 Israel. xij. yere. hys whiche was manly &
 bytous/ for he ouercame the kynge
 of Syrie/ & restorid Israel & Damaskie
 after the worde of Jono hys prophete/ but
 he was not good. Therefore sayth saynt

Justyn. yf good men regne/ they ppyte
 many men. And yf yll men regne/ they
 hurte many men.

Anno mudi. iiii. M. iiii. C. lxxxviij. Et
 ante Christi natiuitatem. viii. C. xj.

Orias. o. Arias sone to Amasias
 regned on the Jewes. liij. yere/ the
 whiche lyued well afore our lorde/ of hys
 is none ryll thynge wryten/ but that he
 usurped the dignite of presthode vnder
 Arias/ the whiche he forbade hym. For
 the whiche cause our lorde stroke hym
 with a lepre. At patet. ij. para. C. Dye
 byshop & prophete was this tyme the
 fyrst of the. xij. that was sent agaynst hys
 crybes. Johel the seconde of the. xij.
 propheted of Juda. Ananias hys thyrde
 propheted agaynst many people. Ab-
 dias the fourth of the. xij. propheted a-
 gaynst Edom. Zacharias sone to Je-
 roboam regned in Israel. vi. monethes
 the whiche began to regne the. xxxviij.
 yere of Orias/ & was nought in his ly-
 vyng as his predecessours were. And
 sellum slewe hym/ & regned a moneth.
 And Manahen slewe hym and toke his
 kyngdome. At ps. iiii. regu. This Ma-
 nahen regned. x. yere/ the whiche began
 to regne hys. xxxix. yere of Orias/ & he ru-
 led hym mischeuously/ & our lord betoke
 hym in hys power of hys kyng of Assurion/ &
 he payed to hym a. M. talentes of
 syluer. At ps. iiii. regu. Phalea sone
 to Manahen regned in Israel two yere
 and he began to regne the. l. yere of O-
 dias/ and he was nought in his lyvyng.
 Phalee slewe Phalea/ & regned. xx.
 yere/ & he began to regne the. liij. yere of
 Orias/ & dyd as other cursed men dyd.
 Wide ps. iiii. regu. And after this/ Is-
 rael was wouten ony kyng. viii. yere.

How Morgan & Conedag newmes to
 Cordeil warred on her & put her to deeth.

Whan that kyng Leyz was deyd
Cordeill his yongest doughter
regned .x. yere of Oyas kyng
of the Jewys. And after her regned Co-
nedag the .xv. yere of Oyas. And Cor-
deill that was Leyz's yongest doughter
after the deth of her fader had al þe londe
fyue yere / and in the meane tyme dyed her
wyfe Agampe þe was kyng of fraunce.
And after his deth there came Morgan
and Conedag that were Cordeyls systers
sones and to her had enemyte for as moche
as theyr aunt had þe londe / so þe bytwe-
ne them they ordeyned a grete power / and
strongly warred on her / and neuer rested
tyll they had taken her and put her to deth.
And than Morgan and Conedag seased al
the londe and departed it bytwe-
ne them / and they held it .xij. yere / and whan þe .xij. yere
were gone there began bytwe-
ne them a grete debate / so þe they warred strongly
to gyder / and dyd to eche other moche dys-
ease / for Morgan wolde haue all þe londe
fro beyonde Humber þe Conedag helde.
But he came agaynst hym wth a stronge
power / so þe Morgan durst not abyde but
fledde away into Wales / and Conedag
pursued hym / and toke hym and slew hym.
And than Conedag came and seased al the
londe in to his handes and helde it / and reg-
ned after .xxiiij. yere / and than he dyed / and
lyeth at newe Troy.
And bycause þe mater cōteyneth most
comodiously to gyder of þe kynges of Bri-
tayne now called Englonde / for þe tyme of
them is not certaynly knownen what ty-
me of þe worlde these kynges folowynge
regned / therfore they shall be to gyder
tyll it be comen vnto Guentolyn kyng of
Byrtayne now called Englonde.

How Reynolde that was Conedags
sone regned after his fader / and in his
tyme it rayned blode thre dayes / in to-
kenynge of grete deth.

After this Conedag regned Reys
nold his sone þe was a wyse and an
hardy knyght and curteis / þe well and nobly
ruled þe londe / and was well beloued of all
folke. And in his tyme it rayned blode þe
lasted thre dayes as god wolde / and soone
after there came a grete deth of people /
for hoostes wout nobye of people fought
tyll þe god therof toke pite / and than it ceased.
And this Reynolde regned .xxij. yere / and
than dyed / and lyeth at York.

How Gorbodian regned in prag that
was Reynoldes sone.

After this Reynolde regned Gor-
bodian his sone .xv. yere / and than
dyed / and lyeth at York.

How Gorbodian had .ii. sones / and how
the one slew þe other for to haue þe londe /
and how ydoyne theyr moder slew þe other
wherfore the londe was destroyed.

Whan this Gorbodian was deyd
his two sones þe he had became
stoute and proude / and euer warred to gyder
for the londe / and þe one was called Ferris
and þe other Doires. And this Ferris wolde
haue all þe londe / but that other wolde
not suffre hym. This Ferris had a fe-
lonous hert / and thought through trasoun
to sle his broder / but pryuely he wente
in to fraunce / and there abode wth the kyng
Syward / tyll vpon a tyme whan he ca-
me agayn to fyght wth his broder Ferris
but full euyl it happed him / for he was
slayne fyrst. Whan ydoyne theyr moder
wyf that Doires was deyd / she made
grete sorowe / for bycause þe she loued hym
more than þe other / and thought for to sle
hym pryuely. And pryuely she came to
her sone vpon a night wth two knyues / and
therwth cut his throte / and þe body also in to
small peces. Who herde euer of suche a
moder / þe she wth her owne handes her
owne sone. And longe tyme after lasted þe
represe and shame to þe moder / that for by-

Part. ii.

iiii. kynges.

cause of that one sone / the murdered that
other / and so lost them bothe.

How four kynges curteys helde
all Bytayne / and what be they: na-
mes ye shall here after.

Clote. Daualier



When the two brethren were deed
they ne had leste behynde them
neither sone ne doughter ne none other
of the kynrede þ̄ might enheryte þ̄ londe
And so: as moche as the strongest men
droue & discomfyted the feblest & toke all
they: londes / so þ̄ in euery countree they
had grete warre and stryfe vnder them
But amōge all other th̄ges there were
four in the countree that ouercame all þ̄
other / & through they: myght & strēgth
they toke all the londes / & euery of them
toke a certayne countree / & in his countree
let call hym kyng / & one of them was
called Scater / & he was called kyng of
Scotlonde / & that other was called Da-
ualier / & he was kyng of Logres / & of
all the londe that was Lotrens þ̄ was
Byutes sone. The thyrde was called Ru-
dar / & he was kyng of Wales. And the
fourth was called Cloten / & he was h̄g
of Cornewayle. But this Cloten sholde
haue had all the londe by right / bycause

Kyng Donebant.

there was no man þ̄ wylt none so ryghte
heyr as he was. But they that were
strongest set lytel by them þ̄ were of lesse
estate / & therfore this Clote had no more
londe amonge them but Cornewayle.

Cof kyng Donebant that was Clo-
tens sone / & how he wanne the londe.

This Cloten had a sone that was
called Donebāt / & after the deth
of his fader became an hardy man and
a fayre & a curteys / so þ̄ he passed all the
other h̄ges of faynes & of worthynes.
And anone as he was knyght he wylt
wel that whan his fader lyued he was
moost ryghtfull heyr of all þ̄ londe / and
sholde haue had it by ryght / but þ̄ other
kynges þ̄ were of moche more strength
than he toke frō hym þ̄ londe. Wherfore
this Donebant ordeyned hym a grete
powder / & conquered fyrst the londe of Lo-
gres / and after he went to conquere all
the londe of Scotlonde and Wales. And
Scater came w̄ his men & gaue hym ba-
tyle / & Rudar came also w̄ his walshe
men for to helpe h̄ / but so it befell þ̄ Ru-
dar was slayne & Scater also in playne
batyle. And so Donebāt had þ̄ byctory
& conquered all the londe / & well mayn-
tayned it in peas and in quyet / that neu-
er before it was so well mayntayned.

How Donebāt was the fyrst kyng þ̄
cuer bare crowne of golde in Bytayne.

This Donebant let make hym a
crowne of gold / & ware þ̄ crowne
bpon his heed as neuer kyng did before
& he ordeyned a statute / þ̄ yf a man had
done neuer so moche harme and myght
come in to the Temple / there sholde no
man hym mysdo / but go there in safete
and in peas / & after go in to what londe
or countree that hym pleased / without
ony harme / and yf ony man had set ony

hande vpon hym. he than shold lete his lyfe. And this Donebant made þ to londe of Shamesbury. & þ to londe also of þ wife. And whā he had reigned well & woorthely. xl. yere he dyed & lyeth at new Crop.

How Biene & Belyn departed bytwene them the londe after the deeth of Donebant theyr fader. And of the warre bytwene them.

After þ this Donebant was deed his lones departed þ londe bytwene them as theyr fader had ordeyned. so þ Belyn his eldest sone had all þ londe of Brytayne from Humbar southward. & his broder Biene had all the londe from Humbar to Scotlande. But for as moche as Belyn had þ better part Biene therfore waxed wyth & wolde haue had moze of the londe. & Belyn his broder wolde graunte hþ no moze. wherfore stryfe & warre arose bytwene them two. But Biene þ yonger broder had no myght ne strength agaynst Belyn. and therfore Biene through counseyll of his folke went fro thens in to Norway to þ kyng Ollynges. & prayed hym of helpe & socoure for to conquere all þ londe vpon Belyn his broder. vpon þ couenaunt þ he wolde haue his doughter to wyfe. And kyng Ollynges hþ graunted. And Belyn anon as his broder was gone to Norway he seased in to his habes all þ londe of Northumberland. & toke all þ castels & let them be arayed. & kept þ coostes of the see. þ Biene sholde not aryue on no lyde but þ he were taken. Kyng Ollynges let assemble a grete hoost. & deliuered his doughter to Biene & all þ people that he had ordeyned. This damoyzell Samye had longe tyme loued a kyng þ was called Gurlagh. & to hym she tolde all her counseyle. & how þ Biene sholde haue her & lede her with hym for euer.

moze. & so he sholde lete her but that she myght forsake Biene. And whā Gurlagh had herde these thynges. he laye for to espye Biene. whā many shippes as he myght make & haue. So the two fletes mette togyder. & longe tyme they fought. so that Biene & his men were dyscomfyted. And kyng Gurlagh toke Samye & put her in to his shyppe. And Biene shamefully fled thens as a man dyscomfyted. And this kyng Gurlagh wolde haue gone in to his owne countree but there came vpon hþ so grete a tempest that lasted. v. dayes. so þ through þ tempest he was dyscuen in to Brytayne with thre shippes & no moe. And tho þ kepte the coostes of þ see toke Gurlagh & Samye & all his folke. & them perswaded to Belyn. And Belyn put them in pryson.

How Belyn let departe out of his londe kyng Gurlagh of Dramarche and Samye.

It was not longe after þ Biene came agayn with a grete nauy. & sente to his broder Belyn that he sholde yelde agayn his londe to his wyfe & his folke. & his castels also. or els he wolde destoye his londe. Belyn drad no chyng his malice. & wolde no chyng do after that he had sayd. wherfore Biene came with his folke & fought w Belyn. & Biene was dyscomfyted and his folke slayne. & hym selfe fledde with. xii. men in to fraunce. And this Belyn that was Biennes broder went than to York. & toke counseyle what he myght do with kyng Gurlagh. so kyng Gurlagh professed to become his man. & to holde his londe of hym. yeloung yere a thousand pounde of syluer for euermore. and for sykenes of this couenaunt to be holden Gurlagh sholde byngne hym good hostages. & to hym sholde do homage &

Paris.

R. Belyn.

R. Biene.

all his folke & yet he shold there upon
a lode & in shold more be lode ne say
to. & Belyn the by assente of his folke
gaveth hem his assente & so Belyn
became his man. And Belyn toke of by
his homage by an othe & by wyppage
the same countenances. And upon these
countenances he gave Belyn toke the
same & his folke & went thence & returned
agayne to Denmarke. Evermore after
were the countenances holden & þe truage
payed, until the tyme that Honcius was
kyng of Denmarke & also of this londe
through his wyfe Gylsburgh & he had
spoused for she was right heyr of this
londe. This Belyn dwelled the in prais
& worshipfully hym helde amonge his
barons. And he made fourte yll wayes
one from þe east unto þe west & that was
called Watting strete & an other from þe
north unto the south & that was called
Thelme strete and two other wayes he
made in bolting through out þe londe. þe
one is called fosse and that other fosse
dyke. And he maynteyned well þe good
lawes þe Bonchut his father had made &
ordayned in his tyme as before is sayd.

How accordment was made by Biene
Biene and Belyn through Counsell
that was thei modet.

Biene that was Belyns broder
had longe tyme dwelled in fraunce
& there had conquered a grette lordshipp
through maryage. for he was duke of
Burgoyne through þe daughter of duke
Ternyn & he had spoused whiche was
right heyr of þe londe. And this Biene
ordayned a grette power of his folke and
all of fraunce & came in to this londe for
to fight w Belyn his broder. And Belyn
came agaynst hym w a grette power of
his folke & wold have gyven hym be-
telle. But wha thei modet Counsell

that thei wold had bette that þe one had
don wold have destroyed that other. the
lond biene her folke & made them
accorde w moche payne. So þe at the last
the two broder w moche by the londe
togedre in to new Troy & now is called
Lond. where they dwelled a yere & af-
ter they toke thei counseil for to go &
conquere all fraunce & so they dyd & spent
to lones & destroyed the londe in lengthe
& byede & the kyng of fraunce gaue them
batayle w his powder but he was out
comen & gaue truage to Belyn & to his
broder. And after þe they went south w-
to Rome & conquered it & all Lombardy
and Germany & toke homage of all the
chefe lordes & barons. And after they ca-
me in to this londe of Brytany & dwel-
led w thei byeds in ioye & rest. And
than made Biene þe towne of Bystow
and after he went out to his owne lord
ship & there dwelled he all his lyfe. And
Belyn dwelled at newe Troye & there
he made a fayre gate that is called Be-
lynges gate after his owne name. And
whan this Belyn had reigned nobly .xx.
yere he dyed & lyeth at newe Troye.

How kyng Combaturus selde the
kyng of Denmarke for bycause that he
wold not paye to hym his truage.



Belyn

Belyn

After this Belyn reigned his
sone Cornbatus a good man &
a worthy. And the kynge of Denmarke
wolde not paye to hym his truage / & so
to say / a. p. p. as he had sworne by
othe for to paye it / & also by wyppynge
orde to Belyn his sader / wherfore he
was enlapyed & wyth / & assembled
a grette host of byttons and went into
Denmarke / & drew & kyng Gurlagh / &
broughe & londe in subiectyd all newe / &
toke of & folke fraute & homage / & after
went agayne into his owne londe / & as
he came forth by Dykeney he founde .xxx.
shyppes ful of men & women besyde the
coost of & see / & & kyng asked what they
were. And an erle that was mayster of
them all curteysly answered to & kyng
& sayd & they were exiled out of spayne /
& so & they had trauallyd halfe a yere &
more in the see / to wyte yf they myght
fynde any kyng in any londe & of them
wolde haue pite or mercy to gyue them
any londe in any countree / wherin they
myght dwelle & haue rest / & become his
lyege men / & to hym wold do homage &
fraute whyle they lyued & to his heires
after hym / & of hys & of his heires holde
that londe. And whan & kyng herd this
he had pite on them / & gaue them an yle
all wyldernes / where no mā was dwel-
lynge / save onely wyld beestes. And &
erle thāked moche & kyng & became his
man / & dyd hym homage & fraute / & to-
ke all his folke & went into the same yle
And & erle was called Irlamal / & ther-
fore he let call & londe Irlonde after his
name. This kyng Cornbatus came ag-
ayne into his londe & reigned .xxv. yere /
& after dyed / & lyeth at newe Trowe.

Anno mudi. iiii. p. iiii. C. xl. Et ante
Christi natiuitatem. vij. C. lvi.

Iothan sone to Othas reigned in
the Jewes .xvi. yere. of this Joa-

Irland

than no thyng is wyten but & he toke
not alway excelsa as othe dyd. Ut patet
ij. para. Amarias was byshop. And
ylayas the noble prophete was in his
dayes. Olympias with & grekes be-
gan & first yere of Joathan after Josc-
phus: & after Bede Troy was destroyed
iij. C. vi. yere afore the first Olympias
began vnder Cleo a iudge of Athenis /
in the whiche Coribus gate & chynalry
amonge al men. Olympus is the name
of an hyll in Sicilia / the whiche for his
precyousnes is called & hyll of god. And
after Jerome one Olympias coteyneth
fully. iiii. yeres / in & whiche. iiii. yeres
foure yere ly pynctes are made / & these
Olympiades are places ordeyned to the
worshyp of Iuppyter vnder the hyll of
Olympo. And the lawe of them is this
That who someuer is best in any chy-
ualry / what gyfte someuer he desyret
he shall haue.

Anno mudi. iiii. p. iiii. C. lvi. Et an-
te Christi natiuitatem. vii. C. xlii.

Acham the sone of Joathan reg-
ned on the Jewes .xvi. yere. Of
this Acham no thyng & is good is wy-
ten / for he forsoke our lord / & our lord
strok hym w his owne people strongly
& with & kynges of Serry. Ut p. ii. pa-
ra. xxviij. Achitob this tyme was bys-
shop. Dree kyng of Israel reigned .xx.
yere / the whiche began to reigne the .xii.
yere of Acham kyng of Jewes. This
Dree had not god / for he lyued nought.
And he was & last kyng of Israel / & in &
ix. yere of his regne he was rade of Sa-
manasar / & Israel was translated into
Assyrias. Ut habet. iiii. regu. xvi.

Explicit secunda pars.

Anno mudi. iiii. p. iiii. C. lvi. Et an-
te Christi natiuitatem. vii. C. xl.

Quonia caput mundi.



After Culeby Rome was ma-
de on þ hyl of Palatyn the
fourth yere of Acham kyng
of Jewes / of two brotherne
Romus & Remus .xj. kal. Apr. the .viij.
Olympiades begynnyng. Josephus &
Bede sayen þ. vi. Olympiades: & so they
differ a yere. Nevertheless it is redde
other men to have reigned about þ place
myghtely in yea / that is to wyte / Ja-
nus / Picus / Janus / Latinus / the whi-
che unto Eneas reigned about two hun-
dred yere. Then afterwarde from Ene-
as to this Romulus it was reigned un-
der .xv. gouernours. CCCC. xxij. yere
After that fro the cite was made unto þ
last yere of Tarquyn the greute it was
reigned under .viij. kynges / about .CC.
and .xliij. yere. Then afterwarde under
Senatours & counsellers unto Julius
Cesar emperor. by CCCC. and .lxxij.
yere. Romulus the first of Romayns / of
whome they be called in latyn Romayns
made the cite to be named Rome after

his name the whiche gathered together
the people an every tyme an houndred of þ
best men & they he chose / through
the counsyle of whome all thynges he
dysposed / the whiche he named Sena-
tours for þ tyme of theyr age / & he made
theyr names to be dyspersed in golden let-
ters / wherfore the whiche noble fathers &
thynges to yet. Also he called a .cc. men
of armes mited. a munitio millenario.
but these were of no noble blode. Ther-
fore as saynt Iulian sayth be ciuit. dei.
And also there was luge warre betwix
the Sabyns & them / for Romulus toke
many women of the noble blode of Sa-
byn & married them to þ humble blode
of this Romulus. Orosius wytteth mo-
che yll. Ut p. in libro suo. About this
tyme Sennacherib the kyng of Babylon
sente grete gyftes to Ezechie the kyng
of ielwes. Ut p. iiiij. regu. xx. And than
the kyngdome of Babylon began.

Anno mundi. iiii. m. lxxij. Et ante
Christi natiuitatem. vij. C. xxvij.

Ezechias the .xliij. kyng of ielwes
a good chyld of a cursed father /
reigned in a petyte herte to our lord / &
he restored the hous of god / & there was
none lyke hym afore ne after amonge þ
kynges of ielwes / therfore our lord god
glorified hym / for whan Sennacherib
kyng of Assurion came against Ezechie
with a myghty host / our lord stroke his
people & slawe an. C. lxxv. of fychtyng
men / & Sennacherib fledde homewards
be p. iij. regu. xix. et. li. para. xxij. So
doch this tyme was hye by thys tyme.

Anno mundi. iiii. m. d. c. i. Et ante
Christi natiuitatem. vij. C. lxxxvij.

Danahs kyng of Jewes reigned
th. yere / and he was a full cupl

chylde of a good fader. For he dyd more curfely than ony þ was before hþ. For he ſawe þ pphetes of god that þ ſtretes in Jeruſale were all bloody. And he made yſaie þ prophete to be ſawen in peres with a ſawe of tree. Wherefore þ kyng of Aſſurioꝝ waſted the Jewy / & toke Maſſalles & put hym in pꝛyſon. And after Maſſalles repented him of his treſpace & cryed for mercy to god / & was herde. Than he was reſtored to his kyngdom & he amended his lyfe. Ut pz. iiii. reg. xxi. et. ii. para. xxxiiij. ¶ Sellu was hʒſhop & Echias after hym. This tyme the. viij. wyſe men had woꝛſhypp in Grece / þ is to ſaye / Tales / Solon / Chylon / Porandʒ / Elidobolus / Bias / Piracus. This Tales ſoude ſpyt the defeaute of the ſonne & the mone. Vide pfa Aug. viij. de ci. dei. ¶ Numa the ſeconde kyng this tyme regned in Rome. xliij. yere / the whiche was a grete woꝛſhipper of falſ goddes He fylled Rome ſo full þ he myght haue no place for hymſelfe to dwell in. This man put January & february to þ begynnynge of þ yere. Vide pfa in Aug. de ciui. dei. Aboue all reaſon it is meruayle that ſuche men ſo excedyng in wytte in all chyngeſ that was yll rece ded fro the knowlege of þ very god. ¶ Amon kyng of Jewes regned two yere / the whiche was nought in his lyuynge / & he was ſtryken of his ſeruauntes / and he dyed without ony repentaunce.

¶ Anno mſidi. iiii. M. v. C. lviij. Et ante Chꝛiſti natuſtatem. vi. C. xli.

Ioſias the ſone of Amon at. viij. yere of age began to regre / & regned. xxxi. yere / a good chylde of a guerte fader / in his yonge age he ſoughe þ grace of god / & in that grace laudably abode vnto his ende. His religyous lyfe & his holy werkes ye may ſe. iij. regum. xxiij.

et. ii. para. xxxiiij. ¶ Aſſas the ſone of Eſchie was byſſhop. ¶ Tobias aboute this tyme dyed / & he was a very holy man / & he pꝛphete of the deſtruction of Jeruſale. ¶ Tullus Hoſtiꝛ was þ chylde kyng in Rome. ¶ Saynt Auſtyn ſayth in his boke de ciui. dei. that from Rome was made vnto Auguſt the emperour / there was ſo contynuall batayle / that it was taken for a meruayle & they were one yere without batayle / excepte. liij. yere in ſume dayes / in þ whiche was contynual peas. And this Tullus becauſe he had reſt he dyd curfely to his neyghbours / and than he was ſayne / & all his houſholde with a ſtroke of lighninge. ¶ Nabugodonosor this tyme was kyng of Babylon / a manly man & a byctoryous. For he was þ ſcourge of our lord to punyſhe the ſpynes of moche people. This man was kyng of Babylon / & after ward he coꝛquered þ kyngdom of Aſſurioꝝ / and made it one monarchy. But many wayes ſcripture ſpeketh of this man / now good & now yll / & for becauſe ſcripture concludeth þ he ended his lyfe in þ lounge of god by the prayeꝛ of Da nyel / & in the knowlege of one very god / ſome doctours ſaye he is ſaured / & ſome ſay it is doubte. ¶ Ancus Marcius the fourth kyng of Rome regned. xxiiij. yere This man for grace & truſt þ he had to Carquinʒ Diſcus made hym þ gouernour of his chyldeꝛen & heyres / & he yll rewarded hþ. ¶ Danyel yet a chylde deliuered ſaynt Suſan / & ſtoode in þ coꝛcyte of the kyng to his felawes / & after ward he diſcuſſed þ dꝛemes of þ kyng / & was made a man of grete honeſte. Ut pz. Danielis. i. ¶ Joachas þ ſecond ſone of Joſie regned on þ Jewes thꝛe monethes / & was made kyng by þ people / & he was not good. And Pharao toke him / & ladde hym in to Egypte / & made his elder brother kyng. Ut pz. iij. regu. xxiij.

Pars tertia.

Anno mudi. iiii. M. v. C. lxxviii. Et ante Christi natiuitatem. v. C. xi.

I Dacym or Jeronias the sone of Josie was made kyng of Jewes by Pharaos & reigned. xi. yere. & because he lyued nought ne herd not of pphetes Nabugodonosor toke hym & made hym his seruante. iiii. yere. And he rebelled agaynst hym afterwarde & he toke hym & was about to haue ladde hym to Babylon but his counseyle was chaunged & so Nabugodonosor sette hym in Jerusalem & cast his body ouer the walles after the pphery of Jeremy & toke wth hym the vessels of our lord & put them in his temple. Ut ps. ii. para. vii. Samias was byshop. Urias prophete was slayne of Jerony the kyng & Jeremy was present Joachim sone to Jeronias reigned in the iiii. monethes & lyued nought & therfore he was meued that he shoulde regne no longer & was bounden & traslated in to Babylon & many wth hym were translated. Ut ps. iiii. regu. xliii. Daniell Ananias / Arias / Misael / Ezechiel and Barochius / all these wth Joachim the kyng were ledde in to Babylon yonge chyldren / for because they were of the noble blode.

Anno mundi. iiii. M. vi. C. Et ante Christi natiuitatem. vi. C.

Sederchias the thyrde sone of Josie reigned on the Jewes. xi. yere. this Sederchias was a myscheuous man in his lyuynge & he wolde not here Jeremy the prophete / therfore he persylled wynterly & all the iiii. wth hym & his eyes were put out & his chyldren were slayne. Ut ps. iiii. reg. Josedech the sone of Iharie was byshop & was traslated fro Jerusalem by Nabugodonosor in to Babylon. Abacuk ppheryd agaynst Nabuch at Babilon & there be opynyons

what tyme this Abacuk was. This Abacuk brought meet to Daniel whan he was put to Lyons after Jerome. And here endeth the fourth age & the bystory of Regum.



This tyme the temple of Salomon was brent of the Caldees & Jerusalem was destroyed. This temple stode cccc. lii. yere & is to wyte fro the first makinge the whiche was made the fourth yere of Salomon. And fro the destruction the whiche was made by Tyre & is to wyte. lii. yere after the passyng of Chyph. C. Pylus Torquimus the. v. kyng of Rome reigned / and he made Capitoliū quasi caput solū. for in the grette werke was founde a heed without any body / as for prophete of thynges to come. for there afterwarde the senatours satte as one heed of all the world. This tyme the chyldren were cast in to a furnace brennyng & wth a myracle they were deliuered / as it is shewed in Daniel. Nabugodonosor the sone of Nabugodonosor the myghty / reigned in Babylon. This man made an hanginge garden wth myghty colles for his wyfe & many meruailous thynges he dyd / so that he wolde be named to exceede Hercules in his gretnes & strengthe. Endimirodach brother unto the latter Nabugodonosor reigned in Babylon. This man

toke Joachym out of prysen & worshipped hym & his fathers deyd body after þe counseyle of this man he deuoyded to an hondred gyltes lest þe sholde tye fro deith to lyfe. ¶ Nota. The place of the chesse was foude of Perse a philosophet for the correccion of Endimirobach this tyme þe hyng of Babylon a grete cyant the whiche was wont to byll his owne maysters & wyse men. And for he durst not rebuke hyf openly / w such a wyrt game he procured hym to be meke.

Anno mundi. iiii. M. bj. C. xciiij. Et ante Christi natiuitatem. b. C. lxxv.

Sathiel of þe lyne of Christ was sone to Jerony þe kyng of Jewes the whiche he gate after þe transmygracyon of Babylon / as Marke þe euagelyst sayth. ¶ Seruius Tullius the. bj. kyng of Rome was of a bonde condycyon on the moders syde / for he was a captue mayden / but he was of the noble blode This man had grete lounge / & nobly he bare hym in euery place. Thre hylls to þe cite he put / & dyched þe walles rounde about. ¶ Regular Babylardach & Balchalar were brethren the whiche regned one after an other & were kynges in Babylon. And Balchalar was the last kyng of Babylon / þe whiche was slayne of Darius & Cyrus. Vide pla Dani. v.

Incipit Monarchia Persarum.

Darius duke to Cyro selowe in þe kyngdom with Cyro / occupied the kyngdom of Babilon. Darius traslato the kyngdom of Babilonis Caloces into þe kyngdom of Persia & Medora. ¶ Cyro was emperour. xxx. yere. This Cyrus held þe monarchy holt at Perses Of this man ppheryd ysayas / & he destroyed Babilon / & slawe Balchalar king of Babylon / & he worshipped grety Da-

niel. The Jewes he sente home agayne that they shold buyde þe temple of god. Ut p. Elore. i. ¶ Babilon þe stronge castell was destroyed & his power was taken fro him / as it was ppheryd. This was þe first tye and the grete of all the wounde of þe whiche incredible thinges are wyrt / & this þe was so stronge in one nyght was destroyed / that it myght be shewyd to þe power of god / to þe whiche power all other ben but a speere & dust. For it is sayd for soth þe it was incredible to be made w manes hande / or to be destroyed w manes strength. Wherof all þe woulde myght take an ensample / and it wolde or myght be enformed. ¶ Tarquinus Supbus was the. bj. kyng of Rome & he reigned xxxv. yere. This man folde first all these turmentes whiche art ordeined for malefactours / as eyde / prysen Welles & galowes / fetters & manacles / chaynes & collers & suche other. And for his grete pryde & cruellie god suted hyf to myschere / & in what maner wyse it shalbe shewyd. He had a sone of þe same name / þe whiche sone defouled a worthy manes wyfe / they called hyf Collaryn & his wyf was called Lucre. This Tarquinus þe was this seuth kynges sone afore sayd came to this ladys hous / ad sent her husbode to soup & to lodgyng. And whan all were a slepe he rose with a swerde in his hanc & w strength & fere he rauished þe woma. And wha he was gone she sente vnto her sader & her husbode for she was of grete kynne & thus she sayd to them. The kynges sone came hyther as a frende of whome I had no mistrust / & thus he hath defyled my chastite & lost my name for euer more. Wha her frendes sawe her wepe & piteously complayne / they comforted her as well as they coude / & sayd it was no bylany be to her / for it was agaynst her wyll. She answered & sayd. Yet shal there neuer

Partus tertia.

would excuse her by Lucretia: for though she consented not to this dede, yet shal she not dye without payn for þe dede. And with that word she had a knyfe ready under her mantell/with whiche she smote her selfe to the hert. And for this cruelnes & this pytous dede the people of Rome arose & exiled this kyng & all his pgeny for evermore. And thus ceased these kynges of Rome: & neuer was none after.

Of the gouernance of Rome
tyll the Emperours began.

After whā this tyrant was dedd the Romayns ordeyned þat there shold neuer be kyng more in Rome. But they wolde be gouerned fro thens forth by consules. So whā those kynges had reigned. CC. yere and. xl. they made this statute/that two consules sholde be chosen/ & they sholde gouerne the Cite & the people/ & for this cause these two were chosen/ that yf one of them wolde make any excelle/ þe other sholde gouerne hym for there was no thyng obeyed but yf they consented bothe. Also they shold stande in theyr dignite passyng one yere for this cause. That for dominacyon of longe tyme they sholde not blurpe more upon them than was ryghtfull. In all this tyme þe Emperre of Rome was not dilated passyng. xii. myle/ ne had no lord ship passyng. xii. myle. The fyrst consules that were made þe one was called Lucius & that other Quintus/ & these two men did grete chynges in theyr tyme. But yet þe people bare heuy of theyr dominacyon/ wherfore they chace an other man/ whiche sholde haue more auctorite thā they & they called hym Dictator. ¶ In this same tyme there was a grete discencyō betwene the people & the senate/ wherfore they chace Tribunas whiche were Judges ouer þe people/ & defended them

from wronge/ as sayth yfyder. For the Dictator whā he was chosen he lasted fyue yere/ & þe Tribunas were renewed euery yere. ¶ But ye must vnderstande that ye shal not haue here after all þe consules names þe gouerned Rome betwixt the reasyng of þe kynges & þe begynnyng of the emperours/ for it were to longe to wyte/ specially whā they were euery yere newe/ syth that one man myght be chosen so oftentymes as we rede. And also for þe enduring of theyr gouernance for they were gouernours of Rome. v. C. yere and. lxviij. So the most famous men of these shal be reherced after the forme of Cronycles/ & as they stande in the booke ethe one after other.

Incipit historia liby Cioze.

Anno mudi. lxxx. vi. C. lxx. Et ante
Christi natiuitatem. v. C. xl.

3 **O**robabel after the comaundement of god founded the temple & made it perfyte/ but it was longe after. Ut p̄ esoz. vi. After the people of Jerusalem came fro Babylon/ these two ruled. Jesus the hye preest as gouernour/ & zoobabel as duke. And this maner of guydyng was kepte vnto Herodes tyme/ þe hye preestes shold be pryncypall/ & þe dukes vnder them. But þe dukes were euery of þe trybe of Iuda/ after þe p̄phery of Jacob. And vnder þe good guydyng of preestes it is not redde þe people to haue receded fro the very true sayth/ as they dyd afore in þe tyme of serues & kynges/ for than many tymes they ran to ydolatry. ¶ Eldias þe preest of the kynrede of Acon this tyme excelled men in holynes through whose grete wysdome all þe isles state was holpe. ¶ Cabises þe son of Ciri reigned on þe kyngdom of Persia/ the whiche comaunded myghtely þe temple of Jerusalem. sholde not be buylded

and after dyed. & lyeth at nether Troy.

Then kyng Sweyell reigned and well gouerned the lande after Guntelien.

After this Guntelien reigned his son Sweyell & well & moost hely gouerned the lande as his fader had done before hym. & he reigned. xii. yere & dyed. and lyeth at nether Troy.

Then Hymol reigned after Sweyell his fader. and he begate Holman that reigned in peas after his fader.

Hymol reigned after his fader Sweyell well & nobly. xix. yere in peas. And then after hym reigned Holman his son. x. yere & dyed & lieth at Thaidolen.

Then kyng Spowith dyed through myschance of a beest.

Mowith reigned after Holman & he became so wyched that benygnes fell on hym. for ou a tyme as he went by the see syde he mette w a grete beest & was blach & horrible. & he went it had ben a whale of ffre. & bent an arrow & wolde haue slayne f beest w his quarel. but he myght not smyte hym. & whā he had shot all his quarrels f beest anone came to hym & deuoured hf alwe & so he dyed for his wychednes by gods vengeance after he had reigned. ix. yere.

Of Guntobodan that was son to Spowith that made Cambruge.

When this Spowith was ded f byrons crowned Guntobodan his son. & this Guntobodan longe tyme reigned in goodnes & made temples & towres. & he made f town of Cambruge & the town of Guntelien. & was well beloued of ryche & poore & he had. iij. sonen. Arthogade. Hestour. &

gan. & Hestour. & when he had reigned. xi. yere he dyed. & lyeth at nether Troy.

Of Arthogade that was Guntobodans son. both he was made kyng. & after put to deeth for his wychednes.

After Guntobodan reigned his son Arthogade. ii. yere & he became so wyched f the byrons wold not suffer hym to be kyng. but put hf to deeth & made Hestour his brother kyng. & he became so meritable f men called hf kyng of pite. & whā he had reigned. ii. yere he had so grete pite of his brother Arthogade that was kyng before. f he forsoke his dignite. and toke his brother f crowne agayn. & made hym kyng agayn all f byrons wyll. & after Arthogade became so good of cōditions f all the lande loued hym for his debonayre. boynge right & reason to euery man. And he reigned. vi. yere & than dyed. & lyeth at Guntelien.

Then Hestour was made kyng after the deeth of his brother.

After the deeth of Arthogade f byrons crowned an other tyme Hestour. but his two brethren Fegamus & Hestour had of hym grete spye & stoune & ordeyned them helpe for to murre wth the kyng theyr brother. and so they toke hym & put hym in to pryson the seconde yere of his regne. & they departed al the lande betwixt them bothe. but Fegamus lyued but. vii. yere. & thā had Hestour al f lande. & he made f towne of Pichering.

Then the Byrons came and toke Hestour out of pryson. & made hym kyng the thyrde tyme.

When this Hestour was ded the Byrons toke Hestour anone and made hym kyng the thyrde tyme. and

Cambruge
Guntelien

Judas arrayed in his pontyfical ornaments came to meet hym / & he sodenly was pleased & worshipped þ byshop / & with peas & love entered þ cite / & he made to be brought to hþ þ boke of Danyel & the pphery to be expounded to hym / þ which was spoken of him / & that done he loved strongly / for all thþge þ he had herde by þ dyeme in due ordye was fulfilled / & it was lykely to hym þ he shold be þ same pstone of whom Daniel ppheryed / & of that he toke more hardynes to fight w Darrþ kyng of Perse / & he dyd the sacrifice / & comanded þ ierwes to axe what they wold haue / & graunted them to kepe theyr owne lawes / & at þ scrutþ yere shold be wout tribute. Vide magt in histo. The host of Alexadre as Dion⁹ saith was. xxxij. M. fotemen / &. iiii. M. horsme / & shippes. C. lxxx. And it is vncertayne wheder it is more meruayle þ he shold coquere all þ world w so lytel a power / or how he durst go vpon them w so litel a power. And there was of Alexadre & his host dayne þ kyng of Perse. Et Dion⁹ dicit qndes decies cetena milia C Enias þ sone of Iadi was byshop after his fader. C Panul⁹ Papi⁹ & fabius were consules at Rome. This Papius whā he was a childe he was very wyse / & he sayned many a fayre lesynge þ he myght kepe his masters counseyle & the senatours. And whan he came to mānes age he was a noble marryour / þ whā þ Romayns dyed Alexadre he was chosen to go agast hþ / & of þ goddes he charged not / but scorned them / sayenge alwe þ unhappþ thþng shold fall / & þ to his grete lounge holy doctours saye.

Incipit Monarchia Grecorū:
et cessat Monarchia Persarum.

U This tyme kyng Alexander begā to be lord of all þ world / & he was called grete Alexadre for his grete victories þ he had in so lytell tyme. He was an aydent iudgement of þ wysh of god a

gast sennet of þ tyme / certaynly some myracles our lord dyd for hþ in helpyng of his power: for þ see of paphlagon was deuoyded to hþ (as þ red see to þ itwes) whan he persecuted Darr⁹. Also at his prayer þ hylles of Caspi were shet þ certayne cursed ierwes myght neuer come out. But at þ last he was poysoned i Babylon / & dyed the. xxxij. yere of his age / and the. v. yere of his monarchy / the. xij yere of þ kyngdom of Bactron. Whan Alexadre was deid the. xij. to whom he deuoyded his kyngdom coude not accord wherof arose infinite batayles so þ. iiii. had all þ kyngdom. Vide pla in Orosio.

Anno mudi. iiii. M. ii. C. ii. Et ante Christi natiuitate. CC. ii.

A Chym of þ lyne of Christ lene to Sadoch is nobred in Math. i. & of hym is no more i scripture. C Symo was byshop this tyme an holy man & a ryght wyse he was named of þ people. C Eleazar⁹ was byshop after Symon This man sent to Ptholomeo kyng of Egypt. lxxij. lerned men / of cury cryde by. to interprete þ lawe of þ itwes / whiche they translated out of hebrewe in to greke by a grete miracle: þ so many men shold in. lxxij. dayes tradate all holy scripture w one accord. Vide Jug. de ci. dei. C Dolobela Emilius Marr⁹ Curus / Senur⁹ this tyme were consules at Rome. This Dolobela coquered Sanytes after many batayles had. And Marrus subdued Epirotas / & si. lxx. M. of his men: & than fled kyng Purro / which kyng sent to hþ for peas / offryng to him grete gyftes. Thā this consul answered. No batayle shall cause me to flee / nor no money corrupte me / for I had leuer comaunde riche men to do this & this / than be riche my self. C Comur⁹ subdued þ cite of Arguoy / & a legion of Rome knightes he sent to Rome to be held openly in þ market place for thei held the not lesully to þ court of rome for þ law was kept so

Partes tertia.

Readily at Rome, that if they had sayles to be theyr but obseruances in vertue, they shoulde be punished. The Romayns alwas & after were þ most noble men after þ worldes honoure & might be, & in al manner of vertue circumspecte as holy doctors saye, that they put examples to christen men, but not the intencion, for they lacked the hey of fayth.

Incipit reges egyptiorum ante non pot fieri geminatio: & interunt reges serie.



Pholomus Philadelphus was this tyme kyng in Egypt. This man was þ very worshipper of one god & full gracious to þ Jewes, of whome xx. vii. C. he deliuered out of captiuite and þ he dyd þ he myght please þ god of Israel, of whom he had herde meruayles, & his lawe he desired to haue, & that myght not be translated into none other language but of deuoute men, & that w due reuerence & solempne. Certayn men attempted to haue wyrtten it amonge þ Serpes of þ gentyles, to whom þ plague of god stode tyll they repented. This kyng sent into Cleaver the byshop, to sende to hys learned men, the whiche he dyd gladly. Writen ys in magis hystoria.

Anno madi. llii. M. ix. C. lix. Et ante Christi natiuitatem. ii. C. xl.

Aloud of the lyne of Christ gate Cleasar as it is open in Math. i. And more in scripture is not had of him. Omias byshop was sone to Symon. Symon was byshop after hf, whiche was a very religious mā, he reformed the tēple of god better, & encreased þ citie of Ierusalem: in many other good thynges. **S**ēpronius, Appius Claudius, Cneus Gaius, Terentius Regulus, Emilius Fabius this tyme were senatoures at Rome. This Sēpronius fought agaynst þ countre of Picentes, & almost þ cheualry on bothe parties were slayne, except a fewe. Romayns were lesse almye þ subdued þ countre. Appius Claudius subdued Syracusanas, & þ countre of Denos, & put grete tribute on them. Terentius Regulus a noble senatour ouerthrew iii. kynges: & lxxii. cities subdued, & a son of C. ch. for he serue. After wards toha he was ouer cruel agaynst his enemyes, demping in gyue them peas but yf they wolde paye a mighty tribute: they almost in despayre fought agaynst him & ouercame hf & his host, & toke hym, & yet they wolde sayne haue had peas, but this fawthful man had leuer dye in payne thā to gyue peas to cursed people. His louyng saynt Iustyn greatly exaltered. Emilius Fabius & Gaius wolde haue driuered Regulus but they obteyned not. **P**holomus Evergites this tyme was hing of egypt a victoripous prynce & a myghty. This man subdued Syria & Cilicia & þ moost parte of Asia, and toke theyr goddes & brought them into his countre. **P**holomus Philopater sone to Evergites reigned in Egypte. xlii. yere. This man fought agaynst ii. byethern. Seleucus & grete Antioch, & he prostrated many & thousande, but neuerthelesse he preynted not. Writen ys in Iohanne sup. Daniel. **M**anyball the moost cursed kyng of

Penox of africanoz mightely hated the Romayns / for he destroyed them almost to þ vetermest ende / & nygh þ cite of Rome he destroyed / & so many noble men of Romayns he slewe at one tyme / that thye busshelles of golde rynges he drew of theyr syngers. Also in a certayn water of the sayne bodyes of these Romayns he made as it were a byrge / þ his hoost myght passe. And at þ last Cipio þ noble senatour directed his hoost to hym & discōfytēd hym / & almost Cipios hoost of Romayns were slayne. Lucas cōsul. Sipronius valer^{us} / Fulnius luti^{us} Caius / & Scipio ruled at Rome. This tyme the Romays had peas one yere alone / & it was takē for a myracle þ they had so lōge rest / for afore this tyme in. liij. C. & xl. yere þ Romayns had neuer rest. These cōsules whā þ yere was done cōgregated all þ strength of ytal^y / & they had in theyr hoost. viij. M. armed men / for drede of þ frenshmen / whome they dyad strongly / & afterwarde þ Romayns subdued them. Epiphanes þ sone of Philopat regned in egypt. xliij. yere. Cleopatra doughter to grete Anthior^{us} was his wyfe. Anthior^{us} magnus this tyme regned in Syry / whiche dyd moche mischefe to þ Jewes. Ut p^{er} Barth. Onias this tyme was byshop in Ierusalē. This Onias for þ tyranny of Anthiocus fled w many ierwes into egypt / seynynge hym to fulfyll the pphcey of ysaie. lxx. that is to wyte / to buyde the temple. But in þ he synned / for he sayd otherwyse than he thought. The kyng of Egypte graciously receyved hym / & gaue hym þ londe of Helipolles / & there he buylded his tēple. Symon his sone was byshop at Ierusalē after that his fader was dedde.

¶ Circa annum m^{il}l^{is}. b. M. xliij. Et ante Christi nativitatē. C. lxx.

Alexsar of the lyne of Chyzt was about this tyme / of h^{is} no chynge is wyttē in scripture / but þ Barth. nom^{is} breth h^{is}. Ut p^{er} .i. Onias Pius was to þ Jewes byshop this tyme / an holy man / & well beloved w god & man / & not all onely w good men / but yll men also. At the last vnrighyt wyse was slayne of Andronito. Ut p^{er} .ii. macha. iij. Paulus Terentius / Scipio Africani^{us} / these were senatours at Rome / these two created an hoost agaynst Hanyball / & there almost þ Romayns hope dyed / for there was slayne. xliij. thousand Romayns. And this noble man Scipio Africanus brought agayn the state of þ Romayns the whiche stode in a despayre neuer to haue recouered. For he fought w Hanyball manly & discōfytēd h^{is}. All Spayne he overcame. All Affryke he subdued / grete Anthior^{us} he brought to be his seruant. All Asiam he made tributary to þ Romayns. This man so noble & so victor^{ious} by his owne unkynde couer^{se} was outlawed / & there he dyed. Phidome^{us} / the sone of Epiphanes of Cleopatra regned in egypt. xxxv. yere. This kyng yet a chyld noble Anthiocus grete^{ly} oppressed w^{ith} many deceytes. But þ Romayns sent legates þ which cōmaūded Anthiocus þ he sholde cesse of his tyranny agaynst hym. And Marcus Publi^{us} made a cercle about Anthiocus sayynge thus. The senatours of rome & þ people cōmaūde þ that þ go not out of this cercle tyll þ haue answered to this matter. This Anthiocus seynge þ he might not contynue his tyranny sayd. yf it be thus cōmaūded me of the senatours and Romayns / I must nedes turne agayn / & so wrood angry he was þ he lost þ syege of Alxandre / & turned to þ pooer releues of the Jewes / begyn^{ning} h^{is} on them / bycause he myght not venge hym on no myghty^{er} people. Ut p^{er} .iii. lib. macha. j. et. ii.

Paras tertia.

Machabias an holy man / & of all
maystynge moost worthy / hated
in his herte þe couersacion of all synners
all onely trustyng in our lord god of Is-
rael. Ut pz pzo macha. ij. And this mā
had. v. sones of the same loue vnto god.
This man was not bysshop in Israel
but his. iij. sones were. ¶ Judas Ma-
chabeus was bysshop. iij. yere / & he was
sone to Bathathias. This machabeus
was the moost named man þe euer was
in Israel / þe whiche had neuer none lyke
hym afore ne after. He wes in batayle a
myghty man / & offred hys to dye a mar-
tyr for þe lawes of god. ¶ Jonathas his
broder succeeded hym. xij. yere / the whiche
greme in vertue / & gouerned & abode
stedfast in þe lawes of god / & after falsly
was slayne of Crisphone & two of his so-
nes. Vide pta iuda et fte cr. lib. macha.
¶ Antiochus Epiphanes sone to Antio-
chus þe myghty this tyme was kynge of
Syrre. This man fro þe heed vnto þe fote
whiche & about al was cursed / & therfore he
was figured to Antechrist. Many mar-
tyrs he made cruelly / & falsly he disposed
hys to entre in to Egypt as his fader dyd
but he obteyned not / for þe Romayns let-
ted hys of his vnhappy werke / & how he
was in hostage at Rome / & how þe pphe-
cy of Daniel is copleted in hys ye may se
in þe boke of Macha. ¶ Quintus flami-
nius / Marcius Catho / Thiberius Gracchus
were senatours of Rome. This tyme so
moche batayle was þe lerned men of gen-
tyles & of þe true sayth bothe were wery
to wyte þe actes / or haue them in myn-
de. In þe whiche batayles men meruay-
led greatly on þe stedfastnes of þe romayns
that no tribulaciō / no drede nor hardnes
might fere them / but euer continued in
batayle. And certaynly these Romayns
after þe woules honeste / they were the
moost wysest men þe were / & therfore the
Machabees despyed theyr company.

Circa annū mundi. v. 88. lxx. Et ante
Christi natiuitatem. C. xl.

Machan sone to Sadoch of þe lyne
of Christ gate Jacob. Ut patet
Mathei. j. ¶ Symon sone to Batha-
thias was bysshop. viij. yere. This Sy-
mon was a very wyse man / & from his
youth vntyll his age was euer of good
couersacion / euermore vertuous. And
at the last he was slayne of his broder
Elay. Ut pz. j. macha. ¶ Johānes Hyr-
canus sone to Symon was after his fa-
der. xxij. yere / a noble man as all þe kyn-
rede was before hym. This man after
his deceasse lefte his wyfe a very wyse
woman / his fyue sones to gouerne the
Jewry / of whome the eldest was called
Aristobolus an vnpacient man and an
vnhappy. His owne moder with thre of
his yonger brethren he prysoned / & sette
them throughonger / & so alone he ly-
ued kynge & bysshop one yere. Vide pta
libro machabeor. ¶ Publius Lucinius
Lucius Emilius / Lucius Lucinius / &
Lucius Censorinus were consules at
Rome / in whose tyme the Cartagyens
& the Romayns warred strongly toge-
der / but the Romayns subdued them /
intendyng to haue destroyed the Carta-
gyens utterly. But amonge þe Romayns
there was a notable wyse man called
Scipio Auita / & amonge many nota-
ble counseyles / two he gaue specially to
be had in mynde. The fyrst that Cartago
sholde not be destroyed / that through þe
occasyon of forehande batayles / an in-
warde concord and peas sholde abyde
amonge the Romayns / & a perpetuall
strengthe for contynuall exerceise of ba-
tayle. The seconde / that in no wyse the
teathue sholde be buyded in Rome / for
he sayd that was the moost enemy that
myght be vnto the people whiche vied
warre / for that place nourysshed youth

and prouoked lecherie. And howe wysely
this notable man gaue counseyle the ty-
mes folowynge declare. Vide pfa in Ju-
gu. de ciui. dei. et Oro. lib. iiii. Yet for all
this counseyle the noble cite of Cartage
was destroyed of Scipio & his senatours
And it hyent .x. vij. dayes continually / ma-
ny men there were sold / & many men
ran in to y^e fyre wyllfully. ¶ Countre
this same yere was destroyed of the Ro-
mayns / whiche was the rycheft countre
of the world. ¶ Ptholome^s this tyme
reigned in Egypt / & was famylar with
the Romayns. And so longe he & his pre-
decessours reigned as they kepte fidelite
to the Romains. And knowe euery man
that there was none other cause that y^e
power of y^e Romayns encreased so strong-
ly aboute other people / but vertue y^e whi-
che haboundantly reigned in them / & na-
mely ryghtwysnes. y^e whiche aboute all
thynges they bled. And as longe as they
kepte mesurenys & loued ryghtwysnes
so longe they were neuer ouercomen / &
as soone as they were corrupted / it is
redde they were ouercome. ¶ It is had
in a certayne reuelacion of god shewed
to saint Brigit / that our lord god bereth
wytnes to these olde Romayns / y^e none in
this world of pure natural reason lyued
more ryghtwysly. And what lyghtes of
fayth they shewed in y^e tyme of chrysten
religion shall be shewed afterwarde.

¶ Begynnyng Judeorum testificatur.

Aristobolus was the first kynge &
preest in the Jewry. This man
reigned one yere alone / & toke to hym the
dynaume of y^e kyngdom. And he held y^e
not content with that y^e his fader gaue
hym in his testament. But he put his
moder in prison & his bretherne / & ther-
fore he perished wretchedly wth his bro-
der Antigonus / the whiche was of his
counseyle & helped hym. Vide magis in

historiis. ¶ Antigonus brother to y^e kynge
was slayne through y^e enuy of y^e quene.
¶ Alexander was byshop after Aristo-
bolus / & he stode .xxvij. yere / & he was
a tyrant / all though he appered sobre in
the begynnyng. But he made it known
what he was in his stomache. For he
slew his owne bretherne / & in .xii. yere
he slew .l. .99. of the olde sage faders of
grette vertue / bycause they tolde y^e his
mysgouernynge. Than whā he shold dye
he lefte two sones behynde hym. Pirca-
nus & Aristobolus. But certainly he sayd
his wyfe shold reigne / for she stode in y^e
grace of y^e people. ¶ Seruius flaccus /
Lucius Celsus / Fabius Publius / this
tyme were senatours at Rome. This
tyme batayles amonge themselves began
Of the whiche y^e first cause & the begyn-
nyng was Gracchus a myghty man &
well known wth noble Romayns / be-
gan to seke a cause agaynst them. And
bycause y^e he myght do no thyng alone
to them / he moued the comyn people to
them sayenge that all y^e landes & posses-
syons shold be deuptyd equally / & also y^e
money. &c. And for y^e cause there was an
insurreccion / in y^e whiche Gracchus was
slayne / & many mischeues fell after. Vi-
de Oro. lib. iiii. ¶ In the tyme of these men
there was a chylde borne at Rome ha-
uynge .iiij. feet. .iiij. armes. .ii. faces / and
iiij. eyes. ¶ The byll of Ethna spyttyd
out flampynge fyre horribly / & destroyed
the places nye about it. ¶ And these me-
berynge rule Cartago was comaunded
to be restored / & it was fulfilled of y^e Ro-
mayne people. And there was myghty
batayle in y^e cite of Rome. ¶ Fab^{us} wth
a lytell hoost ouercame the kynge of Je-
menye / and there were drowned an hon-
dred and .lxxx. .99. men in the water of
Rome. ¶ Ptholomeus Alexander was
kyng in Egypt. In his tyme was borne
Aurelius a poete / y^e whiche afterwarde

Part tertia.

that made for love of women a Grive
byndeth. ¶ Scytholomus came to Cleo-
pater regnes after hym / under whome
Salustius the noble wyter of hysto-
ryes was borne. ¶ Scytholomus Dio-
nysius was after this man. And in his
tyme Virgill & Ovidius were borne.

¶ Anno mudi. b. M. C. ccc. lxxij. Et ante
Christi natiuitatem. ix. C. v.

Iacob naturall fader to Joseph of
the lyne of Christ is reherced in
Luke & Matthee & lytel of him is had
in scripture. ¶ Alexandra wyfe to Alex-
ander was bysshop in the Iury. ix. yere / &
she dyd moche tyranny / all yf she was
made bysshop by her seyned holy rely-
gion. And Marcan her sone she promo-
ted to the bysshopye / & she ordeyned þ
he shoulde regne after her. This woman
in the lyne of þ bysshops is put for þ con-
tyngence of þ yeres. For that she vied þ of-
fice of a bysshop / for it was not lesfull to
her. ¶ Marcan sone to Alexander reigned
xxiii. yere. This Marcanus after the de-
cesse of his moder succeeded in the kyng-
dom in þ whiche he had lytel prosperite
for parcialite of the people. For anone he
was overcomen / & afterwarde he was
restored through the helpe of þ Arabes
And than he was made tributary to the
Romayns / & so he was in peas a lytel
tyme / but not in þ name of kyng. At the
last he dyed wretchedly / for he was be-
guiled through þ fraude of Parthoy / the
whiche Antigonus hyred agaynst him.
Vnde plene magis hysto. ¶ The heresy
of the pharisees about this tyme began
& amonge them were. iij. sectes in þ Ju-
ry / Pharisei / Saducei / & Essai / all these
were deuyded fro the comyn ble of the
Jewes / & were infecte w many errors
for they sayd þ they were holper than
other men / for they lyued straitlyer than

other men dyd. Vnde plus alias. ¶ Vir-
gill the most famous and excellent of
poetes was magnified this tyme / and
meruaylous thinges he dyd / & amonge
other whan that Acropolis was betch
with deedly payne of myghty wormes
Vlirgill cast a woyme of golde in to a pond
or a water / & it laye there a certayn sea-
son. And whan it was take vp in to the
to done / all þ cite was made full of wor-
mes / & tyll the woyme of golde was put
in to the water agayne / they had insy-
npte wormes / & whan it was in þ wa-
ter all the wormes went away. ¶ Also
it is wyten in the cronycles of Rome þ
Virgill by conynge cōdensed or chpyched
the ayre / so þ he waalled his gartyn with
the ayre / & he made a byrde of the ayre
by the whiche he myght passe euery ty-
me that he lyst. Also he asken Marcellus
Acropolitani neuwde vnto þ emperor
yf he wolde haue a byrde taughte to kyll
all byrdes / or a fye taughte to dypue all
fyes out of the cyte. And this Marcellus
tolde this to the emperor. And he desy-
red to teche a fye to kyll all fyes / for the
comyn people were sore anoyed w fyes
And many other meruayles he dyd. Vn-
de magis Rodulfum Cesteri. ¶ Ovi-
dus Nasutus / and Salustius Crispus
hystorici were this tyme. ¶ Quintus
Cipio / Gaius Lucius this tyme were
consules at Rome. ¶ Pompeius / Mari-
cus Crassus / & Julius Cesar this tyme
were Dictatours at Rome. For as it is
sayd afore there were many dignytes
at Rome / of the whiche some dured one
yere / & some t wo yere. And amonge all
the dignytes the Dictatours excelled
for it dured fyue yere continually. But
whan þ comyn people & the lordship of
Rome increasyng were made. iij. Dicta-
tours. And this tyme were Pompeius
Julius / & Mari' crassus dictatours / &
because Pompeius was of grete honour

and nged/ he abode at Rome to kepe the
comyn people of Rome. ¶ Marc^s Cras-
sus was sente to subdue & fyght with þ
region of Berthus / & throughe treason
he was taken & slayne. ¶ Julius Cesar
was sent to þ west parte of þ worlde to
subdue them. And he had wth hym. vii. le-
gyons of people. And whan he had sub-
dued Lombardy & fraunce / his. v. yere
were spenden þ whiche were assygned
to hym & no longer. There by his owne
auctorite he toke other. v. yere on hym /
in þ which he subdued Cassibalon kyng
of Brytayne / & the frenshmen that rebel-
led agaynst hym. This Julius after he
had conquered these countrees vnto Rome
he rode agayne for to be receyued wth cer-
taine worthyp^p as conquerours were be-
fore hym / but it was denyed him / & also
the entree of þ cite by instigacyon of a lor-
de called Pompey. Wherfore this Juli^s
Cesar was anoyed / & wth force of myght
entred the cite / & robbed the comyn trea-
sure / & ledde it wth hym / & departed it
amonge the. v. legyons þ were his ser-
uantes. Than went he in to Spayne to
fyght agaynst this Pompey / for Pom-
pey had þ gouernance of Cartago. But
after that iourney in yralye Pompey &
he encountred togyder / in which batayle
Pompey fledde vnto the kyng of Egypte.
And that same kyng for specyall loue þ
he had vnto this Julius cesar / smote of
Pompeys heed / & sent it to Julius Ce-
sar. Yet for all þ enemyte þ was betwixt
these two / Julius wepte whan that he
sawe this Pompeys heed. This Juli^s
was exceeding in wyete afore other men
& he fought in batayle. lii. tymes. This
man alone exceeded Marc^s Crassus / the
whiche is sayd to haue foughten. cxxi.
tymes. This man toke hyt the empyre
of Rome vpon hym whan Pompey and
other noble men of the Romayns were
slayne. And at þ last the lyfth yere of his

empyre this Julius Cesar þ ruler of all
the world was slayne in þ counseyl hous
throughe treason of his lordes. ¶ Carchon
the moost named philosopher sayng Ju-
lius cesar haue þ victo^{ry} / whome he fa-
uoured not / at a towne called Vicia sene
hymselfe. Iuxta illud. Saulis Caro
mori / quā deroget v^{bi}is honori. But for
that (after Austyn) he was not excused
of synne. ¶ This tyme þ Jury was tri-
butary to the Romayns for partialite of
two byetherne / Aristobolus / & Ercanus
both of them for enuy of other kest them
to þ Romayns that they myght regne.
¶ This tyme thre sonnes appered i he-
uen towarde the east parte of þ worlde /
the whiche by lytel & lytel were brought
in to one body. A grete signe it was that
Africa / asia & Europa shold be brought
in to one monarchy / & that þ lordshyp of
Anthony the senatour & Lucius Antonij
sholde turne in to one lordshyp. ¶ Mar-
cus Cicero Cilius þ moost excellent re-
thoricien was consul of Rome this tyme.

¶ How that the Britons graunted vnto
Cassibalon that was Ludes broder þ
londe / in whose tyme Julius Cesar ca-
me thwyse for to conquer Brytayne.

After þ deeth of kyng Lud regned
his broder Cassibalon / & became
a good man & moche beloued of his Bry-
tons / so that for his goodnes & curtesy
they graunted hym the realme for euer
more to hym and to his heyres. And the
kyng of his goodnes let poury the wo-
rthy bothe the sones þ were Ludas his
broder / & after made the eldest sone erle
of Cornwalle / and the yonger sone he
made erle of London. And whyles this
Cassibalon regned came Julius cesar þ
was emperour of Rome in to this londe
wth a power of romayns / & wold haue
had this londe throughe strengthe / but

Cassibalon overcame hym in batayle through helpe of þe byrons & þroug hym out of this lande. And he went agayne to Rome and assembled a grete power an other tyme and came agayne in to this lande for to gyte batayle to Cassibalon but he was oiscōfytred through strenght of the byrons & through helpe of þe erle of Cornewayle & the erle of London his broder and through helpe of Eubyan kynge of Scotlande and Corbond kynge of north Wales and of Bryayll kynge of south Wales. And in this batayle was sayne Remyon that was Cassibalons broder wherfore he made moche sorow And so wente Julius Cesar out of this lande with a fewe of Romayns þe were lefte alpyr. And than Cassibalon went agayne to London & made a feest to all his folke þe had holpen hym. And whan that this feest was all done than every man went home to his owne countree.

Of the debate that was bytween Cassibalon & the erle of London & of the truage that was payde to Rome.

And after it befell upon a daye þe gentylmen of þe byrges house & the gentylmen of þe erles house of London after meet went togyder for to playe & through debate that arose amonge them Enclith that was þe erles colyn of London sawe Ircnglas that was the kynges colyn wherfore þe kyng sawe þe Enclith shold be hanged But the erle of London þe was Encliths wyve wolde not suffre hym wherfore þe kyng was greatly vexed & mooveswarde the erle & thought to destrope hym & for that þe erle sent letters to Julius Cesar that he shold come in to this lande for to helpe hym & hym auenge vpon þe kyng & he wold helpe hym with all his myght. And whan the emperour herde

these tydynges he was full glad & ordeyned a stronge power & came agayne the thyrde tyme in to this lande & þe erle of London holpe him with viij. myn And at þe thyrde tyme was Cassibalon overtomen & dyscomfyred & made peas with the emperour for thre thousande pounde of spuer yelmyng by yere for truage for this lande for evermore. And than within halfe a yere after Julius Cesar the emperour went vnto Rome and the erle of London with hym. For he durst not abyde in this lande. And after Cassibalon reigned xviij. yere in peas and than he dyed the xviij. yere of his regne and lyeth at yorke.

How the lordes of the lande after the deth of Cassibalon & for because he had none heyre made Andragen kynge.

After the deth of Cassibalon for as moche as he had none heyre of his body lefully begoten the lordes of the lande by the comyns assent crowned Andragen erle of Cornewayle & made hym kynge. And he reigned well & wisely and he was a good man and well gouerned the lande. And whan he had reigned viij. yere than he dyed & lyeth at London.

Circa annum mundi. b. 3. C. lix. Ante Christi natiuitatem. xl.

Ioseph of the lyne of Christ was borne aboute this tyme and after was husbonde vnto our lady. Antigonus was byshop this tyme in the Jury. This Antigonus was some bynne Aristobolus and on every syde he was fals. For he obeyed not to the Romayns and a grete plage he brought vnto the lande for to destrope Pircanus his owne broder that he myght regne kynge and

In Herod was expelled & false was
 sayer & Herod was expelled. But when
 Herod came to Rome & tolde the sena-
 tors all these thynges / the emperour
 created hym kynge / sendyng with hym
 an host the whiche toke Jerusalem &
 Antigonus the byshop was take & ledde
 to Anthony & sentour the whiche ma-
 de him spker & so was Herod cofirmed
 into his kyngdome. And he a stranger
 reigned on the Jewes. And so the kyng-
 dom of the Jewes celled as Jacob had
 sayd. ¶ Titus Livius historiographer / and
 Quidius were this tyme.

¶ Incipit impatores Augusti. et dicitur
 est Augustus quia augebat populum.

Octavian was emperour of Rome
 this. pere. vij. monethes & x. dayes
 This Octavian newwe to July when
 he was a yonge man toke the empyre
 hym. His flouryng yonge pouth he spent
 in warre. & yue. & batayles he had
 And shortly after many batayles
 he brought in to one monarchy.
 This man had no felow & in his dayes
 peas was in all the worlde through the
 promysion of the very god that & tempo-
 rall peas myghte gloriouse the statute
 of our sauyour Chyrlt Jesu. This Octa-
 uian was & sayest man & myghte be &
 bygh in wytte the most fortunate man
 thynges & he lacked not the dyce of his
 felicity. This man made all & worlde
 to be insured. And in this. pere. of his
 byge was dothe the sauyour of all the
 worlde Chyrlt Jesu the whiche gra-
 tify eternal peas to his lowen. ¶ Herod
 was kynge of Judea & Caesaria
 was his sonne and of Emata was borne
 his sonne & so forth. And John baptyst.
 And this was first wedded to Jonathan of
 whom she toke Marye moder of Chyrlt
 The second husband was Cleophe &

he gate on her Marye Cleophe whiche
 was wedded to Alphe of whom perced
 James & Jesse Symon Cananeus Ju-
 das Cadrus & Joseph whiche is called
 Barsabas. The third tyme Anna was
 wedded to Salome of whom she toke
 Marye Salome whiche was wedded
 to zebedi & of them came James & moze
 & John the euangelist. The first Marye
 wedded Joseph brother to Cleophe also
 sayd. ¶ This tyme Sibilla Tiburtina
 prophesied of Chyrlt & sayd to & empe-
 rour August. & he wolde not trowe & he
 was god after & falsshynes of & paynes
 And there she shewed hym a sayre byrgyn
 in heuen holdyng a childe in her armes
 & sayd to hym. This childe is greater than
 thou & therfore do hym worshyp. ¶ The
 monarchy of Rome about this tyme en-
 creased myghtely. And when it was so
 that by all & worlde in dyuers pynnes
 batayles were repeld suddenly all men
 meruayllinge they were lesed and put
 them holy to & prince of Rome & openly
 it myghte be shewed that suche an uni-
 versal peas came neuer by labour of ba-
 taye but of & power of & very god that
 in his natyuite peas shoulde regne in the
 worlde. ¶ Herod Antipater was kynge
 in the Jery. xxvii. pere. This Herod
 ymmanus was the first straunge kynge
 that reigned on & Jewes. The mar-
 tit in histories sayth he was a noble man
 and saythfull in the begynnyng & in all
 thynges he had hym nobly. He was ve-
 ry gentyll vnto the Romayns & to & pro-
 ple that loued peas. And in his olde age
 when he wolde ouer moche please & Ro-
 mayns & heretofore byrd of Chyrlt die-
 dyng to be expelled of his kyngdom as
 a stranger wretchedly fell & shewe & In-
 nocentes & dyuers of his owne chyldren.
 And at & last was hateful to all people
 fell seche & dyed wretchedly. ¶ Marye the
 moder of Chyrlt was borne afore & nati-

[illegible]

***E. Chylus* natus est ex virgine sparit
anno mundi. 1. 23. C. lxxxviii.**

In the begynnyng of the .xliij. yere
of Octavian the emperour þe loly
the brygyn to regne in March: & þe .xxiiij.
yere of Diocles the .lii. C. yere after þe
Rome was buythen the .iiij. month fro
the conceyvinge of John Baptyst: the
lvi. halow of April the .vi. day at the
sawth of Calvarye of the brygyn Marye
was the yere Christ our sayoure and
the same yere was borne.

There at Chrysler's national headquarters the sixth age during to 6 for all things. Here, however, prices as good as nothing.



When our host John Christoph Walk
began a traditional sponge
cake Cyber by phone, it rained
all the time. **C**he golden village fell
the lovely morning had made a put in
his palms / sponge. This image shall
not fall away a maybe here a chyme.

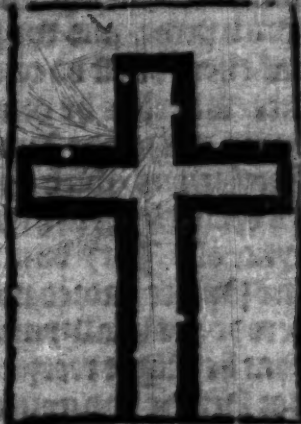
¶ When Herode disposed hym to dreß
children of Israel he was comanded by
the letter of þe emperour to come to Rome
to answer to þe accusacyō of þen children
Herodis & Archiboli. And there were .iii.
Herodes grauy spoken of for they: yll de
des. The first was called Archilonica /
vnder this ma was Christ borne / & the
children of Israel were slayne. The se
cond was called Antipas / sone to þe first
Herode / vnder whom John baptist was
headed / and Christ suffered deeth. And the
thyrde was called Agrippa / sone to Ar
chiboli / sone to þe first Herode / þe which
slewe James & pisoned Peter. The first
Herode whiche slawe his sones Herodis
Archiboli througþ þe peticō of his letter
by the emperour sent / stroue for þe succē
sion of his kyngdom / he disposed & ma
de Antipater þe was his first begotte sone
to be before them / & whan they were tel
kyng of þe deeth of they: fader / he kept the
away / & they went to þe emperour to co
playne of þe wronge of they: fader / & in þe
meane tyme þe thre kynges of Coleyn ca
me by Herode to Jerusalem / & whan they
came nee agayn by hys / he thought he they
were asswured to come agayn by hys / so
because they were deceyved / & that they
sought not þe childe as he demed / therfor
in þe meane seson he cōsed to dreß chry
sten of Israel / & than he went to Rome
for þe petycon of the emperour / & he told
his they by þe wyse of Carthus / wher he
had þe shoppes in whiche the thre ky
nges of Coleyn sholde haue sayed in
they: thre cōseders. Than after a yere
& certeyn dayes that Herode came to

Anno Christi. xii.

Some again accused him his sonnes / & for
the confirmation of his kyngdome he
was made moche bolder / & that he sette
all þe children of Bethleem þe were of the
yere of age and under / that had space of
one nyght of age / & amonge these was
there one of his owne chyldren. And Ari
stobolus & Marius were had suspected / in
so moche as they promysed a barbour a
grette reward for to cutte theyr fathers
throte when he shoulde be. And when
this Herode herde this / he was grieved
and there he sette bothe his sonnes. And
Herode Agrippa his sone he ordeyned to
be kyng. Wherfore Antipater his eldest
sone was about to poison his fader / the
whiche Herode Agrippa understood / &
pysioned there his brother / the whiche þe
emperour herde / & sayd þe he had rather
be an hogge of Herodes than to be one of
his sonnes / for his hogges he spareth / &
his sonnes he sleeth. And when Herode
was .lxx. yere of age / he was stricken w
a grette sickness in his handes & in his
feet & in his members / þe no leche might
come to him for spake & so dyed. When
Antipater his sone þe was in prison herd
tell of this / he ioied gretly / & there for þe
cause he was sayne. Then Archelaus
and Herode stroue for the succellion of þe
first Herode aforesaid þe emperour. The em
perour there throughe consyle of þe sena
tours þe halfe of þe Jury & ydumen gaue
to Archelaus under name of a tetrarche
The other parte he deuysed in to ebo.
Calde he gaue to Herode Antipas / and
Iuriam & Traconitis he gaue to Phi
lip Herodes brother. And þe same yere
Christ came from Egypte. And Arche
laus was accused many tymes of the
Jewes / & was exiled in to Vienna in to
Itallee. And in þe place were sit. iiii. Te
trarches to þe reppreue of þe vnsablen
nes of þe Jewes. And that same yere
Detavian the emperour dyed.

Iesu Christ our sauour at .xii. ye
re of age herde the doctours in the
temple. Our lord Iesu Christ at .xxx.
yere of age was baptised.

Cruz Christi.



Iesu Christ
the sonne of all
lordes at .xxiii.
yere of age and
thre monethes
dyed for his ser
uantes. An
ninus Rufus
was byshop in
the Jury about
this tyme. Va
lerius Gracius
was after hym

xi. yere. This man openly solde the by
shoppe / & he that gaue moost had it.
And so there was many in a lytel tyme
þe Ponet Pylat was iudge & piour
in the Jury under þe emperour. And
under this man saint John baptyst began
to preche. And our lord Iesu Christ suf
fred deeth / whom Pylate condempned to
deeth wroghfully for deede of þe emperour.
Cypus a certayn kyng gate a chyld
on Pyla a poore mannes daughter na
med Irus / & this chyld of his mothers
name & his belsye put togyder was cal
led Pylatus. This Pylat the .iii. yere
of his age was sent to his fader / þe whi
che kyng on his wyfe lesully had gotten
a chyld euen of the age of Pylate. And
bryause this lesully gotten chyld as they
proceded in age erreded this bastard Py
latus / he was full of enure / & so was his
broder the lesully gotten childe. Wherfore
his fader for his sent hym to Rome for
pledge for his tribute þe he payd to Rome
entendyng he wolde neuer redeeme hym
In the whiche tyme the kynges sone of
Itallee was pledge for his tribute the

Part quarta.

Whiche extend hym in strength & chry-
uaty also he deliue hym. Therfore þe Ro-
mayns first dynted as a geyable man
for the romys backe to the ple of Ponto/
to tyme þe cursed people þe whiche deliue
eueri Judge that came to them. And he
that cursed man gouerned that unhap-
py people. What with chyetenyng and
with promysse & with lawe / and with
grytes / that none of them durst do con-
trary to his pleasure. Wherfore he was
called Pylate of Ponto. Herode Anti-
pa pouge in his conuersacions / with gry-
tes and messengers byrue hym to hym
and made hym prynce of þe Jury vnder
hym. And this tyme Pylate gadred mo-
che money / and Herode not knowyng
he went to Rome that he might receyue
of the emperour that Herode had gyuen
hym. Wherfore Herode & Pylate were
enemys togyder vnto þe passyon of our
lorde. When þe Pylate sent Jesu Chryst
vnto Herode clothed in a Robyte clothe
than they were made frendes. Claudius
Aulo in Ponto aboute this tyme
dyed the fourth yere of his exile. Ti-
berius this tyme was emperour at Ro-
me and he reigned. xxiij. yere / and he ly-
ued in þe yere that our lord Jesu Chryst
dyed / & somewhat after. This man was
in all his werkes grete auyled / þe
holde be nothyng soderly done. Wyse
in warres /狡猾ous in bokes / saye of
speche / freche in wyte / saur he wolde
often tymes kyng hymselfe to do thynges
that he wolde not were done of other.
This emperour vnderstode & trusted in
Chryst / and worshipped hym for god.
Some men saye at þe last he was cruell
agaynst the people / but it was a grete
reason of pryce þe he was euer gracysous
to his subiectes and poore men. And he
had pens at his day. & all people that
sayd agaynst chryst / like / without ony
mercy he destroyed. And he exiled Py-

late for euer. Than he destroyed & a boyle
dressed hym. After this tyme it is wy-
ten that our lord at. xxx. yere of his age
chose his. xiiij. apostles / the whiche ma-
de our Cerde. that is our bylane / & they
made it after the resurrexion of Chryst
and after the holy ghoost was sent vnto
them. When they had chosen Mattheus
an apostle / & eche of them made a parte / as
it is shewen here after. And this Ma-
theus was chosen by the name the daye of þe
Whetson & Whetson daye / in the place
of Judas Iscariot þe traitour / of whome
in an hyssoye is reade thus. There
was a certayn man in Jerusalem that
hyght Judas / & after saynt Jeromes he
was of the trybe of ysachar / & his wyfe
hyght Cibora / & whiche on a certayn
nyght whan he wolde lustely knowe his
wyfe / she dreamed that she sholde bere a
chylde of myschance / & that chylde sholde
be a traitour to his kyng and to all the
people of that regyon. And whan that
chylde was borne & called Judas / his
fader & his moder abhored as well to
see the chylde / as to nouryshe a trai-
tour to the kyng & all his people / ther-
fore they put hym into a panyer or lece
in to the see. And he solwed to the ple of
Searioth / where the lady of that place
had no chylde by her husbonde / & she
fermd her to be a chylde / but she sayled
And after a lytel season the same lady &
quene conceyued a chylde of her husbonde
And whan he was of age Judas many
tymes angrid hym / and caused hym to
wepe the whiche þe quene sawe / & better
Judas many tymes / & after she knowe-
leged that Judas was not the kynges
sone no berd / wherfore Judas sturme
þe kynges sone / and he bradde the payre
of the lawe / & stode with certayne ex-
iles to Jerusalem. And whan he came
there / he gate hym to Pylates court
that was iudge. And by cause that our

cursed man dyatweth to an other / ther-
fore he dyed to pylate / & stode greatly
in his favour. And upon a certayn daye
whan pylate looked out of his palays in
to an orcharde of a manes that was cal-
led Ruben the whyche was very fader
to Judas. Pylate desyred to have ap-
ples and Judas went to gader apples
and Ruben came to Judas for to let hy
because he toke his apples without ony
law. And after þ they had chydren this
Judas smote his fader on the heed w a
stone & slew him / & Judas fledde away
secretely after þ dede / but it was sayd þ
Ruben died fodepily. Cha pylate gaue
Judas all Rubens goodes & his wyfe
Ciborea þ was his moder. And he delte
not curreyly w her as a man shold do w
his wyfe / wherfore she wepte because
she had put her sone in þ see / & þ she was
matyed agaynst her wyll. It was as prey-
ned þ Judas had slayne his fader & wed-
ded his owne moder. Chan Ciborea his
moder & wyf spyed hy to leue his synne
which he dyd & folowed Chyrlt / & he for
gaue hym his synnes / & made hym his
protour & apostle / & how false he was
to Chyrlt it nedeth not to rcherse. And þ
same yere Marthe was chosen / & the
holy ghoost was sente vnto them as is
sayd before. The apostles or they were
warpled in to all þ worlde / they gadered
them togyder in Jerusalem / and made
the Credo our blyue here folowynge.

Petrus Credo in deum patre oipo-
tentem creatore cel et terre.
Andreas Et in Iesum Christu filiu
eius unicu dominu noster.
Johanes Qui conceptus est de spiritu
scto / nat ex maria virgine.
Jacobus Passus sub poncio pylato
crucifixus mortu & sepult.
Thomas Descendit ad inferna / tertia
die resurrexit a mortuis.

Jacobus

Philippus

Bartholo.

Matheus

Symon

Judas

Matthias.

Ascendit ad celos sedet
ad dexteram dei patris
omnipotentis.

I n de venturus est
iudicare viuos et mo-
tuos.

Credo in
spiritum san-
ctum.

Sanctam
ecclesia ca-
tholicam.

Sanctorum commu-
nionem remissionem
peccatorum.

Carnis re-
surrectio-
nem.

Et vitam
eternam
Amen.

Iesu Chyrlt our sayour arose fro
deth to lyfe and sayd to his discy-
ples. All the power in heuen and erth is
gyuen vnto me. And go ye thus in to all
the worlde and preche & teche vnto eu-
ery creature / and I shall be with you to
the ende of the worlde. Chyrlt he chose
hym. xxiij. discyples. And he had. xiiij. a-
postles the whiche he sente in to all the
worlde to preche. It is not redde þ there
were moe ordres amonge the discyples
of Chyrlt. Of whom the prelates & bish-
shops in the church of god yet kepe the
fourme. For to the apostles the bishops
succede / and to the discyples prelates /
to the whiche two ordres all the church
is gyuen as a godly gerarchy. As patet
in decreto Damascie pape.

Wrote in Asia in
greke language.

In principio
erat verbu. &c.

Johannes.

Wrote in pralye but
in greke language.
Initium euangelij **Marcus.**
Jesu Christi. 22.

Wrote in grece in
greke language.
Luit in diebus **Lucas.**
Herodis regis ui-
de sacerdos. 22.

Wrote in the Tury in
hebrew language.
Liber generacionis **Matheus.**
Jesu Christi. 22.

Here begynneth the order of po-
pes of Rome. & continueth as the
lyne of Chyriste byd afore. for in
them god lefte his powver.

Anno domini. xxxiiij.

Peter a Jylde & fyrst pope was a
blyssed man & a glorious apostle
of Chyrist. He was herd of & chyrche af-
ter Jerom. xxxviij. yere. And he had his
brydympeche in & self. v. yere and sayd
masse. he made our lord. & alone sayd &
Pater noster. Than after he came to An-
tiochiam / & there he abode. viij. yere te-
chyng & waye of trouth. & Symon Ma-
gus he colouided & ouerrame. That sea-
son he preached to & people & were circi-
cled whiche were in Ponto of Galati /
Capadocia / Asia / Bithinia. Than herd
he that Symon Magus denied & Ro-
mayns through the iour of & sayth. he
came to Rome in & fourth yere of Clau-
dius the emperour. & there he preached
the woide of god. & showed the falshe-
de of Symon Magus / and turned many
a man to & sayth. That he sent his pre-
chers by dyuers prouynces. by whom
chrystenedigyon was myghty encrea-
sed. He ordeyned the seck of luteria afore

order. and the aduent. & the iunmeryng
dayes to be fasted of all chrysten people.
into the mystrone of & fyrst & seconde co-
mynge of our lord. Than when he had
ben pope at Rome. xxb. yere. viij. mon-
ethes & viij. dayes he was sayne of Ae-
ro. & pflaga vide act. aplos. & Saus
this tyme was emperour at Rome. and
regned. iij. yere and. x. monethes. This
Saus was full beryous in lutyng. for
eue of his oth systers he mysused. & in
one of them he gate a daughter. whiche
childe he set betwixt & hurnes of Jupiter
in the temple. & serued afterward & Ju-
piter had gotten her. wherfore he byd to
trye through & countre & all men sholde
woysshyp her as a goddesse. This man
also made an ymage lyke hys self. & sent
it to one Patronie president at Jerusalem
under the Romayns. & making hym
that he shold compell & iellows to do woy-
shyp therto. And for these enomytees &
many othe. our lord suffred hym to be
sayne at Rome in his owne palays.

Of kynge Synder that was kyn-
balyns sone. that wolde not paye the
tribute to Rome for the londe & Cassi-
balon had graunted. and how he was
sayne of a Romayne.

After the deeth of this kyn-
balyn regned Synder his sone
a good man and a worthy. & was of so
hygh herte that he wolde not paye to
Rome the tribute that kynge Cassyba-
lon had graunted unto Julius Cesar.
wherfore the emperour that was then
that was Claudius Cesar. was soye a-
nored and greued. and ordeyned a great
powver of Romayns. and came in to this
londe for to conquer & tribute through
myght and strengthe. and for to haue
on the kynge. But this kynge Synder
and Senager his broder assembled and

gadered a grete hoost togyder of Brytys
and gaue batayle to þe emperour Clau-
dius / & sicme of þe Romayns grete plen-
te. The emperour had afterwarde one þe
man called Hamon þe saue theyr people
were there fast slayng / & pryncely cast a-
waye his owne armes / & toke þe armes
of a deed byrton & armed hym therewith
and came in to the batayle to þe kynge / &
thus he sayd. For þe of a good herte for
goddes loue / for the Romayns your ene-
myes anone shall be slayne & dyscheyred.
And the kynge gaue no hepe to his wo-
des / for bycause of þe armes that he had
upon hym / & wend it had ben a Byrton
But the traytour euer helde hym nexte
the kynge / & pryncely vnder þe sholder of
his arme he smote the kynge / wherfore
the kynge dyed & fell downe to the erth.
Whā Armager sawe his broder so deed
he cast a waye his armes & toke to hym
his broders armes / & came in to the ba-
tayle amonge þe byrtons / & hadde them
hertely for to fyght & fast lay downe the
Romayns. And for þe armes they wende
it had ben kynge Synder that afore was
slayne þe they wysst not. Than began the
Byrtons fyrstly to fyght / & slewe the Ro-
mayns. So at þe last þe emperour forsoke
the fynde & fledde as fast as he myght to
his folke in to Wynchestre. And the fals
traytour Hamon þe had slayne the kynge
fast anone began to flee with all þe haste
that he might. And Armager þe kynges
broder pursued hym full fyrstly with a
fyrst herte / & droue hym vnto a water
and there he toke hym / & anone smote of
bothe handes & feet & heed / & betwix the
body all to peces / & than let cast hym in
to the water / wherfore that water was
called Hamons haue. And afterwarde
there was made a fayre towne that yet
standeth þe is called Bourhamiton. And
afterwarde Armager went to Wynche-
ster to seeke Claudius þe Emperour / and

there toke hym. And Claudius þe empe-
rour throughe counseyle of his Romayns
that were lesse alyue made peas wth Ar-
mager in this maner folowynge that is
to saye / that Claudius sholde gyue vnto
Armager Gennen his daughter to wyfe
& that this londe fro that tyme forward
shold be in þe emperours power of Rome
takynge none other tribute but homage.
And they were accorded. And vpon this
couenaunt Claudius cesar sente to Rome
for his daughter Gennen. And whā he
was comē Claudius gaue her to Arma-
ger to wyfe. And Armager spoused her
at London wth grete sollemnite. And thā
he was crowned kynge of Brytayne.

Cof kynge Armager in whose tyme
saynt Peter preached in Antioche / with
other apostles in dyuers countreys.

This Armager reigned well and
worthely & gouerned well þe lode
And Claudius cesar in remembraunce of
this accorde / & for reuerence & honour of
his daughter made in this londe a fayre
towne & castell / & let call the towne after
his name Claucesstren / þe now is called
Gloucestre. And whā this was all done þe
emperour toke his leue & went to Rome.
And Armager gate a sene on his wyfe
þe was called Westmster. And whyle this
Armager reigned saynt Peter preached in
Antioche / & there he made a noble chir-
che in þe whiche he sate fyrst in his chay-
re / & there he dwelled. vii. yere. And af-
ter he went to Rome & was made pope
tyll þe Nero þe emperour let martyr hym
And than preached openly all þe apostles
in dyuers londes the true saythe. And
whā Armager had reigned. xiiii. yere
he dyed / and lyeth at London.

How kynge Westmster gaue to Beryn-
ger an plande forlet / & there this Beryn-
ger made the towne of Berwyk.

After this Brumager reigned
his sone Westmer / that was a
good man and a worthy of body / & well
gouverned the londe. It befell so that cy-
pynges came to hym on a daye that the
kyng Roderph of Castayne was come
in to this londe with an huge host of
people and was dwellyng in Branc-
more. And whan kyng Westmer herde
those cypynges / he let assemble an huge
host of Byrons / and came to kyng Ro-
derph & gaue hym batayle. And kyng
Westmer slewe Roderph with his owne
handes in playne batayle. And whan
kyng Roderphes men sawe that they
lord was slayne / they reided them all to
kyng Westmer / & became his men for
euermore. And he gaue them a countre &
was forlet wherem they myght dwell / &
thyder they went / and dwelled there all
theyr lyfe tyme / & .x. C. men there were
of them / & no moo lefte at that batayle.
Theyr gouernour & prynce was called
Beringer / & anon he began a towne &
they myght therin dwell & haue resorte
& let call þe towne Berwyk vpon Tweede
And there they enhabtyed & became cy-
che. But they had no women amonge
them / and the Byrons wolde not geue
theyr daughters to þe straungers / wher-
fore they went ouer see in to Irlonde / &
brought with them women / and there
they them spoused. But the men coude
not vnderstande theyr language ne spe-
che of these women / & therfore they spa-
ke togyder as scottes. And afterwarde
through chaungynge theyr languages
in all Fraunce they were than called scot-
tes / and so sholde the folke of that coun-
tre be called for euermore.

When kyng Westmer let arere a
stone in þe entrynge of Westmerlode
there as he slewe Roderph / & there
he began first housynge.



After this batayle that is a
boue sayd / whan Roderph was
slayne / kyng Westmer in remembraunce
of his vycory let arere there besydes þe
waye a grete stone on hygh / and yet it
standeth / and euermore shal stande / and
he let graue in the said stone lettres that
thus sayd. The kyng Westmer of By-
cayne slewe in this place Roderph his
enemp. And this Westmer was þe first
that buylded hous and towne in West-
merlonde / and at that stone begynneth
Westmerlonde / that Westmer let call af-
ter his owne name. And whan Westmer
had so done / he dwelled all his lyfe tyme
in that countre of Westmerlonde / for he
loued that countre aboue all other coun-
tres. And whan he had reigned .xxv. ye-
re he dyed / and lyeth at Karleyll.

Of kyng Copll that was kyng
Westmers sone / that helde his londe
in peas all his lyfe tyme.

Copll Westmers sone was crow-
ned kyng after his fader / and he
was a good man & a worthy / & of good
condempn / & well gouerned his londe / &
of all men he had loue and peas. And in
his tyme was neuer contake / debatt /
nor warre in Byctayne. And he reigned

in peas all his lyfe. And when he had
reigned. xi. yere he dyed & lyeth at yorke.

Claudio was emperour at Rome
nexte after Cayus / & he reigned
xiiij. yere &. liij. dayes. This man came
into grete Britayn now called Englonde
to challenge the trybutte whiche they
dyd deny to þe Romayns. And after grete
batailles there was bytome the empe-
rour Claudius & Armaget kyng of Bri-
tayne. And after accordement made that
this Armaget sholde wedde Claudius
daughter. and after they two shold euer
lyue in peas / in token wherof this Clau-
dius named þe cite where they were ma-
ried after hym & called it Claudicestre /
he call it now Glocestre. This Claudio
had. iij. wyues / & on Petrus þe first wyfe
he gate a daughter that byght Antonia.
The fyrst wyfe decessed and he wedded
Messalina & gate a sone þe byght Brita-
nicus & Octavia a daughter. The thyrde
he wedded Agrippina / haupnge a sone
that byght Nero. Claudio wedded his
daughter Octavia to Nero his wyues
sone. This Claudio for loue þe he had to
Agrippina his last wyfe he sette Mes-
salina his secod wyfe / lest she shold haue
helpe Britanicus her sone & his to þe em-
pyre. yet Agrippina þe last wyfe of Clau-
dius had lest her husbonde wolde haue
slayed Britanicus & haue deposed Nero
his sone / therfore she poisoned her hus-
bonde Claudius / & Nero was promoted
to þe empyre. And this same Nero gaue
his moder suche a reward agayn / for he
poisoned Britanicus & sette his owne
moder & his wyfe Octavia. James
þe moze þe apostle this tyme was sayne
of herode Agrippa / & Peter was prysol-
ed. It was. xii. The body of saynt Pa-
ul was brought by myrrour to Ga-
les of Spayne. And after Claudio
was emperour / & he reigned. xiiij. yere &

viij. monethes. This Nero was a cur-
sed ma / & made grete wast in þe empyre
he wolde not syllye but with nettes of
golde & ropes of sylke. A grete parte of þe
lordes of Rome he sette. he was enemy
to good men. He sette his moder & his
wyfe / his moder and his mayster. He
sette also Peter & Paule. He wolde ne-
uer were one cloth two tymes. His boi-
ses & his mules were shod with syluer.
And at the last he dyd set a grete part of
Rome on fyre / some saye to se how Trop-
hyent / & some saye the Romayns coplay-
ned þe stretes were to narrow. And whā
he had dynt a grete parte of Rome / he
to sayd there was space to buyde þe stre-
tes wyder. Than þe senators to the co-
myn people came vpon hym to see hym
And he fled by nyght into þe subbarbes
of þe cite / & hyd hym amonge þe bynes / &
he herde harles & beggers come by hym
that sayd / & they wyll where the empe-
rour were / he sholde neuer scape them.
Nero thought it sholde be grete deroga-
cion to his name & he were sayne of har-
les / & on a grete stake he ran hys selfe to þe
herre & dyed / & there was buryed / & de-
uyls kepte his body many a day after / &
dyd grete hurt to þe people / tyl by a my-
racle of our lord þe body was founde & ta-
ken away / & than the deuyls bordred.
Seneca was this tyme maister to Ne-
ro. Iuuenalis poeta. Lucan poet.
James þe lesse þe apostle byshop of
Jerusalem was sayne of þe Jewes the
vi. yere of Nero. Marcus þe euangelist
was martyred the fyrst yere of hym.

¶ Circa annu Christi. lxxiij.

Linus pralicus was pope of Ro-
me. x. yere &. iij. monethes &. xij.
dayes. This Linus & his successor Cla-
tus through therr holy conuersaciō were
made to mynyster þe treasour of the chur-
che to the people. Peter dryngt alyue / &

But attende to prayer & shewpage.
It is knowe of this Cirus that he wrote
first in his letters. Valente is apostolical
blessed. And at this tyme was many
a bysshop of Peter sayne under Nero.
Calde this tyme was emperor / &
he reigned seven monethes. This man
was made emperor by the power of
spayne in the same londe. Nero luyng
And after the death of Nero brought to
Rome / & there was sayne of a man that
came with doctore to Rome. He smote of
his heed & bare it to hym that was em-
perour nexte. Seynge all his men & none
of them helppng hym. In this man-
nes dayes came the grete herodesyren
to Rome fro spayne / & was the first
euer taught & seyntce openly. His name
was Quinctian. Oetho reigned after
hym / and he reigned but thre monethes
for one Vitellus that was presyden of
France challenged the empyre / & in pe-
tye bytwene these two were the grete
batailles / & in the fourth bataille Oetho
saw he shoulde be ouercomen / & in grete
delpayre he slewe hymself. Vitellus
reigned after this Oetho. viij. monethes
for he was a folowr of Nero / moost spe-
cially in glotony / & in syngynge of soule
songes / & at festes cryng out of mesure
that he myght not kepe it. Vaspasia-
nus reigned nexte after hym. x. yere. i.
monethes & xij. dayes. The well gouer-
ned men of Rome seynge the cruelled suc-
cession of Nero / sent after this Vaspas-
ian into Palestyn / for there he was &
his sone Titus / whiche had besyeged
Jerusalem. And when he herde & Nero
was dead / by whom he was sent to Je-
rusalem / and herde of these our men
seynge / at the instauce of these wyse
men of Rome / & not wyllingly toke vpon
hym the empyre. And anon as he was
comen to Rome / he ouercame the tyrant
Vitellus / & let hym be dyscown through

Rome / & after in Cybety he was be-
and than let hym sayle thowse lapidures
for this the people despyre. This man
was curd of shalpes in his nose / as
as he byleurd in our lorde Jesu / & that
was the cause why he went to Jerusa-
lem to benge Charles dead. He fought
xxx. ymes with his enemyes. And he
dyed the yere of grace. lxxx.

¶ Anno domini. lxxxiiij.

¶ Let a martyr was pope. xj. yere.
This Cirus was a Romayne / &
greatly he loued pilgrynages to sayntes
saynge it was more petye for hym of
manned soule to dysce the place & sayne
Peter was in / than to fast & praye. He
curled all those men leerynge suche pi-
grimages or coustlers cōsary therto.
At last was martyred by Damascian
emperour. Cirus sone to Vaspasian
was emperor this tyme / & reigned. iij.
yere / & he abode xij. at Jerusalem after
the electyon of his father / & destroyed the
cite / and slewe there (as the story sayth)
with bataille & hunger. x. hōdred thou-
sande iewes / and an hōdred thousand
he toke / & solde xxx. for a peny / because
they solde our lorde Jesu Chyrt for xxx.
pens / & broughte thys all thynge that
was petyous / & put them in his hous
at Rome / whiche was called Tēpla
etc. But now is & place fallen downe in
the moost part. And at these petyous
iellous he wylde but to erecte petyous
ches in Rome. This Cirus was so full
of vertue that all men loued hym / so
much that they called hym the moost
pleasable of men. He was full lyberall
all men / & forgoth the chiche sayntes
tymes / that there shoulde no maner
god from an Emperour. And he was
bette / but he shoulde have comen to
his petyous the more. he sayth in
the which he had granted no

no benefyte. When he was deed every man þ that was in Rome wepte for hym as that they had lost theyr fader. ¶ Domitian broder to Titus reigned after hym xij. yere & v. monethes. First he was easy and afterwarde full unreasonable. for moche of þe senate was destroyed by his malice & also moche of his kynrede he began the seconde persecucion after Nero agaynst chrysten men. In þe whiche persecucion John þe euangelyst was exiled in to Paphmos after þe emperour had put hym into a tonne of brennyng oyle & hurte hym not. So this man was not the folower of his fader Claspasian ne his broder Titus but rather lyke Nero & his kynrede. And for his wycked cōduccion he was slayne in his own palays at Rome in the. xxvii. yere of his age. ¶ Clemens a martyr was pope. ix. yere and he succeeded Cletus. This Clemens first of saynt Peter (as it is sayd) was ordeyned to be successour to hym. And for peryll he wolde Linus & Cletus sholde be popes afore hym lest þe church þe cristen prelatres sholde ordeyne vnder them who someuer they wolde. This man made þe lyfe of martyrs to be wyrten by regyons & he made many boke. He ordeyned þe a chyld sholde be cōfirmed as soone as it myght manerly after it was chrystened. And at þe last he was martyred vnder Traian. ¶ Aetius was emperour after Bonitian one yere & two monethes. And whā he was chosen he meured þe senate to make a lawe þe all thyng whiche Bonitian cōmaunded to be kept shold be broken. By which meane saynt John þe euangelyst was loosed out of his exile & suffered to come agayn to Ephese. This man dyd an other thyng ryght commendable that he assigned so wyte a man as Traian was to gouerne þe people after hym. Nota. ¶ Traianus hyspanicus was Emperour. xix. yere. This

Traianus many men sayd he was þe best amonge all the Emperours but in one thyng alone he was vicious in so moche as he for þe loue of fals goddes was aboute to destroye þe chrysten fayth. And gyng in hysleife so moost to please god. Some men saye not by hymself but by other he pursued þe chrysten fayth & in þe ende of his lyfe he dyd but fewe to deeth. And all his louyng I set at nought. But at saint Gregory merced wth pure wepyng & prayed to our lord for hym þe he wolde haue mercy vpon hym & by his prayer haue hym out of hell in to whiche place he was dampned. And now þe he be saved or not a grete alteracon is amonge doctours. And to vs þe wyte Cronicles it is no parte of our charge to determyn. But all þe rest parte of þe worlde Babylonia Belencia the better partes of the ynde. Germanyne the seconde after Alexander he helde vnder. In all these thynges so pytous & so mekely he guyded hym to euery man as a kynge. He was gentyl and to no man vngentyl the whiche is red of fewe. All the dayes he lyued men sayd he was the moost worthy man in all his empyre. And he thought & sayd euermore þe no man was more vnderthy to be emperour than he.

¶ Anno domini. C. iiii.

¶ Hadrian a martyr was pope. ix. yere & he was a Syke. He monyshed all churche men þe prestes sholde be worshipped about all other men sayenge þe prestes doyng sacrifice to god sholde be bozne out & not deryd but be worshipped. And whā prestes sayd masse they sholde haue wytnes wth them and namely bysshops. Also he decreed þe clerkes sholde werr no berdes nor longe heer. Also þe a bysshop shold be consecrated of thre & dyuers other thynges. At the

Peter & Andrew to diaper & preaching.
 It is wrote of this Titus that he wrote
 byd in his letters. Salute is apostolical
 bloudless. This tyme was many
 a byscoppe of Peter sayne under Nero.
 Calba this tyme was emperor / &
 he reigned seven monethes. This man
 was made emperor by the power of
 spayne in the same londe. Nero tyung
 And after the deathe of Nero brought to
 Rome / & there was sayne of a man that
 came with whete to Rome. He smote of
 his heed & bare it to hym that was em-
 perour nexte. seynge all his men / & none
 of them helppng hym. In this man-
 nes dayes came the grete Kerboyyen
 to Rome fro Spayne / & was the first
 ever taught & seynt openly. his name
 was Quintilian. Otho reigned after
 hym / and he reigned but thre monethes
 for one Vitellus that was president of
 France chalenged the empyre / & in yea-
 ly bytwene these two were thre grete
 batayles / & in the fourth batayle Otho
 laide he shoulde be overcomen / & in grete
 despayre he slewe hymselfe. Vitellus
 reigned after this Otho. viij. monethes
 for he was a folower of Nero / moost spe-
 cially in glotony / & in synnginge of soules
 songes / & at festes cryng out of mesure
 that he myght not kepe it. Vaspasia-
 nus reigned nexte after hym. ix. yere. x.
 monethes & xij. dayes. The well gover-
 ned men of Rome seynge the curio sur-
 rellion of Nero / sente after this Vaspas-
 ian unto Palestyn / for there he was &
 his sone Titus / whiche had besyged
 Jerusalem. And whan he herde & Nero
 was deed / by whom he was sent to Je-
 rusalem / and herde of these chastysement
 regynge / at the instauce of these wyse
 men of Rome / & not wyllfully toke upon
 hym the empyre. And anon as he was
 comen to Rome / he ouerthrew the tyran-
 tical / & let hym be bysgen through

Rome / & after in Cybertyl he was dyed
 and than let hym sayle wout sepulture
 for this the people desyred. This man
 was cured of waspes in his nose among
 as he played in our lordes Jesu / & that
 was the cause why he went to Jerusa-
 lem to venge Chyristes deeth. He fought
 xxxij. yeres with his enemyes. And he
 dyed the yere of grace. lxxx.

Quinto domini. lxxxij.

Alet a martyr was pope. xi. yere.
 This Titus was a Romayne / &
 greatly he loved pilgrimages to sayntes
 saynge it was more phyte to & helth of
 mannes soule to vylte the place & sayne
 Peter was in than to fast two yeres. He
 cursed all those men lettynge suche pil-
 grimages or consyleys contrary thereto.
 At last was martyred by Damarian
 emperor. Titus sone to Vaspasian
 was emperor this tyme / & reigned. iij.
 yere / & he abode xij. at Jerusalem after
 the decayon of his fader / & destroyed the
 cite / and slewe there (as the wyse sayth)
 with batayle & hunte. xij. hundred thou-
 sande Jewes / and an hundred thousand
 he toke / & solde xxx. for a peny / be cause
 they solde our lord Jesu Chyrist for xxx.
 pens / & brought thens all thynges that
 was precious / & put them in his hous
 at Rome / whiche was called Templu
 ar. But now is & place fallen downe in
 the moost part. And all these precious
 Jewelles be wylly but comen into pri-
 ches in Rome. This Titus was so full
 of vertue that all men loved hym / so
 much that they called hym the moost be-
 levedde of men. He was full lyberall to
 all men / in semeche thache he spake of
 synnes / that they shoulde no maner man
 god from an emperor. With an yene
 better / but he shoulde have don what
 his preyson. He wolde be saynt but
 in the whiche he has granted no man

no benefyte. When he was deed/ euery man þat was in Rome wepte for hym/ as that they had lost their father. ¶ Domitian broder to Titus reigned after hym xiiii. yere 7. v. monethes. First he was easy/ and afterwarde full vnrasonable. For moche of þe senate was destroyed by his malice/ & also moche of his kynrede. He began the seconde persecucion after Nero agaynst chrysten men. In þe whiche persecucion John þe euangelist was exiled in to Bathmos after þe emperour had put hym in to a tonne of brennyng oyle & hurte hym not. So this man was not the folowere of his father Vaspasian/ ne his broder Titus/ but rather lyke Nero & his kynrede. And for his wycked eddyccions he was sayne in his owne palays at Rome in the. xxvii. yere of his age. ¶ Clemens a martyr was pope. ix. yere/ and he succeeded Cletus. This Clemens first of saynt Peter (as it is sayd) was ordeyned to be successour to hym. And for peryll he wolde Linus & Cletus sholde be popes afore hym/ lest þe synnough þe ensample prelates sholde ordeyne vnder them who somer they wolde. This man made þe lyfe of martyrs to be wyrtren by regyons/ & he made many booke. He ordeyned þe a chyche sholde be cofirmed as soone as it myght manerly after it was chrystened. And at þe last he was martyred vnder Traian. ¶ Aerus was emperour after Domitian one yere & two monethes. And whā he was chosen he merited þe senate to make a lawe/ þe all thyng which Domitian comaunded to be kept shold be broken. By which meane saynt John þe euangelist was loosed out of his exile & suffred to come agayn to Ephese. This man dyd an other thyng ryght commendable/ that he assigned so wyrt a man as Traian was to gouerne þe people after hym. ¶ Traian was Emperour. xix. yere. This

Traian many men sayd he was þe best amonge all the Emperours/ but in one thyng alone he was vicious/ in so moche as he for þe loue of fals goddes was aboute to destroye þe chrysten sayth/ wyllynge in hymselfe so moost to please god. Some men saye not by hymselfe/ but by other he pursued þe chrysten sayth/ & in þe ende of his lyfe he dyd but fewe to deeth. And all his lounge I set at nought. But at saint Gregory meured w pite wepyng & prayed to our lord for hym þe he wolde haue mercy vpon hym/ & by his prayer haue hym out of hell in to whiche place he was dampned. And now ys he be saued or not/ a grete alteracon is amonge doctours. And to vs þe wyrt & conyng it is no parte of our charge so to determine. But all þe best parte of þe world/ Babylonia/ the better parties of the ynde. Germanyne the seconde after Alexander he helde vnder. In all these thynges so pyerous & so mekely he guyded hym to euery man as a kynge. He was gentyll and to no man vngentyll/ the whiche is red of fewe. All the dayes he lyued men sayd he was the moost worthy man in all his empyre. And he thought & sayd euermore þe no man was moze worthy to be emperour than he.

Anno domini. C. iiii.

Hadrian a martyr was pope. ix. yere/ & he was a Syke. He mynded all churche men þe prestes sholde be worshipped about all other men/ save enge þe prestes doyng sacrifice to god sholde be bozne out/ & not bered/ but be worshipped. And when prestes sayd masse they sholde haue wytnes w them and namely bysshops. Also he decreed þe clerkes sholde were no berdes nor longe heer. Also þe a bysshop shold be consecrated of thre/ & dyuers other thynges. At the

Part quarta.

last the .xij. yere of Traian he was mar-
tyred & buried by the body of saynt Pe-
ter. ¶ **Vincentius** & second of his name a phis-
sopher wrote grete thinges. This man
moued Traian that he shold withdraue
the sentence gyven agaynst chrysten fol-
de. Wytyng to hym that they dyd none
yll but that they as verruous folke rose
afore day and worshypped Iesu Chyft
they god secretly in the nyght. ¶ **Eus-
ticius** a greke and a martyr was .x. yere
and .viij. monethes pope after Anacletus.
This man ordeyned that man & woman
sholde be wedded openly / and that they
sholde be blyssed openly of the prest & fa-
der & moder. And he was martyred the
thyrty yere of Adrian & buried by saynt
Peter. ¶ **Alexander** a Romayn was po-
pe .viiij. yere & .b. monethes. This man
the moost parte of þe senatours he con-
uerted to our lord. And he ordeyned þe holy
water sholde be kept in chrysten mennes
houses / & that they shold synge with shold
be made of clere breed / and that in lytell
quantite. At the last he was martyred
under Adrian that was emperour / and
many he conuerted to þe fayth of Chyft.
¶ **Serius** a Romayn was pope .x. yere
and .iiij. monethes. This man ordeyned
Sanctus sanctus sanctus. &c. sholde be
sayd in þe masse / & that the holy thynges
of the chirche sholde not be touched but
of mynystrs of the chirche. Also that þe
corpours sholde not be made of sylke / but
of pure linnen cloth wouen & not dyed /
and that a woman sholde not touche the
holy vessel of the altar / ne the pall. Al-
so he ordeyned / that yf any bysshoppe
were vacante / that no bysshop sholde be
receyued in to his benefice but with the
popes lettres. Also that no masse sholde
be sayd but upon an altar / & at the last
he was martyred. ¶ **Adrian** was em-
perour .xxi. yere. This Adrian in many
thynges is comended / to chrysten men

other whyle he was gracious / and con-
tyned of them that wold not do sacrifice
to the fals goddes he selve. He was an
vniuersall man almost in all sciences.
Whan he had all his dayes but with the
Jewes / and many a lawe he made. And
then he commaunded that chrysten men
sholde not be dampned to deeth but with
due processe. Jerusalem he subdured a-
gayne / and forbade that no Jewe sholde
dwelle therein by no wyse. Chrysten men
he suffered there to dwell. Agaynst his
wyll he came to the empyre / but he go-
uerned hym very well. Whan the sena-
tours prayed hym to call his sone empe-
rour after hym / he sayd. It is ynough
to me þe agaynst my wyll I haue regned
whiche I haue not deserved. For þe em-
pyre of Rome sholde not go by succession
of blode / but to suche men as deserue it
throughe theyr merites. Many tymes
he regneth beneuolently that is a kyng
home / and vertue shold come before his
kyngdome. ¶ **Eustarchus** other wyse
called **Placidus** & **Therospita** his wyfe
and wyse of theyr sonnes / of whome many
unlawful thynges ben comde / were mar-
tyred by the comaundement of Adrian.
This **Placidus** was mayster of the em-
perours knyghtes. ¶ **Jerusalem** was
restored by Adrian and made larger / so
that the place where Chyft dyed was
within þe walles / & whiche was with-
out before. And this is the thyde buyl-
dyng agayne of that cite. For it was
thryes destroyed / that is to saye / of Cal-
ders in the tyme of sedechie / of Anthio-
cus in the tyme of Achabees / & of Tu-
tus in the tyme of Vaspasian.

¶ Anno domini. C. xliij.

¶ **Clephorus** a Romayn was po-
pe .xi. yere. This man ordeyned
this angelles ympe to be songen in the
masse Gloria in excelsis deo. &c. and the

gospel to be redde afore þe sakeryng & on
Chyſtmas day. iij. masses to be songen
And he ordeyned there shold no masse be
sayd afore. iij. of þe cloche. And at þe last he
was martyred & buryed at saſt Peters
¶ Ignius a greke was pope. iij. yere.
This man ordeyned that a childe sholde
haue a godfader & a godmoder at bap-
tism & cōfymacyon. Also that no arche-
bysshop (excepted the pope) sholde con-
demne his suffreygan but yf that the
cause were shewed in þe prouyncyall cou-
seyle of bysshops. Than he was marty-
red & buryed at saſt Peters. ¶ Antho-
nius þus was emperour. xii. yere w
his sonnes Aurelio & Lucio. This man
was myghtely wyse & naturally sayre
of speche / the whiche lyghely in one mā
is not fōūde. Nota. Excedynge men in
wyldoom comynly are not sayre speched
nor peasfull namely of nature. Nor con-
trary wyse. Excedynge men in sayre spe-
che comynly are lesse than wyse. This
mā was meued w bothe these ppertees
¶ Therfore many kyngdomes the whiche
receded from other emperours / wyllful-
ly to this man returned agayne. And to
chryſten men was none so gentyll. He
sayd through the ensample of Cipio. I
had leuer kepe one heere of a man than
see an hondred of myne enemyes. And
some martyrs were made vnder hym /
but they were made vnder þe cōmaunde-
ment of þe emperours afore. And þe chry-
ſte people were so hatefull to þe bysshops
& to þe priestes of þe tēple of þe fals goddes
that they prouoked the princes alwaye
agaynst them. For they suppoſed that þe
chryſte sayth shold destroye them. ¶ Ther-
fore it was no meruayle (all though the
prynce was yll pleased / for they sayd all
they goddes were deuyſ) yf lower iud-
ges pursued chryſte folke & martyred the
¶ This tyme. x. m. martyrs were cru-
cifyed in Armenia on an hye hyll called

Arath. ¶ Pompeius trogus isto tēpore
historias totius orbis a fūno blis ad Oc-
tauium deduxit.

¶ Anno domini. C. lliij.

¶ Pius ptalicus was pope. xi. yere
iij. monethes & xii. dayes. This
man ordeyned þe fest of eſter euermore
sholde be halowed on þe sonday. And also
an heretyke compynge fro the sette of the
Jewes shold be receyued & be baptysed
¶ Thā he was martyred & buryed in saſt
Peters. ¶ Anicet was pope after Pius
almost. x. yere. This man made many
decrees of the Canon & for bysshops. We
in ca. violatores. &c. ¶ Calistus a ſirthe
goten in pergamo was in grete fame at
Rome / þe whiche not all onely expounded
the bokes of ypoctas / but he put many
of them to his bokes. And of this mā is
sayd for his discrete abstinence þe he bled
he lyued an. C. and. xl. yere / he neuer ete
ne dranke his fyll. Nota abſtinentia. He
neuer toke rawe fruytes / alway he had
a ſwete b:eth. He dyed all onely through
age & no ſkenes. ¶ Marcus Antonius
the true & Lucius Commodus were em-
perours. xii. yere. These two toke þe em-
pyre after Anthony the ſirke. And than
began two emperours to regne / but Lu-
cius Commodus deſcended & Anthony was
emperour alone / þe whiche was a victo-
ryous man & a noble / but that he made
the fourth perſecution to ſee chryſten
men. This Marcus was of ſo grete ſad-
nes & ſtedfaſtnes / that for no chaunce he
neuer laughed / ne chaunged no chere /
neither for gladnes ne for ſorrowe. And
whan he was a chylde he was of ſuche
manhode / þe on a certayne tyme whā he
loked his treſour & had not þe whiche he
myght grue his knyghtes & his men /
whan he went to fyghe agaynst þe Ger-
mayns / the Sclauos & Sarmatas / he
wolde hurte ne greue no body / but had

leuer to sell his wyues golden vessel / & her mayment / her bedding / & all her ry-
all stuffe / than take care of þe senatours
of his prouynce vnder hym. But he
gate þe victory of his enemyes & recou-
red all agayne & released þe prouynces of
theyr tributes. And those þe wolde sell by
his wyues recoured agayne / he restored
them theyr money / & those þe wolde not
be neuer greued them. But þe tables of
theyr dettes betwixt hym & them he brent
openly in þe market place & shaked them
that they helped hym in his necessite.

How kynge Lucie reigned after his
fader / whiche was a good man / & af-
ter he became chrysten.

After kynge Cypell reigned Lucie
his sone / that was a good man
to god and to all the people. He sente to
Rome to Cleuther that than was pope
& sayd that he wolde become a chrysten
man / & receyue baptym in the name of
god / & turne to the right sayth & blyue.
Cleuther sente two legates / þe one was
called Pagan / and that other Eubayn
and came in to this londe & baptised the
kynge & all his mynny. And after went
from to done to to done and baptised the
people / tyll all the londe was baptised.
And this was in the yere an. C. and. lvi
after the incarnacyon of our lord Iesu
Christ. And than this kynge Lucie ma-
de in this londe two archbyschops / one
at Caisterbury / & another at yorke / and
many other byschops that yet be in this
londe. And whan these two legates had
baptised all this londe / they ordeyned
prieestes for to baptise chrydren / and for
to make the sacrament. And after they
went agayne to Rome. And the kynge
dwelled in this londe and reigned with
moche honour. xij. yere / and after dyed
and lyeth at Glocestre.

How this londe was long without a
kynge / & how þe byrtong chose a kynge.

This kynge Lucie had none heyre
of his body begoten þe was after
warde grete harme & sorowe to þe londe.
For after this kynge Lucies deith / none
of the grete lordes of þe londe wolde suffice
another to be kynge / but lyued in warre
& debate amonge themselves. I. yere without
kynge. But it befell afterwarde þe a grete
pynce came fro Rome in to this londe þe
was called Seuerus / not for to warre /
but for to saue þe ryght of Rome. But nes-
uertheles he had not dwelled halfe a yere
in this londe but þe the byrtong slewe
hym. And whan þe Romayns wytt that
Seuerus was so slayne / they sente an
other grete lorde in to this londe þe was
called Allet that was a stronge man & a
myghty of body / & dwelled in this londe
longe tyme / & dyd moche sorow to þe byr-
tong / so that after for pure malysie they
chose them a kynge amonge them that
was called Asclepades / and assembled a
grete hoost of Byrtong / & went to Lon-
don to seke Allet / & there they loude him
and slewe hym & all his felawes / & one þe
was called Walon defended hym spedyly
& fought longe with þe Byrtong / but at
the last he was discypted / & þe Byrtong
toke hym & boude hym handes & feet / &
cast hym in to a water / wherfore þe wa-
ter was called for euermore Walbroke.
Than reigned Asclepades in peas / tyll
one of his erles þe was called Cypell made
a fayre towne agaynst þe kynges wyll / &
let call þe towne Colchestre after his na-
me / wherfore the kynge was wroth / &
thought to destroye hym / and began to
warre vpon hym / & brought grete power
of men / & gaue þe erle batayle / & the erle
defended hym spedyly with his power / &
slewe þe kynge hymselfe in that batayle.
And tha was Cypell crowned and made

kyng of this londe. This Copll reigned nobly / & was well beloued of þ byrgtons. Whan þ Romayns herde þ Alepades was slayne / they were wondrous glad / & sent an other grete pryce of þ Romayns that was called Constance / & he came to kyng Copll for to chalenge þ trybute of Rome / which he graunted hym full gladly. So they accorded þ kyng Copll gaue to hym his doughter Cleue to wyfe / þ was bothe fayre & wyse & well lettered / & dwelled togyder in loue. And soone after this kyng Copll dyed in the .xiiij. yere of his regne / & lyeth at Colchestre.

How Constance a Romayn that had spoused Cleue kyng Coplls doughter was chosen kyng after kyng Copll.

After this kyng Copll Constance was made kyng & crowned for as moch as he had spoused kyng Coplls doughter that was heyre of the londe / the whiche Constance reigned / & well & worthely gouerned the lode. And he begate on his wyfe Cleue a sone þ was called Constantyne. And this kyng bare true fayth / & truly dyd to them of Rome all his lyfe. And whā he had reigned .xv. yere he dyed / and lyeth at York.

How Constantyne that was kyng Constances sone & sone to saynt Cleue gouerned and ruled the londe / and after was emperour of Rome.

After kyng Constance deith reigned Constantyne his sone & sone to saynt Cleue that foride þ holy crosse in the holy londe / & how Constantyne became emperour of Rome. It befell that in that tyme there was an emperour at Rome þ was a sarasyn & a tyrant þ was called Maxence / whiche put to deith al þ byleue in god / & destroyed holy chyrche

by all his power / & slewe all chyrche men that he myght fynde / & amonge all other he let martyr saynt Katherine / & many other chyrche people þ had dede of deith fled & came in to this londe to kyng Constantyne / & tolde hym of þ sorowe that Maxence dyd to chyrche folke / wherfore Constantyn had pite / & made grete sorow / & assembled a grete host & a grete power and went ouer vnto Rome / & there toke the crite / & slewe all þ was therein of mysbyleue. And than was he made emperour / & was a good man / and gouerned hym so well / þ all londes were to hys attendaunt for to be vnder his gouernaunce.

And this deuyll & tyrant Maxence þ tyme was in the londe of Grece / & herde these tydnges / & sodenly became wood & dyed sodenly. **Whan** Constantyne went from this londe to Rome / he toke with hys moder Cleue for her grete prudence / & thre other grete lordes þ he moost loued / the one was called Bolwell & þ other Taberne / & þ thyrde Octavian. And toke all his londe to kepe to þ title of Cornewayle that was called Octavian. And anone as this Octavian wyll that his lorde dwelled at Rome / incontynent he cefed all the londe in to his handes / & therwith dyd all his wyll amonge hys & lowe / & they helde hym for kyng. Whan these tydnges came to Constantyne the emperour / he was wondrous wroth towarde the title Octavian / and sent Taberne with .xiiij. M. men agaynst hym / & they arrayed at Portesmouthe. Whan Octavian wyll that he let assembled a grete power of Byrgtons & dyscomfited hym. And Taberne fledde in to Scotlande / & ordeyned there a grete power / & came agayne in to this londe an other tyme for to gyue batayle to Octavian. And whan Octavian vnderstode that he assembled a grete power / and came towarde Taberne as fast as he myght /

So that those two hostes mette together on Mountmoys / & strongly smote together. And then was Octavian dyscoloured / & fode them into Forway. And Cabene traies all þe lande in to his handes bothe townes & castelles. But Octavian came agayne fro Forway with a grete power / & drove out al þe Romayns / & than he was made kyng of this lande.

¶ How Maximian that was the emperours colyn of Rome spoused Octavians daughter / and after was made kyng of this lande.



¶ This Octavian governed þe lande well and nobly / but he had none heire / save a daughter that was a yonge childe / that he loved as moche as his lyf. And so / as moche as he waxed seke and was in poynt of deth and might no longer regne / he wolde have made one of his newewes to be kyng / which was a noble knyght & a stronge man þe was called Conan Meriedok / & he shold have kepte the kynges daughter / & have married her when tyme had ben. But the lordes of þe lande wolde not suffre it / but gaue her colleyse to be married to some

bygh man of grete honour / & that might she have al her lust / & the colleyse of her lord Constans þe emperour. And at this colleyse they accorded / & chose Cabot of Cornewayle for to go to þe emperour on this message / & he toke þe waye & went to Rome / & tolde the emperour these thynges well & wysely. And þe emperour sent in to this lande with hym his owne colyn that was his uncles sone a noble knyght & a stronge þe was called Maximian / & he spoused Octavians daughter / & was crowned kyng of this lande.

¶ How Maximian that was the emperours colyn conquered þe lande of Amozican / & gaue it to Conan Meriedok.

¶ This kyng Maximian became so crall / þe thought to conquere þe lande of Amozican for þe grete rychesse þe he herde tell that was in þe lande / so þe he left no man of worthynes / knyghte ne squyer / ne none other man þe he toke wth him / to þe grete damage of all þe lode. For he left at home no man to kepe þe lande / for he had wth hym. xxx. M. knyghtes of good mennes bodyes / & went ouer in to the lande of Amozican / & there stode the kyng that was called Imball / and conquered all the lande. And when he had so done / he called Conan & sayd. For as moche as kyng Octavian wolde have made you kyng of Bytayne / & through me ye were let & distressed þe ye were not kyng / I geue you this lode of Amozican / & make you kyng therof. And so / as moche as ye be a byton / I wyl that this lode have the same name / and that it be no more called Amozican / but shall be called Iptell Bytayne / and the lande fro whens we be comen / shall be called fro hens forth grete Bytayne. And so shall men knowe that one Bytayne fro that other. That this Conan Meriedok

thanked by curtesy / so was he made
kyng of yttell Bytayne. And when all
this was done Maximian went from
thens into Rome / and was then made
emperour after Constantyne. And Co-
nan Mercedour dwelled in yttell Bytayne
with moche honour / & there let ordeyne
two. M. plowmen of the londe for to re-
the londe / to harow & sowe it / & fedde
them rythely after þ they were. And for
as moche as kyng Conan & none of his
knyghtes / ne none of his other people
wolde not take wyues of the nacyon of
france / he sent in to grete Bytayne to þ
erle of Cornewayle that men called Dio-
nothe / that he sholde chose throughe out
all this lode. xi. M. maydens / that is to
saye. viij. M. for the meane people / &. liij.
M. for þ gretest lordes that sholde them
spouse. And when Dionothe vnderstode
this / he made a comaundement throughe
out all the londe of Bytayne / & as many
as the nombere came to he assembled to-
gyder of maydes / for there was no man
that durst withstande his comaundement
because he was protectour. And when
these maydens were assembled / he let
them come before hym at London / & let
ordeyne shyppes for them hastely / w all
that therto belonged. And toke his own
doughter that was called Ursula / that
was þ fayrest creature þ any man dyt
And he wolde haue sent her to kyng Co-
uan þ shold haue spoused her & made her
quene of þ londe. But she had made pry-
uely to god a bove of chastite þ her fader
dyt not / ne none other man luyng.

How Ursula and. xi. M. maydens
that were in her company wente to-
warde yttell Bytayne / and all they
were martyred at Coleyne.

How Ursula chose unto her com-
pany. xi. M. maydens that of all

other she was lady & mayster / and all
they toke shyppe at one tyme in the
water that is called Campe / & coma-
ded her kyn & frendes to almyghty god
and sayed towarde yttell Bytayne. But
when they were comen in to þ hygh see
a stronge trespel arose as it was goddes
wyll / & Ursula with her shippes & her
company were dyspyl to humode throughe
tempest / & arryued in þ haven of the cite
of Coleyne. And the kyng of the londe
that was called Gowan was than in þ
cite / & when he dyt the trespelges that
so many fayre maydens were there ar-
ryued / he toke Eiga his broder & other
of his housholde with hym and went to
the shippes to se that fayre company.
And when he sawe them so fayre / he &
his company wolde haue ouerlapyd them
and haue taken fro them theyr virgyni-
te. But Ursula that good virgyn coun-
seyled / prayed / warned / & taught them
that were her felawes / that they shold
defend them with all theyr myght / and
rather suffre deeth than suffre theyr bo-
dies to be defouled. So that all the vir-
gyns became so stedfast in god that they
defended them throughe his grace / that
none of them had power to do them sha-
me. Wherefore kyng Gowan was sore
anoyed / that he for wyathe seide them
euerychone anone ryght. And so were
all those virgyns martyred for the loue
of god / and they lye at Coleyn.

How kyng Gowan came for to
destroie this londe / and how a man
of grete power that was called Egi-
tian defended the londe.

When all this was done / kyng
Gowan whiche was a Sarasyn
called to hym his broder Eiga
and sayd to hym that he sholde go and
conquerre the londe that all those fayre

mayntens there bynt in. And thē he ap-
peyned a grete power of dyctes of ben
marke of Ophney / & of flourey. And
they came in to this londe & bynt to-
nes / & the lye folke / & cast down churches
& houses of religyon / & robbed the londe
in length & bryde / & put to deeth all those
that wolde not forsake þe ryght opyne &
chrystendom. For as moche as there was
no souerayne þe myght helpe them. For
the kyng Maximian had taken w hym
all þe worthye men whan he went to con-
querre yttell Brytayne. And in þe same ty-
me was saynt Albion martyred through
the woode tyrant Dioclesyan / in þe same
place where is now an abbey made of
saynt Albons / whyles þe he was a pay-
nym. But he was conuerted into god
through the prechacion of a clerke & a
wyle man that was called Incibel that
was herbyowred a nyght in his hous.
And this was after þe incarnation of Je-
su Chryst. CC. xxvi. yere. And it is to be
understande that saynt Albion suffred his
martyrdom before saynt Comond. And
therfore is saynt Albion called þe first mar-
tyr of Englonde. ¶ This Gowan's bro-
der & his folke that were sarasyns went
through out the londe and destroyed all
thyng þe they founde & no thyng they
spared. Whan these tydings came to
Rome how þe kyng Gowan had begon
for to destroye this londe / the emperour
& the Romayns sent a stronge man & of
grete power þe was called Gracian with
xxiii. M. syghtrynge men / for to cast out
of this londe all those sarasyns. And all
they arrived at Portsmouth. Maxi-
mian myght not come himselfe because
he was chosen emperour after the deeth
of Constantyne þe was saynt Elyens sone
Whan this Gracian was arrived with
his host / he let clyppe pynely where þe
kyng Gowan myght be founde / & he let
dye them sodenly as they lay in the;

benches & distroyed them & selde them
in theyr beddes curthens / that none of
them escape. Gowan þe dede in to
his owne castelle w grete sorowe. Soone
after it befell þe Maximian was slayne
at Rome through treason. And whan
Gracian was of those tydings / he let
crosse hymselfe kyng of this londe.

¶ How Gracian made him kyng whan
Maximian was slayne / & after ward þe
Brytons sowe hym for his wychecons.

¶ This Gracian whan he began to
regne / he became so wycked and
so sterne / and so moche sorow dyd to the
Brytons that they selde hym amonge
them. Whan kyng Gowan understode
that Gracian was slayne / he assembled
a grete power & came agayne in to this
londe / and yf he had first done harme
than dyd he moche more. For he than
destroyed all this londe and the chrysten
people that were therein / so that no man
was so hardy to name god / and yf they
dyd they were put to straunge deeth. But
the byshop of London þe was the whi-
che was called Gosselyn scaped & went
thens to them of Rome to seke socour to
helpe to destroye the sarasyns that had
destroyed this londe. And the Romayns
sayd þe they had ben so often anoyed for
theyr sendyng of folke in to Brytayne all
for to helpe the Brytons / & they wold no
more so do. And so the byshop Gosselyn
went thens without any socour or hel-
pe. And than went he to þe kyng of yttell
Brytayne þe was called Aldour / & this
was þe thyrde kyng after Gowan
reigned / as before is sayd. The byshop
prayed this kyng Aldour of helpe & so-
cour. And þe kyng had pite in his herte
whan he herde how þe byshop dede / &
how the chrysten men were so slayne in
grete Brytayne through þe papyns &

Constantyne the graunte bynt Constantyne
bynt to helpe hym with power
of some. And chaunced apace boys bar-
neys & shippes / & all thynges pured to
that brage. And when all thynges was
redy / he called þe byshop & sayd to hym.
I take you here Constantyne my brother
pon this couraunt. þe yf god geue hym
grace to dischyrge þe mysdoes / that chan-
ce shall make hym kyng. And þe byshop
gratified it wth a good word. Constantyne
the byshop toke leue of þe kyng. And so
þe toke hym to god. & toke. xii. men
& went to the shippes / & sayled towar
de grete Britayn / & arrived at Cotnes.
When þe Britons herd these tydynges
that socour came / they were glad / & or-
dered them an huge nobre of people / &
went & receyued them wth moche honour.
¶ Cowan anone as he wyth of these ty-
dynges / he assembled all his sarasyns / &
came agaynst them & gaue the batayle.
And Constantyn & the hym wth his owne
handes / & all the other sarasyns were
dyscomfyted & slayne / none escaped / ex-
cepte those that were conuerted to god.

¶ Now Constantyne that was the
kynges brother of lytel Britayn was
crowned kyng of grete Britayne
for his worthynes.

¶ Aftre after þe batayle they went
to London & crowned there Con-
stantyne kyng of this londe / & þe byshop
Goswylke the crowne on his heed / and
anoynted hym wth oyle as it belongeth for a kyng.
And thus began christedom in this londe
again. And anone after when this kyng
Constantyn was crowned he spoused a
wele through counseyle of þe Britons / &
lagna on her the sones. The first was
called Constance / & seconde Aurambros
& the thyrde Aliter. This Constance þe
kyngs daughter when he came to age he made

hym a monke at Wynchestre. And Con-
stantyne the kyngs father was slayne through
treason. For it befell upon a tyme that a
Dehyte came to hym upon a daye as it
were on a message / & sayd that he wol-
de speke wth the kyng pryncely in coun-
seyle. The kyng let hym be his chambere
of the men that were there wth hym / and
there abode no moos but the kyng and
the Dehyte / and he made a counenaunce
as though he wolde haue spoken wth
the kyng in his eere. And there he slewe
hym wth a longe knyfe. And after that
he went mervaylously out of that cham-
ber in to another chambere / so that at the
last no man wyth where he was bro-
men. When the kyngs men wyth that
they lord was so deed / they made chan-
ce moche sorow. þe they wyth not let at
for to do. For as moche as his two sours
Aurambros and Aliter were so yonge
that none of them myght be kyng / and
the thyrde brother was a monke at Wyn-
chestre as is sayd before. But Worwiger
that was eric of Wester thought pr-
yncely in his herte through some subyle
for to be kyng hymselfe. And went to
Wynchestre where as Constance was
monke / & sayd to hym. Constance quod he
your father is deed / & your two brethren
that ben wth Goswylke the byshop of Len-
don to noutyshe / be so yonge that none
of them may be kyng / wherfore I cou-
seyle you that ye forsake your habyte &
come wth me / and I shall make suche
a means unto the Britons that ye shall
be made kyng of this londe.

¶ Of Constance that was kyng Constantynes sone / whiche was a monke
at Wynchestre / and how he was made
kyng after his fathers deathe / through
counseyle of Worwiger that was eric of
Wester / for as moche as Aurambros
and Aliter ben sone / & doo metherne wery dys

range of age. But don't get let the hype
be to be a huge hype.

And this story telleth thus. As
when so moche tyme he layde
about and went forth byn. And when
after he was crowned kyng by assent
of the Bishops. This kyng Constant
Tolden he was crowned & made kyng
he wold no knowe but tytel of þe shoulde
not coude no thyng. What knyghts were
arab. And he made Blouyger his cheif
mayster & counsiler / & gaue hym all his
power for to gubeyn & to do as moche as
to þe realm apperteyned. So þe byn make
no thyng entrembled / but onely kept
the name of kyng. What Blouyger sawe
that he had all þe lorde in his hande & go
ueruaunce at his owne wyll / he thought
by pryncy treason to the Constant þe kyng
that he myght by selfe be crowned & ma
ke kyng & regne / & let sende a letter an
dyed knyghtes of þe bytes / & many of
all þe londe / & them helde w hym for to
dwell / as to be keepers of his lorde / as he
wolde go through the londe to gubeyn
thynges þe appertayned to a kyng. And
this Blouyger honoured so moche þe bon
dyed knyghtes & so moche gaue them of
golde & syluer & of ryche cownelles / robes
horses & other thynges plesant / wherfore
they helde hym more lord than they wold
the kyng. And Blouyger told them þe he
myght be kyng / & as it were through
treason / he wold make them ryche of þe
londe. So at þe last through grete gyftes
that he had gyven largely / they cryed
through þe court þe Blouyger were better
worthy to be kyng than Constant. When
soe Blouyger made semblant as he had
ben wroth / & he departed thence from þe
counse / and sayd he must go elles where
for thynges that he had to do. And is the
traytour sayd bycause þe they lorde the
kyng Constant. And thus Blouyger

And thus it befell that after he had those
knights brought of the lande to the
head of þe kynges chawche & there they
dine by a house of his house & have it to
Wolsey there as he directed. And to þe
Wolsey came þe king & the king full con-
fide in his open & understood he was
somewhat glad in his heart of his death.
And anone Wolsey let take those hon-
our knights of the lande & hadde his
servantes bynde they bounde behynde
them & ledde them to London & there
they were dampned to death as fals tray-
tours. And anone after all þe Byrons of
the lande by the comyn assent crooned
Wolsey & made hym kyng of þe lande.

¶ Anno domini. C. lxxliij.

S Other a martyr; thus pope after
 Thierst. is. vers. the holche de-
 cerned that a stone sholde not saue the
 pall of the water. nor put in sente theron.
 And þ the holche there a temple about
 her been. And many perys he is the a-
 bout martyrdom. therefore he sayeth
 that no woman sholde be called a lesell
 wyfe. but yf she were blissed of þ prest.

Clautherus a merry was pope af-
ter Bothe. xii. yere the whiche ordey-
ned that churshen men sholde refuse no
meit reasonable that was maides meit
fiota. Also that no man disgraced in a
crime sholde be put from his dignite of
his degree yf he were convicted through
example of Christ & whiche kept still
Judas Iscariot not accused & Christ
hanged by gylty. And whiche somer he
dyd amonge the apostles by f dignite of
his scruples shone ffrime & stable. This
pope sent also legates into Turkye
of Bytany the whiche baptised many of
his people. And sagud into Romania
legates the whiche f pope sent ffrid
rich in Cyprius. And this Churshen
baptised in Bytany the hundred

pere into þe tyme of Dioclesian þe emperour. Whā saynt Hilon was martyred. Marcus Antonius & Lucius Commodus were emperours. but whā dyed anon. & Lucius Commodus reigned. Commodus was called profytable in some. for he was to every man unprofytable. he was gyven betery to lechery. many senatours & chrysten men he made for to be sayne. He dampned his own wyfe to deeth for age. he dyed a sodeyn deeth with strouglyng amonge maydens. Helius pertinax after this man was emperour vii. monethes. & was a man of grete discrecyon. Whome Julian þe grete lawyer knew. & he entred þe empyre. & was sayne the. vii. moneth of Seuer. Victor a martyr was pope after Eleutherus. x. yere. & for the discorde of þe pasceall tyme he called a counseyle in Alexander. Where he was present þe tyme. & many other. Where he decreed þe easter daye shoulde be kepte on þe sonday. but he must kepe the charge of þe mone of April. & that was to dyscre fro Jewes. for many bysshops of the east abode þe tyme the same daye & iudges dyd halowe that fest. Also he ordeyned þe tyme of nede chyldren might be chrystened in euery place. & in euery water. Ezechielus a martyr & a Roman was pope after Victor. ix. yere. This man ordeyned that chryste people of. xii. yers of age & aboue shoulde receyue his god on easter daye ones in a yere. Also he ordeyned that all the vessell of the altar shoulde be glasse or tyme. & not tree as in olde tyme the consecracyon of þe glorious blode was made in treue vessell. And this tyme passed. & the worship of the churche grewe. & glasse vessell were forborne. he p. de cōf. vi. p. l. ca. Origen þe noble clarke was this tyme. & he wrote so moche that saynt Jerome sayd bysside to haue redde of Origenes werkes. lxx. q. volumes without pyssles. He

translated the byble from hebrewe in to greke. & dyd many other grete thynges. And of this Origen. Damian. Basilion and Traian is a grete questyon amonge doctours. ys þe they be dampned or saued. Therefore those thynges that without peryll we be not bounden to knowe nor the churche is not certyfied of them. & therefore let them be all onely comytted vnto god. Calistus a martyr & a Roman was pope after ephemer. v. yere. and he ordeyned þe tyme (in via apia) where many a. q. martyrs be buryed. Also he ordeyned the fast of þe emerynge days to be kepte. Antonius Surculus was emperour. iii. yere. And this man lacked no kynde of lechery. & at þe last he was sayne amonge a grete myltytude of people for his myscheuous lyfynge. Antonius Marcus reigned after him vii. yere. This man lyued obstynatly. & therefore he was sayne as was his predecessor. Alexander was emperour after Anton. & reigned. xiii. yere. This man at the instancer of his moder a chrysten woman. & the techyng of Origen the whiche came to Rome to couert her was made so good vnto chrysten men. þe he suffred them to haue theyr counsyles and theyr prayres by themselfe. but neuerthelesse in this tyme the cursed officers of hym made many martyrs.

Anno domini. CC. lliii.

Urbanus was pope after Calist vii. yere. & old & yonge he was very vertuous. And all the hallowd vessell of the churche he made of golde or of syluer. This man leste his poperyche & went to Agrippam. and. xi. q. vergyns with hym. And the stargye sayd he leste not his dignite for holynes. but for appecyte of those vergyns. & wrote hym not in the boke of popes. And there be a vergyn was marryed with these vergyns

Days quarta.

Clement a martyr: suffered vnto
 us: he ordeyned that pynnes shoulde
 be layd daye & nyght in þe churche of god.
 And that a pynne shoulde laye Confessor
 afore þe masse. **A**ndronic a martyr: was
 pope after this m. This man ordeyned
 that a byshop myght be removed from
 one to an other: & he made þe lyfe of mar-
 tyrs to be dryten: & he was slayne & bu-
 ryed in the Countrey of Capen Caliste.
Constantinus was chosen emperour
 at Spagunia of þe hoost: & not by þe sena-
 tours: & reigned thre yere: & destroyed þe
 churche myghtely: & was slayne for Dy-
 gene. **G**ordian reigned after hym. vii.
 yere: and of hym is lytell wyrt: but he
 was slayne. **D**ius dicitur Celsus rex Col-
 chetie in asclepio regnat in Britannia
 annis quasi. xxx. usq. ad aduentu Con-
 stantij. lati. sp. hcat. **P**hrypp was
 emperour after Gordian: & this Phrypp
 chose to hym Phrypp his sone: and they
 reigned. vii. yere. And they were þe fyrst
 Emperours þe were chrystened: & after
 slayne of the hoost. They bequeathed all
 theyr trespour at theyr deeth þe it shoulde be
 dysposed to pooze men. And saynt Lau-
 rence at þe assignacyon of his master þe
 pope departed this trespour about Rome
 the whiche was grete cause of his mar-
 tyrdom. vt qdē dicit. **D**ecius was em-
 perour. iij. yere: & in all thynges a tyrant
 for he entred the empyre when he & the
 hoost had slayne þe two Phrypps his loy-
 des: & after þe he was slayne w his sone.
Fabian a martyr: & a Romayn was
 pope after Andronic. xii. yere. This was
 a very holy man: for when chryste men
 stode to abyde þe clerics of þe pope: sobryn-
 ly a whyte dour: & a culuer descended on
 his heed: sayenge to hym: thou shalt be
 pope of Rome. This man ordeyned that
 crims euer yere shoulde be halowed wþ
 shorthurday. Wile he deuoyded regens
 go dehaus the whiche shold wyrt þe lyfe

of martyrs. And at þe last Decius selles
 hym. **C**ornelius a martyr: & a Romayn
 was pope after Fabian. iij. yere. This
 man toke by þe bodies of Peter & Paul
 & to grete honour put them in woorthye
 full places w þe Lucina. **L**ucius was
 pope after Cornelius. iij. yere: & of hym
 lytel is wyrt. **G**allus w his sone Va-
 lentinus were emperours two yere: &
 they fought w Emilian: & were slayne.
 And Emilian the thyrde moneth was
 slayn. **V**alerian was emperour w his
 sone Galpene. xv. yere. This man was
 vertuous & manly in þe begynnynge: but
 after he was gyue to vyce & moche wret-
 chednes: and so was his sone Galpene.
 This Valerian went to þe lond of Persie
 & there for þe blode shedynge of martyrs
 he was taken of þe kynge of Persie. And
 when he had taken hym he put out bothe
 his eyen: & kepte hym in grete bondage
 & to this entent he kepte hym: þe when so
 euer he shold ryde: this Valerian shoulde
 lye down: & he shold set his feet wþ his
 backe wþa he wold take his hors. This
 herde Galpene his sone þe was left at Ro-
 me: & that caused hym þe he was not so
 cruell agaynst chrysten men. And here
 was the. viij. persecutyon of the churche
 made by this emperour: & made the Ro-
 mayns to lese theyr kyngdomes: þe whi-
 che were neuer recouered agayne to the
 emperour: & a generall pestylence was
 througħ all þe worlde for theyr trespour.
Stephanus a martyr: after Lucius
 was pope. iij. yere. This man ordeyned
 that no mā shold vse no halowed clothes
 but to þe woorthye of god. **S**extus a mar-
 ty: and a Romayn was pope after Ste-
 phanus. ii. yere. This man ordeyned þe
 masse shold be sayd wþ an altar: þe
 whiche afore was not: & than he dyed.
Dionysius a Romain was pope after
 Stephan. ii. yere. This man deuoyded
 parishes & churchyardes: & assignad

to whiches certayne prestes. **E** Felix a martyr was pope after Dionisius two yere. He ordeyned þat for þe memory of martyr shold be layd. Also he ordeyned the Education of the church euer yere shold be layd. **C**laudius was emperour after Valerian. This man subdued Gothas nobly / & than detested.

Inno Christi. CC. lxxliij.

E Victorius a martyr was pope after Felix. viij. yere. This man ordeyned þat euerie & benes shold be blyssed on þe water. And he buried. iij. C. & xliij martyrs in his owne habes. **B**urelius was emperour after Claudius. v. yere. This Burelius first to christen men was gentyl / wherefore he had the byctory in every place gloriously / & when he was deceyved by cursed men / & pursued chrysten men myghtely / & namely in france / for there he abode / & after that he had net good fortune / but was slayne. And this was the. ix. persecucion of þe christen fayth. **C**atius was emperour after this man / & he reigned but. iij. monethes & was slayne in Ponto. **P**robus was Emperour after hym. v. yere &. iij. monethes. This man recovered France agayne / the whiche was occupied with barbarie men. And he gaue them & Panonias lycence to haue bynyrdes. And when he had made almost all thynges well in peas he dyd. knyghtes within a lytell tyme shall not be necessary. And more after he was slayne at Byzantia. **C**arus & his two sones Carin & Numerian were emperours after Probus but soone they dyed / & theyr sater was dissolved / & the two sones were slayne. All these reigned but. ij. yere. **D**ioclesian & Maximian came after these thre emperours / the one reigned in the east / & the other reigned in the west. The thre

thynges that Dioclesian dyd / he spent all the christen mennes bones that myght be founde. These two tyrantes dyd more harme to christen men than euer dyd any other. For. x. yere laster they persecucion. And as we rede / when. lxx. dayes. xx. men were slayne for christen cause. And in Englonde all the fayth was almost destroyed in the tyme of Maximian. **G**aius was pope after Euticianus. This man ordeyned that no man shold accuse a bishop or an other clerke to any seculer iudge. And þat a pagan or an heretic shold not accuse a christen man. Also he ordeyned that he that was worthy shold ascende grete by grete to his ordres / first benet / than collet / subdeken / deken & than prest. And at þe last he was martyred under Dioclesian. **M**arcellinus a martyr was pope after Gaius. xi. yere &. iij. monethes. This man was sore persecuted / & for drede of deeth he offered. iij. coronas of entente to þe sacrifice of þe ydolers. And after ward he openly repented / and suffered deeth for the fayth of Christ. His body laye buried thre days for drede of the curse of god. And after through a byson of saynt Peter & Marcell he was buried at saynt Peters fore. **M**arcellus was pope after Marcellinus. v. yere. This man ordeyned that a generall couseyle myght not be ordeyned without þe auctorite of þe pope. vt pz. c. viij. de. c. synodis. Also he chose. xv. cardynalles in the cyte to bury men & christen. At the last when he had kepte beestes longe tyme in a hous closed in with them by þe commandement of Maximian he dyed for faute. **E**usebius a martyr was after this man two monethes and certayne days. This man of a lay man was made pope / & he ordeyned that no laye man shold accuse his bishop / but yf he were from his fayth. vt pz. ij. c. viij. c. laicos. **A**gora. This tyme saynt Alban was

married in barage. This man was
he was a pagan he lodged a citizen in
the house of a citizen in the city. &
after that he was born and made
people he turned into our lord & savior
upon & marce the which he made by
through his prayer. And he suffered both
upon the one of the other. The place in
the first of the. & the which a mar-
tyr. Succeeded Eusebius from pere. This
man suffered & men both fall on sundays
& on thursdays. in so much as pagans
fall on those dayes. At the last he was
married as all his predecessors were.
And knowe ye that there were. small
popes of Rome married the one after
other. Peter was the first. & this Mel-
chades was the last. And then it was
laudable after Gregory a man to deserve
a byshoppe. & Valerius was empe-
rour after Diocletian the pere. and an
other both byn called Constantine. so
was he empyr in those dayes deposed.
This Constantine after he had conquere
d all Spayne he came in to grete Bri-
tany & there he wedded a kynges daugh-
ter on whom he gave grete Constantine
And this same Constantine dyed in Bri-
tany & lyeth at Poike as Martin sayeth
in his cronicles. & lefte on lyue Constan-
tine that was gotten on Cleve. & was
kyng of Brytayne & of fraunce.

¶ Anno Christi. CCC. lxxij.

Silvester was pope after Mel-
chades. This was a glorious
confessor. & many wayes he worship-
ped & church of god. What in myrrours
and what in myrracles. He receyved the
patrimony of saynt Peter. that is for to
saye the kyngdome of ytalie with the
cite of Rome of Constantine the empe-
rour. & to the worship of the church of
god he turned it. He baptised Cleve &

the Jewes. and then he received a con-
fession. Constantine & myrrour was
emperor this tyme. This Constantine
was a glorious man and a victorious
in barage. In governing of the comyn
people he was very wise. And in the
militie of & bruce he was without com-
parison devout. His piety & his holynes
he so written in & booke of holy doctours
that without doubte he is to be nobled
amonge sayntes. And the Gyckes saye
that in the ende of his lyf he was made
a monk. And more ye may here of hym
in the cronicles of englonde. for he was
kyng of Englonde. Helena the queene
mother to Constantine repayed again
the holy crosse this tyme. and she made
her colleges. and she glorified the state
of all holy church. Nicholas the bys-
hop of Myrrour cite an holy man was this
tyme. Athanasius was this tyme bys-
hop in Alexandria a glorious doctour.
and made the cymball. Quincus
Julius the. 32. Marcus was pope af-
ter Silvester the pere. and. viij. mon-
ethes. This man ordeined that & Cyke
sholde be openly songen in the church.
and that the byshop of Hostie sholde
consecrate the pope. and that he sholde
have a pall. Julius was pope after
Marcus. xi. pere. This man was cruel
& pere. & after suffered death under Con-
stantine the seconde. Constantine in
his two brotherne reigned. xxiii. pere. &
in his last ende he was perverted by the
heresy of & artens. by a byshop called
Eusebius. & he pursued the church of god
strongly. The ende of this man was this.
As he sholde go to Constantinople to a
grete counseyle. in the which counseyle
he thought to have condemned the bys-
hop and the clerkes of true bylawe. he
wente before unto a chambyre to enjoye
suche thinges as nature requyeth. & a
none suddenly his bowelles fell fro hym

and so dyed. **Liberius** was pope after **Julian** .xx. yere and .viij. monethes. **Constantius** the seconde bysonde of **the** church was **Liberius** & **Felix** for **the** heresy of the arryens the whiche favoured **Liberius**. Then **Constantius** the emperour called agayne **Liberius** from his exile because he favoured this heresy. And **the** church selected **Liberius** & toke **Felix** for pope and the other was expelled as an heretike of the church. But **Felix** obeyed not for **the** emperour put in **Liberius** & expelled **Felix**. **Felix** was pope after the deeth of this **Liberius** & he declared **Constantius** the emperour an heretike and anone after he was martyred. And here was the fyrst that curd the church of Rome had an infamed pope. for all **the** predecessours of this **Liberius** were sayntes & gaue holy ensamples. **Julianus** apostata was after **Constantius** emperour .ij. yere and .viij. monethes. He was called apostata because he fledde this **Constantius** whiche slew his broder & for fere of deeth was made a chrysten man and a monke. But afterwarde by **the** counseyle of a nygromancer he asked the deuill whether he shoulde be emperour or not. The deuill sayd that he shoulde be emperour vpon a condycyon that he shoulde forsake his chryste fayth and be bitter enemy to chryste men. And so he dyd for he gaue leue to the Iewes that they shoulde buylde agayne **the** temple in synne of **the** chrysten men. And toke all **the** goodes **the** chrysten men had & destroyed many of them. **Yovinnianus** was emperour after hym .viij. monethes. For when **Julian** was dede the booke chose hym emperour & he was a chryste man. And he sayd it was not lefull to a chryste man to be lord ouer so many hethen people. They answered & said. Rather than he shoulde forsake the empyre they wold be chrystened. And thus toke he **the** digni-

te. But soone he was dede and in mercenaryous maner. for he was layde in a close house (after his decease) made all of stone. and by the waye with hym in **the** whiche they made to his colowr as they thoughte a fyre of charrole. & of **the** synne of these xij. on the moone he was soone dede. **Valentinian** his broder **Valent** was emperour after **Yovinnianus** .xj. yere. for he departed the empyre & gaue his broder the rest & kepte hymselfe the best part. This **Valentinian** was a lord with **Julian** apostata & it happed hym on a tyme for to go in to a temple of false goddes for to do sacrifice & mynstres stode there with water halowed after **the** guyse with **the** whiche they spyned the lobes. This **Valentinian** smote the mynstre that kept the water vpon hym and sayd he was rather defouled thereby than cleansed. Because of this **Julian** dyd exile hym. But our lord god for his open confession of his name rewarded hym with **the** empyre. His broder **Valent** fell in to the opynion of the arryens and dyed in that heresy. This same **Valent** lyued foure yere after **Valentinian** with **Gracian** the emperour. This tyme lyued saynt **Ambrose**.

Anno domini. CCC. lxxiiij.

Damasus was pope after **Felix** .xviij. yere & .ii. monethes. This was an eloquent man in metre and he wrote many bookes of popes and martyrs. He ordeyned that **the** psalms shoulde be sayd in the ende of the psalmes and that was at the prayer of saynt **Jerom**. And through **the** moeyon of this pope **Jerom** translated the byble from hebrew into latyn & then he decessed a confessor. **Valent** with **Gracian** & **Valentinian** were emperours foure yere. In this tyme were churches opened agayne and

chepmen was late for the first
 spee of god þe was defended afore to em-
 perours unlesse he were as was the
 first order. Wherfore þe church had no
 liberty when Valens was on thys. ¶ A
 synodus of an. C. and. l. byshops were
 gathered under Damasus pope at Cōstan-
 tinople against Macdonus an heretike
 the whiche demed þe holy ghost to be be-
 ry god. And then was the Credo made
 that is longe an holy dayes in þe church.
 ¶ Augustinus a Cartaginian of Africa
 was this tyme. he was as noble a retho-
 rician as myght be. & in all philosophy
 & poetry incomparable. & all thyng that
 any philosopher folow in his youth. he
 understood wth speell labour. And about
 this tyme he was sent to Cōstan where
 he was turned anone of saynt Ambrose
 and baptysed. This man grewe unto a
 noble doctour of þe church. And not longe
 after that he was byshop of p^rench. &
 chert he lured. lxx. yere. & made minis-
 te he wrote. lx. in thys laud. ¶ Sirici-
 us was pope after Damasus. c. yere
 he dampned heretykes. & tyell elles is
 wyten of hym. ¶ Theodosius came to
 Spacian with Valentyne his deile was
 emperour. cxxv. yere. This man was a
 chrysten man & a gracious. & in gover-
 nance lyke to Traian. soone wyth. and
 anone reconcyled. This man on a daye
 when he wolde have gone to here masse
 saynt Amase forbade hym the entree of
 the church tyl he had done penance. &
 made satisfaccyon for þe synne of þe. rcc.
 knyghtes. whiche he stode in angre at
 Constantinople. Wherfore they made a
 lawe that þe sentence of a pynce shold be
 deferred. rcc. dayes of those that shold be
 execution yf they myght fall in þe grace
 of þe pynce wth in the. rcc. dayes. ¶ About
 this tyme was a child borne in þe castell
 of Emous from þe unyell & about wyng-
 ded in two bodys. þe synne. & þe synne

was two wynges. so that the one flyng
 as a wyng. that other flyng as a wyng. &
 both they lured two yere of age. the one
 was the. & the other lured the dayes of
 the. ¶ Claudius p^rete was this tyme.
 ¶ Theodosius & Honorius reigned. rcc. yere
 And in thes tyme Rome was almost
 destroyed by a byrge called Alaricus. of
 the byrge destructione rose a grete blas-
 phemy of the Romayns. for they sayd
 they sawd never well sythen Chryst ca-
 me to Rome. & bermed the thes goddes
 by the patching of Peter & Paul. And
 yet this Theodosius subdued all his ene-
 mies by þe power of god. & shed no blood
 agaynst this blasphemy saynt Justyn
 made þe solempne werke þe whiche they
 call. de civitate dei. ¶ Honorius was em-
 perour wth Theodosius his broder. some
 c. yere. & he was a man of holy lyf. for
 two wynges he had. and with bothe yet
 he dyed mayden. he loved speccally the
 church. and hated heretykes. ¶ Jerom
 dyed this tyme at Bethelem the yere of
 his age. lxxxi. ¶ Sanctus Hierachydes
 that wrote Uitas patris to Landum c^r
 was this tyme. ¶ Iohes Crisostomus
 was exiled of Endochia þe wyfe of Acca-
 dius. & throug here of the sonne he dyed.
 ¶ Anastasius was pope after Siricius
 the yere. This mā ordeyned that every
 man sholde stande at þe redyng of þe holy
 gospel. & that he that was a maymed
 man sholde not be p^rest. ¶ Innocentius
 was pope after Anastasius. This man
 ordeyned that seke men sholde be enoynt
 with holy oyle. And at masse þe kyss
 of peas to be gyven. he dampned Bela-
 gus an heretyke. And many other thynges
 he dyd. he patet. rccvi. q. i.

¶ Anno Christi. CCCC. cii.

¶ Pope Innocentius thirde was
 pope two yere &. lxx. monethes.
 This man ordeyned that clerkes sholde

he no tithers / ne sell he thynge & that
a bonde man sholde not be made free
without þe licence of his lord. ¶ Bonifa-
cius a Romayn was pope after iohann
fourte yere. This man ordeyned þe a bo-
man sholde not toulde þe pall of þe sturte
ne sholde not walke þe sturte. ¶ Celest-
inus a Romayn was pope after Bonifa-
cius. viij. yere & ix. dayes. þe whiche or-
deyned the psalme afore masse. Iudas
me deus. ¶ And at the begynnyng of þe
masse sholde be sayd a verse of a psalme
and that þe praye & the offertory sholde
be sayd afore the sakerynge. This man
sent saynt Patryk in to Irelonde to con-
uerse that lond. And Palladius a deken
of Rome to the Scottes to be conuered.
And in the fourth yere of this mā there
was a generall synode at Ephesus of
CCC. byshops agaynst Nestorium an
heretyke. ¶ Theodosius þe yonger with
Valentinian his neuewe regned. xxvij.
yere. In his tyme was þe first ordeyned
whiche is called Doucula sancti Petri.
And in his tyme dyed saynt Austyn in þe
yere of his age. lxxvi. ¶ And this tyme
were the. viij. depers repled the whiche
depes. CCC. yere. This man dyed at Co-
stantynople & there was buried. This
tyme the saxons entred in to Englonde
and anon by lytell & lytell they growe
by mightely & at the last they owerpaw
all the londe. ¶ Sixtus a Romayn was
pope after Celestinus. viij. yere. This
was a holy man & a meke. And lytell of
hym is wyrtten / but þe bypdes sancta
spacia maior. ¶ Leo Custus a confes-
sor was pope after Sixtus. This mā
was as holy as ony mā. fyue tymes on
a day or more he wolde saye masse. And
on a tyme after it befell whan a certayn
woman bylde his hande he was tēpted
with her. & for the trespass that he had
done to his penance he made his hande
to be styken of. And whan þe nople cose

upon hym that he myght not saye masse
as he was wont to do / he was ryghe
soy. and all onely broke hym in prayer
to our lady to helpe hym. And our lady
restored hym his hande agayne & than
he sayd masse as he was wont to do / &
so that myracle was openly shewed to
all people. ¶ And in þe tyme of this pope
Marcan the Emperour beyng there
was congregat at Calcedony þe fourth
biuersall synode of. lvi. C. and. xxx. bys-
shops agaynst Eusticm þe abbot of Con-
stantynople. et Alexandrinu episcopi qui ne-
gauerunt in Christo vera carne sustinere
etiā negabant carnis nre resurrectionem.
And after he had made many notable
sermons & epyssles he decessed. ¶ Mar-
cianus & Valentinian were emperours
this tyme. viij. yere / in whose tyme was
the grete synode afore reherced whan
Eustice & Dioscorus were cōdemped.

In the tyme that Marcan was
Emperour of Rome Worliger was
kyng of Britayn now called Englonde
in whose tyme þe saxons came in to Brit-
tayne & made many kynges / þis is to saye
as is playne by the Cronycles. viij. And
because it is tedious to mannes reason
to reherse many diuers names togyder
as. viij. kynges of Englonde / and in one
tyme the emperours and popes. There-
fore the cronycles of Englonde shall be set
togyder / till it be comen vnto Alured
in whose tyme the Danes came in to
Englonde. And the popes and þe empe-
rours & other thynges in the same tyme
shall be set togyder.

¶ Circa annū dñi. CCC. xlii.

¶ How the wardens that had þe chyl-
dren to kepe þe were kyng Cōstantynus
sones ladde them to lytell Britayne for
the treason and falsnes of Worliger.



At this tyme came the fawours that were pagans fyst into Britayn now called Englonde / under Woutiger þe Boheme was crowned kyng of this londe. This tyme chose that had thes chyliden in keepyng the which were Constantynes sonnes / that is to saye / Burilambes and Elter through aduysance of Gelleyn that was byshop of London / after they fawers berbe / that is to saye Constantyne / durst not dwell in this londe with those chyliden / but caryed them into the kyng of ytell Britayne / for as moche as he knewe the treason of Woutiger that than was made kyng / through to home Constantyne they elder brother was the pue / wherefore þe bocher knyghtes of þe chyliden were put to berth and bare al the blame / as that Woutiger had not dyd therof / ne them consented. And so the keepers of those two chyliden byd lest Woutiger wolde put the to berth through his treason & fallines as he had done they brother before / & therefore they were ladde ouer in to ytell Britayne / & the kyng them receyued w moche honour / & put them to nourshe / & there they dwelled tyll they became fawre and dredge knyghtes / & thoughte to be awenged of the berth of Constantyne they brother when they fawre they tyme / & so they dyd as ye shal here tell afterward. ¶

And so longe after that the tyeprages came oute in to the hyrre of the hon / and knyghtes of þe pue / & they were dampned & put to berth through Woutiger in this londe / wherefore they were fawerly berth / and chose that they wolde be awenged of the berth of they knyghtes / & came in to this londe with a grete power / & subbed & fawre in many places / & dyd all the fawre that they myght. When Woutiger & his / he made moche fawre / and was fawre awenged. And in another place also tyeprages came to hym that Burilambes and Elter his brother aduysed and assembled a grete host for to come in to grete Britayne / for to be awenged upon Woutiger for þe berth of they brother Constantyne. So that on þe one syde & on the other he was brought in to so moche fawre that he dyd dyd where to go.

Chese Engil and xi. thousande men came in to this londe / to whom Woutiger gaue a place þe is called Thonge castell.

And so longe after this fawre tyeprages came to Woutiger that a grete nauye of straingers were arryued in þe coostes of Kent / & dyd not wend they were ne wherefore they were come in to this londe. The kyng sent anone a messenger thider / that some of them shoulde come & speke to hym for to knowe what folke they were / & what they as / br / & in so what coostre they wolde go. There were fawre bartherne maysters & pynces of that strange company / þe one was called Engil / & that other borne. Engil went in to the kyng and tolde hym the cause wherefore they were come in to this londe / & fawre. So / the be of a coostre / & is called fawre / that is þe londe of fawre / where in is so moche fawre / that of the people be so many that

the lorde may not them suffeyne. And þ
purposed & maisters of the londe make to
come before them men & womē of þ hol
land þ may best traunple in to diuers lon
des & gawe them hors & harnēys & al þ
them neede & thā they byd them go in
to another cōtre wher they may fynde
as they aduersērys byd before them. And
cherlye spake kynge / yf þe wyll haue our
fauour we wyll helpe you against your
enmyes. Whan Mortimer herd this / he
knyd gladly he wold wholde them upon
suche cōditions þ yf they myght deliuer
his londe of his enmyes / he wold gawe
them reasonable tōdes for to dwell in for
euer. Engist thanked hym goodly / & in
this maner he & his company. xi. m. were
recepted to kynge Mortimer / & as the last
deliuered clene þ londe of his enmyes.
Than prayed Engist the kynge of so ma
che lōde þ he myght make for hym & his
folke a cite. The kynge answered it was
not to do wout cōsyle of his byrons.
Engist prayed hym agayn of as moche
place as he myght compass in a thonge
of a skyn / wheron he myght make a ma
net so þ he mōd dwell in. And þ kynge graū
ted him frely. Than Engist cut a bulles
skyn as small as he myght in to a thōge
& therw compassed as moche lond as he
myght buyde on a fayre castell / & was
called Thong castell.

How Mortimer loued Bonewen Eng
les doughter / & how he spoused her.



Whan this castell was made and
well arayd. Engist pryuely sent
by lettere in to the towne where
he came fro for an hundred shyppes fyl
led with men that were strong & bolde
and also well fyghtyng in all batayles /
and that they sholde also bryng with
them Bonewen his doughter / whiche
was the fayrest creature that any man
myght se. And whan these people were
comen that he had sente for / he toke and
ladde them in to the castell with moche
joye. And hymselfe upon a daye went
vnto the kynge / and prayed hym there
full doughtyly that he wolde come and
se his newe maner that he had made
in the place that he had compassed with
the thonge of the skynne. The kynge a
none frely graunted hym / & went with
hym thider / and was full well pleased
with the castell & with the fayre werke.
And togeder there they ate and drank
with moche joye. And whan nyght ca
me that kynge Mortimer sholde go in to
his chaumbre to take there his nyghtes
rest / Bonewen þ was Engistes dought
ter came with a cup of golde in her hand
and kneled before the kynge and sayd to
hym Wassayll. And the kynge wold not
what it was to mene / ne what he shold
answere therto / for as moche as hym
selfe nor none of his byrons coude speke
none Englyshe nor vnderstande it / but
spoke in þ same language that Byrons
do yet. Neuerthelesse a latiner tolde the
kynge the full vnderstandyng of was
sayll & that othe shold answere drynke
hayll. And that was the first tyme that
Wassayll and drynke hayll came by in
this londe / and fro that tyme vnto this
tyme it is well vsed in all this realme
of Englonde. And whan kynge Morti
mer behelde þ grete beaute of this fayre
may Bonewen that kneled before hym /
he toke her by & layde bothe his armes

aboute her necke & theryn shewyd hys
freder & anow right he was enamou-
red vpon her / so that he desired to haue
her to wyfe / and asked her of Engist her
fader. And Engist graunted hym vpon
this couenaunt / that the kyng shold geue
hym all þe countres of Kent / that he & his
people myght dwell theryn. The kyng
graunted hym ppyntly wth a good wyll.
And anow after he spoused þe damoyzell
and that was moche consufyon to hym
selfe. And therfore all þe byttons became
wrothe bycause he spoused a woman of
mythylene / wherfore they went all fro
hym / & wold do no thyng þe he had to do.

How Wastmire that was Wostiger's
sone was made kyng & Engist dyem
out & how Wastmire was paysoned.

This Engist went in to Kent and
sealed all þe londe in to his handes
for hym & for his men / & became wthun
a lytel whyle of so grete power / & had so
moche people / that men myst not in litle
tyme whiche wold þe hys men & whiche
he were Engist's / wherfore the byt-
tons had of hym drede / & sayd amonge
them / but yf they ne take othe consyle
bytwene them / all the londe shold be de-
stroyed through Engist and his people.
Wostiger þe kyng had begot on his wyfe
thre sones / þe first was called Wos-
timmer / the seconde Catagren / & þe thyrde
Passent. The byttons by one assent chose
Wostimmer to be theyr lorde & souerayne /
& crowned hym kyng / & wold not suffre
Wostiger no longer to regne / bycause of
the auaunce bytwene Engist and hym.
The byttons ordeyned a grete host for
to dysse out Engist & his company of þe
londe / and gaue hym thre batayles / the
first was in Kent wher he was lorde /
the seconde was at Cestres / & þe thyrde
was in a myde on this side Colchester in

a myde. And in this batayle mette them
Catagren & hisne Engist's brother / so
that eche of them slewe othe. But for
as moche as þe countre was gynn longe
before to come through Wostiger / wher
he spoused his cossyn / there he made a
sayle called that is called hisne called
after his owne name. Wostimmer was so
fayn anow for his brothers deeth / that a-
naw he let call to him þe castell on þe erth.
And after he dyed not nyghten daye
tyll he had dysse out Engist & all his
people of the londe. And then Wostimmer
his daughters made grete sorowe / and
craftely spake to them that were nexte
to the kyng Wostimmer / & ppyntly entee-
ted them / and so many gyftes he gaue
them / that the kyng was empysoned
and dyed at London the fourth yere of
his regne / and there he lyeth.

How the byttons chose an othe tyme
Wostiger to be theyr kyng / and Engist
came in to this londe agayne / and how
they fought togider.

After Wostimmer's deeth the byt-
tons by theyr comyn assent ma-
de Wostiger agayne theyr kyng vpon
this couenaunt / that he shold neuer af-
ter suffre Engist nor none of his to come
agayne in to this londe. And whan all
this was done / Wostimmer the quene ppy-
ntly sent by lettre to Engist that she had
empysoned Wostimmer / and that Wost-
iger her lorde bare agayne the crovne &
regned / and that he shold come agayne
in to this londe wel arayed wth moche
people for to auenge hym vpon the byt-
tons / and to wyne this londe agayne
by myght and strenght. And whan En-
gist herde these tydynges / he made grete
ioye / & apparayled hym hastily wth
gh. thousande men that were doughty
in every batayle / & came in to this lon-

be. And whan Mordiger herde tell that Engist was comen agayn with a grette power in to this londe / he assembled his byrons & went to mete Engist for to geue hym batayle. But Engist dyedynge þe byrons sope / for they had dyscorted þe before / prayed Mordiger of a loue day / & sayd he was not comen in to this londe for to fyghte / but for to haue his londe agayn / if he myght accord w the byrons. Kynge Mordiger throughe counseyle of his byrons graunted hym a loue day. And it was ordeyned by the byrons þe the loue daye shold be holden besyde Walsbury on an hyll / & Engist shold come thider with. iiii. C. knyghtes & no moo. And þe kynge w as many of þe myghtest men of his londe. And at þe daye þe kynge came w his counseyle as it was ordeined. But Engist had warned his knyghtes pryuely that eche of them shold put a longe knyfe in his hose / & whan he sayd fayre wys it is tyme to speke of loue & peas / euery man anon shold drawe out his knyfe & slea a byron. And so they slewe a. vii. and. lx. knyghtes / & with moche sorowde many of them escaped. And þe kynge Mordiger there was taken & ledde to Thongrauel and put in prison. And some of Engistes men wolde that the kynge had ben bient all quye. And Mordiger than for to haue his lyfe graunted them as moche as they wolde aske / & gaue vp all the londe townes / castelles / cytees & bourghes to Engist & his folke. And all the byrons fledde thens in to Wales / & there helde them self. And Engist went throughe þe londe & sealed all the londe w franchises & in euery place let call downe churches & houses of religioun / & destroyed þe chryste fyrth throughe out all this londe / and let chaunge the name of þe londe / þe no man of his were so hardy after that tyme to call this lode Britayn / but call it Engist lode. And tha he departed þe londe to his men

and made. vii. kynges for to strengthe þe londe / that þe byrons shold neuer after come therin. The first kyngdome was Kent / where Engist hymselfe reigned / & was lord & mayster ouer all the ocher. The. ii. was Southsey / þe now is called Chichester. The. iii. Westsey. The. iiii. Essex. The. v. Estangyl / þe now is called Norfolk / Suffolk / Berchemerik / þe is to saue þe erldom of Richoll. The. vi. had Lecestre shyre / Northampton shyre / Hereforde / & Huntingdon. The. vii. had Otford / Glocestre / Wynchestre / Warwyk / and Derby shyre.

How Mordiger wente in to Wales / & began there a castell þe wolde not stande without moister tempered with blode.

Whan Engist had departed all the londe in this maner to his men / & deliuered Mordiger out of prison to go where he wold / & he toke his way in to Wales where his byrons dwelled / for þe londe was stronge & yll to wyne. & Engist neuer came there ne neuer knewe it. Mordiger helde hym there w his byrons & asked counseyle what was best to do / & they gaue hym counseyle to make a strong castell / þe he might kepe & defende hymself therin if neede were. & Masons in haste were sette / & began þe werke vpon þe hyll of Brygh. But certes thus it befel all þe werke þe the masons made a daye / it fell downe þe night / & they wist not what it myght be / & therof þe kynge was sore annoyed of þe chaunce / & wist not what to do. Wherfore he let sende after þe myghtest clerkes & learned men that were throughe out Wales / þe myght be solide / for they shold hym tell wherfore þe foundamēt so fastid vnder the werke / & that they shold hym tell what was best to do. And wha these myght men longe tyme had studyed / they sayd to þe kynge þe he shold do seche a childe borne of a woman þe neuer had to do

With man / and that chyld be spelle do
 dre & tynge south his hinde the mothe
 of the werke / and so sholde the werke
 euer endure without ende.

Then þ kyng let seke Geryn throug
 out all Wales for to speke with hym.



When the kyng herde this / he com
 manded his messengers anon
 to go throug out all Wales to
 seke that chyld / yf they myght fynde
 hym / and that they sholde brynge hym
 forth with them unto hym. And in re
 corde and in wytnes of this thyng he
 had taken them his letters / that they ne
 were destroubled of no man ne lette. And
 than þ messengers went thens & spode
 so fast / that they came to a towne that
 was called Harmaropne / and as they
 passed forth they sawe they founde two
 chyldren of. xiiii. yere of age chyringe
 togyder with half wydes / and one of
 them sayd to that other. Woneat quod
 he / ye do all wronge to styue with me /
 for ye haue no wytte ne no reason as I
 haue. Certes Geryn quod he / of your
 wytte ne poite reason I make no doute /
 for man tell comyn þ ye haue no thyng
 of god almyghty / for ye haue neuer fa
 der / but every man knoweth well who

was your moder. ¶ The messengers of
 kynges Messinger when they herde this
 stylye bychene þ two groones / they al
 ked of them þ stode before them where
 that Geryn was boyn / and also who
 nouryshe hym. And they tolde them þ
 a grete gentylwoman of Harmaropne
 called when was his moder / but name
 knewe who was his moder. When the
 kynges messengers herde these thynges
 they went anon to hym that man was
 deyne of þ towne & tolde hym þ kynges
 wyll & shewed hym his letters / & shew
 for the three countes ryder. Geryn &
 his moder anon were farched before the
 barony of þ towne & he commaunded the
 that they sholde go to þ kyng with his
 messengers. Geryn & his moder went
 thens & came unto þ kyng / & there they
 were receyved w moche honour. And þ
 kyng asked of the lady yf þ chyld were
 her sone & who hym begate. The lady
 answered full tenderly wepyng & sayd
 she neuer had company of man worldly.
 But for sayd she / when I was a yonge
 mayden in my fathers chambie / whether
 of grete lignage in my copany / that oft
 tymes went to spoite them / I left alone
 in my chambie & wolde not go forth for
 brynge of þ some / there came on a ty
 me a sayre bachelor & entred in my cham
 bie where I was alone / but how he ca
 me in & where I wylt it neuer / ne yet
 knowe I not / for þ doies done fast bar
 red & w me he dyd game of loue. For I
 had no myght nor power to defende me
 from hy. And oft he came to me in þ say
 sayd maner / so þ he begate this chyld /
 but neuer myght I wyte what he was.

Of the answer of Geryn vpon the
 kynges call that wolde not stande.

When Geryn had herde all that
 his moder had sayd / he spake to
 the kyng in this maner. ¶

how I was begotten after ye no more. for
it fallith not to you nor to none other to
knowe / but tell me þ cause wherfore I
am brought to you / & wherfore ye haue
sent for me. Certes quod the kynge / my
wyse counsellors haue done me to vnder-
stande / that þ mozt of a werke that I
haue begun behourch to be teryed with
your blode / or the foundament shall faile
for euermore. Wy said Werlyn / wyll ye
see me for my blode to tempte with your
mozt. Ye quod the kynge / or elles shall
never my castell stonde / as my counsellors
tell me. Than answered Werlyn to the
kynge. Wy said he / let them come before
me those wyse counsellors / & I wyll pre-
ue that they saye not well ne truly. And
whan the wyse men were comen / Wer-
lyn asked yf his blode were the cause to
make þ werke stande & endure. All those
wyse men were abashed and coude not
answer. Than sayd Werlyn to þ kynge
Wy I shall tell you the cause wherfore
your werke thus failith & may not stan-
de. There is vnder the moztayn where
ye buyde your toure a grete pond of wa-
ter / & in the bottom of þ pond vnder the
water there is two dragons / that one is
whyte & that other reed / that fyght to-
gyder agaynst your werke. Do ye depe
myne tyll your men come to the pond / &
do your men take away þ water all out
& than ye shall see the dragons as I haue
tolde you / þ fight togyder agaynst your
werke. And this is the cause wherfore
the foundament fallith. The kynge anon
let dygge vnder tyll þ men came to that
pond / & let do away all þ water / & there
they foude two dragons as Werlyn had
tolde them that egerly fought togyder.
The whyte dragon egerly assailed the
reed / & layde on hym so strongly that he
myght not endure / but withdrew hym
& rested in the same caue. And whan he
had a while rested hym / he went before

the reed dragon & assailed hym anegerly
& helde hym so soze / that he myght not
endure agaynst hym / but withdrew hym
& rested. And after came agayn þ whyte
dragon & strongly fought with the reed dra-
gon / & bore hym euyl & ouercame hym þ
he fled fro thens & no more came agayn.

¶ Of the significacyon of these two
dragons that were in the bottom of
the pond that fought togyder.

¶ His kynge Uortiger & his men þ
sawe this bataille had grete mer-
uayle / & prayed Werlyn to tell hþ what
it myght betoken. Wy said Werlyn / I
shall tell you. The reed dragon betoke-
neth your seife / & the whyte betokeneth
the folke of Saronie that fyist ye toke &
helde in your lond / that fought agaynst
you / & haue dryuen & chased you awaye
But Britons of your lignage ouercame
them & droue them awaye. And speken
at the comynge agayne of the Saronis
they recovered this lond / & helde it for
euermore / & droue out the brytys & dyd
with this lode al theyr wyll & destroyed
chrystendom through out this lond. Ye
had fyist ioye with theyr comynge / but now
it is turned to your grete damage & so-
rowe. For the two brytherne of Costance
that was kynge / whiche ye let see / shall
come before a quinzeme passed to a grete
power fro lytel Brytayne / & shall auenge
the deeth of theyr broder / and they shall
brenne you fyist with sorowe / and af-
terwarde they shall see a grete parte of
saronis / & shall dryue out all þ remenaunt
of the lond / & therefore abyde ye here no
lenger to make castel ne none other wer-
ke / but anon go sis where to saue your
lyfe. To god I you betake / trouh I ha-
ue sayd to you of thynges þ shall befall.
And vnderstande ye well that Turdam-
bros shall be kynge / but he shall be por-
soned / & lytell cyng shall be regne.

Of kynges Jurilambros / and how he pursued Wostiger and Engist / and how they dyed.

Wostiger & his moder departed fro the kyng / and returned agayne to Harthardorne. And soon after tybnynges came to the Byrons that Jurilambros and Wter his broder were arrayed at Cornes with a grete host. And anon the Byrons assembled them and went to receyue Jurilambros and Wter with grete noblenes / & brought them to London / and crowned Jurilambros & made hym kyng / and dyd into hym homage. And anon he asked where as Wostiger myght be founde that was kyng / for he wolde be auenged of his broders deth / and after he wolde warre vpon þe paynymis. And they tolde hym that Wostiger was in Wales / & so they ladde hym thider warde. Wostiger wytt well that those bretherne came to conquere hym / and fledde thens in to a castell that was called Gerneth / that stode vpon an hie mountayne / and there heide hym. Jurilambros and Wter his broder and theyr folke had besyged the castell full longe tyme / for the castell was stronge & well arrayed. So at the last they best wyth the fyre and brente houses and men and all theyr arraye & as moche as was within the castell. So that Wostiger was brent amonge all other / and so he dyed with moche sorowe. ¶ Than was Engist in Kent and reigned there / and herde these tybnynges / anon he fledde & wolde haue gone in to Scotlande for to haue had socoure. But Jurilambros and his folke mette with hym in the north countree / and gaue hym batayle. And Engist and his men defended them whyles þe they myght / but he and his folke were dyscomfited and slayne. And Otta his sone fledde into York. And Jurilambros for

loved hym greatly. And Otta with stode hym a tyll whyle / but after wards he put hym to his mercy. And Jurilambros receyued hym / and to hym & to his men gaue the countree of Salway in Scotlande / & there they dwelled. After that the kyng Jurilambros went through out the londe / and put awayne the name of Engist londe / that Engist after his name had called it before. Than he let call it agayne grete Byrtayne / and let make agayne churchs and houses of religyon / castelles / cyters / and bowldes and towncs that the Saxons had destroyed / and came to London / and dyd do make the walles of the cyte / whiche Engist & his folke had cast downe. The Byrons ladde hym to the moor of Ambrian where sometime was an hous of religyon whiche than was destroyed through þe paynymis / wherof a knyght that was called Ambry that sometime was souber of that hous / and therefore the hyll was called the mount of Ambrian. And after it was called Ambelbury / and shall be so for euermore.

¶ How Jurilambros dyd redresse the londe of grete Byrtayne / whiche was destroyed through the Saxons.

How the kyng Jurilambros let damende and redresse the hous of Ambelbury / and put there in monkes / but now there be nonne / & lytell from the place that was called Salysbury / or where as the Saxons sette the Byrons / where as Engist and the Byrons sholde haue made a loue baye / in þe whiche tyme there were slayne a thousande & xxi. knyghts through treachery of Engist. The kyng therof had grete pyte / & thought to make in mynde of them a monument of stone that myght endure to the worldes ende. And of this thyng

they toke theyr counseyle what therof was best to do. Than spake to þe kyng the byshop of London that was called Cernyke þe he wolde enquire after Merlyn for he coude best tell how this thyng myght best be made. And Merlyn after was sought & founde & came to þe kyng. And the kyng tolde hym his wyll of the monument þe he wolde haue made. Merlyn answered to þe kyng & sayd. There ben grete stones in Irlonde & longe vpon the byll of huan þe ben called gyautes karoll & yf they were in this place as they be there they wolde endure for euermore in remembraunce of those knyghtes that here be buried. Werma for sayd þe kyng as harde stones ben in my lode as in Irlode. Sooth sayd Merlyn but in all your londe there be none suche. for grauntes let them for grete good of themselves. for at every tyme þe they were mooued o; in any maner hurt they washed þe stones with hote water and tha they washed them therewith & anon they were hole.

How the Brytons went for to seke the grete stones in Irlonde.

As wha these Brytons had herd of this thyng they went & swore amonge them that they wolde goo seke those stones & toke with them Uter the kynges broder to be theyr chefe capitayn and. b. 9. me. & Merlin counseyled them for to go vnto Irlonde and so they dyd. And whan the kyng of Irlonde þe was called Guillomer herde tell þe straungers were arrived in his londe he assembled a grete power & fought agaynst them but he & his folke were discomfyted. The Brytons wente before tyll they came to the moote of Kylian & cymmed by vnto the moote. But whan they sawe the stones & the maner how they stode they had grete meruaile and sayd bytwayne

themselfe that no man sholde them remeue for no strength ne engyne so grete they were & so longe. But Merlyn thynghing his crafte he remeued them & brought them in to theyr shippes & came agayn in to this londe. And Merlyn set þe stones where the kyng wolde haue them & set them in the same maner that they stode in Irlonde. And whan þe kyng sawe þe it was made he thakke Merlyn & ryche ly hym rewarded at his owne wyll & let call þe place Stonehenge for euermore.

How Passent þe was Woxtigers sone & kyng Guillomer came in to this londe & how a traytour that was called Capa empoysoned þe kyng Aurilambros.

As men shall vnderstande þe Passent þe was Woxtigers sone liued the same tyme & came in to this londe w a grete power & arrived in þe north countre & wolde be auised of his faders derth Woxtiger & strongly trusted vpon þe company that he had brought w hym out of the londe of Germany & had conquered all þe south countre vnto Poike. And wha kyng Aurilambros herde this he assembled a grete power of britons & went for to fyght with Passent & he discomfyted Passent and al his people. But Passent escaped thens with some of his men & fledde thens in to Irlode & came to kyng Guillomer & prayed hym of helpe & socour. The kyng graunted hym w good wyll & sayd þe he wolde helpe hym vpon that couenaunt that I my selfe must go with you with all my power in to Brytayne and I wold me auenge vpon the Brytons the rather for they came in to my londe & toke þe stones with strength that is called gyautes karoll. The kyng Guillomer let ordryne his shippes and went to the see with. xv. 9. men & arrived in Wales & began to robbe & dyd

Merlyn
set vp
stones

muche sorer. **¶** It befell so that kyng
Turilambros lay sick at Wyndchestre / &
myght not helpe hymselfe. So that he
sent in his name Wter his wyver with
a power to helpe Wales / & thiderward
he went as moche as he myght. The
kyng of Irelande and Passent had herde
tell that Turilambros was sick / and to
them there came a Carlyn þ was callid
Coppa and sayd. Syr dwell ye here all
in peas w your hoost / & I behyght you
through my curynryle þ I shall see the
kyng Turilambros that is sick. Than
sayd Passent / yf ye do so I shall rchely
awaice you. This traytour Coppa put
upon hym an habyte of relygion / & let
shave hym a brode crowne / & came unto
the kynges courte / & sayd that he wolde
helpe þ kyng of his malady. Than sayd
the traytour Coppa unto þ kyng. Syr
be of good conforte / for I shall gyve you
suche a medecyne þ ye shall swete anone
ryght and lyst to slepe & haue good rest.
And þ traytour gaue hym suche popson
to slepe / that anone ryght in his slepyng
he dyed / & the traytour sayd þ he wolde
go out in to þ felde tyll he were awakid
And so escaped he away / for no man had
to hym suspencion for bycause of his ha
bte that he was clothed in / and also for
his brode shaven crowne. But whan the
kynges men wyst þ he was deed / they
became wonders sor / & fast sought the
traytour / but they myght not fynde hy.
For that traytour returned agayne un
to the hoost fro whens he came.

¶ Whan Turilambros was deed / a
sterre on þ moow was seen w a clere
lyght / & at þ bought of the beme was
seen the heed of an horrible dragon.

¶ Whan the kyng Turilambros was
thus deed & empoisoned at Wynd
chestre / on þ moow after that

he was deed aboute the tyme of payme
there was seen a sterre grete & clere / & þ
beme of þ sterre was bygher than the
sunne. & at the bought of the beme appe
red a dragons heed / & out of his mouth
came two huge lyghtes that were as
lyght as any fyre brennyng / & the one
beme towarde fraunce & streyght ouer the
see thiderward / & out of þ beme came
by. bemes full clere & longe as it were þ
lyght fyre. This sterre was seen of ma
ny a man / but none of them wyst what
it betokened. Wter that was kyng Tur
ilambros broder þ was in Wales with
his hoost of Brytons sawe that sterre / &
the grete light that it gaue / he wonderd
therof greatly what it myght betoken / &
let call Carlyn / & prayed hym for to tell
what it myght betoken.

¶ Of the betokenyng of the sterre.

¶ Carlyn sawe that sterre & behelde
it longe tyme / & sythen he quoke
and wept tenderly / and sayd. Was alas
that so noble a kyng and so worthy is
deed. And I do you to understande that
Turilambros your broder is empoisoned
and that I se well in this sterre / & your
selfe is betokened by the heed of the dra
gon that is seen at the bought of þ beme
that is your selfe that shall be kyng and
regne. And by þ beme þ staderth toward
the east is understande that ye shall gett
a sone that shall conquer all fraunce &
all the londes þ belongeth to the crowne
of fraunce / that shall be a worthyer kyng
and of moze honour than euer was any
of his auncesters. And by the beme that
stretcheth toward Irelande is betokened
that ye shall haue a daughter that shall
be quene of Irelande. And the by. bemes
betoken that ye shall haue by. sones / &
euery one of them shall be kyng / & shall
regne with much honour. And abyde ye

no longer here. But go & give batayle to
your enemyes. & fyght wth them boldly/
for ye shal overcome them & haue þ^e victo-
ry. Uter thider Berlyn hertely & toke
his men & went towarde his enemyes/
& they fought togyder mortally & so he
dismayed his enemyes and destroyed
them. & by myght of his passion þ^e was
Uterigers sone. And his Wytons sene
Guillemet that was kynge of Trionde
and all his men. And Uter anon after þ^e
batayle toke his waye towarde Wyn-
chester for to do bury kynge Burilambros
that was his broder. But th^{at} was the
body borne to Stonehenge wth moche
honour. that he had to make in remem-
brance of the Wytons that there were
slayne through treason of Engys. that
same daye that they shold haue ben ac-
cused. and in þ^e same place they buried
Burilambros. the seconde yere of his
reigne wth all the worship that myght
belonge vnto suche a kynge. On whose
soule god haue mercy. Amen.

Of Uter pendragon. & wherfore he
was called so ye shall here. And how he
was overtaken wth the loue of Agreyn &
was the chief wyfe of Cornewayle.

After the dethe of Burilambros
Uter his broder was crowned
& reigned worthely. And I remembre
of the dragon that he was likened to. he
made two dragons through consyle
of his Wytons. & made that one sh^{ould} be
borne before hym whā he went in to ba-
tyle. & that other for to abyde at Wyn-
chester in the byshopps churche. And for
that cause he was called euer after Uter
pendragon. And Oeta þ^e was Engylles
sone commended Uter but tyed that was
made nethe king. & agayn hym began
to moue warre. & ordeyned a grete com-
pany of his frendes. & of his knyghts. & of

Oeta his broder. & had taken all þ^e londe
from Sumner vnto Wyke. But thole of
Wyke haue strongly agaynst them. and
wold not suffer them to come in to þ^e cite
neither to pryde þ^e cite to them. & he be-
syged the towne anon ryght. & gaue
thereto a stryde assaure. but they of þ^e cite
kept them well & strongly. And whan
Uter herde therof. he came thider wth a
grete power for to helpe and rescow the
cite. & put a waye the syege and gaue a
stronge batayle. & Oeta & his company
defended them as well as they myght.
But at þ^e last they were discouered. & the
moost parte of them slayne. and Oeta &
Oeta were taken & put in prison at Lon-
don. And Uter by force dyced a wyfe
at Wyke. & after he went to London. And
at Ester after he wolde be crowned. &
holde a solempne feast. and let somon all
his erles & barons. that they shold come
to that feast. & all those that had wyues
shold bynge them also to þ^e feast. And all
came at the kynges commaundement as
they were commaunded. The first was
rychely arrayed & holden. & all worship
set to meet after that they were of estate
So þ^e the erle Gylfryd of Cornewayle &
Agreyn his wyfe late wyfe to þ^e kynge
And whan the kynge sawe the faynes
of that lady that she had. anon he was
rauyshed for her beaute. & oft he made
to her wyfe countenaunce in loughynge and
laughynge. So at the last the erle pre-
crued the ptey loughynge & laughynge
and the lout byrthent them. and rose vp
from þ^e table in wrath. & toke his wyfe/
and called to hym his knyghts. & went
thens all in wrath wthout takynge leue of
the kynge. The kynge anon sent after
hym that he shold come agayn & go not
thens in despyte of hym. And þ^e erle wolde
not come agayn in no maner of wyse.
Wherfore the kynge was full wroth. &
in wrath hym despyd as his enemye.

my. And þe erle went thens in to Corne-
wall. And his wyfe in to the castell of
Coutagell. And the kyng let ordeyne a
grette host & came in to Cornewall for
to deliuer the erle of his myght. But he
had put hym in þe strange castell of Cyn-
tagell þe was well arrayed / & wolde not
yelde hym to þe kyng. And þe kyng anone
beseged the castell / & there dwelled .xv.
days & myght not speke / & euer thought
upon Agreyn & upon her layde so mo-
che loue / that he wyll not what to do.
So at last he called to hym a knyght þe
was called Ulfyn that was pryncy with
hym / & tolde hym all his counseyle / & asked
of hym what was best to do. Wyf sayd
he / sende after Merlyn anone / for he can
tell you the best counseyle of any man ly-
uynge. Merlyn anone was sent after &
came to þe kyng. And the kyng told hym
all his counseyle and his wyll. Wyf sayd
Merlyn / I shall do so moche through þe
craft that I can / that I shall make you
come to nyght in þe castell of Coutagell /
& shall haue all your wyll of that lady.

How kyng Uter begate on Agreyn
that was the erles wyfe of Cornewall
le Arthur kyng.

Merlyn through craft þe he coude
chaunged þe kynges fygure in to
the lykenes of the erle / & Ulfyn Garloys
his chamberleyn in to þe fygure of Jo-
dan that was þe erles chamberleyn / so þe
erle of them was trasfigured to others
lykenes. And whan Merlyn had so done
he sayd to the kyng. Wyf sayd he / now
may ye go sodeynly to þe castell of Cyn-
tagell / & aske entre there and haue your
wyll. The kyng toke pryncy all þe hook
to gouerne and lede to a knyght that he
moche loued / & toke his waye toward
the castell / & with hym toke Ulfyn his
chamberlayne and Merlyn. And whan

they came thider / þe porter woude it had
ben his owne lord. And whan he came
in to go to bedde / þe kyng went to bedde
with Agreyn the erles wyfe / and dyd
with her all his myght / & begate upon her
a sone whiche was called Arthur. And
on the morowe þe kyng toke his leue of þe
lady and went agayn in his host. And
the same nyght that the kyng laye by
Agreyn in bedde þe was the erles wyfe
the kynges men gaue a grette assaute in
the castell. And the erle & his men manly
defended them. But at the last it befel so
that in the same assaute the erle hymselfe
was slayne & the castell taken. And the
kyng anone returned agayn to Cyn-
tagell and spoused Agreyn with moche
honour and made her quene. And soone
after that the kyng came þe he wolde be
deliuered & had a sone whiche was cal-
led Arthur. And after that gaue on her a
daughter that was called Imyn. And
whan he was of age a noble baron that
was called Morth þe was lord of Leons
wedded her. ¶ Whan Uter longe tyme
had reigned there came upon hym a grette
sickness as it were a sojorne. And in the
meane tyme those that had in keppynge
of hym that was Engystes sone and Morth
his brother that than were in pryson /
they let them goo for grette gyftes that
they gaue / and wente with them. And
whan these two brotherne were escaped
& came agayne in to thei owne countree
they ordeyned a grette powere of folke / &
began to warre agayn upon the kyng.

How kyng Uter chose Morth to kepe
the londe of Brytayne whyle þe he was
sick / for as moche as he myght not for
his sickness.

As for as moche as kyng Uter
was sick & myght not helpe hym
selfe / he ordeyned Morth sone of Cleyn
that than was chosen for to be wardyn

and the apurall all his folk. And so he
 move & his Barons assembled a grete
 host & came betwixt Ota and to his
 folk. But Ota at the last was descom-
 fynt. And he fell thus after wards that
 the byrtons had indignacyon of Moch
 & therefore he to hym attende. Wher
 by the kyng was wonderfull for arope
 and let put hym in a lytter in the host
 amonge his folk. And they ladde hym
 to Hierusalem that was a fayre cite
 wher as saynt Albon was martyred
 and after that cite destroyed with
 paynyng & through warre. And wher
 they had sent Ota & Olla & theyr peo-
 ple & entered in to the towne & let make fast
 the gates & there they helde them. And
 the kyng came & besyged them & made
 a stronge assaute. But they were wim-
 mally defended them. The kyng let or-
 deryn his gonnes & his engynes for to bre-
 ke the walles & the walles were so stronge
 no thyng myght misdo the. Ota & his
 people had grete despise & a kyng lyenge
 in a lytter had besyged them & toke con-
 seyle to come out on the morowe & give ba-
 taye to the kyng & in that bataye Ota &
 Olla were slayne & al the other alvys fled
 in to Scotlande & made Colegrim theyr
 chefrayne. And the saxons were escaped
 brought agayne a grete strenght & layd
 amonge them. The kyng therfore was deen
 they shold well conquer the lode & thought
 to poison hym & ordeyned men to do this
 dede: gyyng them grete gyftes & they
 went thiderward in poor rimes to be
 to accomplysh the theyr fals purpose: but
 it avayled not: for they myght not come
 nygh the kyng. And at the last they espyed
 that the kyng had none other spour but
 water of a cleere well & was nigh by the
 thesre traptours: then a day paynt they
 in the well & put therein poison: and at the
 water was poisoned: & and so after that
 the kyng had appoynted the water: he be-

gan to swell & thone after dyed & as was
 up as drake of the water dyed also. And
 anon as this was espyed: folk of the
 towne let stop the well for evermore. And
 the kyng was deen: his folk bare hym to
 Stomhenge in grete sollemnite of bys-
 shops & barons & were there to bury hym
 by the Aurilambos his brother: & after
 returned agayne everychone & sent after
 Arthur his son: & they made hym king
 of the londe with moche reverence after
 his fathers deith. xlii. yere of his regne.

How Arthur was the son of Uther
 was crowned after his fathers deith &
 how he dyed out of this londe Colegrim
 & the saxons & Chelbrik of Tynayre.



How Arthur was made kyng
 of the londe he was but yonge
 of. xii. yere of age: but he was
 fayre and bolde and doughty of body &
 to make folk he was good and curteis
 and large of spendyng: and made hym
 wonderfull well beloved among all men
 wher it was nede. And whan he began
 to regne he swore that the saxons never
 by him

U. S. 100

When King Arthur herde these ty-
menges / he anon let haunge the
hostages / & leste howell of Brytayne his
nephew for to kepe the marche towarde
Scotland with halfe his people / & hym
selfe went to heipe & restorue þe to lorde of
Bath. When he came thyder he gaue
a stronge batayle to Cheloth / & slawe al
moost all þe people þe he had. For no man
myghte withstande hym ne endure vnder þe
stroke of his swerde / & there were slayne
bothe Colegrin and Bladud his brother /
and Cheloth sende them & howe haue
gone as he hath shippes. But when kynge
Arthur sayd it / he toke .c. knyghtes
to Cadwy that was Erie of Cornewyle
for to let & stop his passage. But Arthur
hymselfe went southward & marche of the
londe / for messengers told hym that the
Scottes had breken howell of Brytayne
there as he lay sick / & that he had no

x-ray knights I suppose could do

hym the derwarde. And Cador pursued
after Chelbyth & toke hym & he myght
come to his wyppes & slewe hym & his
people. When Cador had done this vi-
ge. he halld hym agayne towarde Br-
ithur as fast as he myght & folde hym
in Scotlonde. Where he had resolded
Rowell of Wyrtayne. But the Scottes
were sette within Mountes & there
they helde them a while. but Arthur
pursued them & they fledde thens into
Limoigne. there were in that countre. ix.
vies & grete plenty of byrdes & Egles &
were wont to cpe & syght togyder and
make grete noyse. When folke came to
robbe that londe & warne as moche
as they myght. and so they dyd. for the
Scottes were so grete rauenours. that
they toke all that they myght fynde in
the londe of Limoigne without ony spa-
rynge & therewith charged agayne the
folke for to go in to Scotlonde.

How kynge Arthur asked of Merlin
the aduentures of. vi. of the last kynges
that were to regne in Englonde & how
the londe sholde ende.

S He sayd Merlin in þ yere of the
incarnacyon of Jesu Chyyst. 66.
cc. xv. shall come a lambe out of Wyti-
cheste that shall haue a whyte tongue
& true typpes & he shall haue wyrtyn in
his hert holynes. This lambe shall ma-
ke many goddes houses & he shall haue
prais þ moost parte of his lyfe & he shall
make one of þ sayest places of þ world
that in his tyme shall not fully be made
an ende of. And in the ende of his lyfe a
wolf of a straunge londe shall do þ mo-
che harme & wyrtyn through warre. but
at þ last þ labe shall be mayster through
help of a reed fore that shall come out of
the north west & shall overcome hym &
the wolf shall dye in water. And after

that tyme the lambe shall lyue no while
but shall dye. His seed shall be in a straunge
londe. And the londe shall be without a
gouernour a lytell tyme.

A And after this tyme shall come a
dragon miled with mercy and
also with woodnes. and he shall haue a
berde as a gate. that shall gyue in Eng-
londe a shadoke. and shall kepe the lond
from colde & hete. and has one foot shall
be set in Wyke. and that other in Len-
don. & he shall embrace in habytacions
And he shall open his mouth towarde
Wales & the tremblinge of the bydout
of his mouth his erres shall stretch to-
warde many habytacions & countrees
& his bryth shall be full swete in straunge
londe. And in his tyme shall the ryuers
renne blode & with brayne. And he shall
make in places of his londe wallis that
shall do moche harme unto his seed af-
ter his tyme. And than shall there come
a people out of the North West duringe
his regne. that shall be ladde through a
wycked hare. that the dragon shall do
crodone kyng. that after warde shall flee
ouer the see. without comyng agayne
for drede of þ dragon. And in that tyme
the sonne shall be as reed as blode. that
men shall se through out all the world.
that shall betoken grete pestilence and
deth of folke. through dyne of swerde &
that people shall be saderies tyll þ tyme
that þ dragon dye through an hare that
shall meue warre agaynst hym unto the
ende of his lyf. that shall not fully be en-
ded in his tyme. This dragon shall be-
holde in his tyme the best body of the
world. and he shall dye beynde the mar-
ches of a straunge londe & the londe shall
dwell saderies without a good gouer-
nour. and men shall wepe for his deth
from the yle of Bretey into the hauen
of Wapyl. Wherfore alas shall be they;

kinge of faderlesse folke that shall our
lyue in his londe destroyed.

After this dragon shall come
a gote out of that that shall haue
hones and a herde of tyuer / and there
shal come out of his noserhilles a damp
that shall betoken hunger & sorrowe and
grett dede of the people. And moche of
his londe in þe begynnyng of his regne
shall be wasted. This gote shall go ouer
in to fraunce / & shall open þe floure of his
lyfe & dede. In his tyme there shal aryse
an Egge in Come warle that shall haue
fethers of golde / that of paye shall be w
out pere of the londe / & he shall despyse
lordes of blode. And after he shal see the
metyfully by a bere at Gaueserth. And af
ter shal be made byddes of men vpon þe
coistes of the see / & stones shall fall from
castelles / & many other toldnes shall be
made playne. In this tyme shall seme þe
bere shall byrme / & a batayle shall be
done vpon þe armes of þe see in a felde or
deined as a shelde / & at that batayle shal
dye many whyte hedes / wherefore this
batayle shall be called þe whyte batayle.
And the foresayd bere shall do this gote
muche harme / & it shall come out of the
south west & of his blode. Than shal the
gote lese moche of his londe / tyll þe tyme
that shendhypp shall ouercome hy. And
than shal he clothe hym in a lyons skyn
& than shal he wyne that he had lost &
more therto. For a people shall come out
of the north west þe shall make the gote so
fore aserde þe shall be in grette pleyse.
And he shall auenge hy on his enemyes
by the counseyle of two owles that tyll
shall be in peryll for to be vndone. But þe
owle owle shall go a way a certayn tyme
and after he shall come agayn in to this
lode. These two owles shall do grette har
me to many one / & so they shal consyle þe
gote to avenge warre agaynst þe foresayd

bere. And at the last the gote & þe owles
shall come at Burton vpon Trent / & shall
go ouer / & for dede the bere shall see &
shau to hym fro his company to Burton
to warde þe north / & there they shall be in
an harde house / & the shall the floure
be taken & slayne with sorowe / & þe bere
taken & beded nexte vnto his nest þe shall
stande vpon a broken bygge / on whom
the sonne shall cast his beames / & many
shall hym see for vertue that shal come
from hym. In the same shall dye for so
roue & care a people of his londe / so that
many lordes shall be vpon hym þe more
boldet after ward. And those two owles
shall do moche harme to þe foresayd flou
re of lyfe / & shall lede her in to dysresse
so that she shall passe ouer the see in to
fraunce for to make peas bytween þe gote
& the floure cyer / & there she shall dwell
tyll a tyme that her seed shall come and
seche her / & they shall be tyll tyll a tyme
that they shall clothe them with grace
and they shall seche þe owles & put them
to despyrous dede. And after shall this
gote be brought to dyscase & angursh
and in sorowe shall he lyue all his lyfe.

After this gote shall come out of
wynsore a bore that shall haue
an herd of a whyte lions bert / & piteous
lokyng. His bylage shall be rest to seche
men. His best shal be straich þe of chursh
to þe chursh. his word shal be gospel. his
herynge shall be meke as a lambe. In þe
first yere of his regne he shal haue grette
payne to iustifye them that be vntrue.
And in his tyme shall his lode be multiply
plyd woldures. And this bore thugh
feyned of his bert / shall make woldes
to become lumbes. And he shal be called
strongh out the moorde / the bore of holy
nes / of feyned / of noblines / & of meke
nes. And he shall do mefurably all that
he shall do vnto þe bough of Ierusalem

And he shall rebette his tette upon the
gates of Warrs and upon four londes
spayn shall tremble for drede. Galesyn
shall dwete. In fraunce he shall put his
wyng. His grete taylor shall rest in Eng
londe solit. Almayne shall quake for dre
de of him. This boze shall gyue mantels
to two townes of Englonde and shall make
the reueren to blode and brayne and he shall
make many medowes reed and shall gete
as moche as his sunners dyd and so he
dye he shall bere thre crownes and he shall
put a lond in to grete subiectyon and after
it shall be recouered but not in his tyme.
This boze after he is deed for his dough
tynes shall be buried at Coleyn and his
londe shall than be replete of all good.

After this boze shall come a lambe
hauyng feet of leed and an heed of
brasse and a hert of a loppe and shynes skyn
and an hard. And in his tyme his londe
shall be in peas and fyrst yere of his regne
he shall do make a rite and all that wolde shall
speke of. This lambe shall lete through
a wolfe a grete part of his londe but he
shall recouer it and gyue a lordshipp to an
egle of his lond and this egle shall well go
uerne it cyll pyrde shall overcome hym
alas for sorowde for he shall dye of his bro
ders swerde. And after shall that lond fall
to the foresayd lambe and shall rule that lode
in peas all his lyfe and after he shall dye and
the londe shall be fulfilled to all goodes.

After this labe shall come a mold
warpe cursed of gods mouth and
caryd and colward and bare. He shall haue
an eldery skyn as a gote and vengeance
shall fall upon hym for synne. The fyrst
yere of his regne he shall haue of al good
grete plante in his londe and shall haue
grete praynyng in his lond cyll that tyme and
he shall suffer his people lyue as moche
pyrde without chaastysynge. Wherfore god
wyl be wysoch. That shall aryse by a dra

gon of the north that shall be full fyres and
shall meue warre agaynst that moldwarpe
gyuynge hym batayle on a stone. This
dragon shall gadre in his copany a wolfe
comynge out of the west to meue warre
agaynst the moldwarpe in his sprege and so
shall that dragon and he bynde theyr tayles to
gyder. Than shall come a lyon out of Ire
londe and shall fall in copany with them and
than shall tremble that londe and shall be cal
led englonde as an aspen lese and in that tyme
shall castles be kest down upon Camysle
And it shall seme that Seuerne shall be drye
for the deed bodies that shall fall therein
The. iiii. these flodes in Englonde shall
ren in blode and grete drede shall be and an
guyrthe and shall aryse. After that moldwarpe
shall fley and that dragon. The lyon and that wolfe
shall dysure them away and the londe shall
be without them. And the moldwarpe shall
haue no maner of power save only a
shyppe wherto he may go. And after that
he shall gyue that thyrde parte of his londe
to haue the fourth parte in rest and peas and
after he shall lyue in sorowde all his lyfe
tyme. And in his tyme that hote barbs shall
become colde. And after that shall the mold
warpe dye auenturously and sodenly alas
for sorowde for he shall be drowned in a
flood of the see. His fied shall become fa
berles in straunge londes for curmore and
than shall the lond be departed into thre
partes and is to say to the wolfe to that dra
gon and to that lyon. And so shall it be for cur
more. And than shall this londe be called
the londe of request. And so shall that ryght
heires of Englonde ende. ¶ This same
tyme that Werlin tolde to kynge Arthur
of those knyghtes Guillemet of Irland
ordeyned a grete power of Ierlismen and
arryued in Scotlande fast by wher as
kynge Arthur lay in his boost.

¶ How kynge Arthur fought with Guillo
met and overcame hym. And how that ston
tes became his men.



When Guillomer that was kyng
of Arlonde herde tydings that
king Arthur was entred at Gla
stebury / he ordeyned a grete power of
Arishmen & came to þe see wth them / & so
came in to Scotland ouer þe see / & arryued
fast by there as king Arthur was wth his
hoost. And anone as he wyth therof / he
went towarde hym & gaue hym batayle
& ouertame hym. And Guillomer fled wth
his men agayn in to Irlonde. And w^ha
this was done / Arthur returned agayn
in to þe place where he had lefte þe Scottes
& wold haue slayne them all. But þe bish
shops / abbots & other folke of þe couⁿtre &
ladyes open beded come before kyng Ar
thur & cryed hym mercy / sayenge. Gentyll
kyng as ye are a mayntayner of chryste
dom / haue pite on vs your euen chryste
for by our both ye gete no worship / as to
the chryste folke / & therfore haue mercy
on vs / for we haue had moche sorowe by
the swerens þe haue passed through our
countree / but þe is not ynough to you / for

they haue taken our castels & slayne our
bestes & eten & moch harme haue done
vs / & yf ye see vs erpunge you mercy / it
shold be grete byshonour to you. For ye
haue done ynough to vs / & haue ouerto
me vs / & for goddes loue suffer vs to lyue
& haue mercy on chryste people þe blyue
in Chyrt as ye do. Whan kyng Arthur
herd this sorowe / he had pite on them / &
gaue them tyll & lymme wout any more
harme / & they fell down to his feet & cha
ked hym / & became his lyege men / & he
toke of them homage. And after þe kyng
Arthur turned agayn wth his host & came
to yorke / & there abode during þe wyng.
And than gaue he at Logres to Moth þe
had spoused his syster / & plenty of other
gyftes. Tha was Gauen his colyn but
yonge of age. To al his men þe had serued
hym in his warre he gaue ryche gyftes
thankyng them of thery good seruyce.

When kyng Arthur spoused Que
neuer þe erles colyn of Cornuayle /
and after he conquered all Irlonde.

When kyng Arthur had brought
his londe in peas & rest & in good
state / and all was well in euery countrey.
Tha toke he & wedded a wyfe þe was cal
led Gueneuer / & made her quene / & saye
lady & a gentyl þe Cador þe erle of Corne
uayle had nourysshed in his chamber þe
was his colyn. But neuer they had chil
dren togyder / & neuertheles king Arthur
loued her full well. And anone as wynt
er was past / he let assemble a grete hoost
and all his barons / & sayd that he wold
go in to Irlonde for to conquere þe londe.
And he taried not longe þe he was past
ouer in to Irlonde. And Guillomer þe kyng
let assemble a grete hoost / & gaue batayle
to kyng Arthur. But Guillomer was
dissolued and payded hym to the kyng
& became his man / & to hym dyd feyn
& homage / & of hym helde all that londe

from that tyme forthward. And after passed
kyng Arthur furthermore and conquered
Gutlonde & Irlonde / & take homage of þ
folke of the londe / and there dwelled. xi.
yere in peas / and reigned with myght and
myght / & there dwelled no man nor wo-
man upon hym. And he became so cur-
teys & large & honourable / that the em-
perours court of Rome / ne none other
through out all þ world was not accou-
nted to kyng Arthur þ any man wist of /
nor none so well prayed. And therefore þ
best knyghtes of all maner londes came
unto hym there for to dwell. And he re-
ceyved them w good wyll & reverence.
And all the knyghtes were so good that
no man knewe the worst. And therefore
kyng Arthur made a rounde table / that
whan they wolde syt at they meet / all
wolde be lyke hye & evenly served at the
table / þ none of them wolde make daunt
that one were hyer than another. And
kyng Arthur had at that table byrons
& freylshemen / normans & flemynghes / bur-
gonys / mausers & litherins / & of all
the londes on this halfe the moite Gorge
and of his londe of grete Brytayne / & of
Corneywale / of Wales / & of Irlonde / &
of Scotland / and shortly to tell of all the
londes that wolde worshippe cheualre
suche came to kyng Arthurs court.

How kyng Arthur went in to fraunce
& conquered the londe of froil that was
a Romaine / & how he slewe hym.

Sith it befell that kyng Arthur
through the slepe of his barons &
londes wolde go to conquere all fraunce
that than was called Galle through Ro-
mayns that than helde þ londe in they
power & in they governaunce. And þ Ro-
mayns had taken that londe to a noble
knyght and a worthy of body that was
called froil. And whan he wist þ kyng

Arthur came / he ordeyned an host of a
grete power / & fought with the kyng.
And he & his folke were dyscomfyted / &
fledde unto Paris & entred the cite / and
closed the gates / and there helde hym.
Wha Arthur wist that froil was gone
to Paris / he pursued after & came chy-
ber & besyged hym. But the cite was
stronge & well arayed / & they that were
therin defended them well and manly.
Kyng Arthur dwelled there more than
a moneth / & there was so moche people
in the cite þ they dyspended all they by-
tales þ they had win / & so grete hunger
became amonge them þ they dyed won-
ders thycke within þ cite for hunger / &
came unto froil / & prayed hym to be ac-
corded w kyng Arthur for to have peas
and they wolde yeide them unto hym &
the cite also. Froil saw that he myght no
longer holde the cite agaynst they / wyl
& trusted grete upon his owne strength
& sent to kyng Arthur þ he wolde come
fyght w hym body for body / & so wolde
they departe fraunce bytwene them two.
Kyng Arthur anon granted it / & wolde
not that none of his people understode þ
barayle for hym. And on þ morow bothe
came well arayed wout Paris / where
as they wolde fyght. And anon rogyder
they smote so fyrstly / and so well they
fought on bothe sydes / þ no man coude
deme the better of them. And so it befell
that froil gaue Arthur such a stroke þ
he knelled to the grounde whether he wold
or not / & as froil withdrawe his swerde
he wooden kyng Arthur in the forehead
that þ blode fell downe by his eyes & his
face. Arthur anon sterte up egerly wha
he felte þ selfe hurte as a man þ stemed
almost wood / & he roke Tabourne his
good swerde & toke it up on bygh / and
gaue froil such a stroke þ therwith he
clawe his heed dothure to þ sholders / so þ
his helme myght not be his marrow / &

Part. II.

Kynge Arthur.

Chapter.

So he fell down dead in þe place. And then
they of þe cite made grete joye for froill
And everychone paiden them unto kynge
Arthur: & the towne also: & became his
men: & oyd to hy þe homage & feaute. And
he receyved them: & toke of them good
hostages. And kynge Arthur after that
went forth in his host & conquerd Angles
& Angiers: Galles: Norway: Austene
& Burgayn: Berry: Lotherin: Curn: &
Dopriens: & all þe other landes of fraunce
he conquered hally. And towh he had all
conquered & taken homage & feaute: he
returned agayn to Barys: & there dwel-
led helonge tyme: & ordeyned peas lōge
tyme over all þe countree & through out all
fraunce. And tohan peas was made over
all throughe his noble knyghthode þe he
had: & also for his own worthyness. And
no man were he neuer so grete a loyde
burden nor meue warre agaynst hym ney
ther to aryse to make the lande of fraunce
unquyte. And in peas he dwelled there
ix. yere: & did many grete wonders: & re-
payred many proude men & yll maners
& chastised them after theyr deservynge.

How kynge Arthur auntyed all his
men that had traunpled in his seruyce.

Afterwarde it befell thus at
Barys: & rychely he bega to auntye his
knyghtes for theyr seruyce that they had
holpen hym in his conquest. He gawe to
his seruaunt þe was called Kay Dugoo &
Angiers: & to Bedeler his butler he gawe
Normandy that was called Beustrie
And to Holpyn his chamberlayn he gawe
flaunders & spance: & to Dorell his
cousyn he gawe Bolesue: and to Rycharde
his neyghbe he gawe Pountys: and to all
other he gawe large landes & fees after
theyr worth of estate. And tohan Arthur
had thus feild his knyghtes: at Barys

next after solowynge he came agayn to
Camelot his owne house: and after that
to þe next solowynge by coun-
seyle of his barons he wolde be crownd
kynge of Camelot: & he be a solowynge
feest: & let hymen knyghtes: cries: & ba-
rons: that they sholde come thider: nar-
rychone: & there was wynter kynge of
scotland: Cabwere kynge of southwailes
Guillomer kynge of Northwailes: & Ga-
bed kynge of Irelande: Balgarnus kynge
of Guntlande: Archibutes kynge of Scotland:
Blath kynge of Denmark: & Sone was
kynge of Scotland: & Dell his cosyn kynge
of Denekery: Cadon kynge of Iytell Bry-
tany: & Portouth erle of Cornuayle:
Gaucan erle of Glocestre: Guerdon erle
of Northestre: Boel erle of Harford: Ur-
tegy erle of oxford: Lucial erle of Bache
Jonas erle of Chester: Emertall erle of
Dorchester: Ryman erle of Salysbury
Wyloth erle of Cannterbury: Jagerne
erle of Chichestre: Trall erle of Lecestre
& þe erle of Warloke: & many other moo-
ryche lordes. Byrons there came moo-
that is to say Wyppon: Bonaud: Gēes
& many other þe be not named here were
at that feest: & many a sayre ferst kynge
Arthur had holde before: but neuer none
suche: ne none so solempne: & that lasted
ix. dayes with moche honour & myght.

The despayre of the knyghtes to Arthur

Of the lettre that was sent from
Rome for pryde to kynge Arthur.

The thyrde daye as kynge Arthur
sate at his meet amōge his kny-
ges: & amonge them that late at þe feest
before them came in xii. men of age xj.
they arayed: & curteysly they saluted
the kynge: & sayd they came from Rome
sent as messengers fro the emperour: &
toke to hym a lettre þe thus moche was
to understonde. Gierely vs mernaynt
Arthur that þe were ones so hardy with

The Romayne lre to Arthur

che open in thy heed to make open warre
and contake agaynst us of Rome. For we
all þe world to come. For þe hast neuer yet
before this tyme prouen ne assayed the
strength of þe Romayns. & therefore thou
it shall in a lytel tyme. For Julius cesar
conquered all þe lande of Brytayne & toke
therof truage. & our folke haue it longe
had. & now through thy pryde þe wyldest
holdest it. Wherefore we of Rome comaū
be þe that þe peise it agayne. And yet hast
thou done more folly. that þe hast sayne
froll þe was our baron of fraunce with
wyge. & therefore all þe comyns of Rome
warueth the & comaūdereth the vpon lyfe
& lyname. that þe in haste be at Rome for
to make amendes of the mysdoes that
thou hast done. And it be so that þe come
not. We shall passe þe hyll of Joye with
strength. & we shall see þe where euer þe
mayst be founde. & thou shalt not haue a
fore of longe of thyn owne. þe we ne shall
destroie it. & after ward to thy body we
shall do our wyl. Whan this lre was
red. & as men it herde. they were anoyed
all þe were at þe solempne feest. & the By
sons wolde haue sayne the messengers.
but þe kyng wolde not suffer them. & sayd
that þe messengers shold haue no harme
& may by reaso none deserue. but comaū
der them to be worshipfully serued. And
after meet toke coueyse of kynges. & lres
& barons what answer he might gyue
agayn to the messengers. And they cou
seyled hym þe he sholde assemble a grette
power of all the lordes of whiche he had
lordship. & manly auenge hy on þe emper
our of þe bysper. þe he had sent hy suche
wetter. & they coueyse by god & by his na
mes þe they sholde pursue hym & burne
as moche as they myght. & sayd þe they
wolde neuer saye kyng Arthur. & had
rather to be deed. And they let wyte a
lre to send to the emperour by þe same
messengers in this maner of wyte.

¶ Of the bolde answere that kyng
Arthur sent to the emperour of Rome
and to the Romayns.

Understande amonge you of Ro
me that I am kyng Arthur of
Brytayne. & seely it holde & shall holde.
And at Rome hastily I wyl be. not to
gyue truage. but for to aske truage. For
Constantyne that was Celyns sone that
was emperour of Rome. & of all the ho
nour that therto belongeth. And Mari
myan kyng conquered all fraunce and
Almayne. & passed mount Joye. & con
quered all Lombardy. & these two were
myne auncesters. & that they holde & had
I shall haue through goddes wyl.

¶ Of the reuerence that kyng Arthur
dyd to the emperours messengers.

Whan this lre was made & re
seled. kyng Arthur unto these
messengers gaue grette gyltes.
And after that þe messengers toke they
leue & went thens & came to the courte
of Rome agayne. & tolde the emperour
how worthely they were serued. and
also of the cryal company that he had for
to serue hym. and how he was moer ry
ally serued than the emperour of Rome
or any other kyng lyuynge in þe world.
And whan the emperour had ouerscen
the lre. & had herde what was therein
and sawe that Arthur wolde not be ru
led after hym. he let assemble & ordeyne
a grette host for to destroie kyng Ar
thur if that he myght. And kyng Ar
thur as cunhyng his power and parr
ordeyned his power & knyghtes of the
rounde table.

¶ Of the kynges and lordes that
came for to helpe kyng Arthur a
gaynst the emperour.

*The Romayns
we to the
Romayns*

The kyng of Scotland of Ireland
of Guernsey of Denmarke / of
Normayne / the of chym had .x. men /
the duke of Normandy / Gascoyn / Flaū-
dres / Poitou / and of Boleyn / the had
four thousand. Gerin of Chartres had
.x. thousand. Howell of Brytayne had .xij.
thousand / & himselfe of his owne londe
xij. thousand. And of archabylles and of
archers & of other folke on foot / that no
man coude number them. And when all
were ready for to go / kyng Arthur toke
his londe & Guenewer his wyfe to kepe
to one of his newwes that was a wyfe
hight and a hardy whiche was called
Morgawse / but he was not all true / as ye
shall here afterwarde. Kyng Arthur
toke all his realme to this Morgawse / sa-
ue onely the cithene. And after þat kyng
Arthur toke his host & went to South
hamton where that the shippes were
brought & the folke assembled / and they
went unto the see / and had wynde and
worther at wyll. And as soone as they
myght they arrived at Gaslet / and as
shortly as they coude they went a londe
out of theyr shippes / and spredde over
all the countrey.

Then kyng Arthur fought wth a giant
in Normayne that was called Mabinus þat
some clepe that was kyng of the
cousyn of Iseult Brytayne.

Kyng Arthur had not dwelled in
the cithene but a tyll tyme that
men tolde hym that there was comen a
grette gyant in to Normayne / and had
conquered some of the cithene that was callyn
Howell of Iseult Brytayne / and had
brought her upon an hyll that is called
the mount of Suint Bernarde / and there
was a woman in that cithene so bold and
so hardy that durst fyght wth hym / ne
came ne the place where as the giant

dwelled that was called Mabinus / and
moche sojourn he dyd in that countrey.
When kyng Arthur herde these tyn-
ges / he called to hym Kay & Bedevere
and commaunded them for to go pryvely
and espye where the gyant myght be
foude. And they came to þat ryunge there
as men shoulde go to the mount that was
all enclosed aboute wth water / & yet is
and ever shall be. And they sawe a byen-
nyng fyre upon þat hyll. And there was
also an other hyll nye that / & there was
upon that an other fyre bynyng. Kay
and Bedevere came to the nexte hyll / &
foude a wyrdome open heded / syttinge
besyde a tombe soze wepyng / and made
grette sojourn / & she the sayd Cleyn Cleyn
And Kay & Bedevere asked what she
was / and wherfore she made so moche
sojourn / & who lay in that tombe. O sayd
she / what sojourn & mylaventure saye
lordes seke ye here / for yf þat gyant may
fynde you here / he wyll sle you anon.
Be still good wyfe sayd they / therof des-
may you not / but tell us the soche why
that thou makest so moche sojourn and
wepyng. Wyrdome sayd she / for a damoy-
sell that I nourysshed wth my brestes
that was called Cleyn / that was callyn
to Howell of Brytayne. And here lyeth þat
body in this tombe whiche to me was
taken to nouryshe. And so there came a
devyll a gyant and rauysshed her / and
me also / and ladde us bothe wth hym
away. And he wolde have forlorn that
mayde that was so yonge and tender of
age / but she myght not suffer it / so grette
and so huge as the giant was. And so
certayne yf he come now as he is wont
to do / he wyll roue now bothe us / & the
four go yehens. Then spake these two
messenger and sayd to her / wherfore
go ye not fro hym. Certes sayd she
when that Cleyn was dead / the giant
made me to abyde to do and haunte him

byrth. & I must it suffer / & god it
woteth. But it was to be so. For I
had more to be than to be. I had
to be the payne & the pain. I have to be
he me suffer. When day & night were
had to be all & this woman told them
they returned agayne & came to kynge
Arthur. & told hym all & they had seen
& heard. Arthur anon took them both
with hym and went privately by nyght
that none of his host wyl. & came on
morrow ety to & grade & fought w hym
strongly. & at & last slew hym. And Ar-
thur had Bedevere to smyte of his hert
& byng it in to the host to shewe it for
a wonder. for it was so grete and huge.
When they came agayn to & hoste. they
told wherfore they had be out. & shewed
to them the heed. And every man was
glad & ioyfull of the worthy dede & kynge
Arthur had done that was theyr lord.
And so well was full ioyfull for his
cousyn that was so lost. And afterwarde
When he had space he let make a fayre
chapel of our lady ouer Cleyus tombe.

How kynge Arthur gaue batayle to
the emperour / in & whiche batayle the
emperour was slayne.

Athur & his people had tydyn-
ges that & emperour had assen-
bled a grete power. as well of saracyns
as of paynyms & chrysten men. Wherof
the noble was. xxx. thousand men. Both
her men. Arthur & his people ordeyned
fast hych in theyr hope toward & empe-
rour & passed floumaby & fraunce into
Burgoyne. & wolde have gone to & host
for men told hym that the emperours
host wold come to Linc. The empe-
rour & his host in & begynnyng of the
war remembred from Rome. & came forth
ryght the hope toward & host. Then
came kynge Arthur clyped & sayd. yf &

Arthur wolde he shold synde the empe-
rour there fast by / but they sayd that &
emperour had so grete power w hym of
kynges of the londs of paynyms. & also
chrysten people. that it were but foly to
kyng Arthur to mete with them. For &
spyes tolde that the emperour had frut
of fyre men agaynst one of his. Kynge
Arthur was bolde & hardy / and for no
thyng hym dysmayed & sayd. Go we
boldly in goddes name agaynst the Ro-
mayns that with them lode saracyns &
paynyms / that have no maner trust in
god. but only upon theyr strength. Go
we now & seke them sharply in & name
of almyghty god. & let the & paynyms
& chrysten men & be agaynst us w them
for to destroye chrysten men. & god shall
helpe us to overcome them. for we have
the ryght oppynon. & therfore have we
trust in god. & do we so that & enemyes
that be to chrystendom & to god may be
destroyed & overcome. & that men may
receyve the worthynes of knyghthode.
Wher kynge Arthur had this sayd. they
cryed all w an hye voyce. God & us fader
almyghty downfelled be thy name w
out ende. amē. And graunt us grace well
for to do. & to destroye our enemyes that
be agaynst chrystendome. In the name
of & fader. the sone. & & holy ghost. amē.
And god graunt hym neuer grace ne we
shyp in the world. ne mercy of hym to
haue. that this daye shall serue well for
to smite & egerly. And so they rode softly
& ordeyned theyr wynges wel & wysly.
The emperour herde tell that kynge Ar-
thur & his folke were redy apparylled
for to fyght with him. & how they were
comynge. he let ordeyne his wynges in
the best maner & he could. & more trusted
in his strength than in almyghty god. &
that was seen afterwarde. For when &
the hostes met. the emperour lost. w
of his men agaynst one of Arthurs. & so

many more dayes what on f one party
of romayns that other. that is thus gonne
yon to daye & beholde. In this batayle
there daye through kyng Arthur. In
hopes of the paynyns & of other shon
dars muche people. And kyng Arthur
men fought so that the Romayns
paynyns had no more strength to with
stande them than. xx. shepe agaynst. v.
booke. And so it befel in this batayle
in the shoure that was wonders hard &
longe durynge on that one syde & on that
other the emperour among them there
was slayne but there was no man that
wyll for very soche who hym selfe.

When king Arthur let bury his lordes
& knyghtes that he had lost in þ batayle
and how he sent the emperours body to
Rome that there was dayne in batayle.

When the romayns wyll that the
emperour was dead they saye
he the felde & the paynyns also
And kyng Arthur chaced after them tyl
it was nyght / & so many of them fel
that it was wonder to tell. And how it
was nyght kyng Arthur turned agayn
& thanked god of his victory. And on the
morrow he let loke & serche all the felde
for his knyghtes þ he there lost. that is
to saye Boier erle of maine. Bedelwer &
Ray & Ligiers erle of Beloyne. Urgety
erle of Danc. Noth erle of Wyrchestre.
Cursant erle of Cheshire. and Holden erle
of Gloucestre. These were þ grette lordes
that kyng Arthur lost in þ batayle with
other worthy knyghtes amonge them.
And how he let bury in abbays by the
coffres / some he let be borne in to chery
some coffres. And the emperours body
he let take & put upon a bery / & sent it to
Rome & sent to saye the Romayns that
he was slayne & that he be helde
after strange folke he was paye. And

yt they offen hym any other fynysh
fynysh the munge he was then paye
kyng Arthur let bury daye to daye but
other as fell / & other buried hym. And
Ligiers was borne to Beloyne where he
was borne. And Holden was borne in to
Gloucestre / and there was buried. And
all the other he let bury with muche ho
nour in abbays & in houses of religyon
in the countree where they were slayne.
And kyng Arthur hymselfe founne
that same yere in Burgoyne with his
hoof & thought þ same yere folemyng
to passe the mount of Joye and to have
gone to Rome to take the cite / and to
have put the Romayns in subyccyon
but the wyched tyrant Gogmagog lette
hym as after ye shall here.

When the traitour Gogmagog to whom
kyng Arthur took his lode to kepe & his
castell & he helde them agaynst hym.

When kyng Arthur had taken to
himself his realme to kepe and
was gone agaynst the emperour of Ro
me & was past of see / Gogmagog anon
toke homage & feaunte of all them þ were
in this londe / & wolde have had the lode
to his owne use / & toke castells all about
and let them be arrayed. And after this
faulnes he dyd an other grette wronge
for agaynst the lawe of chrystendom he
toke his owne wyfe as a traitour
and ordeyned hym a grette best agaynst
kyng Arthur comynge to holde þ londe
agaynst hym w strength for evermore
and so did kyng Arthur yf he myght / &
sent by see & by londe / and let assemble
paynyns & chyllen people. And he sent
to farys and to danc for to helpe hym
And also Gogmagog sent to Chelys to do
man come to by out of farys / that was
a worthy duke & promysed hym yf that
he brought with hym muche people he

And the greater hym in her luge for ever
 men all the lunde for beyondes Shumber
 to London / & all the lunde that Englis
 had of Wales / yf the lunde that he
 spake his daughter. And Chetowke
 was in a grette strength & power of people
 And Gwyddel had assembled also on his
 baile / that they had. xl. of strange
 knyghtes whom that they had nede.

¶ And king Arthur chaced þe traytour
 Gwyddel & holt he was slayne / & kyng
 Arthur bounde to deeth.

¶ And the pynge came to kyng Ar
 thur where as he was in Bur
 goun / & was therof sore wroth / & toke
 all fradre to Dorn for to kepe it half
 of his men / & payed hym to kepe it yll
 he came agayn / for he by self wolde go
 into Wyrtyn / & avenge hym on the fals
 traytour Gwyddel / & then his wyfe &
 came to Wyrtyn / & toke shyping w
 his men / & a grette boote of frendshipe
 arrived at Wyrtyn / & he of that he
 myght come to londe w his people. And
 then was come w all his power / & gaus
 a strange batayle. w þe kyng Arthur lost
 many a man of þe myght come to londe
 for there was Calgwyne his newe
 knyge & Agnysse þe helde Scotlande / &
 many other / wherof kyng Arthur was
 ful sovy. But after þe they were comen to
 londe / Gwyddel might not agayn them
 endure / but was discorped & fled thens
 the same myght w his men / & on the mo
 towe came to London / but men of þe cire
 wolde not let hym entre / & from thens fled
 to Wyrtyn / & there hald hym w his
 people. And kyng Arthur let take þe body of
 Calgwyne his knyge / & þe body of Agnysse
 let þe body be borne to London / & that
 ether to Roper & buried. And after kyng
 Arthur toke his wyfe to Wyrtyn / &
 byd / & he fled thens into Cornwalys.
 And the quene Guinevere þe was kyngs

Arthur's wyfe þe she foloweth agayn
 herde that Gwyddel was fled thens / &
 he myght not chace agayn kyng Ar
 thur / she was sore afere and had grette
 doubte / & by self not what was best to do
 for the wyrtyn þe her lorde kyng Ar
 thur wolde never of her haue merry for
 the grette shame þe she had done hy / & to
 ke her were purely woth. And men & no
 mo / & came to Harloun / & there she dwel
 led all her lyfe / & was never seen amoge
 folke. And kyng Arthur by self that Gwyddel
 was fledde in to Cornwalys / & let send
 after his men in to Scotland & North
 berlonde into Shumber / and let assemble
 folke wout nombre & went into Corn
 walys to seke Gwyddel. And Gwyddel
 had assembled to hy all þe folke of Corn
 walys wout nombre / & by self þe Arthur
 was compynge / & had leue to dye & take
 his chauce than longer to live / & abode
 gaus an hard batayle to kyng Arthur &
 his people / so þe there escaped none away
 on lyve save kyng Arthur & other that
 were bounde to deeth / for Gwyddel was
 slayne & all his people / and all kyng Ar
 thurs noble knyghtes of þe rounde table
 wherof it was grette pyte. And kyng Ar
 thur made hym to be borne in a lytter to
 Wyrtyn to be heled of his woundes. And
 yet þe Wyrtyns suppose þe he lyeth in an
 other londe / & that he shall come yet & con
 quere all Wyrtyn. But certes this is þe
 prophete of Wyrtyn. He sayd his deche
 wolde be doubtous / & he sayd trouthe. For
 therof yet men haue doubte / & that haue
 for evermore as men saye. For me doce
 not whether that he is on lyve or dede.
 ¶ And kyng Arthur was borne to Wyrtyn the .xxij.
 yere of his tryne / after the incarnacion
 of our lordes Jesu Chyrt. h. C. xli. yere.

¶ And kyng Arthur bequeered the
 realme into Constantyne the son of
 Cadoc his newe.



When king Arthur dyd that he myght reigne no longer / he let come before hy Constantyne that was Cadors sone erle of Cornemayl his cosyn / and to hym becke all his realme bydrynge hym to be kynge therof / yll that he came agayne / for as moche as he had none chylde begoten of his body / and grete harme it was / that so noble a kyng and so doughty as he was had no chylde of his body begote. But all thys that god wyll haue done / must be done / whose name be blyssed about ende. amē.

When Constantyne dyd the souldiers the sones that warred upon hym.

This Constantyne was a noble & a myghty bryght of body. And p rly sones that souldiers had begoten had grete enuy unto Constantyne that then was crowned kynge. And so it befell p they bega to mene warre agaynst hym / & assailed a grete host of them that were before with souldiers / & had many a man a slayne / whiche dyd moche sore the through out all the londe. That one knyght meryned hy to go to London for to take the cire / & that other went to Northfolke. But Constantyne came to

London and there hym that was then / and after he went to Northfolke & there hym that was there also. And so was he curst of both his enemyes. When Constantyne had reigned well & meryly some yere he dyed / asyth as London.

Of kynge Edelbryght and of kynge Edell.

After kynge Constantynes deeth there were two kynges in Brytayne / that one was called Edelbryght that was a Dane / & he helde the countee of Northfolke and Southfolke. And other bryght Edell and was a bytton / and he helde North / & South / & all the londe into Sumner. These two kynges fast married togyder / but they were after accorded / & louch togyder as they had ben boyn of one body. The kynge Edell had a syllyer that was called Opemene / and he gaue her through grete frendshyp to kynge Edelbryght to wyte. And kynge Edelbryght begate wth her a daughter that was called Argentyl. And p thys yere after came upon hym a strange sekenes that nedes he must dye. And he sent to kynge Edell his brother in lawe that he shoulde come & speke with hym / and he came to hym with a good wyll. Then playd he the kyng and conuined hym also in the name of god / that after when he shoulde deeth / he shoulde take his daughter Argentyl & the londe / & hepe and nouryshe her in his chambere. And when she was of age that he shoulde marry her to the strongest & myghtyest man that he myght fynde / and then he shoulde paye hy her londe agayne. Kynge Edell graunted it / and by sothe confirmed his wyll. And when Edelbryght was deeth & buried / Edell toke p danyell Argentyl & nouryshe her in his chambere / & she became as large as any myght be.

Part. v.

R. Coptyl.

R. Surmond.

Folio. liii.

How kyng Edel married the da-
moyzell to a knave of his berghyn.

After this kyng Edel that was duke
to Bregentyn, he thought how he
might falsly have þe lande to his nere / &
falsly agaynst his othe to deceyve þe da-
moyzell / & to marry her to a knave of his
berghyn þe was called Curan / & he became
the worthiest & strongest man of body þe
any man was in any londre lyving / & to
him he thought shamefully to have ma-
rried her for to have had her londre after
warde / but he was deceyved. For this
Curan was Hanclohs sone þe was king
of Byphlane in Demarke / & this Curan
conquered his wyves londre after ward / &
slew king Edel þe was his wyves uncle
þe had all her lond / as in an other place it
tellethe more openly / & he reigned but thre
yere / for saxons & danes slew hym / & þe
was grete harme to all Bytayne / & the
byrons bore hym to Stonehenge / and
there buried hym honourably.

Of kyng Conan þe was Curans cosyn.

After this Curan reigned Conan
his cosyn / a proude knyght / & he
reigned about loue / & ever was medling
w his people / & toke his vncle to warre
seyge his two children. The Barons
warred agaynst þe ostentymes / but he
ouertame them / & so he was in peas all
his lyf tyme / & he reigned. xiii. yere / & af-
ter he dyed & lyeth at London.

Of kyng Coptyl & Surmond þe came
through the paynyms into Bytayne.

After this Conan reigned his co-
syn Coptyl þe was behated of all
his people / & this Coptyl lost all batayn
through warre / & in his tyme sei þe grete
myrthelle in bytayne þe chrystendom was
despoiled / & all þe byrons were typpen
out of þe lond / but afterward leste fithre

to the saxons / as afterward ye shal here
for in that tyme there was a paynym
that was called Surmond þe had ges some
Deufrikes of þe paynyms folke / & shold
have ben kyng after his fader / but he
gaue it to his moder / & sayd he wold be
no kyng tyll he had conquered a realme
in a straunge countree. And of hym prophe-
cyed Geclyn / callinge him a wolfe of þe
see. And he let assemble paynyms wode
nombe & shippes. And goynge by þe see
he conquered byuers londres / takynge ho-
mage of many. And he came in Irlonde
& conquered it / that ostentymes warred
upon byrons / & byrons upon them / &
ostentymes & ostentymes & gaue hostages to
byrons. And so they sente to Surmond
there as he was in Irlonde / þe he shold
come & helpe them agaynst þe byrons / &
they wold gladly make hym thei lord.
For he was a paynim / & they were pay-
nyms / and the byrons were chrysten.
When Surmond herde this / he hasted
hym & arriued in Scotlande / & came in to
Northumberlond where as the saxons
were dwelling / & they observed þe coues-
nantes bytwene them made by othes &
hostages / for to bere hym true fapth / &
holde hym for lord / & paye to þe trueage
by yere. Than began þe saxons & the af-
fricans to destroye / robbe & brenne tow-
nes / & destroyed all maner chynge / spa-
ryng neyther man / woman / ne chyldre /
lerned ne lewde / but slew all / & kest downe
ne towncs / castels & churches / & so put þe
londre to grete destruction. And as soone
as they myght see they fledde thens as
well peope as cythe / bysbops & men of
religion / grete & small / some in to Iptell
Bytayne / & some in to Coynwale / and
all those that myght haue shippes.

How kyng Surmonde dyde kyng
Coptil to Chichestre / & slew the byrons
and through subtylle gate the to dme.



A Dyrif the kynge fledde thens in to
Chicheſtre that than was a good
cite and a ſtronger / & there helde hym .xx.
dayes. And this Gurmound came and be-
ſeged it. But þe cite was ſo ſtronger þe
myght not gete it by no maner of wyſe /
Wherfore they thought by ſubtylte to
hymne the towne / they made engynes
with piewe of nettes / and to be petes of
tunder & fyre & boide it to ſparowes feet
and afterwarde let them ſce / and they
anone ryght ſlewe in to the towne there
as they nettes were in chaces and in
curſynges of houſes / & the fyre began
to kyndle & bent all the towne. Whan þe
brytons ſawe that / they dyed them out
& fought / but anone they were ſlayne &
diſcomfited / & to hye the batayle dured
the kynge all in deſpayre & pryncely went
in to Wales / & þe men ſtill not where he
became. And ſo was the towne of Chi-
cheſtre take & deſtroyed. And after Gurmound
went & deſtroyed towne & citres
that were after were made again / as it
is ſet out in this lode / in many places.

Hold this lode was called Engliſhe
for the name of Engiſt / and hold many
kyngeſ were made after in this lode.

When Gurmound had deſtroyed all
the lode through out / he gave þe
lode to the ſaxons / & anone they toke it
with good wyll. For þe ſaxons longe tyme
had deſpyed it / for as moche as they
were of Engliſhes kynne / that fiſt had
all þe lode of Brytany / & let them be call-
ed engliſhmen / for becauſe of Engliſhes
name. And þe lode they let call Englonde
in they language / & the folk ben called
Engliſhmen / for as moche as in his tyme
it was called Engliſh lode whan he
had coquerred it of Hoſtiger. But fro the
tyme þe Wyte came fyrſt in to this lode
it was called Wyte / & þe folke wyteons
But ſyth þe tyme þe Gurmound coquerred
this lode þe ſaxons named it Englonde
as before is ſayd. And whan this was
done / Gurmound paſſed ouer in to ſraunce &
there coquerred many lodes / & deſtroyed
all chriſten people where as he came.
And the ſaxons dwelled in this lode / &
began ſalt to enhabyte it at they oſt
wyll / & they wold haue made newe kyn-
ges & lordes / but they coude neuer aſſent
to haue onely one kynge for to be to them
attendant / & therfore they made many
kyngeſ in dyuers ſhyres / as it was in
Engliſhes tyme. The fyrſt kyngdome was
Kent / & that other Southſex / & the wyte
Weſſex / the fourth Eſſex / and the fyth
Northumberlode / the ſyth Eſſangle / þe
is to ſaye Norfolk & Suffolke / & the vi.
Merchentich / & that is þe ſheredom of Ri-
choll / Huntynghon / Barſolde / Chouſſire /
Wynecheſtre / Warwiche & Derby / & ſo be-
parted all Engliſh into .viij. parties. And
after that it beſell þe kynges wanted
oſt tymes togyder. And euer by þe was
ſtronger to be hym þe was febleſt / & ſo it
was longe tyme that they had no kyng

crooked amonge them / nor no chryſten
man was than amonge them ne chryſte
dom neyther. But were paynymys tyll þ
ſaynt Gregory was pope of Rome / that
had ſeen children of þ nation of Englonde
in þ cite of Rome þ were wonders ſayſe
creatures / & had grete wyll & deſyre to
beholde them / & aſked of þ marchautes
of whens they were & of what nacion.
And men tolde hym they were of Eng-
londe / & englyſhe they were called / but
they & all þ people of englonde were pay-
nymys / & blyued not on god. Als ſayd
ſaynt Gregory / well may they be called
englyſhe / for they haue þ diſages of au-
gels / and therefore well ought they to be
chryſten. And for this cauſe ſaynt Grego-
ry ſent ſaynt Juſtin in to englonde / & xl.
good men w hym that were of good lyfe
& holy men to preche & teche / & to couerte
the englyſhe people / & turne the to god /
& þ was in the. vi. yere þ ſaynt Gregory
had ben pope of Rome / þ is to ſaye / after
the incarnacyon of our lord Jeſu Chryſt
b. C. lxxxv. yere as þ cronycles telleth.

How ſaynt Juſtyn baptysed & couer-
ted kynge Adelbryght / and the byſhops
that he made his ſelawes.

Whan ſaynt Juſtin came fyrſt in to
englonde / he arriued in the ple of
Cenet / & ſo paſſed forth & came to Caun-
terbury / and there ſoiourned. And kynge
Adelbryght of Kent þ was of þ lignage
of Engliſt goodly receyued ſaynt Juſtyn
& his ſelawes w moche honour / & ſoude
them all þ them neded. And more ouer
he gaue them a ſayre place / þ now is cal-
led the abbey of ſaynt Juſtin / in whiche
place he lyeth hymſelf ſhynd. ¶ This
kynge Adelbryght was a good man / &
with good wyll herd ſaynt Juſtyns pre-
dicacyon / and gaue hym leue to preche
through out al his lode of Kent to turne

and couerte to hym all þ people that he
myght. It beſell ſo after ward through
goddys grace / þ in a lytell tyme þ kynge
hymſelfe was couerte to god / & all the
people of his londe was baptysed. And
in þ meane whyle þ people turned them
to god / ſaynt Juſtyn came to Rocheſtre
& there preched the worde of god / & the
paynymys ſcorned hym therfore / & caſt
vpon hym reygth ſayles / ſo that all his
mantell was hanged full of thoſe reygth
ſayles / & for more deſpite they caſt on hym
the guttes of reygthes and other ſpylbe.
Wherfore þ good mā ſaynt Juſtin was
ſore anoyed & greued / & prayed to god þ
all thoſe children of þ cite that ſholde be
borne after ward / þ is to ſaye / in the cite
of Rocheſtre myght haue ſayles / and ſo
they had. Whan the kynge herde of this
vengeaunce þ was fallen through ſaynt
Juſtyns prayer / he let make a hous in þ
honour of almyghty god / wherin wo-
men ſholde be deliuered of theyr children
at the byrthys ende / in the which hous
yet women of the cite ben deliuered of
chylde. Whan ſaynt Gregory had herde
tell how the englyſhe people were tur-
ned to god & couerte / he ſent vnto ſaynt
Juſtyn his pallyon by a byſhop þ was
called Paulyn / and made hym prymate
and archebyſhop of Englonde / and ſent
worde that he ſholde ordeyne and make
byſhoppes in the londe. And anone as
ſaynt Juſtyn had the pallyon of the di-
gnite of the archebyſhop / he made cto
byſhoppes of his ſelawes the whiche
came with hym from Rome / of whome
that one was called Wellyte / & he helde
his dignite at London / and that other
was called Juſtyn / and he helde his
dignite at Rocheſtre. And this byſhop
Wellyte than went to preche the worde
of god in Eſſet / and there baptysed the
kynge of þ countree whiche was called
Sic / with þ was kynge Adelbryghtes co

thorne backe
ſayles

Kentish
ſayles

Para. b. R. Adelbryght.

syn his faders hene. This Justyn went to preche in Northfolke / & turned moche of the people to god / & saynt Justyn him selfe preached through out all Englonde.

¶ How saynt Justyn went in to Wales where as the Brytons were / and how they wolde not be obedyent to the archebpyshop of Caunterbury.

When all Englonde was baptysed and turned to god / saynt Justyn went in to þe londe where as the byttons were to kepe them fro englyssh men / that is to saye in Wales / & there he founde monkes & abbeyes / & vij. byllshoppes for the byttons destroyed all way þe chrysten people þe saynt Justyn had couerted. And he sayd to the byllshoppes that he was a legate of Rome / & prymate of all Englonde / & that they sholde by all reason to hym be obedyent. And they sayd þe they wolde not / but to þe archebpyshop of Carlyon they wolde / they wold neuer for no maner thinge be obedyent to þe englyssh men. for they sayd / englysshmen be our aduersaries / and haue dryuen us out of our countree / & we ben chrysten men and euer haue ben / & the englysshmen haue euer be paynymys / saue now of late that they be couerted. Saynt Justyn might of them haue none other answer / but sayd pertly that they wolde neuer meke them to hym ne to the pope of Rome. Wherefore saynt Justyn returned agayn to king Adelbryght þe was king of Kent & tolde him þe his folke wold not be to no man obedyent / but to þe archebpyshop of Carlyon. When the king herde this / he was sore annoyed / & sayd that he wolde destroye them / & sent to Elfryde kyng of Northumberlonde þe was his frende / þe he shold come to hym wth all þe power that he myght / & he wold mete hym at Lerecestre / and fro thens they wolde go in to

R. Elfryde. R. Brecinal.

Wales / & there destroye þe archebpyshop of Carlyon / and all those that had refused saynt Justyn.

¶ How kyng Adelbryght & kyng Elfryde of the Brytynall þe was a kyng of byttons that helde þe countree of Lerecestre.

It befell so that there was a kyng of byttons that helde the countree of Lerecestre / & all the countree aboute / his name was Brecynall. And this bytton herde tell þe those two englyssh kynges wolde mete there at Lerecestre for to go in to Wales / he let ordeyne all the power that he had for to go fyghe wth these two kynges / but lytel it anayled hym / for his folke were all dayne / & hymself fledde / & lost his londes for euermore. And these two kynges Adelbryght & Elfryde dwelled a while at Lerecestre / & departed the londe amonge them / and toke homage & feaute of the folke of þe countree. And after they went toward Wales. And they of Wales herde tell of þe discorde that Brecynall had at Lerecestre / & were wondrous soye adrad of those two kynges / & toke & chose amonge them good men & holy / of heremytes / monkes & prestes / & of other people grete plente / þe wente barefote and wolwarde for to haue mercy of those two kynges. But þe kynges were so sterne & so wyched þe they wold neuer speke wth them / but slewe them all. Was for soyle / for they ne spared them no more than the wolfe doth the shepe / but smote of theyr hevedes euerychone. And so they were all martyred þe to them came that is to vnderstande. b. C. and. xl. And after they wente fro thens to Bangor for to see all those þe they myght finde there of þe byttons. And when þe byttons herde that / they assembled & ordeyned all theyr power for to fyghe wth them. Then was there a baren of Wales whiche was called Bledyck of Coyne Mayle

that some time was lord of Deirhyre
but king Eboricht had gyven hym out
in to Wales / & after there he gave them
batayle / & at þat batayle was kyng Ebor-
icht slayne / & Elyfde was wounded / &
forsoke þat felde / & the moost parte of his
people slayne. And king Elyfde fled into
Northumberland þat was his owne lode
And after the people of Leicestre
made a strength Cademan þat was a
cynals sone kyng of Leicestre / & he after
regned nobly / & with grette honour.

How Cademan kyng of Leicestre &
Elyfde king of Northumberland were
frendes. And of the debate þat after was
betwene Edwyn and Cadwalyn that
were bothe theyr sones.

After that this batayle was done
the barons assembled them and
went thens & came to Leicestre / & made
there Cademan þat was a cynals sone
kyng of Leicestre & of all þat countree. And
he toke homage & feute of all þat folke of
the countree. And after that he assembled
a grette host / and sayd he wolde go into
Northumberland to destroye kyng E-
lyfde & see hym yf he myghte. And whā
he was comen thider / frendes went to
betwene them that they accorded them
in this maner. That Elyfde shold holde
all þat londe from Humber unto scotlande
and Cademan shold have all þat londe on
this syde Humber to þat south. And after
that they were good frendes all they
fyl & loked togyder as they had ben bet-
therne. And thus Elyfde had a sone cal-
led Edwyn þat helde all þat londe of North-
umberland after his fathers deith / & he sa-
ber had hold al his lyf tyme. And Cade-
man had an other sone called Cadwalyn
that helde his fathers londe as þe a deth
whā he was alyve / & the londe as þe
thene / & the londe that betwene them
but onely two yere / & after began debate

betwene them thugh an euyl enuyous
codyn of Cadwalyns called Byrnyng / so þat
they assembled a grette host on bothe par-
tyes. And at þat last it befell þat Cadwalyn
was discoryted / & Edwyn pursued him
and drove hym fro place to place / so þat
the last he fled in to Irlande. And Edwyn
destroyed his londe / & cast downe castles
& bent his maners / & departed all Cad-
walyns londe among his frendes. And
lōge tyme after came Cadwalyn agayn
from Irlande with a stronge power / &
in playne batayle sette Edwyn and all
his frendes / & namely them that with-
helde his londes by Edwyns gyfte.

How kyng Oswald was slayne by
kyng Cadwalyn & Deanda. And how
Oswald that was sone Oswaldes bro-
der regned after hym / & sette Deanda.

When Edwyn was slayne Ostris
his sone undertooke the warre a-
gayn Cadwalyn his uncle / so that this
Ostris dyed during þat warre. And after
the deith of Ostris regned a gentyll chris-
ten man that moche loved god almygh-
ty / that had all þat londe of Northumber-
lande by heritage þat was called Oswald
& he was kyng of all þat londe. But for as
moche as he was frende to Edwyn and
helde a grette parte of þat londe of Cadwa-
lyn. This Cadwalyn warred upon him
and drove hym towarde scotlande. And
whā Cadwalyn sawe that he wold not
abyde / he wolde no longer pursue hym /
but toke some of his folk to Deanda his
broder in lawe / & prayed hym to pursue
after Oswald tyll that he were taken or
slayne. And Cadwalyn returned home
agayn. Whā Oswald herd þat tydinges
that Cadwalyn turned home agayn / he
wolde no longer flee / but abode Deanda
& gave hym batayle / & Deanda was vic-
toryed & fled & came agayn to Cadwa-
lyn / & sayd þat wolde never holde a fote of

lunde of hym but if so were þ he wolde
 charge hym on Oswald. Cadwalyn let
 assemble a grette host for to fight with
 Oswald so that he and Deanda came to
 Northumberland & gaue batayle betw
 Oswald & in þ same batayle was Os-
 wald slayne & his hech buryed & af-
 ter he was buryed in þ abbey of Bard-
 ney in whiche place god hath wrought
 for hym many a fayre miracle bothe
 there and els where. And moone Oswy
 his broder sealed all the londe in to his
 handes þ was this Oswaldes. And the
 folke of Northumberland loued hym won-
 derly well & helde hym for theyr lord.
 But he had men of his kynne worthy
 ynough þ wolde haue departed þ londe
 & theyr warred lōge togydre. And for as
 moche as they were not stroge ynough
 they came to Deanda & prayed hym of
 helpe & socour & unplesed hym of þ londe
 largely vpon this couenaunt þ he wolde
 gouerne them & helpe & coueyle. Dean-
 da herde theyr prayer & so spake to King
 Cadwalyn that he shold ordeyn a grette
 host & fast ordeyn hym in to Northum-
 berlonde for to fyght with Oswy. And
 Oswy was a mekeman & moche louch
 peas & charite & prayed Deanda of loue
 & peas & prosted hym of golde & syluer
 grette pence. And this Deanda was so
 proude þ he wolde not graunte hym peas
 for no maner thyng / but for all thyng
 he wolde fyght with hym. So at þ last
 there was set a day of batayle & Oswy
 euer had trouth vpon god & Deanda tru-
 sted to moche vpon his pryde and vpon
 his host that he had and togydre they
 smote egely. But Deanda was anone
 discomfited & slayne. And this was af-
 ter the incarnation of our ladye. 46.
 Chy. 6. C. and 10. yere. And this Os-
 wy reigned. xxviii. yere & a kynge that
 was called Oswyne that was Dean-
 das sone warred vpon hym / and to-

gydre they fought / but Oswy had the
 victory of Oswyne & was discomfited
 and slayne and lyeth at Cymmouth.

Then kynge Cadwalder þ was Cad-
 walans sone reigned after his fader and
 was the last kynge of Brytons.

After þ deeth of Cadwalyn reigned
 his sone Cadwalder well & no-
 bly & his moder was þ sister of Deanda
 And whā he had reigned. xij. yere he fell
 in to a grette sickness & than was there
 a grette discorde betwene the lordes of þ
 londe that the warred vpon other. And
 yet in that tyme there fell so grette deeth
 and steruyn of come & other vytayles in
 this londe þ a man myght goiij. or. liij.
 dayes fro to mete to to mete that he sholde
 not fynde to bye for golde ne syluer breed
 wyne ne none other vytayle / wher in a
 man myght lyue. But onely the people
 lyued by rotes of herbes / for other
 kynges had they none / so moche was it
 sayed all about / sylles / wyde heestes
 & all other thyngs / so þ yet to this mys-
 auenture there fell so grette mortalyte &
 pestilence amonge the people by the cor-
 ruption of þ ayre that þ lyving people
 durst not to bury þ deeth bodyes. For
 they dyed so sorely both grette & small
 lordes & seruantes / in stryng / gayng & the
 kyng they fell downe & dyed / so þ neuer
 was herde of more lordes both amonge
 the people. For þe went for to bury þe
 deeth body / with þ same deeth body was
 buried. And so they þ myght see deeth
 & deathe them / vpon a boules / as well
 for the grette hunger deeth & steruyn of
 come & other vytayles as for þ grette
 pestilence & mortalyte in the londe & there
 in other lordes for to bury they lyued &
 left þ londe all desolate & wasten / so that
 there was no man for to traueyl & ryll
 the londe / so that þ londe was barren

of churche & all other fructes for defaulte of
citties & churche murtherers. xi. p. etc.
& more & no man myght see ne knowe.

Calwaldoz went out of
this londe into lytel Brytayne.

Calwaldoz sawe grete hunger/
mortalite & pestilence & the londe
all poore & sayynge comen & other by-
rapes & his folke perished. & sawe also
the moost party of his londe all wasted &
forde of people. he apparayled by & his
folke & were leste alpye & passed ouer in
to lytel Brytayne with a tytel nauy bren
kyng Allyn & he moche loured that was
his colyn & that his fader had moche
loured in his tyme. And as they sayled in
the see he made moche lamentacyon & so
byd all those that were with hym. and
sayd. Redisti nos esse tanq̃ oues escarti
in gentibus dispersisti nos.

And than began Calwaldoz to com-
playne hym to his folke piteously. and
sayd. Thus sayd he to his wyrtches and
captures is sorow for our grete synnes
of the which we wolde not amende as
holye we had space & now repentance
is comen vpon us throughe my faulture
which chacerth us out of our owne re-
alme & propre soyle. out of the which
somtyme Romayns. Scottes. Saxons
nor Danes myght not exyle us. But
what sayeth it now to us that before
tyme spuers tynes haue gotten many
other londes. lxxi. it is not & wyll of god
that we abyde & dwell in our owne londe
God that is very iudge that all thinges
happeth befor they be done or made. he
seeth that we wolde not cise of our syn-
nes & that our enemyes myght not be
our lygnage exyle fro and out of our
realme. he wolde that we amended us
of our folkes and that we sholde be our
propre defaultes & therfore hath he send

to us wyrtche & wyll chastise us of our
misdoings. lxxii. that he both us without
bataile or strengthe of our enemyes by
grete copanys wyrtchely to lise our
realme & propre londe. Turne agayn ye
Romayns. turne agayne ye Scottes.
turne agayne ye Saxons. turne agayne
ye frenshmen. now sheweth to you wyrt-
tyn all defaulte. the which your power
myght neuer make defaulte. ne yet your
power hath not put us now in exyle. but
only the power of the kyng almyghty
whome we haue oft offended by our so-
ltes. the which we wolde not lise but
till he chastise us by his ouer power.
Amonge the wordes & lamentacyons &
kyng Calwaldoz made to his folke they
arryued in lytel Brytayne & came to king
Allyn. And & kyng receyued hym with
grete soye & made him to be serued won-
ders nobly. and there he dwelled longe
tyme after. The englyshe people that
were leste alpye & were escaped & grete
hunger & mortalite lyued in & best wyse
that they might & moche people sprang
and came of them. And they sente in to
Saxons where they were boine to they
frendes for men. women. and chyldren
to resore the cirtes with people and the
townes that were all wyde of people &
for to labour. & auayle and till the erth.
When the Saxons had herde these ty-
dynges. they came in to this londe won-
ders thys in grete copanys & lodged
themselle in the countree all about where
that they wolde. for they foude no man
to withstande them ne lette. And so they
woyde & multiplyed greatly & vided the
countrees of & countres wherof they were
comen. and the lalwes & the language of
they owne londe. And they chaunged &
names of cirtes. townes. castelles. and
bourghes. and gaue them names. and
called them as they now be called. And
they heide the countres. the baronages.

led there that he ne dyed the .xiiij. kalend
of apyle the yere of grace .v. C. lxxij.

How kyng Offa was souerayne
about all the kynges of Englonde / &
how euery kyng warred vpon other.

It befell so that all the kynges in
that tyme that were in the londe /
as they of Westsex / Metchenrych / Est-
angle of Kent / and of Southsex / and of
other colles / the warred vpon other / &
he þ was moost myghty toke the londe
of hym þ was moost feblest. But there
was a kyng amonge them that was
called Offa / that was saynt Oswaldes
broder. This Offa conquered all þ kynges
of the lond / and reigned aboute them
all. And so grete was the warre in euery
countree byt wene kynges that no man
myght wyte how the londe went. But
abbottes / priours / and men of religion
wrote the lyues & dedes of kynges / how
longe euery of them reigned / & in what
countree / & in what maner euery kyng
dyed / and of bysshops also. And therof
made grete booke / and let call them crou-
nycles. And the good kyng Alured had
that booke in his warde. And let bynge
it vnto Wynchestre / and let it be faste
tied to a pyller that men sholde it not re-
moue ne bere thens / so that euery man
myght se it & ther vpon loke. For therein
ben conteyned the lyues of all þ kynges
that euer were in Englonde.

How the kyng of Northumberlonde
Osbyght forlape the wyfe of Buene
Bocard through strength / & after ward
this Buene conquered the kyng with
poltre and strengthe.

As thus it befell in þ same tyme
that there was a kyng in North-
berlonde that was called Osbyght / &

sojourned at Porke / & this kyng went
vpon a daye in to a wode for to dyspente
hy. And whan he came agayn / he went
pyrvely in to a good mannes hous that
was called Buerne / & the good man of
that place was gone that tyme to þ see.
For oftentymes he went there to espye
thieves & robbers that oftentymes were
went to come in to the londe to robbe /
brenne / & see. The lady that was Buer-
nes wyfe was a wondrous fayre womā
And the kyng came vnto her whan her
husbonde was absent. So she trusted
none harme vnto the kyng / and welcom-
med hym with moche honour / & wor-
thely serued hym of all thynges. Whan
the kyng had eten / he toke the lady by
the hande and ladde her in to a chambere
and sayd that he wolde speke with her
in couseyle. And made all þ folke vnder
out of the chambere / saue onely the lady
and he. But the lady wyll not wherfore
he dyd it / tyll þ he had done all his wyll.
And whan he had done this dede / he re-
turned agayne to Porke / & left the lady
there sope wepyng for the dede that the
kyng had done to her. And whan her
lord was comen home & sawe her wepe
& make suche sorowe & mournynge / he
asked of her what she had done / & why
she made suche sorowe. So she sayd /
subtylly and falsly the kyng Osbyght
hath done me shame & bylany agaynst
my wyll / & tolde hym the trowth how
the kyng had forlapyne her with strength /
wherfore she sayd she had leuer be dede
than lyue. Fayre loue be styll sayd he /
for agaynst strengthe feblenes is tytell
woy / & therfore of me shalt thou neuer
the less be loued / and namely for thou
hast tolde me þ trowth. And ysalmg-
yng god graunte me my lyfe / I shall well
auryge the. This Buene was a grete
man & a myghty lord / & was well belo-
ued / & had grete frendes / & let stande for

the great lord of the lande. & to them
made his complaint of þe despyte that þe
kyng had done to hym. & sayd þe he wolde
be avenged how so ever it were. And all
his frendes comforted hym þe he shold go
to þe kyng where as the kyng was to de-
lyve hym. And Buernes his menyng
came to the kyng. And when the kyng
sawe hym. he called hym curteisly by his
name. And Buerne answered hym. & to
hym sayd. For I you desyre & yeide by
frautes. homages & londes. & as mo-
che as I have holden of you. and from
this tyme forwarde I wyll neuer of the
no thyng holde. And so he departed fro
the kyng without more speche or any
abydunge. and toke leue of his frendes
and went in to Denmarke. & complay-
ned to the kyng Godryne. & tolde hym
of the despyte that kyng Osbyght had
done to hym of his wyfe. & prayed hym
of socour and helpe for to avenge hym.
When kyng Godryne of Denmarke &
the Danes had herde the complaint of
this Buerne. and of the prayer that he
had. they were wondrous glad in theyr
hertes. for as moche as they might syn-
de a cause for to go in to Englonde for to
warre upon Englyshmen. and also for
to avenge Buerne of the despyte that þe
kyng Osbyght had done to his wyfe.
And for as moche as Buerne was sibbe
unto the kyng of Denmarke. they let
orderne anon a grete host of men. and
let orderne shippes for them. & as mo-
che as them neded to haue to that biage
And when all the host was redy. the
kyng made his two brethren chiefe ca-
ptaynes. that were noble knyghtes of
body and also bolde. that one was cal-
led Hungar. and that other Hubba.

And the Danes toke Porke. and
sawe kyng Osbyght. and soone af-
ter sawe kyng Elle.

And when all thyng was redy
that the Danes toke leue of the
kyng Godryne. & went toward the see
for to passe over in to Englonde as fast as
they myght speche. And as Buerne so
well considered. & so fast byed hym with þe
Danes. that they be arryved in þe north
countree. & came thurgh out Holdernes
and desloped all the countree. and burnt
tounes. & robbed folke. & stowe all that
myght be taken tyll that they came to
Porke. And when kyng Osbyght
sawe them come. he toke all his people
that he had with hym & came out of the
cite & fought w them. but no forson he
ne had agaynst them. & moche of þe peo-
ple there were slayne on bothe parties.
& kyng Osbyght hymselfe there was
slayne. & the cite anon was taken & the
Danes went in. And there was also
another thing in Northumberland that
Buernes frendes had chosen. and helde
hym for kyng. a man þe was called Elle
for as moche as they wolde not to kyng
Osbyght be attendaunt. for the despyte
that he had done to Buerne theyr cosyn.
It befell thus þe kyng Elle was gone to
the woode for to dysporte & p. n. of beny-
son some he had taken. And as he late in
the woode at meet he sayd to a knyght.
We haue well sped & moche benyson ta-
ken. And with þe worde came in a man &
sayd to hym. p. n. so moche of benyson
haue monne an hundred tymes moze þe
haue lost. for all this countree the Danes
haue gotten. & taken þe cite of Porke. & a-
gaynst you shall it hold. þe neuer þe shall
come therein. and for so moche they haue
slayne kyng Osbyght. When kyng Elle
herde these wordes. he let assemble all þe
folke of the countree. & ordeyned all the
power that he myght haue. and wolde
haue gotten the cite of Porke w strenght.
But the Danes came out anon & gaue
hym a stronge batayle. and slawe kyng

the and the moost parte of the people that he had brought with him. And the same place there they were sayne shall evermore be called Ele crofte / and that place is a trell from York. And than the Danes neuer rested tyll they had conquered all Northumberland / & in that countrey they made wardeyns / & went further into the land & toke Northampton & there they abode all the winter / doynge all the sorowe that they myght. And after whan some tyme came / they retourned from Northampton / and came to Alcholl and Lyncester / & to Holand. for no man myght thent withstande / so moche power and strength they had.

How saynt Edmund the kyng was martyred.

As so ferre had the Danes passed from countree to countree / and evermore brennyng & robbynge / & destroyed all that they myght tyll they came to Tereford / & in that countree they founde a chrysten kyng that moche loved god & his werkes / that was called Edmund / & he was kyng of Northfolke & Southfolke. This kyng saynt Edmund ordeyned as moche folke as he myght / and fought with the Danes / but he & his folke were discomfited / & the kyng hymselfe was gyven into the castell of Framelyngham / & the Danes pursued hym & came unto the same castell. And whan kyng Edmund sawe that the castell myght not withstande them / he came agaynst them / with whome the Danes first spake / and anon they asked of hym where kyng Edmund was. How forsothe said he / whan I was in this castell there was the kyng / and whan I went out of the castell / he went out also / & whether he shall escape or dye / at goddes wyll must be. Whan saynt Edmund had namd

god by that they lyst well that it was hymselfe. And anon Hubba & Hungar toke hym and sayd that he shold forsake god and all chrysten lawes / as many other had done before hym. And saynt Edmund sayd that he wolde not / but rather he wolde suffer deeth for goddes loue & his lawes also. Than toke they kyng Edmund & boude hym to a tree / & made there archers shote at hym with arrows tyll his bodye was full of arrows as an bychen full of pyrkes. But for all the payne that they dyd hym / he wolde never forsake god. And in the same tyme and payne he dyed / and betoke his soule to almyghty god. And whan they sawe that he was dead / they smote of his heed. And in this maner as ye have herde was saynt Edmund martyred.

How Hubba and Hungar toke the towne of Redyng.

When saynt Edmund was martyred / Hungar & Hubba departed thens with all the Danes to Redyng. And as they wente thiderwarde they destroyed & bent townes and cyters / & shewe all chrysten people that wolde not forsake god / and kepe downe churches / & came to Redyng and toke the towne / & there helde them tyll that kyng Edelf of Westsex came thider with all his power for to take the towne. Than came out the Danes to give batayle to kyng Edelf / and at that batayle was sayne an erle of the Danes that was called Cidrak. Upon the morowe came kyng Edelf and his brother Alured with a stronge power and a grete host. And the kyng Edelf came agayne (that had foughten the daye before) to that batayle. And the Danes than came out for to fyght with them / & the batayle was wondrous stryde for many a man was there sayne / and

the Danes that daye had the victory /
the kyng Edward & his brother Edward &
were there discomfited. But the fourth
daye after þe Danes & the Englyshmen
fought togyder an other tyme byd Ead-
ward & there was slayne a kyng of Den-
marke that was called Rasing / & four-
eries of grete power. And that daye the
Danes had shame for they were driven
to Engylseide. And the .xv. day after the
Danes & the Englyshmen fought togy-
der at Rasing / & there were þe Englysh
men dyscomfited. And frst thens a Dane
that was called Rognr went to Redyng
with his host / & destroyed all that he
myght take. And kyng Edward fought
with hym / but he was so wounded that
he dyed. And he reigned but .v. yere / and
lyeth at Womburne.

¶ Circa annū dñi. iiii. C. xlii.

In the first was emperor after
Barcianus. xvij. yere. In his
tyme were þe Bogarpon dayes ordeyned
afore þe ascencion of saynt Jamere bys-
shop of Vienne. The pope of Rome at þe
tyme byght Leo a noble clerke / & with
hym had many clerkes. ¶ Hilari⁹ was
pope after Leo. viij. yere. This man or-
deyned þe no bysshop sholde ordeyne his
successor. At p. viii. ix. j. ¶ Simplicius
was pope after hym. He ordeyned that
no clerke shold take no garment to be clo-
thed in / after the sette of maner of a lay
man / through the reason of his office of
of his benefice. ¶ Genu was emperor
after Leo. xv. yere / & this man was an
heretyke & cruel agaynst chrysten men.
And in this mannes dayes þe bodies of
saynt Mathew þe euangelist / & saynt Bar-
tholme þe apostle were founde / & with them
the gospell that saynt Mathewe wrote.
Wher this tyme there was a certayn
Roman bare. vij. children at one
breast / & he was after made

kyng of Lombardy. ¶ Felix the thyrde
was pope after Simplicius thre yere &
viij. monethes. This mā ordeyned þe re-
spite shold be gyuen to a man that was
accused / that he myght saye hym how
he sholde answer. And þe the iudges & þe
accusers sholde be suche / & þe they sholde
take all suspencion & spote. ¶ Gelasius
a Romayn was pope after Felix. v. yere
This mā ordeyned þe canon of þe masse wth
the prefate / ympnes / tractes / orcysons
as saynt Ambrose made them / & þe orcy-
sons sholde be gyuen four tymes in the yere
¶ Anastasius was emperor after Genu
xxviij. yere / & he was a cursed man & an
heretyke / & hatefull to god & man / & he
was slayne wth lyghtnyng. And in his
tyme dyed saynt Patrck þe first bysshop
of Irland / in the .C. and. xxiij. yere of his
age / & his felawe was the abbot of Co-
lumba & saynt Brigida / whome saynt
Patrck made a nonne / & they were bu-
ryed in one combe / & at dyuers tymes /
And this is thei⁹ Epitaphie. Hys cres-
in gelido / tumulto tumultant in vno / Bri-
gida / Patricius / atq; Columba pius.
¶ Anastasius a Romayn was pope af-
ter Gelasius two yere & thre monethes.
He ordeyned that no prest for wrath ne
hate sholde leue of to saye his diuine ser-
uyce in the churche / excepte the masse / &
he cursed the emperor Anastasius / for
he was an heretyke. And it is wryten of
hym / that afterward he turned for drede
to the oppnyon of the emperor. And he
is called the seconde yll famed pope that
is in Catholico pōfifici. And afore hym
was Liberius famed in heresy.

¶ Anno domini. iiii. C. lxxxiii.

Symach⁹ was pope after þe .xv.
yere / & with þe was ordeyned an
other pope þe was called Laurencius / &
before them was a grete discrepon / &
they bothe put thyn to þe Judgement of

Theodosius þ kyng. And he charged that
he that was first ordeyned / & that moost
men of the church helde such / sholde be
pope. And Simachus perswaded / the
wyche lorde the clergy & poore men / &
for Patrallus the deken cardynall helde
agaynst Simachus in the parte of Lau-
rentio to his deth / therfore he was put to
the paines of purgatory to kepe þ bache
after his deth / as Gregore sayth in his
boke of Dialogues. This mā ordeyned
that Cilia in exrellis sholde be sayd eue-
ry sondaye and feestes of martyrs.

Cota That Englonde was longe
tyme chrysten afoze Traunce.

Alodowicus the fyrst chryste kyng
of France was this tyme bap-
tized of saynt Remigius / & he had a chylde
boman to his wyfe / & the mowd hym
many tymes to þ sayd / & sayd he sholde
be fortunable yf he wolde turne / & so he
was / & neuer afoze. **H**ormisdas was
pope after Simach / .xx. yere. This mā
was of grete mercy & grete almes unto
poore men / & he gaue many ornaments
to churches. And he reedified þ greet
þ were curled for they heresy. **J**ustin-
ian was emperour after Anastas / .ix.
yere / & was a very chryste man. And all
that euer the emperour Anastasius had
done agaynst the church / he trashed / &
obeyed the pope Hormisdas / and called a-
gayne the bysshops that were exiled by
his predecessours. **V**italianus grama-
tius was this tyme. And this yere the
whiche is the .lxxi. fro the comynge of þ
saxons / began þ kyngdom of Westsaxon
and Cerdic was kyng. **J**ohannes
was pope after Hormisdas thre yere and
ix. monethes. And Theodosius þ kyng
of italy an heretyke toke the pope with
other senators / & sent them to the em-
perour Justinian / detemynynge that

and he sholde not let the heretikes be in
pays / he sholde see all the chrysten folke
in italy. And after he toke pope John &
Simach / Patriell / and Boetium the
senatours / & sende them in pryson. But
Bois defended hym by the reason of the
auctorite of þ senators / & he sent hym
to the cite of Papy for perpetuall exyle /
where he made the boke De solatione
philosophie. And at the last in the coſtre
of Mediolanensis he caused Bois thote
to be cutte / and so he dyed. **F**elix pope
succeeded John. .iiij. yere. This man co-
maunded that seke men sholde be aneied
afoze they deth / but Chryst ordeyned it
fyrst. **J**ustinianus was Emperour
xxviij. yere. This man drew the lawe
of the Romayns / or of Ciupil out of al-
moost .ij. .xx. bokes / and .ccc. .xx. verses
sute longe & yll accordynge in to one bo-
lum of .xij. bokes / & called it Justinian.
He made also the digestes / and deuyned
them in to thre bokes. **B**onifacius the
secunde was pope after Felix two yere.
And yrell of hy is wyrtm. **J**ohannes
the secunde was pope after Bonifacius
And this mā had a grete stryfe w Justin-
ian þ emperour / whether þ Chryst was
of two natures or one. The pope sayd he
had two natures / one of god / an other of
man. The emperour sayd / eyther eolent
to be / or þ shalte go to perpetuall exyle.
The pope answered. I despyed to come
to Justinian the moost chrysten empe-
rour / but as me semeth I haue founde
Diolesyan þ pursuwer of chrysten men
but certaynly I dyde not thy malice / ne
I see not thy chetynnynges. Than the
emperour meked þ felle & fell downe to
the grounde / & asked mercy & absolucion.

Anno dñi. d. c. lxxij.

Agapius a confessor was pope
after John two yere. This Aga-
pius turned Justinian fully from the

asked hym why that he wolde not paye
them thei wages. And so they fell at
barpaunce / & chose foca for to be emper-
our / & sene hy & his. iij. sones. ¶ This
tyme saynt Justin came in to Englonde
and ordeyned two archebyschops / that
is to saye. of London / & of yorke. by the
comandement of saynt Gregoꝝ. And re-
membꝛe þ many tymes is made mencyon
of dyuers regyons & countreys / that othe-
r tymes they haue ben turned to þ sayth.
for alwaye the sayth abode not in them
for dyuers causes. So it is of Englonde
fraunce / percia / Jedy / & in this thyng
Rome was prouided / for there þ sayth
of Peter neuer fayled. ¶ Focas was em-
perour after Maurici his maister / who-
me he & other sene / & bycause he began
yll he ended nought. for in his dayes þ
Romeys fought strongly agaynst the
perces / & the Romeys were discomfy-
ted & lost many a prouync / & at the last
he was slayne of Heracius. for as he
dyd to other men / so was he done to.

¶ Anno domini. b. C. lxxxiij.

Gregoꝝ the first a Romeyn and a
moke was pope after Delagius
xliij. yere. This man was called Grego-
rius magnus for many thynges that he
exceded in. he passed other men in pow-
er in ryches / in vertue / in noblenes / in wys-
dom / in holynes / in fame & in experience
And vnder this man the yll thynges of
the world passed & lered / & many a noble
doke he doctore to þ incomparable pꝛyde
of all holy chirche. He was one of þ pꝛy-
ncypal doctours of all the xliij. doctours of
the chirche. This man for þe alone to
saynt Fabian after saynt Peter was cho-
sen of god in all the ordyn of þ popes of
Rome / many thynges he ordeyned in þ
chirche / as is shewen in his regystr.
¶ Deus in adiutoriu. for to be afore þ be-
trayng of þ houre by the maner of

he sayd. He remembꝛed & made all the offi-
ces of the chirche in a saynt & a moze co-
pendious maner / the whiche abydeth
yet vnto this daye / & it is called Grego-
rian. And shortly to conclude on this hos-
ly man / mannes tongue can not expꝛesse
lyghtly the louynges of this mā. What
in wytynges & also in examples of ver-
tuous dedes. ¶ Saumian was pope
after Gregoꝝ one yere & v. monethes.
This man ordeyned þ ringyng of belles
at the houres of the daye. But this man
backbited saynt Gregoꝝ for his liberas-
tie that he had to poore men / & thought
he shold saynt Gregoꝝ rebuke hy thys
for it / & the fourth tyme he lay in his bed
& thought saynt Gregoꝝ smote him on
the heed / and he waked & dyed anon.
This was the thyrde pope amoge all þ
popes þ whiche is noted to dye a vnde-
full deeth. ¶ Bonifacius þ thyrde was
pope after Saumianus. viij. monethes
He ordeyned þ none but whyte clothes
sholde be put on þ auster. ¶ Bonifacius
the fourth was pope. iij. yere and. viij.
monethes. This man purchasid of the
emperour foca that the chirche of saynt
Peter of Rome shold be þ heed of all the
chirches in þ world. for afore Constan-
tinople was þ heed chirche. Also he gave
lycense þ the chirche called Pancon. the
whiche was dedycate to the honour of
Septimus & other fals goddes / where
chrysten men many tymes were slayne
of deuyls / myght be dedycate to þ wor-
shipp of all sayntes in heuen. This man
ordeyned þ monkes myght be þ offi-
ces of pꝛeabyng / chrystenyng & coꝛresson.
¶ Heracius was emperour after foca
xvi. yere. And in the thyrde yere of his
regne / Calphas þ kyng of perces burnt
Jerusalem and other woorthypfull pla-
ces / & abate the patriarche with moche
other people he toke & put in captyuite.
The pꝛyces of the holy crosse the whiche

And there ppyctly be tyed this boke of
the lawe þ he had made about þ camels
nerke / & put this camell forth on a tyme
into a felde afoze dawe / and this camell
ioyed in his lyberte / for he was neuer
lose afoze. And he wold suffre no man to
come & touche hym. And so there was a
grette fame of suche a camell / and all the
people ranne to se hym / amonge whom
was this Pachomyte. But whan the
camell sawe hym that alway had fedde
hym / anone he ranne vnto hym. And he
had taught this camel afoze tyme to fal
downe on his knees & lycke his handes
And so he dyd afoze all the people. The
people thā cryed & sayd / that there was
a very ensample that he was the true
prophete of god. Than they prayed Pa
chomyte to open þ holy boke w his holy
handes / the whiche was sent fro heuen
nurtmore to be kepte. In þ whiche boke
is shewed how the people shall worshyp
god. And Pachomyte sayd. This boke
was wyrtten with aungels handes. So
by these false meanes he turned to his
lawe all the londe of Persie / & all the east
imperyall agaynst Heracius the emper
our. And he occuppyed vnto the ende of
Alexandze and Egypte / Libia / Arabia /
& Siria. Than after he ensercted all Af
rica / & but that the grace of god wssode
hym he had ensercted all spayne & fracie
And many other thynges he dyd / that
were to moche to wytte in this boke.

Constantyne the chyld / the sone
of Heracius was emperour. xxiij.
yere. This Constantyne was a cursed
man / a grette eyraunt / and an heretike
false / subyll & obous to chrysten men /
for he gaue no place to pope Martyn / &
he repyd a grette host agaynst the Rom
barbes / & there he lost the felde & fledde
to Rome. And honourably was recey
ued of the pope Vitellian / and other of

the cite. And he rewarded them not lyke
after they merytes as a ppyete shold
haue done / but vben forth tyranny & he
resye / wherfore at þ last he was sayne
of his owne knyghtes in a bath / þ whiche
he wold no longer suffre his tyranny.
And so he wretchedly lyued / & dyed un
happely. ¶ Martin the first was pope
after Theodoru. vij. yere. This Martin
was a very holy man / and strongly
stroue for the fayth of god. And whan
he sayd masse on a certayne daye at the
awter / there pursued hym to see hym a
man whiche was called Spatarus of
Olymphe / and whan he wold haue
snytten hym he was bynde suddenly.
This same man called a Synod in the
cite of Rome / and he dampned Symon /
Alexandru / Sergiu / Pyrum / & Paulu
heretikes. Wherfore Constantyne the
emperour exiled hym / & he dyed a saynt
¶ Eugenius a Romayn was pope af
ter Martyn almoste thye yere and was
an holy mā / but of hym lytell actes ben
wyrtten. ¶ Vitellianus was pope after
hym. xiiij. yere. This mā made þ songs
that the Romayns blyth / and accorded
it also with þ organes. And he also had
the grace of the emperour / the whiche
was wyoch with his pydercessours / ne
uerthelesse afterward he stode not in his
cōcorde. Ac bytheris I coude not fynde
that euer the chieche of Rome had fully
after the deyd of Constantyne þ myghty
the lordshyp of the cyte and of other the
whiche he gaue to the chieche.

¶ Anno dñi. vij. C. xliij.

Alexandrus a Romayn was pope
after Vitellianus. iij. yere / and
in his daye as was translated the body of
saynt Benedict with the body of saynt
Severus his wyfe fro þ byll of calton
to the manastery of styons myghty
reyn. ¶ Constantyne the fourth was

emperor after his first Constantine
the good man. This Constantine was
a good man & he loved heretics about
his age. the church he repayed and
grace he converted agayne to the church
of Rome & he with the pope gabed toge-
ther the fourth generall synod. in the which
the was granted to prelates of Greece to
his church. I shall say more to the prelates
of the West. for cause of grete heret. but not
to those of the West party by no means
for they amytied chastite in the tyme of
Laput Gregor. And every man may ad-
miryly & wonder how moche the goodness
of a pryncer is worth to the quyet state
of the church & to the promocyon of the
fayth. And also the contrary. how moche
the malice of a pryncer hurterth the fayth
these two Constantynes the father & the
sonne shewed openly. for in the fathers
days the church never had rest. & in the
sonnes tyme it was quyet. Yet never-
theless our lord suffered the heresy &
the bulgys to curre in this emperours
tyme. for he myght not withstande them
but that he made his peas with them/
and payed percy to them a truage / so
they thought that cursed secte of
Nestorians & after he dyed blessedly.
Then that thre were the generall
synodes & most pryncypall of the which
the autowite is equal to the gospel
for the treuth of the gospel is declared
by them. agaynst the three pryncypall he-
resies. the which strongly troubled the
church. for the synode of those heret-
ics to deceyve simple men. About
this tyme dyed Lacyr Cede of Eychel-
for the which he was of his byshoppe.
Then a Romanyn was pope after
him. the name of this man is Lacyr
the name. Then Lacyr was pope ab-
out hym. I shall say more to the which
he was pope after hym. & he was a very

holy man. for on a day when he kyssed
a leppe the leppe anon was made hole.
The first consensus principis iussit cele-
brari sexta synodus apud Constantinopoli
CC. lxxx. anno in qua assertum duas na-
turas et duas voluntates esse in Christo.
Leo the seconde was pope after Aga-
tho. iii. yere. This Leo was an holy ma-
n & sufficiently taught in latyn & greke.
This man ordeyned that the pat shold
be given after Agnus dei / and dyed a
blessed man. Benedictus the seconde
was pope after Leo almost this yere.
This man about all thynges was ver-
tuous. his name accorded with his dedes.
And in his tyme was a grete pestilence.
Justinianus the seconde was emper-
our this tyme / & he was a very good
man. a prudent & a large. & he increased
the empyre of Rome myghtely / but he
charged the offyce of the church overmoche.
Many lawes he made. & afterwarde he
dyed not good. for he intended to have
lested the decrees of the synod. Wherefore
the x. yere of his empyre he was take of
Leo the pryncer of Patricio & Cyberio / &
they cut of his nose & his tongue & exiled
him to Crisodan. Then was a grete turba-
cyon in the church for stryfe & heresy.
And knowe all men what variance fallith
between grete lordes. than errours ben
multiplied. for there is no man correcteth
them. therefore the is oft tyme preyed in the
church. Then after fell a variance be-
tween Leo & Cyberio. & Cyberio preyed
led. & he exiled Leo. & cut of his nose the
thirde yere of his regne. & regned for by
Justinian fled to the heresy & the bul-
gys. & the which restored hym agayne to
his empyre. & he was Leo & Cyberio. the
which favoured heretikes. Then this
same Justinian reformed hymselfe to the
church of god. & had grete repentance.
but he benched hym to cruelly on his ad-
versaries. so that he wolde have sayne

ther: Innocent chyldren. Therefore he was slayne with his sone / of Phylipp whome he exiled.

Anno dñi. vij. C. lxxiiij.

Iohanes the fyfth was pope after Benedictus one yere. He was a good man / but he decessed anone. Ceno was pope after hym / & he was a very holy man / for he wold not meddle with secular maters / & in beaute he was as an angell / quyet in vertues / & meke in soule / & very demure in language of his religyous lyfe. This man was chosen at the last with one accorde of þ church and lay men / but there was a grete distinceyon / for þ clergy intended to haue chosen Hyers the archebischop / and the hoost of lay men wolde haue had Theodor a preeft. But at þ last þ holy ghoost turned the wyll of all this people vnto this holy man. Sergi^{us} was pope. ix. yere. This mā was vertuous & comendable in his lyfe / & in his electyon was a grete discord / for one party of þ clergy chose Theodor / & an other party Pascalem. But as our lord wolde at the last they turned all to this man. This man translated the body of saint Leo. He also foude a grete parte of the holy crosse by myracle. And he baptyfed Cadwalidus the last kynge of Brytayne. He comaunded Agnus dei to be sayd oꝝ longe thyrle at masse / & decessed blyssedly. **Nota.** Saynt Bede the woꝛthyfull preeft was this tyme a man of grete fame in Englonde / þ whiche was taken the. vij. yere of his age to Benedict the abbot of Gyrwpenis monastery to be taught / & than after to Coltrido the abbot after þ deith of Benedict. And at. xix. yere of his age he was made deken of the bysshop of Poike. And at. xxx. yere he was made preeft / in the whiche yere he began to wyte. So he continued all the tyme of

his lyfe in that monastery / in gupunge his labours to wytyng / & for scripture to be expounded he made. lxxviij. boke the whiche he nombreth in þ ende of his englyshe boke. This man was euer in labour / eyther in prayer oꝝ in syngynge dayly in þ church / oꝝ to lerne / oꝝ to teche oꝝ to wyte. For the whiche thyng men may iudge by reason that he was neuer at Rome / all though some saye he went to Rome / þ he myght se þ his boke accorded w the doctryne of þ church. But it was certayne that he was blynde / & went to preche / & had a seruañt þ was not good / & made hþ to preche to a grete multitude of stones / and sayd that they were men / & whan all his sermon was done / the stones answered & sayd amen. But þ he went to Rome thyrle / & foude wyten thre arres & thre effes & expounded them / it was neuer foude in no boke of auctorite. There was after þ talking of the people suche a wytyng on the gates of Rome RRR. fff. And suche an expolition. Regna Rome Runt. ferro flāma et fame. But it is certayne that Bede was desyred to come to Rome by the wytyng of Sergius the pope vnto Coltrido his abbot. And this Bede translated the gospel of saynt John in to Englyshe tongue / & decessed blyssedly. The same sayth þ now he lyeth at Deuclyn with saynt Cuthberto / & there is burped with hym the knowlege of the dedes of Englonde almost to þ coquest. **Leo** the seconde was emperour / and lytell of hym is wyten. **Libert^{us}** was emperour after hym. vij. yere / the whiche arose agaynst Leo & entred his king dom / & kepte hym in prison as longe as he reigned. In his tyme Justinian the seconde þ whiche in olde tyme was exiled to Crisnā openly sayd he wolde recouer his empyre agayn. Wherefore the people of that countree for þ loue of Libe-

king were about to see that Justinian
wherefore he fledde to the payner of Tur-
con / & wedded his sister / & through the
helpe of his brother & the Bulgars he re-
couered his empyre / & sette Liberius &
Leo the usurper of his realme. And as
many tymes almost as he topped on
drop from his nose the whiche they kyt
of / so many tymes he made one of his
enemies to be slayne. ¶ Leo the thyrde
was pope after Sergi two yere. This
man was made pope by the power of þ
Romayns / & was not put in þ nombre of
popes / for he yll entred / but he dyd none
yll. ¶ Iohanes the fyrth a Greke was
pope after hym. And he was a marty-
but of whome & wherfore þ cause is not
foude in hystories. It is sayd þ it was
of þ dukes of Lombardy / for they were
enemies to þ churche myghtely. ¶ Ioh-
hanes the. vij. a Romayn was pope af-
ter hym thre yere / but no thinge of hym
is wyrtten. ¶ Justinianus the seconde
was emperour agayne w his sone Ti-
berius. vij. yere. And this was he whi-
che was reued of þ empyre afore by Leo
And whā this man was restored agayn
he toke hym to the ryght fayth / & wor-
shipped the pope Constantyn / & certayn-
ly he destroyed Creton the place where
he was exiled to / & all that dwelled in it
(excepte childzen) he sette them. And he
came agayn an other tyme to haue slay-
ne the Innocentes / & the men of coustree
made them a capptayn a certayne man
that was called Philip an outlawe / the
whiche anone wente to hym in batayle
and sette hym for his cruelties agaynst
those childzen. ¶ Symonius was pope
xx. dayes / & than was grete stryfe / and
he decessed / but lytell of hym is wyrtten.
¶ Constantyn was pope after hym. vij.
yere. This man was a very meke man
& so blyssed / that of all men he was belo-
ued. He went ouer the see to Justinian

the emperour / & was receyued w grete
honour / & dyed a blyssed man. ¶ Philip
the seconde was emperour one yere / the
whiche fled into Scisilia for þ host of þ
Romayns. And he was an heretike / &
comāded all pictures of sayntes to be
destroyed. Wherefore the Romayns kest
away his coyne / nor wolde not receyue
no money þ had his ymage or his name
wyrtten vpon it. ¶ Anastasius þ second
after he had slayne Philip was empe-
rour thre yere. This man was a churche
man / & lyued well. But bycause he put
out Philips eyen & sette hē after ward /
therfore Theodosius fought against hē
and ouercame hym / and than he was
made a preest / & so lyued quyetly.

¶ Anno domini. vij. C. xliij.

¶ Gregorius þ seconde was pope af-
ter Constantyn. xviij. yere. This
Gregory was a chaste man / and a noble
man in scripture. And about this tyme
the popes begā to dele more temporally
with þ emperours thā they were wont
for theyr falsnes & theyr heresy / and also
for to remeue the empyre fro one place
to an other as the tyme requyzed. This
man cursed Leo the emperour bycause
he bzēt the ymages of sayntes. This
same Leo comāded Gregory the pope
that he shold bienne churches & destroye
them. And the pope set no thyng of his
sayenge / but manly comāded the con-
trary. And so it is openly shewed / that þ
destruction of the empyre of Rome was
the cause of heresy. For certaynly sayth
full people with theyr prelates with one
woyl dyete vnto the pope / and constray-
ned the emperours for to leue theyr ty-
ranny and theyr heresyes. ¶ And this
tyme in the rest partyes of the worlde
strongly sayled the very true fayth / for
that cursed lawe of false Bachomyte.
¶ Theodosi⁹ was emperour / & reigned

but one yere / & he was a very chryſten
man / & such as he dyd / so was he done
unto. For Leo deposed hym & made hym
a preest. ¶ Leo the thyrde in Constantin
his ſone was emperour. xxx. yere. This
Leo when he was myghty he deposed
Chroſolus / & reigned for hym / & was
deſpyred by a certayn apoſtata / & whi-
che had hym that he ſhoulde take & burne
all the ymages of ſayntes / wherfore he
was punyſhed both in batayle and in
peſtylence / & with other infortunes. And
by cauſe he was accuſed of Gregory / &
abode therein thre days / therfore & pope
with the comyn people toke from hym
all & weſt parte of his empyre / commaun-
dyng that no man ſhoulde obey hym / ne
ſocour hym / by cauſe he lyued lyke an
heretyke. Holy men ſayd agaynſt hym /
and many by hym were martyred & exi-
led. And at the laſt in his myſphyche he
dyed wretchedly. And in this mannes
dayes but that Karolus Martellus holpe
the chryſten ſapth and fought manly a-
gaynſt the ſaracyns / & drove them back
ward in to Spayne & whiche they had
ſubdued / els they had entred in to France
And Karolus ſawe thre hundred thou-
ſande ſaracyns & more / & of his people
were ſayne but. xv. thouſand. ¶ Nota
This man for & continual batayle toke
to lay men the treaſour of the chyrche /
wherfore ſaynt Eucherius the byſhop of
Aurilian as he was in his prayers ſaw
that ſame Karolus in ſoule & body pay-
ned in hell. And the angell that ſhewed
the byſhop this man / ſayd that & was
the iudgement of all thoſe & toke awaye
the goodes of & chyrche / or of poore men.
And to ſorowful that & the byſhop ſayd
& to proue it / the abbot of ſaynt Denys
went to the ſepulchre where that Karo-
lus was buried / & opened the cheſt that
he lay in / and there they ſawe a dragon
go out / but he had no body. ¶ Gregory

the thyrde a Romayne was pope after
Gregory the ſeconde / the whiche conſe-
med the worſhyppynge of the ymages
of ſayntes / with the counſyle almoſt of
a thouſande byſhops. And he horribly
curſed all the deſpyſers of theſe ymages
as the emperour and other that were of
that condicion. ¶ Conſtantine & ſyſth
was emperour after his fader Leo. xxx. yere.
He was a curſed man and a pure
heretyke / ſo that he dyd ſacrifice to de-
uyls / he purſued the chyrche / & nothyng
that is good of hym is wyrtten. And ſo
by the ſuffraunce of god the chyrche was
troubled longe tyme. ¶ About this tyme
were many meruayles / and there were
meruaylous erth quakes. And certayn
cytees that were ſet vpon mountaynes /
they were remeued & borne away with
the bylles in to the felde. vi. mile thens
as they ſode / and the cytees were not
broken nor hurte. In the londe of Aglos
potanyan the erthe was broken by the
ſpace of two myle. And alſo there was a
mule whiche ſpake in a mannes voyce.
Alſhes fell from heuen. And in the ſee of
Pontico there was yſe for grete froſt &
was. xxx. cubytes of thychenes. And ſter-
res fell fro heuen ſo myghtely that men
crowded that the ende of the worlde had
ben comen. All theſe betokened meruay-
lous thynges to come.

¶ Anno domini. lxx. C. lxxiiij.

After Gregory zacharias was po-
pe. x. yere. This zachary was a
noble man / & arayed with all vertues /
with all men he was loued for his meke-
nes. And he deposed the kyng of France
Hyderic / & put in his place Pippin / for
he was more proſpytable. Here ye may
ſe what power & chyrche had that tyme
the whiche traſlated that famous kyng-
dom from the very heires to the kyng-
dom of Pippin / for a lefull cauſe. ¶ It has

before xli. q. b. thus. **S**tephanus the
 second a Romayn was pope after iacha-
 ry. d. perr. This man in all thyng was
 profitable unto the church / as well in
 word as in doctrine. And he governed
 the spiryтуale & the tempорale nobly.
 He was the lover & the defender of poor
 men. This man anoynted Hippinus the
 kyng of France / & sent hym agaynst the
 Lombardes / that he shoulde expell them
 to restore the church of suche goodes as
 they had withholden from them longe
 tyme but yghthly / the whiche he dyd
 He also translated the empyre of the Gre-
 kes to the frenshmen. **P**aulus a Ro-
 mayn was pope after hy. i. perr. This
 was a very holy man / for he dyd grete
 almes to faderles childeen & prysoners /
 wydowes and ocher poor men / that he
 myghte be a folowere of sayns Paule.
Constantyn the second a Romayn was
 pope after Paule two perr. This Con-
 stantyn was a lay man / & sodeynly was
 made a preest as a tyntur / & toke on him
 the dignite of the pope / and with a grete
 schandour to the church was pope a tyell
 tyme. But the fawthfull men put hym
 out / & put out his eyen. And this was the
 fyrste infamed pope amonge so many
 hitherto / so the holy ghoost that holy as
 possibler seet keppe in all honour and holy-
 nes. **I**nsynpte martyrs were made
 this tyme by Constantyn the emperour
 for he was suche an heretyke. And men
 trowe that there was neuer emperour
 nor no paynym that slew so many mar-
 tyrs. And this tyme the church was trou-
 bled full sore / & very preciously bought
 the worshyping of the ymages of sayn-
 tes / for the grete shedyng of blode of mar-
 tyrs. And certaynly that cursed empe-
 rour was not unpunished. for when
 he dyed he cryed with an horryble voyce
 & sayd. I am taken to a fyre that is un-
 able to be destroyed / and so he payed by

the ghoost to turladnyng payne. **T**he
 empyre of Rome was decayed about
 this tyme. for Stephen the pope transla-
 red praly & other to Harolus yet a yonge
 man. And Constantyn helde the londe of
 Grece with other londes ouer the fere with
 a grete labour / and many rebellinges.
This tyme Harolus magnus was a
 noble yonge man / & he bega for to regne
 upon France / & was the sone of Hippin-
 us / and his moder was called Bertra.
Stephanus the thyrde was pope af-
 ter Paulus the perr. & he amended all
 the errors of Constantyn. And he de-
 graded all those the whiche Constantyn
 ordeyned in a gournall synode. **A**nno domini. vij. C. lxxiii.

Adrianus a Romayn was pope
 after Struen. xlii. perr. This
 man was myghtely worshipped of the
 people / no man greter afore hym in ho-
 nour / rychesse & buydynge. This man
 set two solempne synodes. The fyrst of
 iii. C. and. l. faders. The secorde in Rome
 with an hundred & fytty faders / beynge
 present Charles the kyng of France /
 to whome it was graunted the lybertye
 of electyon of the pope / and to ordeyne the
 apostles seet. **L**eo the fourth regned
 emperour with the Grekes. v. perr. This
 Leo was a cursed man / but not so moche
 as his fader was / & he was a couetous
 man / & he toke away a certayne crowne
 of a church / and put it upon his heed / &
 anon he was corrupted with an ayes
 & so decessed. And he had a cursed wyfe
 the whiche regned after hym with her
 sone. **C**onstantyn was emperour af-
 ter Leo / & he was a meke man / and put
 away his moder fro the kyngdom / that
 she myghte take hede unto her womens
 werke. But she with a fawned rancour
 put out his eyen afterwarde / & his chyl-

been also / and reigned agayne thye yere.
And at the last she was aboute to haue
ben wedded. And whan the Gykes per
ceived that she wold be wedded to grete
karol / they toke her & herre her by in a
monastery / & toke Nichofer to be theyr
emperour. ¶ The. v. bulwerfall study þ
whiche in oide tyme was translated fro
Athens to Rome about this tyme was
translated to Pars by Karolus kyng
of Fraunce. ¶ Nichofer was emperour
after Constantyn. He was a very nygon /
& was exalted to his empyre by the Gy
kes / but he profyted not / for in his tyme
all the cristen empyrall was brought to
nought. For the Romayns put them vn
der Karolus magnus. ¶ Iherusalem about
this tyme was recouered by Karolus /
with all the holy londe. And the sette of
salaris was destroyed strongly. For
the destruccyon of wretches came than.
¶ Michaelell was emperour two yere.
And he was a very chryste man / & was
wel beloued / & was also comynge in all
seyences. And those that Nichofer had
hurte & distressed of theyr gooddes by his
couetousnes / this Michaelell restored the
theyr gooddes agayn. ¶ Flora. Karolus
magnus the fyrst saynt was emperour
after Michaelell / & he was crowned em
perour by Leo the pope. From þ whiche
tyme the empyre was translated fro the
Gykes to Fraunce & Germany. And for
the translacon of þ empyre / the Gykes
alway were deservue vnto þ Romayns
& the Gykes stroue euermore w them /
but it was more w benymous wordes
than w strength / & more w craft than w
batayle. For they had so grete enuy at þ
Romayns that they wold not obey the
chirche of Rome. For certaynly whan þ
the popes wold wyte vnto them for to
obey the chirche of Rome / they wrote a
gayn and sayd. Ye haue taken from oure
hynede the empyre / & therfore we wyll

you not obey / and we wy take from you
And as touchyng this noble emperour
Karolus / it is to be vnderstande / this
man wha he was a yonge man he was
anoynted kyng in Fraunce by Stephen
the pope / in the yere of our lord Iesu
Christ. vii. C. and. liii. whan his fader
Pippinus lyued / vnder whom / & w
whome he reigned. xv. yere / to the dech
of his fader. Than after the dech of his
fader in the yere of our lord god. vii. C.
lxxii. this Karolus with his broder Ka
rolomanne reigned two yere. Than his
broder decessed in the seconde yere. And
this Karolus than helde all þ holt kyng
dome. xiiij. yere / to the yere of our lord
vii. hondred. lxxiii. in the whiche yere
he wente vnto Rome that he myght be
crowned emperour of the pope Adrian.
And there he reigned emperour. xvi. ye
re / to the yere of our lord god. vii. C.
whan pope Leo confirmed hym agayn
to be emperour. And after that he was
emperour. xiiij. yere. And this Karolus
magnus decessed in the yere of his age
lxxij. the whiche was the yere of our lo
de god. vii. hondred and. xiiij. ¶ If ye
wyll se more of this Karolus / go to the
boke of the bysshop Turpinus and Li
braminus his mayster / for they wrote
his noble actes euerychone. ¶ Leo the
fourth was pope after Adrian. xi. yere.
This man whan he went on a certayn
daye with the Letany to saynt Peters
chirche on saynt Markes daye / he was
taken with cursed people / the whiche
put out bothe his eyen / and his tongue
was cutte of. But our lord mercifully
ly restored hym agayne his syght & his
speche / so that he spake without tongue
and sawe by myracle. And afterwarde
he went to Karolus in to Fraunce. And
he came with hym to Rome / and there
venged the pope of his enemyes. And
than he crowned Karolus / and he late

also crowned confirmed hym agayne.
Claudius the first begoten
 son of harol was emperour after his
 fader. xxiij. yere. in whose tyme was put
 away that clerkes sholde be no gyrdels
 with precious stones. ne straunge arap-
 ment. This Ludowic on his first wyfe
 gate two childre. & bothe had an ill ende.
 In all thyng he went agaynst hym he
 was paryent. & in the last ende ever he
 overcame it. for towarde god he abode
 deuoute. & his chyldren folowed his con-
 dicyons. and he decessed a blyssed man.
Stephanus the fourth was pope af-
 ter Leo. iij. yere. This Stephanus re-
 demed many captiue men. & crowned
 Lodewyke the emperour. & than he de-
 cesses. & was buryed at Rome. **P**as-
 chall was pope after Stephanus. This
 Paschall gaue grete dyspence to relyphes
 of sayntes. & he toke by innumerable bo-
 dyes of sayntes. & buryed them worship-
 fully. as in the bishon of saynt Cecile he
 was comaunded. **E**ugenius the fourth
 was pope after Paschall. and he was a
 very holy man. and those thynges that
 were for Chyrist he toke hede to. This
 man was crowned a martyr. & by the lay-
 men of Rome he was buryed in saynt
 Peters church yerde.

Circa annu dñi. viij. C. xliij.

Amentinus was pope after Eu-
 geny. xi. days. & lytell of hym is
 wyrtten. **G**regory the fourth was pope
 after hym. xij. yere. This Gregory sawe
 many heuy tymes for the plagues among
 the comyn people. And at this mannes
 petition Lodewyke the emperour. & Mar-
 chio the pryncce of Lombardy expelled all
 Saracyns from ytalay. & at the last he de-
 cesses after innumerable good dedes &
 werkes he had done at saynt Peters.
Lotherius the first son of Lodewyke
 was emperour. x. yere in ytalay and in

Rome. & in the parties of Germany nexte
 to the byles of Alpy. This Lotherius
 rose agaynst his brother Lodewyke & ha-
 roius for the kyngdom of Bachelonde.
 the whiche sometime they called theyr
 ber helde. & they fought at a place called
 Fontaneta. where Lothery was discom-
 fyted. & there was suche slaughter ma-
 de on bothe sydes. that they had no men
 to resist theyr aduersaries. This vnder-
 stode a fals chrysten man. & sent vnto
 Sowdan of the Saracyns that he sholde
 come anone. And he toke Rome. & saynt
 Peters church was made a stable for
 theyr horses. But Lodewyke with the
 freeshemen and lombardes all that in-
 nyte multitude destroyed. & that with
 grete shedynge of chryste blode. **S**er-
 gius the second was pope after Gregory
 two yere. This man was first called Os-
 porci in englyshe hogges mouth. wher-
 fore that man & after all the popes names
 are chaunged whan they be chosen. And
 that for this causes. The first for Chyrist
 chaunged the names of those men whiche
 he made popes. The second for as moche
 as they are chaunged in name. so sholde
 they be chaunged in plectyon of lyfe. The
 thyrde lest he whiche is chosen to an ex-
 cedynge degree shold be hurte in name.

Leo was pope after Sergius. viij.
 yere. This Leo was an holy man. & also
 he was in prudence as sharpe as a ser-
 pent. & in his dedes as meke as a doue.
 And he was brought forth vertuously
 in a monastery. And whan that he was
 made pope. he laboured to repaire his
 churches agayne. the whiche the fals Sa-
 racyns one after an other had destroyed.
 This man was a myghty wyrtter and
 a grete preacher. & a myghty labourer in
 warthe & prayer. and so dyed. and was
 buryed & lyeth at saynt Peters. **B**ene-
 dictus a Romayn was pope after Leo
 two yere. This Benedictus had the nas-

me of the thynges for in all thynges was
be blessed. And he ordeyned that clerkis
shold go ordynarly & honestly. **A**udo-
wicus þ son of Lothery was emperour
this tyme & anoynted of Sergio þ pope
& a whyle reigned w his fader & after he
reigned. xxi. yere alone. This man had a
son þ hight Karol in to whom a deuil
entred & vered hþ afoze his fader & thā
he conspyred his faders deth & in his ty
me fell many meruayles. **N**ota. Jo-
hānes Angli^o of þ nacyō of Maguntyn
about this tyme was pope & he was a
womā arayed in mānes garmetes. But
he pyfied moche in holy scripture. Thā
he was cholen pope but he was after-
warde w childe & goynge openly in pces-
sion he trauailed & decessed. And this is
þ. bi. pope þ to this tyme had þ name of
holynes & were vicious & this pson as
other cursed popes were was punished
of god noz he was not nobred in þ boke
of popes. **N**icola^o a Romayn was po-
pe after this womā. ix. yere. This man
exceded all other in holynes / saue saynt
Gregory & after decessed & lyeth in saynt
peters chirch yerd. **A**drian a Romayn
was pope after Nicolas. This man cur-
led Lothery þ emperours broder king of
Lothering for his aduoutry. But whan
he came w his noble men to Rome to ex-
cuse hþ for his auoutry / he sayd he was
cursed wrongfully & all dyed in one yere
& þ king dyed goyng to þ cite of Placēcia



Anno dñi. viij. C. lxxiiij.

Of kynge Alured & how the Danes
in his tyme prayed hym of mercy / that
they myght go out of the londe.

After þ deth of Edward reigned his
broder Alured þ Dolfynes was
called. Than wēt þ Danes & asssembled
them / & went south to seke Alured þ tho
was newly made kyng of Southley / &
there they soude hym at Wyton w a ty-
tell power / & neuerthelesse he fought w
them / but at þ last he fledde thens from
the felde & went into Westsax & ordeined
of his owne realme & of other þ he had a
strong power / so þ the Danes coude not
withstande hþ. And he came to London
w his hoost where þ Danes sojourned /
& wolde haue fought w them. But the
Danes durst not / but prayed hþ of peas
& that they myght go agayn in to theyr
owne countree & neuer more to come in to
englōd agayn ony harme to do / gnyng
hym hostages suche as he wolde aske.

How Hubba & Hungar were slayne
at Chyppenham / and how the Danes
brought theyr kynge vnto our kynge.

Ad the same daye þ the Danes
departed fro London / they rode
so fast bothe nyght & day / & neuer rested
tyl that they came vnto Excestre & toke
the towne & there helde them. **W**han
kynge Alured herde these tydynges / a-
none he let take the hostages / and went
from thens vnto Excestre w all þ power
that he had. And whan þ Danes herde
tell of his comyng / they went fro thens
vnto Westsax / & came to Chyppenham /
and there they dyd moche harme in the
countree / they robbed folke / and brughe
them in to pryson. The kynge Alured
pursued them & came vpon them wih
all his people and spedyly them assayled

And there were slayne bothe Hubba and
Bunga his broder / & Burtne Bocard.
And in this batayle was moche people
slayne on that one parte & on that other.
But the gree of that feide abode with þ
Danes / for as moche as the kyng came
with lytell company. The kyng halseth
hþ as moche as he myght to go agayn.
And whan þ Danes foude Hubbaes bo-
dy lyenge dede / they buryed it / & made
vpon it a grete lodge / & let call it Hubbel
towe / & so it is called vnto this daye / & þ
place is in Deuenshyre. The barons of
Somerset / Wykshyre / & Dorset herbe-
tell how they king was discomfited / &
ordeyned all þ power that they myght /
& came to the kyng where as he was / &
thanked god that they foude hym alvye
for they had wende þ Danes had slayne
hym. Than the kyng & his barons con-
cluded to go seke the Danes & to fyght
with them. And so they rode all þ nyght
and on the morowe aboute pyne came
to Abyngdon where as þ Danes were.
Than kyng Alured & his barons assem-
bled them / & egerly assailed the Danes
& there gaue them a stronge batayle / &
the Danes long tyme put them of / that
no man wyll whether parte lost moost
folke. But thus it befell as god wolde þ
the kyng Alured had the victorie w mo-
che honour. for the Danes were so dys-
uen. that they ne wyll whether to turne
And. xv. dayes the kyng them pursued
at his wyll / that glad & layne they were
for to speke of peas / & toke to hym good
hostage / & sayd they wolde neuer warre
more vpon hþ. And more ouer they pro-
myssed kyng Alured that they wolde go
& brynge they owne kyng vnto hym / &
that they kyng & they all shold be bapti-
sed. And vpo this cōdicion kyng Alured
granted them lye & lyf / & sayd to
them that they shold go seke they king
and as a certayne daye that was set to

come agayne to hym. And so they went
forth fast / & came agayne at they daye
that was assigned / & þ Danes broughe
they kyng with them. Kyng Alured
anone let them be baptyzed / & they na-
mes were chaunged / so that the kyng
of Denmarke was called Athelstone / &
xxx. of his felawes names were chaun-
ged also / & the other were baptyzed to þ
ryght byleue. And all this was done at
Westmynster / & after that kyng Alured
helde with hym kyng Athelston and all
his Danes. xij. dayes at sojourne with
grete solempnite / and gaue them grete
gyftes. After that they toke they leue &
departed. Than was king Alured well
at ease whan he had ouercomen his ene-
myes / and that they were turned to the
ryght byleue of almyghty god.

How þ Danes þ went in to fraunce w
Gurmond / came agayn in to Englonde.
And of the deeth of kyng Alured.



And thus it befel after ward that
the Danes of Northumberland

that were paynyng came with a grete
strength & an huge host of fradice that
is to be vnderstande. With them þe went
into fradice with Gurmond of Assyke
whan he had conquered Englonde & gaue
it to the Saxons. And those that came fro
fradice arriued in Kent & sent in to Ro-
chumberlonde that they sholde come to
them. And whan those two hostes were
comen & assembled anone they went to
destroie all þe chrysten people of englonde
from place to place & dyd moche sorowe.
¶ In this tyme dyed kyng Alured that
was wont to abbate the Danes & .xxx.
yere he reigned & had ben a good king &
well coude chastyle his enemyes & also
he was a good clerke & let make many
bokes & a boke he made in englyshe of
aduentures of kynges & of batayles that
had ben done in þe lond & many other bo-
kes he let wyte of grete wisdom & good
lernynge on whose soule god haue mer-
cy & lyeth at Wynchestre.

Iohanes the. viij. was pope after
Adrian. viij. yere. This John a-
noynted Karolus þe emperour & he suf-
fred grete wronge of þe Romayns for he
faoured not the sayd emperour & ther-
fore he put þe sayd pope in kepyng. Also
he degraded þe bisschop of Portuense that
was þe cause of al his sorowe. ¶ Karolus
þe second was emperour after Ludouic.
This Karol had a broder þe was called
Lodwyke & he was kyng of Germain
& he ordeyned a batayle agaynst his bro-
der but Karol or they fought was por-
tioned and he made many a monastery.
¶ Martinus was pope after John one
yere. This Martin lytell phyed for he
lyued but lytel tyme. ¶ Adrian þe thyrde
was pope after hye one yere & of hye is no
thynge wyten. ¶ Stephan the. v. was
pope after hye. vi. yere & no thynge of hye
is wyten but þe translated þe body of
saint Martin. ¶ Karolus þe thyrde was

emperour after þe second. xij. yere. This
Karolus peasably had in possesyon all
fradice & Germain & was crowned em-
perour of John þe pope. And after his glo-
ryous victorie he turned all Normandy
to þe sayd. And he myght no more resyst
the frenshme but. iij. yere he reigned on
them & he was vnprofytable to them &
therfore they put hym away. ¶ Arnul-
phus was emperour after Karolus. xij.
yere. This man vtterly constrained the
Normans þe destroyed þe frenshmen. xl.
yere. Than he sickned & had no confort of
no leche for he was in a meruailous se-
kenes so þe he was consumed wth lyfe and
was ded. ¶ Formosus was pope after
Stephen. v. yere. This man fyrst was
byschop of Portuense & of pope John
was depyred for his inobedience & was
degraded to þe lay se but by Martin the
pope he was restored & agaynst his othe
he came not al onely to come but to offre
him þe dignite of þe pope for which there
was grete altercacion. ¶ Bonifacius þe
vi. was pope. xv. days. ¶ Stephanus
the. vi. one yere & .iij. monethes. ¶ Jona-
the monethes & .xij. days. ¶ Theodor-
the second. xx. days. ¶ Johans the. xi.
was two yere & .xv. days. ¶ Benedic-
the. iij. was. iij. yere & two monethes.
¶ Leo þe. iij. was. xi. days. ¶ Epoforus
the fyrst. viij. monethes. These. viij. po-
pes were but lytell tyme & therfore we
can not tell of them no notable thynges
but yf we shold wyte schauoure of them þe
myght be founde for the vberd stryfe &
contentyon in þe holy apostles sect for one
stroue agaynst an other reprouing ech
others dedes & for to tel how they stroue
it were no grete honour to shew for þe ho-
ly apostles sect. ¶ Ludouicus þe thyrde
was emperour after Arnulph. vi. yere
This ma had not þe popes blessing for þe
vnstabilenes of them þe reigned in Italy
& he was constrained to expulse Bereng.

And this was the last emperor of
all þe kynne of Marcius king of France.
¶ This tyme the Emperre was reme-
med / translated / and deuised. For the
frenschmen helped not the churche / the
whiche they fathers had establisshid & by-
testid / but destroyed them / nor helped
not the Romayns agayn the Lombardes.
Whiche hated the Romayns right
fore. Therefore by þe common assent they
were excluded from the Emperre / & the
grecians began to be emperours in yta-
lye / & the Rymayns in Rymayne / breyll
Occitanie whiche reigned in bothe þe pla-
ces. The frenschmen were constrained
to abyde in theyr owne countre / & no more
to be emperours for theyr myscheuous
kynges. ¶ Beringarius the fyrst. Con-
radus & Beringarius the seconde / and
Hugo were emperours after Lodowike
but they are not nombred amonge the
Emperours. For some were but in Al-
mayne / and some in Ytalye.

¶ Of kyng Edward that was
kyng Auredes sone.



¶ And after this Aured reigned
thretye yere and was a good
man and a knyght / & was also Auredes

successor. The Danes byd moche sojorne
in the londe / & theyr power increased &
began for to wepe from day to day / for
the Danes came oft with theyr compa-
nyes into this londe. Whan the kyng
saw that he myght no better do / than
he made peas with them / and graunted
them his trewse. And neuerthelesse the
trewse durd not longe þe Danes ne
bega to warre strongly vpon þe englysh
men / & byd them moche sojorne / wher-
fore kyng Edward let assemble a grette
hoost for to fyght with them. And than
this kyng Edward dyed whan god
woulde. And he reigned. xxiii. yere / and
lyeth at Wyndchestre belyde his fader.

¶ Anno domini. ix. C. xliii.

¶ Sergius the thyrde was pope af-
ter Christofer. vii. yere. This man
was a cardynall of Rome / & was expul-
sed by formothe the pope / & than he went
to the frenschmen / & through the helpe of
them he came agayne to Rome / and ex-
pulsed Christofer the pope / & was pope
hymselfe. And for to auenge his exile he
take out þe body of pope formothe wher
as he was buryed / and arayed hym in
popes arayment / and caused hym to be
heded / & to be cast in to the water of Ty-
ber by Rome. Than syllyens foude hym
and brought hym in to the churche / & the
holy ymages of sayntes dolored dowlow
unto hym whan the body of hym was
brought in to the churche / that all men
myght se / and honourably hym halled.
Yer Sergius destroyed all those thyn-
ges the whiche the holy man had ordey-
ned. ¶ Anastasius was pope after hym
two yere. ¶ Laudo was pope. h. monethes / & yete they dyd. ¶ Johannes the .x.
was pope than. This John was þe sone
of Serge pope bothe of nature & of na-
mes / & he was pope by myght / & wher-
ethyng was sayne by Gubers knyghtes

for they put on his mouth a pillow and
kissed his bryth. And after he was an
other put in/ but anon he was put out/
and therfore he is not named as a pope.
¶ Henry the duke of Saxonye was
emperour of Almayn. xviij. yere. This
Henry was a noble man/ but he is not
numbered amonge the emperours: for he
reigned but at onely in Almayn/ & he had
a very holy woman into his wyfe/ & her
name was Matilda/ on whom he gave
two sonnes/ that is to saye Ottone & Har-
ry/ & Otto succeeded hym in the empyre/
and Harry had moche londe in Almayn.
And he gave an other sone & byght Bis-
mon/ & was a very holy man/ and was
bysshop of Coleyn/ and he founded the
monastery of Panchalton.

¶ Of kyng Athelstone.

¶ After this Edward reigned Athel-
stone his sone/ and when he had
reigned. iij. yere he held batayle against
the Danes/ & droue kyng Canut that
was kyng of Danes & all his host to
fly/ & rested by Scotlande/ & toke strongly
all þe countree an hole yere. And after that
they of Cumberlonde & the Scottes of
Westmerlonde began to warre wth king
Athelston/ & he gaue them so stronge ba-
tayle þe slew so many of them that no
man coude tell þe nombre of them. And af-
ter þe he reigned but. iij. yere/ & he reigned
in all. xxb. yere/ & lieth at Walmesbury.

¶ Of kyng Edmund.

¶ After this Athelstone reigned Ed-
mund his broder/ for king Athel-
ston had no sone/ & this Edmund was a
worthy man & a doughty knyght of bo-
dy & also noble. And the thyrde yere after
that he was kyng he went ouer Hyber-
into þe countree/ where he founde two kyn-
ges of Danes/ þe one was called Enraf

and that other Benant. This kyng Ed-
mund droue them bothe from the londe
and after went and toke a grete prey in
Cumberlonde. This Edmund reigned
but. vij. yere/ & lieth at Glassebury.

¶ Of kyng Edoed.

¶ And after this Edmund reigned
Edoed his broder that auenged
Edward his fader of his enemyes þe did
see hym/ and afterwarde he sealed all
Northumberland into his handes/ and
made the Scottes for to bowe and make
vnto his wyll. And in the second yere of
his regne came Arnalaf Guytan/ that
was kyng of Denmarke/ and sealed all
Northumberland/ & helde þe londe two
yere. And after that came kyng Edoed
with a grete power & droue hym out of
this londe. And this king Edoed was a
noble man & a good/ of whose goodnes
saynt Wulfstan preched. And this Edoed
reigned. xi. yere/ & lieth at Wynchestre.

¶ Of kyng Edwyn.

¶ And after this Edoed reigned Ed-
wyn the sone of Edmund/ & he
was an vncourable man toward god
and the people. For he hated folke of his
owne londe/ & loued & honoured straunge
men/ & let lytell by holy chirche/ and he
toke of holy chirche all the treasure that
he myght haue/ that was grete shame
and brylany to hymselfe/ & peryll to his
soule. And therfore god wolde not that
he shoulde regne no longer than. iij. yere
and dyed/ and lieth at Wynchestre.

¶ To the syxthe a Romaine was
pope. vi. monethes. ¶ Stephanus
the. viij. a Romaine was pope after
he two yere. ¶ John the. xi. a Romaine
was pope. iij. yere. ¶ Stephanus the
viij. a Germane was pope after hym

1011. yere. ¶ **E**dward the thyrde was pope after hym that yere. And of these he. popes is no thyng had in scripture. For what cause I can not tell.

¶ Anno domini. lx. C. liij.

Agapitus a Romayn was pope after Partyn the yere and. viij. monethes / and the yng of hym is wyrtten. ¶ **J**ohannes the. xij. a Romayn was pope after Agapitus almost. viij. yere / and he had a fader that byght Albyrth & was a worthy man in þe cite of Rome. He entured the noble men to swere that after the deche of Agapitus they sholde chose Octavianus his sone pope. And so it was done / & was named Josu / & he was a hunter and a lecherous man / so that openly he kepte women. Wherefore certayn cardynalles wrote to Ottonem the emperour of Almayn / that he sholde come to Rome for to hripe to destroye the sleaundre of the chirche. This the pope perceyved / & the hande that wrote that pyssle he made to be cutte of. And many tymes he was warned by þe Emperour & the clergy that he sholde correcte hym selfe. But he wolde not for no thyng. Than he was deposed / & Leo was put in to his place. Wherefore the emperour was anoyed / and came agayne and beseged Rome so longe / till they toke Benedicte to hym and restored Leo.

¶ **O**f kyng Edgar that reigned aboue the kynges of Scotlande and of Wales And how he was begyled through the takynge of his wyfe.

After this Colwyne reigned Edgar his broder / a man that moche loved god & praye / & holy chirche also / and was a worthy man & a grete kynde of blode & myghty / & maynteyned well this lode in peas. And this Edgar

was made a kyng aboue all the kynges of Scotland & of Wales / from the tyme that Arthur was gone / and neuer lych kyng of his power. And this Edgar was surne Edwardes fader. And whā Cogars wyfe was dech that was surne Edwardes moder and burgh / he berde speche of the faynes of Estryde / þe was Cogars daughter a baron of Deuenshyre that was so fayre a woman / that all men spake of her. He called one of his knyghtes that he moche loved & trusted vpon / & sayd to hym. So sayd he to the noble baron Cogars of Deuenshyre & shewd that his daughter be so fayre as myn speche of / & yf it be so I wyll haue her to my wyfe. This knyght that was called Edelwode went forth his waye as the kyng hym had sayd / & came where as the lady was. And whā he sawe her so fayre / he thought to haue her hymselfe to his wyfe / & therof spake to Cogars her fader / & her fader was an olde man and had no moore chyldren but her only / and sawe that Edelwode was a fayr yonge knyght and worthy & ryche / and was well beloued with the kyng / and thought his daughter shold well be married & beset vpon hym / & graunted hym his daughter yf the good lord the kyng wolde consent thereto. And thā this Edelwode came agayn to þe kyng & told hym that she was fayre ynough to se vpon / but she was wonders lorthly. Than answered the kyng & sayd that he toke but lytel charge. Wherof sayd Edelwode / She is her faders heire / and I am not ryche of londes / & yf ye wolde consent & graunte that I myghte haue her / than shold I be ryche ynough. In goddes name sayd þe kyng / I consent thereto. Edelwode than thanked the kyng moche / and went agayn into Deuenshyre and spoused the damoyzell / and in that countree he dwelled. And thus it befell vpon a tyme that

he tolde his counseyle & all this thyng
unto his wyfe / how & in what maner he
had begyled his lord the kyng & wolde
haue had her to wyfe. And anone as she
he wyf. she lound hym neuer more after
warde as she byd before. This lady con-
ceyued by hym a sone. And whan tyme
was that & chyld shold be borne. Edel-
wolde came to the kyng & prayed hym to
haue a sone of his at the fontayne. The
kyng hym graunted & let call him Edgar
after his owne name. And whan this
was done / he thought that al was ryght
ynough for the kyng / that he wolde not
take his wyfe / for as moche as his lord
was a wyse man and an aumerous.

How kynge Edgar wedded Edelwolde
after the deeth of Edelwolde.

And it befell that all men in king
Edgars court than spake & sayd
that Edelwolde was ryghtly auaunced
through the marriage of his wyfe / and
yet they sayd he was auaunced on how
much folde more / for he had spoused the
fayrest woman that euer was seen. And
whan the kyng herde speke so moche of
her beaulte / he thought & Edelwolde had
hym deceyued & begyled / and thought
pynely in his herte that he wolde go in
to Deuenshyre as it were for to hunt for
the harte & for the hynde & other wyld
beestes / & than he sholde se there & lady
as he departed thes. And this lady was
dwellynge at a maner place besyde & for-
rest where that the kyng wolde hunt / &
at that maner he was herborowed all
nyght. And whan tyme came that the
kyng sholde soupe & the sonne shone / the
kyng asked after his golsp & after his
godson. And Edelwolde made her to cou-
me before the kyng / & neuerthelesse yf it
be her wyfe myght haue ben / she sholde
not haue come in his syght by his wyll.

The lady welcomed the kyng & sweetly
hym kyssed. And he toke her by & hande
and nexte by hym her set / and so souped
they togyder. And there was a custome
and an vlage in this londe & tyme / that
whan one dyonke to an other / the dyn-
ker sholde saye Wassayle / and that other
sholde answerre and saye / dynke hayle /
And thus byd the kyng & the lady ma-
ny tymes & also kyssed. And after souper
whan tyme was to go to bedde & kyng
went to bedde thynkyng hertely on the
faynes of that lady / & than was our-
comen for her loue / that hym thought &
he sholde dye / but yf he had his wyll on
her. Upon the morowe the kyng arose
and went in & forrest for to dysporte hym
with hartes & hyndes & all other wyld
beestes / and of & hartes grete plente he
sente to that lady. And thys he wente
to solace & speke with that lady whyles
he dwelled there in that countree. And
after that the kyng remeued thens / &
berthoughe hym how he myght best de-
lyuer Edelwolde from his wyfe / as he
had hym fyrst deceyued. And the kyng
anone after. viij. dayes let ordeyn a pa-
ryament at Salysbury of all his baro-
nage to haue counseyle / & for to ordeyne
how the countree of Northumberlonde
shold best be kepte that the danes came
not there to destroye the londe. And this
Edelwolde came vnto the kynges pa-
ryament. And the kyng sent hym vnto
Porke for to be keper of that countree.
And thus it befell that men that knewe
hym not sette hym by the waye. And
anone as the kyng herde tell that Edel-
wolde was deed / he let sende after the
fayre lady Edelwolde that she sholde come
to the cite of London / and there be wed-
ded to the kyng with grete solempnite
and worship. And whan he was come
to London soone after he helde a sollepne
feest / and he warr a crowne that was of

gode / & the quene an other. And saynt Dunstan on the mornynge came to þe king in his chambere / & founde the kyng & the quene in bedde togydre. And saynt Dunstan asked the kyng wher he was. And the kyng answered & sayd. This is the quene Ceryse. And the archbishop saynt Dunstan sayd that he dyd grete wyronge & agaynst goddes wyll to take a woman to wyfe whose chylde he had holden at þe stone. And the quene for that wyde neuer loured saynt Dunstan after. And neuertheles þe good mā warneth of that fol to beleste. but it awayled but lytell for þe love betwene them was so moche. The kyng begate upon her a sone that was called Edward. Whā this chylde was. vi. yere old þe king his fader dyed / & aboute that tyme he had reigned xviij. yere. and lyeth at Glassebury.

Beringarius the thyrde was emperour after Henry. vi. yere. this Beringarius was emperour in ytalie / in whose tyme was grete drypysyn. And Henry þe emperour decessed / & Otto began to regne in Almayne. Lotharius regned after hym two yere. and decessed whan Otto regned in Almayn / & had a wyfe þe byghte Dalmidam / whiche after wedded Otto. Beringarius þe fourth was after hys. This man in grete tyranry subdued ytalie / wherfore the pope & other Romayns called Otto þe he myght drispuer them / whiche he dyd / & he toke Beringary by strength / & cawen he outlawed hym / & he toke Lotharius wyfe whiche þe papist had perswaded. Leo þe viij. was pope after Benedicte one yere & four monethes. This man was chosen with the comyn doctre / & John was deposed. This Leo ordeyned þe no pope shoulde be made without consent of þe emperour / for the malice of the Romayns the whiche oppressed them. This man

granted all the gyftes to Otto and his successours. the whiche were gyven by Justynian and Carolus to the chyrche / that he myght defende ytalie from þe rebellous. Johannes the xij. was pope after hym almost. lxx. yere. This John suffered grete wyronge of the Romayns / for he was taken & cyled / but Otto bare this heuily. For he sene the noble men of Rome / and certayn of them cyled for euermore. Benedictus the sixth was pope after hym. vi. yere. This man was taken / and in the castell Anagell was strangled. Asta. The emperour this tyme was translated to the Almayns. And the same cause is here as was before / for the vicious lyuynge. For these unhappie men coude not be enforced / þe they coude elche we þe one vyce throughe þe whiche they sawe so many noble men perished. Otto was emperour after Beringarius. xij. yere. This Otto was the first emperour of Almayne / and he was all vertuous as an other kyng Carolus / for he was the defender of þe chyrche of god / and the synfuler promoter / for the whiche he was worthy to be emperour. Many men of fals dyce he converted. And he helde w hym pope Benedictus the usurper of the papchede in to Mayony / & there he decessed in his exile. And after this Otto the emperour decessed a grete man in vertue & goodes. Otto the seconde was emperour after his fader. And he was a noble man to þe chyrche as his fader was. And many a barayn he had agaynst fals men of byture. And at þe last he had almost lost all his hoost in Calabria. yet he for soche with all his myght besought saynt Peter to helpe. And meruaylously safe Peter deliuered hym. And his wyfe was the daughter of þe emperour of Constantinople of þe Romayns blode / & this man was crowned of Benedictus the pope.

Of saynt Edward the martyr, & how
Estride his stepmoder let see hym for to
make Eider her owne lone kyng.

After this Edgar reigned Edward
be his lone that he begate vpon
his wyfe, that well & nobly gouer-
ned the londe. For he was full of all ma-
ner of goodnes, & hadde a full holy lyfe,
and about all thyng he loued god & ho-
ly churche. And the quene Estride that
was his stepmoder let see hym because
to make her owne lone Eider kyng, &
thus on a day he was slayne as ye shall
here after warde. ¶ It befell thus vpon
a daye that the kyng Edward went in
to a wode for to playe in þe south costree
besyde a towne that is called Warham
in whiche forest was grete plente of har-
tes and hyndes. And whā he had ben a
whyle there for to spoyte hys he thought
vpon his broder Eider that was with
his moder the quene, for her place was
vygh the forest, and thought for to go
thyder and bysee & se his broder. And
toke with hym but a lytell meyny, and
went towarde his stepmoders hous, þe
in that tyme soiourned in the castell of
Corse. And as he rode in the thycknes
of the wode to espye his game, it befell
that he wente amysse and lost his mey-
ny that came with hym. And at the last
he came out of þe wode, and as he looked
aboute hym he sawe there fast besydes
a maner that his stepmoder dwelled in,
and thyderwarde he wente alone. And
anone it was tolde the quene, how that
the kyng was comen alone without ony
company. And therfore she made Joye
prough, and thought how she myght
do that he were slayn as pryncely as she
myght, and she called to her one of her
knyghtes, to whome she had tolde mo-
che of her counseyle bytvene them. And
bothe they came to the kyng & curtesy

receyued hym. And the kyng sayd that
he was comen to visyte her, and also for
to speke with Eider his broder. The
quene many tymes thanked hym, and
bade hym to alpyght & harborowe to her
all that nyght. The kyng sayd that he
myght not, but agayn he wold go vnto
his folke, yf he myght fynde them. And
whan the quene sawe that he wold not
abyde, she prayed hym þe he wolde ones
drynke. And he graunted her. And anone
as þe drynke was come, the quene dran-
ke vnto the kyng. And the kyng toke
the cuppe & set it to his mouth, & in the
meane whyle that he dranke, the false
knyght that was with the quene with
a knyfe smote the kyng vnto the herte,
and there he fell downe deed fro his pal-
fey vnto the erthe. The quene for this
dede gaue the knyght golde and syluer
grete plente & of other rycheffe prough.
And þe knyght anone as this was done
wente hym ouer the see, & so escaped he
out of this londe. Whan this kyng Ed-
warde was thus martyred, it was in þe
yere of þe incarnacyon of our lord, .x. c.
.lxx. and he had reigned .xii. yere and an
halfe, and lyeth at Glasterbury.

Of kyng Eider, and how the kyng
Dwyne of Denmarke held Englonde, &
how Eider that was saynt Edwardes
broder was not beloued in his realme, &
therfore he fledde in to Normandy.

After this kyng Edward reigned
Eider his broder, & saynt Dun-
stan crowned hym. And this saynt Dun-
stan dyed soone after þe he had forgyuen
Estride the quene her trespass, because
that she was cause of kyng Edwardes
deeth, and saynt Dunstan had her absols-
led & enioyned her penaunce, and she ly-
ued after a chaste lyfe and a clement. This
kyng Eider wedded an Englyshe wo-
man

man / & on her he begate Edmund Iron
syde / and another sone that was called
Swayne. And after dyed þe quene the
moder. And in that tyme came Swayne
in to Englonde that was kyng of Den
marke / for to chalenge and conquere all
that his auncestres had before þe tyme.
And so he conquered and had it all at his
askynge. For the good erle Cuthbert of
Lyndeley & all the people of Northum
londe and almooft all the grettest men of
Englonde helde with Swayne that was
king of Denmarke / for as moche as they
loued not kyng Eldred / bycause that his
good broder Edward was falsly slayne
for the loue of hym / and therfore no man
set but lytell by hym. Wherfore kyng
Swayne had all his wyll / & toke all the
londe. And Eldred the kyng than fledde
in to Normandy / and so spake to þe duke
Rycharde / that the duke gaue hym his
syster Emme to wyfe / upon the whiche
he gate two sones / that one was called
Mured / and that other Edward. And
whan kyng Swayne had conquered all þe
londe he reigned nobly / & lyued. xii. yere /
and than he dyed / and lyeth at York.

How kyng Eldred came agayn from
Normandy / and how knoght the Dane
reigned / and of the warre betwene hym
and Edmund Ironsyde.

After the deth of Swayne þe was
a Dane / knoght his sone dwel
led in Englonde / & wolde haue ben king
And tha came agayn Eldred out of Nor
mandy with a grette nombere of people &
a stronge army / that knoght durst not
abyde / but fledde thens in to Denmark.
The kyng Eldred had agayne his re
alme / and helde so grette lordshyp that
he bega to destroye all those that helped
Swayne that was a Dane agaynst hym.
And afterwarde this knoght came a

gyn from Denmark to a grette port
so that kyng Eldred durst not fyght w
hym / but fledde from thens into Lon
don / and there helde hym. Than came
knoght and besyged hym so longe tyll
that kyng Eldred dyed in þe cite of Lon
don / and lyeth in saynt Pauls chyrche.
And he reigned. ix. yere.

Bonus was pope after Benedict
one yere. This man abode but a
lytell tyme. Bonifacius was pope af
ter hym fyue monethes. Benedictus
was pope after hym. i. yere. This man
crowned Otto the secunde / & made ma
ny Romayns to be taken / & he gadered
a cosseyle agaynst the kyng of France /
where Sylbert the nygromancer was
deposed. Johannes the. xiiij. was po
pe after hym. viij. monethes / & he was
put in the castell Jungell / and was sa
myshed to deth. Johannes þe. xv. was
pope after hym. iij. monethes. Joha
nes the. xvi. was pope after hym almooft
xi. yere. This man was taught in ar
mes / & made many bokes / & elles lytell
of hym is wyrtten. Gregorius the. v.
was pope after this man almooft thre
yere. This Gregory was made pope at
the instance of the emperour Otto the
thyrde / for he was his cosin. And whan
he had ben a lytell whyle pope / and the
emperour receded from the cite of Rome
Placetrinus was put in by Crescencius
a consull / for money / & than was styfle
a fewe dayes. But the emperour came
soone after agayn / & toke Crescencius þe
consull & stroke of his heed / & put out the
eyen of this man that put out his colyn
of the dignite of the poperyche / & may
med hym in other membris / and his ou
kes & his knyghtes helped by nothynge
for he dyd that thyng that he shold not
haue done / and he suffred that that he
deserued. Nota. This Gregory with

the emperour Otto ordeyned there the
chofers of the empyre the whiche from
thens forth hath abyden vnto this day.
For þe frendshemen doo none other myght
nor byde þe ordynance. And those cho-
fers of the Empyre by the pope & Otto
werre not made for any blame of the say-
ngs but to eschewe the peypples to come
And they names ben wyrtten in latyn
for lerned men in these verses. Magun-
tensis. Treuerensis. Coloniensis. qui-
libet imperij sit cancellarius horum. Et
Palatinus dapifer Dux portitor ensis.
Marchio prepositus camere. Vincerna
Bohemus. Hi statuunt dominū cūctis
per secula summū. Palatin⁹ est comes
Reni. Marchio est Brandeburgensis.
Dux Saxonū. Et rex Bohemoru. Uerū
ut quidam dicunt. Through this occa-
sion the Eggle hath lost many a fether/
and in the ende he shall be made naked.
Otto þe thyrde was emperour. xviij.
yere. This man was a worthy man all
the dayes of his empyre. And after the
wyfdom of his fader he was a very
faythfull man to the chyrche. And in ma-
ny batayles he prospered bycause he was
deuoute to almyghty god & his sayntes
And gaue myghty worshyppung vnto
the relikes of sayntes. And oftentymes
he visyted holy places. This man was
crowned by Gregory his colyn. And at
the last he decessed at Rome.

Anno domini. M. iij. Nota.

After the second was pope af-
ter Gregory. iij. yere / & he was
made pope by the helpe of the deuyl. to
whome he dyd homage / for he holde
gryue hym all thyng that he desyred / &
he was called Gylbert. And his enemy
gave hym the grace of þe kynge of fraunce
and he made hym bysshop of Remensis
but anon he was deposed. And after he
gave the grace of the Emperour / & was

made bysshop of Baudemie / & after pope
but he had an ende anon / & so haue all
that put they hope in fals deuytis. Yet
men trust in his saluacyon for certayne
demonstracions of his sepulture / & for þe
grette penaunce þe he dyd in his last ende.
For he made his handes & legges to be
cut of. & dismembred all his body / & made
them to be cast out at the doze to foules /
& than his body to be drawen w wyfde
beestes / and there to be buryed where so
euer they rested as an housde. And they
stode styll at saynt John de Lattans / &
there he was buryed / & that was signe
of his saluacyon. Johannes the. xviij.
was pope. v. monethes. Johannes
the. xix. was pope after hym syue yere.
And these two dyd lytel thynges. Hen-
ricus þe fyrst was emperour in Almayn
xx. yere. This Henry was duke of Bar-
ry / and all accordyng he was chosen for
his blyssed fame & good name the whi-
che he had. And it is redde that many of
these dukes of Barry were holy men /
not all onely in absteynyng them from
fleschly desyres / but also in vertuous ly-
uyng. And this Henry had a syster that
was as holy as he / whome he gaue to
wyfe vnto the kynge of Hungary. And
she brought all Hungary vnto the right
byleue and chrysten fayth. And his wy-
ues name was Sancta Romogundis
with whome he lyued a virgyn all the
dayes of his lyfe. And he made many a
batayle / as well in yraly as in Almayn
agaynst them that rebelled / and prosper-
ed ryght wyfely euermore on them. At
the last with a blyssed ende he decessed.
And in the lyf of saynt Laurence he and
his wyfe be put for ensamples bycause
of they holy and vertuous lyuyng.
Benedict⁹ was pope after John. xi.
yere. This man had grette stryfe in his
dayes. For he was put out / & an other
was put in. And this Benedictus after
m iij

that he was dead/ was seen of an holy
bysshop in a wretched figure/ & he had
grette payne. And this figure sayd he
truſted no thyng in the mercy of god/ &
no thyng profyted hym that was done
for hym/ for it was gotten by extorcion &
vniuſty. Thā this bysshop lefte his bys
shoppe for drede of this sight/ & went
into a monastery & lyued vertuously all
his dayes. **J**ohānes p. xx. was pope
after hym. xi. yere/ & lytell profyted.

Of kyng Knoght that was a Dane.

After the deeth of this Eldred
Knoght that was a Dane begā
to regne. But Edmund Irensyde p. was
king Eldredes ſone by his fyrſt wyfe oꝝ
deynde a grete power of men/ & began to
warre on kyng Knoght. And ſo he dyd
many tymes & ofte/ & the warre was ſo
ſtrōge & harde p. wonder it was to wyte
And the quene Emme p. than dwelled at
Weſtmynſter had grete drede of her two
ſones Alured & Edward/ leſt they ſholde
be deſtroyed through p. warre/ wherfore
ſhe ſente them ouer ſee into Normandy
to the duke Richard theyꝝ vncle/ & there
they dwelled in ſafete & peas lōge tyme.
This Edmund Irensyde & Knoght
the Dane warred ſpyedly togyder. But
at p. laſt they were accorded in this ma
ner/ that they ſholde departe the realme
brydewene them/ and ſo they dyd/ and lo
ued togyder lyke two byetherne.

How kyng Edmund Irensyde was
ſlayne through treaſon by a traytour p.
was called Couſyn of Stratton.

After than after regned kyng Ed
mund Irensyde & Knoght p. dane
But thus it befel afterwarde p. in p. ſame
yere that they were accorded & ſo moche
loued togyder/ wherfore a falſ traytour

had enuy at the loue that was brydewene
them/ whole name was Couſyn of Strat
ton/ that was a grete loyde p. was Ed
mund Irensydes man/ & of hym helde
all the londe that he had/ & neuertheleſſe
he thought to betraye his loyde/ & make
Knoght kyng of all the londe/ to the en
tent rycheſſe to be auayned/ & with hym
to be well beloued. Wherfore he prayed
his loyde Edmund Irensyde on a daye
with hym for to etc. And the kyng hym
curteſy graunted/ and to hym came at
his prayer. And at meet the kyng was
vyally ſerued with dyuerſe metes and
drynkes. And whan nyght came that
he ſholde go to bedde/ the kyng toke his
oſone meyny and went to the chambꝛe
where as he ſhould take his nyghtes reſt
And as he looked aboute hym he ſawe a
fayre ymage & a well made in ſemblaūc
as it were an archer with a bowe bent
in his hande/ & in p. bowe a fyne arrowe.
Kyng Edmund went nere to beholde it
better. And whan he was by it/ anone p.
arrowe ſmote hym through the body/ &
there ſlew the kyng/ for p. engyn was
made to ſee his oſone loyde traytourly.
And whan kyng Edmund was thus
deed & ſlayne/ he had regned but. x. yere
And his people made moche ſorow for
him/ & his body they bare to Glaſtenbu
ry/ & there buryed hym. And this falſ
traytour Couſyn anone went to p. quene
that was kyng Edmundes wyfe that
wyſt not of her loydes deeth/ & toke from
her two ſones that were fayre & yonge
that her loyde had gotten on her/ that one
was called Edward/ & that other Ed
wyne/ & ladde them w. hym to London/
& toke them to kyng Knoght p. he ſholde
do with them what his wyf were. And
told h. how ſubtylly he had ſlayne kyng
Edmund becauſe p. Knoght ſholde haue
all the londe of Englonde. **O** thou falſ
traytoure/ haſt p. ſlayne my true broder

that was so true bycause of me / a man
that I most loued in the world. Now
by my heed I shall for thy traualle the
well reward as thou hast deserved / &
anone let hym be taken / and bounde hym
handes & feet in maner of a traptour / &
let cast hym in to the ryuer of Camysse.
And in this maner the fals traptour en-
ded his lyfe. The kynge toke þ two chy-
ldren & put them vnto the abbot of West-
minster to warde & to kepe tyll he wyll
what was best with them for to do.

How kynge Knoght sent bothe kynge
Edmondes sones in to Denmarke for to
be slayne / and how they were saued.

And it befel soone after ward that
kynge Knoght had all the londe
in his handes: & spoused þ quene Emme
through consent of al his barons / for she
was a fayre woman / the whiche was
Edredes wyfe / and the dukes syster of
Normandy / & they lyued togyder with
moche loue as reason wolde. The kynge
asked vpon a daye counseyle of the quene
what was best to do w Edmond Iren-
sydes sones. Syr sayd she / they be the
ryght heyres of the londe / and yf they
lyue they wyll do you moche sorow w
warre / and therfore let sende them in to
a straunge londe aserre / to some man that
may destroye them. The king anone let
call a Dane that was called Walgar / &
comanded hym that he sholde lede those
two chyldren in to Denmarke / & so to do
and ordeyne for them that he sholde ne-
uer moze here of them. Syr sayd this
Walgar / your commaundement gladly
shall be done. And anone he toke the two
chyldren & ledde them in to Denmarke.
And for as moche as he sawe that the
chyldren were wonders fayre & meke /
he had of them grete pite & ruth / & wold
not see them / but ledde them to þ kynge

of Hungary for to nouryshe. For this
Walgar was well behnomen with the
kynge & well beloued. Anone the kynge
asked fro whens the chyldren were. And
Walgar tolde hym & sayd þ they were þ
ryght heyres of Englonde / and therfore
men wolde destroye them / & therfore sy-
bnto you they be comen to seeke mercy &
helpe / & for soch yf they may lyue four
men they shall become / and of you they
shall holde all theyr londe. The kynge of
Hungary receyued the with moche ho-
nour / and let them worthily be kepte.
And thus it befell after warde that Ed-
wyne þ yonger broder dyed / & Edwarde
the elder broder lyued / a fayre man and
a stronge / and a large of body / & gentyl
and curteys of condicions / so þ all men
loued hym. And this Edwarde in þ cro-
nycles is called amonge Englyshmen
Edwarde the outlaw. And whan he
was made knyght / the kynges dought-
er of Hungary loued him moche for his
goodnes and his faynes / so that she cal-
led hym her derlynge. The kynge that
was her fader perceyued well the loue
that was bytwene them two / & he had
none hey / but onely that doughter. And
the kynge bouchesafe his doughter to
no man so well as he dyd to hym / that
she loued so well / and he her agayn / and
gaue her vnto hym with a good wyll.
And Edwarde her spoused with moche
honour. The kynge of Hungary sent as-
ter all his barons and made a solempne
feest and a ryche weddyng / and made
all men to vnderstande þ this Edwarde
sholde be kynge after his decesse of all the
londe of Hungary. Of the whiche wy-
dynges they were all ryght glad. And
this Edwarde begate vpon this lady a
sone the whiche was called Edgar He-
lyng / and afterwarde a doughter that
was called Margarete / that afterwar-
de was quene of Scotlande. And by the

kyng of Scotland that was called Spence. She had a daughter that was called Spence that was quene afterwarde of Englonde through kyng Henry 3. Was the first sone of the conquerour that he wedded / & he begate on her a daughter that was called Spence / that afterwarde was emperesse of Mayne. And of this Spence came the kyng of Englonde that vnto this daye is called Henry the emperesse sone / and yet had this Edward an other daughter by his wyfe 3. Was called Christian / & she was a nonne.

How kyng Knoght 3. Was a proude man conquered Norway / and how he became afterwarde meke and mylde.

Now haue ye herde of Comunde Irensydes sones 3. king Knoght wende they had ben slayne as he had commaunded Walgar before. And this kyng Knoght had in his handes all 3. realme of Englonde & Denmark. And after that they went vnto Norway for to conquer that londe. But the kyng of the londe 3. Was called Olaf came with his people / & wende to haue well kepte & defended his londe / & so there he faught wth hym tyll at 3. last he was slayne in 3. batayle. And thā this Knoght toke all 3. londe in to his handes. And whā he had conquered Norway / & take feaute & homage there he came agayne in to Englonde / & helde hymsele so grete a lord / 3. hym thought in all the worlde was not his pere / & became so proude & haughtyne that it was grete wonder. And so it befell vpon a daye as he had herd masse at Westmynster / & wolde haue gone in to his palays the waves of the Tame so wyfely came agaynst hym 3. almost they touched his feet. Than sayd 3. kyng with a proude herte. I commaunde the water to turne agayn / or elles I shall make the.

The waves for his commaundment shold not spere / but so much in heryng more & more. The kyng was so proude of herte that he wold not flee 3. water but abode tyll in 3. water / & betwixt 3. yerdos 3. he had in his hande / & commaunded 3. water 3. it shold go no ferder. But for all his commaundement 3. water wold not cese / but encreased more & more / so that the kyng was all wete / & stode depe in the water. And whan he sawe the water wold not do his commaundement / he wold r^{ise} hym & stode vpon a stone / holdyng by his handes on hys / & sayd herynge all 3. people. This god 3. maketh 3. see thus aryse on hys is kyng of all kynges / & of all myghtes moost / and I am a captyf & a deedly man / & he may neuer dye / & all thyng doth his commaundement & hym obeyeth. To 3. god I praye 3. he be my warrasite / for I knowlege me a captyf feble & of no power / & therfore I wyll go vnto Rome without any longe lettynge / my wychednes to purghe / & me to amende. For of god I clayme my londe for to holde / & of none other. And anon made redy his herte / & hymsele went to Rome without any lettynge. And by 3. waye dyd many almes dedes / & at Rome also. And whā he had ben there & done penance for his synnes / he came agayn in to Englonde / & became a good man & an holy / leryng all maner pryde / & lured an holy lyfe / & made two abbeyes of saynt Benet / one in Englonde / and an other in Norway / by cause he loued saynt Benet more special ly than any other saynt / & he loued moche also saynt Comund the kyng / & often he gaue grete gyftes to the hous / & made it ryche. And whan he had reigned .xx. yere he dyed / & lyeth at Wyndchestre.

Anno dñi. m. cc. xlii.

Benedict the .ix. was pope after Johannes / & he was a grete le-

chour / & thesoge he was dampned / & he
appeared to a certayne man under a me-
nourous figure & an horrible. His heed
& his cappe was lyke an asse / that other
part of his body lyke a beere. And he sayd
to this mā to whom he appeared. Be not
afrede / for I was a man as ye be now /
but for my brethly luyunge whā I was
pope I appere now lyke a beest. ¶ In
this mānes tyme was grete duntyon &
ftraunce to þe chirche / for he was put out
in two tymes. And here Ptholomeus
noteth þe pryde of bysshops had euer
an euyl ende / & it was euer þe occasyon of
moche vntrest & batayle. ¶ Conradus the
lyst was emperour after Hery. xx. yere
This mā made many lawes / & comaū-
ded peas to be kept moost straitly of ony
man. But þe erle of Ludolf was accused
& he fledde fro his londe / & despyed moze
to lyue lyke a choyse than lyke a gentyl-
man / & yet incruaylously his sone was
made emperour by þe comaundement of
god agaynst the wyll of Conradus. And
at the last they were accorded / & he toke
Conradus doughter to his wyfe.

¶ Of kynge Harold that had leuer go
on fote than ryde on horsbacke.

¶ This Knoght of whome we haue
spoke of befoze had two sones by
his wyfe Emme / þe one was called Har-
diknought / & þe other Harold / & he was so
lyght on fote þe men called hym comynly
Harold hare fote. And this Harold was
nothyng manerly after Knoght his fa-
der / for he set not by cheualry / curtesy /
ne worship / but onely by his owne wyll.
And he became so wicked þe he cruēd his
moder Emme. And she went in to Flaū-
des / & there dwelled wth þe erle / wherfoze
he & his broder hated ech other deedly.
And whan he had reigned. ii. yere & moze
he dyed / & lyeth at Westmynstre.

¶ Of kynge Hardiknought that
was Haroldes broder.

¶ After this Harold hare fote reg-
ned his broder Hardiknought / a
noble knight & a worthy / & moche loured
cheualer and all maner of goodnes. And
whan this Hardiknought had reigned a
lytell whyle / he let vncouer his broder
Harold / & smote of his heed / & made it to
be cast in to a gonge / & the body into Ca-
myse. And after came fyfthens & toke þe
body with theyr nettes by nyght / & bare
hym to saynt Clemētes chirche / & there
buried hym. Thus auenged hym Har-
diknought on his broder. This kynge Har-
diknought was so large a gyuer of meet
& drynke / that his tables were set euery
daye thre tymes full with ryall metes &
drynkes for his meyny & for them that
came to his court. And this kynge Har-
diknought sint after Emme his moder / &
made her to come agayn / for his broder
Harold hare fote had dryuen her out of þe
lond through counseyle of þe erle Godwyn
that than was the grettest loyde in Eng-
londe nexte the kynge / & that had moost
rule / bycause he had spoused the dought-
er of kynge Knoght begoten on his fyrst
wyfe. And whan this queene was dry-
uen out of Englonde / & came to the erle of
flaundes that was called Baldewyne
his colyn founde her there all thysge that
her neded / vnto the tyme that she went
agayne in to Englonde / that the kynge
Hardiknought had sent for her that was
her sone / and made her to come agayne
with moche honour. This kynge Hardi-
knoght whan he had reigned. v. yere he
dyed / and lyeth at Westmynstre.

¶ Of the bylany that the Danes dyd
to the englyshmen / wherfoze fro that
tyme after was no Dane made kynge
of this londe.

After the birth of this kyng Har-
old, his mother was as much as he ne
had no childe of his body begoten / the
rites and barons assembled and made a
counsel. that never more after no man
was a Dane / though he were never so
great a man amonge them / he shold ne-
ver be kyng of Englonde for þe despyte
they had done to englyshmen. for ever
more before / of the englyshmen & the da-
nes happened to mete by a byrge / the
englyshmen shold not be so hardy to me-
te a dene / but stande styll till the danes
were passed forth. And more over / of the
englyshmen had not bowed downe theyr
heedes to do reverence unto the danes /
they shold have ben beten & defouled /
suche despytes & bysnyss dyd the danes
to our englyshme / wherefore they were
driven out of þe londre after Hardknoght-
tes deth. for they had no lord þe myghte
mynctayne them. And in this maner a-
wayded the danes Englonde / that they
never came agayn. The erles & barons
by theyr comyn assent & counseyle sente
unto Normandy for to seeke those two bre-
therne Alured and Edward that were
dwellynge w the duke Rycharde þe was
theyr uncle / in entent for to crowne Alu-
red the elder broder / & make hym kyng
of Englonde / & of this thyng to make
an ende. The erles & barons made theyr
othe / but the erle Godwyn of West-
sax & traytourely thoughte to see these
two bretherne anon as they shold come
in to Englonde / in entent to make Harold
his sone kyng / the whiche sone he had
begoten on his wyfe kyng Hardknoght-
tes daughter þe was a dane. And so this
Godwyn went pryvely to southhamton
for to mete there with the two bretherne
at theyr landyng. And thus it befell
the messengers þe went in to Normandy
to seeke not but only Alured that was þe
eldest broder. for Edward his broder

was gone to Hungary for to speke with
his colyn Edward the outlawe þe was
Edward the firstes sone. The messen-
gers sente Alured hys þe erles & ba-
rons of Englonde sent for hym & þe shold
holdy come in to Englonde & receyve the
realm for kyng Hardknoght was dead
& all the danes byrnen out of the londre.

And so Godwyn the fals traytoure toke
Alured upon Gyldeflowe when that he
came from Normandy to be kyng of
Englonde / & how he caused hym to be
martyred in the yle of Cye.



When Alured herd these tydfes
he thanked god / & toke shyppyng
with all þe haste that he myght
and passed the see and arryved at south-
hamton where Godwyn þe fals traytoure
was. And when this traytoure sawe þe
he was comen / he welcomed hym & re-
ceyved hym with muche toye / & sayd
he wolde lede hym to London where as
all the barons of Englonde hym about
to make hym theyr kyng. And so they
went on theyr waye towarde London.
And when they came on Gyldeflowe
the sayd þe traytoure Godwyn unto Alu-

And the hope aboute you bothe on the
left syde & on the right syde / & of all ye
shal be hyng / & of such an honyred mon
How folowhe sayd Alured / I behygge
you and yf I be hyng / I shall ordeyne &
make such lawes / wherof god & man
shall be well apleyd. How had the tray
tour comadored all his men that were w
hym / that when they were comen vpon
Gyldeston that they shold see all that
were in Aluredes company / that came
with hym from Normandy / & after that
take Alured & lede hym into pyle of Cly
and after put out bothe his eyes of his
head / & afterward bynge hym to bedch.
And so they dyd / for they slew all p
company that were there / the nombre of .xij.
gentylmen p were comen with Alured
fro Normandy / & after they toke Alured
& in the yle of Cly they put out his eyes
& rent his wombe / & toke p chese of his
bowels / & put a stake in to the grolle / &
an ende of the bowels fastened thereto / &
with nayles of yren they pricked p good
chryde / & so made hym to go aboute the
stake tyll p all his bowels were daryden
out of his body / & so dyed Alured there
through treason of the erle Godwynne.
When the lordes of Englonde had herde
and wytt how Alured that sholde haue
ben the kyng was put to deeth through
the fals traytour Godwynne / they were
wonders wroth / & swore by trewe them
god & his holy name / that he sholde dye
a worse deeth than dyd Corieth of Stratton
p had betrayed his lord Edward Iren
syde / & they wold haue put hym to deeth
but the traytour fledde thens in to Den
marke / & there he dwelleth hym. this yere and
more / & lost all his lande in Englonde.

S Alured the thyrde was pope af
ter Benedictus. This Alured
was chosen / & Benedict was expelled.
And after Walter was Alured expelled

Leo & Benedict was put by agayne. And
after he was put out / & Gregory was
made pope / & he was but a simple let
tered man / and therfore he chose an other
pope to be colerare to hym. And when
many men were dyspleased with this
guyding of two popes / the thyrde was
brought in / the whiche sholde occupy p
place of bothe p two. And so they stroue
amonge them selfe. But Henry the em
perour then came to Rome and depose
them all / and made Clement the second
pope / whome he made anone to crowne
hym. And he sayd to the Romayns they
sholde neuer about his assent chose pope
And so .v. bynge popes / the fyrth was
put in. But many men saye this Grego
ry was an holy man. ¶ Damasus the
second was after Clement. xxij. dayes.
This man was an usurper of p popery
che / & he dyed sobrynly. And anone the
Romayns asked to haue a pope / & that
the Almayns sholde haue none / for they
were so hardy herted that they myght
not chynge to the entent of p emperour
the whiche sayd there sholde be no pope
chosen but yf he wolde be of counseyle of
the electyon. But for all that they put in
this holy man Leo / and after he had of
that consyence / & refused it. And anone
he was chosen by p comyn assent. This
Leo put Chryst in the forme of a lase in
to his owne bedde / and on the morowe
he founde no chynge there.

Of saynt Edward the confessor
that was Aluredes brother / and how
he was kyng of Englonde.

And when this was done / all the
barons of englonde sent an other
tyme in to Normandy p Edward sholde
come in to englonde with more honour.
And this Edward in his chyldehode lo
ued amongst god & hym inabou / and in

houshe & cleaned labbe his lyfe & dede
loure as dede. And when he was crow-
ned & anoynted wth a ryall power. he for-
gave not his good maners & condicions
that he first used. & forgave not all good
customes for no maner honour. ne for no
rycheite. ne for no maner hygnes. But
ever more & more gaue hym to goodnes
& well loued god & holy churche passyng
all other maner thyng. And poole men
also he loued. & heide them as they had
ben his owne betherne. & to them ofte
he gaue grete almes wth full good wyll.

Of the first sperryll loue that god
wedded to saynt Edward kyng.

It befell on a daye as he went fro
the churche of Westmynster. & had
herde masse of saynt John & euangelyst
for as moche as he loued saynt John the
euangelyst more sperryally after god and
our lady. than he dyd any other saynt.
And so there came to hym a pygryn. &
prayed hym for þe loue of god & our lady
& saynt John the euangelyst some good
for to gyue hym. And the kyng pyuely
toke his ryng of his fyngre. & no man
perceyued it. & gaue it to the pygryn. &
he it receyued & went thens. This kyng
Edward made all þe good lawes of Eng-
londe that yet ben moost used & holden.
And he was so mercyable and so full of
pyte that no man myghte be more.

When the erle Godwyn came agayne
into Englonde. and had agayne all his
loude. and afterwarde saynt Edward
wedded his daughter.

When the erle Godwyn that was
a knyght in Denmarke had m^{uch}
of the goodnes of kyng E-
dward. & that he was full of mercy and
of goodnes. & he wolde go agayne

into Englonde for to seeke & to haue grace
of the good kyng Edward that so mer-
cyfull was. that he myghte haue agayne
his loude in peas. And prayed hym as
moche as he myghte & put hym towarde
the see & came into Englonde to London
wher þe kyng was that tyme & all the
lordes of Englonde & heide a partymēt.
Godwyn sent to them þe word his fren-
des & were þe moost greet lordes of the
lōde. & prayed them to beseeche þe kynges
grace for hym. & that he wolde graunte
him his peas & his lōde. The lordes lad
h^{im} before þe kyng to seeke his grace. And
among as þe kyng sawe hym. he appeld
hym of treason. & of the deith of Murd
his brother. & these wordes to hym sayd
Traytoure Godwyn. & the appelle that
thou hast betrayed & slayne my brother
Murd. Certes þe sayd Godwyn saue
your grace & your peas & your lordshipp
I neuer betrayed hym ne yet slawe h^{im}.
And therfore I put me in rewarde of the
courte. Now saye lordes sayd þe kyng.
ye that be my lyeges. erles & barons of
the lōde. þe be ben assembled full well
ye herde myn appelle. & the answers also
of Godwyn. & therfore I saye that ye
awarde & do ryght. The erles & barons
than gabied them all togyder to do this
awarde by themselves. & so they spake by
uerse among them. for some sayd there
was neuer alyance by homage serment
seruyce. nor by lordshipp betwene God-
wyn & Murd. for whiche thyng they
myghte hym dyane. And at the last they
druyde & demed. that he shold put hym
in þe kynges mercy all togyder. The kyng
he the erle & murthe of Countre a good
man to god & to all the world. & told his
reason in this maner and sayd. The erle
Godwyn is þe best frenched man of Eng-
londe after þe kyng. & well myghte he
be geyrd. that without counseyl of
Godwyn Murd was never put to deith.

And thus I shewde ad touching my
part: that hymself & his loue's cury of
his. xii. yeres that ben his frendes go be
for the kyng: charged with as moche
goide & syluer as the may bett by there
our handes: prapenge the kyng to for-
gyue his euyl doyl to the erle Godwyn
and receyue his homage: & pride agayn
his londe. And they accorded unto that
aworde: and came euery of them with
goide & syluer as moche as they myght
bere by there they: handes before the
kyng: and there sayd the soyme and the
maner of they: accorde & of they: awor-
de. The kyng wolde not them gaynsaye
but as moche as they had ordeyned he
granted and cōfirmed. And so was the
erle Godwyn accorded with the kyng:
and had agayne all his londes. And af-
terward he bare hym so well & so wyse-
ly: that the kyng loued hym wonders
moche: & with hym he was full prey-
er. And within a lytell tyme they loued so
moche that þ kyng spoused Godwyns
daughter: and made her quene. And ne-
vertheles though the kyng had a wyfe
yet he lyued euer in chastite and cleynes
of body about ony fleshely dede doynge
with his wyfe. And þ quene also in her
halfe ladde an holy lyfe two yere: & dyed
And afterwarde the kyng lyued all his
lyfe without ony wyfe. The kyng gaue
the erldome of Orfoid to Harold that
was Godwyns sone: & made hym erle.
And so well they were beloued: bothe þ
sader and he: & were so prey-er with the
kyng: þ they myght do by ryght what
theyng they wolde. For agayns ryght
wold he no thyng do for no maner man
so good and true he was of conseruance.
And therefore our loye Jesu Chyrt spe-
re all loue shewed to hym.

¶ The kyng Edward the sader
kyng of Denmarke dyuined in the see

in the tyme of the leuacion of the sacra-
ment as he stode and herbe made.

It befell upon a whytsondepe as
kyng Edward herbe his masse
in the grete chyrche of Westmyster at
the leuacion of Jesu Chyrtes body: as
all men were gaderd in the chyrche: and
came nigh the altar for to se þ sacrynge
the kyng lyft by his handes on hygh: &
toke by a grete laughter: wherfore all þ
stode aboute hym began gretly to won-
der. And after masse they asked why the
kynges laughter was. Saye lordes said
kyng Edward: I sawe a wyne þ pou-
get that was kyng of Denmarke come
in to the see in all his power for to haue
comen in to Englonde to warre upon us:
& I sawe hym & all his folke dyuined in
the see: & all this I sawe in the leuacion
of Chyrtes body by there the preestes
hades: & I had therof so grete ioye that
I myght not my laughter withholde.
And the erle Leueich stode besyde hym
at the leuacion: & openly sawe the soyme
of hys churche in to þ lykenes of a ronge
churche: & toke by his ryght hande & by-
sed the kyng: & afterwarde þ erle & the
erle anonie turned hym toward þ kyng
for to make hym se that holy syght. And
than sayd the kyng. Wyrt erle I se well
that ye se: thanked be god that I haue
honoured my god and saupour by þ
Jesu Chyrt in soyme of man: whose na-
me be blyssed in all worldes. Amen.

¶ Now the kyng that saynt Edward
had gyven to a poore pylgrym for þ loue
of god and saynt John the euangelyst
came agayne to kyng Edward.

A his noble man saynt Edward
regned. xiii. yere. And thus it be-
fell upon a tyme as he dyed: þ two men
of Englonde were gone in to þ holy londe

and when they were come to the place where they were to dwell
 to where they came to. And as they went
 in the way they met a pilgrim that
 was of the same country as they were of
 in what land and in what country they
 were born. And they said in English
 When shall we see the king of England
 And they answered and said the
 good king Edward. For the friends say
 the pilgrim. When that ye come in to
 your country agayne. I praye you that
 ye sayll go vnto king Edward & greet
 hym often times in my name & I praye
 me him thank of his grete curtesy &
 he to me hath done & namely so I praye
 & he gaue me when he had heard this
 at Westminster for saynt Johns loue &
 euangelist. And than toke I praye & toke
 it to the pilgrims & sayd. I praye you
 go & bere this ring & take it vnto king
 Edward & tell hym that I sende it hym
 and a full ryche gyfte I wyll gyue hym
 for by the .xj. daye he shal come to me
 & I praye dwell in blisse withouten ende.
 For sayd I pilgrims / what man be ye
 and in what countrye is your dwellinge.
 For the friends sayd he. I am John the
 euangelist & I am dwellinge with al-
 myghty god & your kynge Edward is
 my frende & I loue hym in specciall for
 bycause that he hath evermore lyued in
 cleannes & is a cleane mayd & I praye you
 my message to fulfill as I have sayd.
 When saye John the euangelist had thus
 charged them / so they only he boyled out
 of bothe theyr sightes. Than thanked I
 pilgrims almyghty god & went forth
 theyr waye. And when they had gone
 two or thre myle they bega to make we-
 ry & let them down for to rest them & so
 they fell on slepe. And when they had
 been slepe one of them awoke & lyst by
 his heed & looked aboute & sayd to his
 fellowe. Arise by and go with our waye.

When saye the pilgrims that they were
 to where they came to. And as they went
 in the way they met a pilgrim that
 was of the same country as they were of
 in what land and in what country they
 were born. And they said in English
 When shall we see the king of England
 And they answered and said the
 good king Edward. For the friends say
 the pilgrim. When that ye come in to
 your country agayne. I praye you that
 ye sayll go vnto king Edward & greet
 hym often times in my name & I praye
 me him thank of his grete curtesy &
 he to me hath done & namely so I praye
 & he gaue me when he had heard this
 at Westminster for saynt Johns loue &
 euangelist. And than toke I praye & toke
 it to the pilgrims & sayd. I praye you
 go & bere this ring & take it vnto king
 Edward & tell hym that I sende it hym
 and a full ryche gyfte I wyll gyue hym
 for by the .xj. daye he shal come to me
 & I praye dwell in blisse withouten ende.
 For sayd I pilgrims / what man be ye
 and in what countrye is your dwellinge.
 For the friends sayd he. I am John the
 euangelist & I am dwellinge with al-
 myghty god & your kynge Edward is
 my frende & I loue hym in specciall for
 bycause that he hath evermore lyued in
 cleannes & is a cleane mayd & I praye you
 my message to fulfill as I have sayd.
 When saye John the euangelist had thus
 charged them / so they only he boyled out
 of bothe theyr sightes. Than thanked I
 pilgrims almyghty god & went forth
 theyr waye. And when they had gone
 two or thre myle they bega to make we-
 ry & let them down for to rest them & so
 they fell on slepe. And when they had
 been slepe one of them awoke & lyst by
 his heed & looked aboute & sayd to his
 fellowe. Arise by and go with our waye.

How saynt Edward dyed
 on the .xj. daye.

And after it befel thus on Chrys-
 masse euen as the holy man Ed-
 ward was at goddes scrupers for to here
 matins of I bygh fest / he became full
 seke & on the morowe indured in moche
 payne for to here I masse / & after masse
 he let hym to be ladde into his chambur
 there for to rest hym. But in his hall a-
 monge his barons & knyghtes myght
 he not come for to comfote them and so
 late as he was wont to do at that won-
 thy fest. Wherfore all they myght and

of the hall amonge all that were in the hall was turned into care & sorowe/ because they had to lese the good kyng & hys wyf. And upon saynt Johnys daye & euangelyst that came nexte the kyng receyved his ryghtes of holy churche/ as it befallith to every christen man/ & abode the mercy & the wyll of god. And & two pylgryms he let come before hym/ & gaue them eche gyfte & betoke them to god. And also & abbot of Westmynster he let come before hym/ & toke hym that ryng in the honour of god & saynt Mary & of saynt John the euangelyst. And the abbot toke & put it amonge other relikes/ so that it is at Westmynster & ever shall be. And so laye & kyng seke tyll the. xij. yere/ and than dyed the good kyng Edward at Westmynster/ & there he lyeth. for whose loue god hath shewed many a fayre myracle. And this was in & yere of our lordes Chyrlt Jesu. 99. lxxv. And after he was translated and put in to the shryne by & noble martyr saynt Thomas of Caunterbury.

Uictor the seconde was pope after Leo/ & lytell of hys is wyten. Henry the seconde was emperour after the first Henry. xviij. yere. This man was cosyn to Conrade/ & he was bozne in a woode/ and wyves taken to be slayne whan he was a childe/ but god defended hys evermore. Whan he was made emperour he made a monastery in & same place in the woode where he was bozne. This man was a vicious man/ and he entred in to ytalie/ & there he toke Pandulphus & pryncce of Campany. Stephen the. ix. was pope after Victor. ix. monethes. Benedictus was after hys & he toke the dignite of & pope Stephen by strength/ & kepte it. ix. monethes/ & than decessed. Henry the thyrde was emperour after Henry the second. This

Henry was an haughty man/ & many tymes troubled the holy man Gregory the. viij. And first he asked forgyuenes & was assayed/ but he persecuted not/ but brought in an other pope agaynst hym/ and sayd he was an heretyke. And Gregory cursed hym. And the choiers of the emperour chose the duke of Saxony for to be emperour/ whome this Henry in batayle ouercame. And than he came to Rome with his pope/ and pursued pope Gregory & the cardynals also. And than anone Robert & kyng of Naples dyue hym thens/ & deliuered the pope & his cardynals. Nevertheless yet he was a man of grete almes/ and. xij. tymes he fought in batayle. And at & last he dyed wretchedly. for he was put to dowe by his owne sone. for so as he dyd to other men/ so was he done to. Nicolas the seconde was pope after Benedictus two yere. This Nicolas called a counseyle agaynst the archedeke of Turonensis whiche was an heretyke/ & he taught agaynst the saynt. for he erred in the sacrament/ & after he was couerced & was an holy man/ but he coude never couerter his discyples. Aota. Alexander the seconde was pope after hys. xij. yere. This Alexander was an holy man/ & he ordeyned that vnder payne of cursynge that no man shold here a prestes masse whome they knewe had a leman. At p. xxij. dist. preter hoc. He had strife w one Godulo/ but he expelled hys as an usurper/ & put hym out as a symoner.

How Harold that was Godwyns sone was made kyng/ & how he escaped fro the duke of Normandy.

Whan King Edward was gone out of this worlde/ and was passed to god/ & worthely buried as it appertheyned to suche a grete loyde for to be. The

Barons of the lande hadde haue had Ed-
ward Helingus, sone to Edward f. out-
lawe that was Counte of Frenche sone
to be kynge, because he was of f. moost
kyned kynges blode of f. realme. But
Harold through the erle Godwyn his fa-
der & through other grete lordes of f. re-
alme that were of his kynne, sealed all
Englonde in to his handes, & anon let
croune hym kyng after the buryenge of
saynt Edward. ¶ This Harold f. was
Godwyns sone two yere afore saynt Ed-
ward dyed he wold haue gone in to Fla-
ndres, but he was dysuayned by trespas in to
the countree of Pountef. & there he was
taken & brought to duke Wyllyam. And
this Harold wende that duke Wyllyam
wold haue ben auenged on h. because
that Haroldes fader had let sice Murd-
er saynt Edwardes broder, & princypally
because Murd was sone to quene Em-
ma that was Rychardes moder duke of
Normandy f. was grandfather to duke
Wyllyam. Neuerthelesse he dyd not so,
for as moche as Harold was a noble & a
wyle knight, & that his fader & he were
accorded w. saynt Edward, therfore he
wold not mysdo hym, but allowed all
thyng & dyed bytwene them. Harold
by his good wyll swore vpon a boke &
vpon holy saintes that he shold spouse &
wedde duke Wyllyams daughter after
the deth of saynt Edward, & f. he shold
do his best cure to saue & kepe f. realme
of Englonde vnto f. prosyte & auantage
of duke William. And whā Harold had
thus made his othe vnto duke William
he let hym go free out of prysoun, & gaue
h. many ryche gyses. And than he de-
parted thens & came in to Englonde, and
anon dyd in this maner whā saynt Ed-
ward was dead as a fals forsworne man
let croune hymselfe kyng of Englonde
and falsly brake the covenante f. he had
made before with duke Wyllyam, whā

for he was bounden to do with hym
& more that he wold be auenged vpon
hym for that somer hym befell. And a-
non duke Wyllyam let assemble a grete
host & came in to Englonde to auenge
hym vpon Harold, & to conquere f. londe
yf that he myght. ¶ And in f. same yere
that Harold was crouned Harold harr-
streng kyng of Denmarke arriued in
Scotlonde, & thought to haue ben kyng
of Englonde, & he came in to Englonde &
robbed & slewe all f. he myght, tyll f. he
came to Porke, and there he slewe a. 50.
men of armes, and an hundred priestes.
¶ Whā these tydynge came to f. king
he assembled a grete power, & went for
to fyghe with Harold of Denmarke, &
with his owne handes he slewe hym, &
the danes were discomfyted. And those
that were left alpye with moche sorow
fledde to theyr shippes. And thus kyng
Harold of Englonde slewe kyng Harold
of Denmarke.

Anno dñi. 1066. 1. xvi.

How Wyllyam bastard duke of Nor-
mandy came in to Englonde and slewe
kyng Harold.



And whā this batayle was done
Harold became so proude that
he wold no thyng parte w. his people

of any thyng þe he had gotten but herde
it all to hymselfe. Wherfore þe moost parte
of his people were wroth and departed
from hym / so that onely were left with
hym but his souldoyers. ¶ And upon a
daye as he sat at meet / a messenger ca-
me to hym & sayd that William bastard
duke of Normandy was arrayed in Eng-
lond with a grete host / & had taken all
the lond aboute Hallynges / & also im-
ped the castell. Whan þe kyng had herde
these thynges / he went thider with a
small power in all the haste þe he myght
for there was but fewe people left with
hym. And whan he was comen thider
he ordeyned to gyue batayle to the duke
Wyllyam. But þe duke asked hym of these
thynges / yf that he wolde haue his
doughter to wyfe as he had promysed &
sworne his othe / or that he wolde holde
the lond of hym in truage / or that he
wolde determyne this thyng in batayle.
This Harold was a proude man and a
stronge / & trusted moche in his strength
and fought with þe duke Wyllyam & his
people. But Harold and his men were
dismayed in that batayle / & hymselfe
there was slayn. And this batayle was
ended at Conbyrge in the seconde yere
of his regne / upon saynt Calixtes daye /
and so he was buryed at Walcham.

¶ Of kyng Wyllyam bastard / & how
he gouerned hym well and wysely / and
of the warre betwene hym & the kyng
of fraunce.

When Wyllyam bastard duke of
Normandy had conquered all þe
lond of Englonde / upon Chyris-
tmasse daye nexte folowynge he let hym
to be crowned kyng at Westmyster / &
was a wyse kyng / & gaue to englysh
men landes largely / & to his knyghtes.
And afterwarde he went ouer the see &

came in to Normandy / & there dwelled
a whyle. And in the seconde yere of his
regne he came agayne in to Englonde / &
brought to hym Maude his wyfe / & let
croune her quene of Englonde on whye-
sondaye. ¶ And than anon after þe kyng
of Scotland that was called Marcolyn
began to stryue & warre with the kyng
William. And he ordeyned hym toward
Scotland with his men bothe by lond
and by see for to destroye kyng Marcol-
yn. But they were accorded / & the kyng
of Scotland became his man / & herde
all his lond of hym. And kyng William
receyued of hym his homage and came
agayn in to Englonde. And whan kyng
William had reigned .xviij. yere / Maude
the quene dyed / on whome kyng Wyl-
lyam had begotten many fayre children /
that is to saye Robert Curtoys / William
Rous / Rycharde also that dyed / Henry
Bawliker / & Maude also that was the
erles wyfe of Bleynes / and other foure
fayre doughters. And after his wyfes
decease there began grete debate betwene
hym & Philipp the kyng of fraunce. But
at the last they were accorded. And than
dwelled þe kyng of Englonde in Normandy
/ & no man hym warred / & he no man
longe tyme. ¶ And the kyng of fraunce
sayd upon a daye in scoone of kyng Wil-
liam / þe he had longe tyme lyen in chyld-
bed / & longe tyme had rested hym there.
And this worde came to þe kyng of Eng-
lond where as he lay in Normandy at
Roen. And for this worde was he curi-
ously appayed / & also wondrous wroth toward
the kyng of fraunce / & swore by god that
whan he were aryisen fro chyldbodde he
wolde lyght a thousande candelis to the
kyng of fraunce. And anon let assemble
a grete host of Normans & of Englysh
men. And in the begynnyng of heruel
he came in to fraunce / and bent all the
townes that he came by throughe all the

and he sought to have all the shires
 that he myght thynge out of France / &
 as the last he toke the cite of London /
 & commaunded his people to bere thode &
 burne as moche as they myght / & hym
 self holpe thereto all þe myght in a good
 wyll. And there was grete hete what of
 fre that was so grete & of the sunne / þe
 was wonders hete / & suffred þe so þe
 became & fell in to a grete sickness. And
 when he sawe þe he was so sore seke / he
 assigned all Normandy to Robert Cur-
 sor & his sone / & all Englobe to William
 Rouz / & bequeathed to Henry Beaulerk
 all his tresour. And when he had thus
 done / he receyved all the sacramentes of
 holy chirche / & dyed the .xxij. yere of his
 regne / & lyeth at Cane in Normandy.

Anno domini. M. lxxvi.

Of Gregory the .vij. was pope after
 Alexander .xii. yere. This man
 ordeined a general synode / that no prest
 sholde haue a wyfe / ne shold dwell with
 women / but those that þe synode of Ni-
 cene & other decrees haue suffred. And
 than the prestes set lytell o: nought by
 his ordynauce. This man commaunded þe
 no mā sholde here masse of a prest þe had
 a concubine. And he on a certayne tyme
 as he was cardynall & legate of France
 proceded sharply agaynst prelates and
 prestes þe were symoners. And amonge
 ocher there was one bysshop that was
 grete samed in symony / & those þe accu-
 sed hym he hyed pryvely to save þe con-
 trary / the whiche þe legate conceyved / &
 afore all þe people he sayd. Let the iudges-
 ment of this man cease at this tyme / for
 it is deceyvable / & let god dispose for it / &
 sayd thus. It is certayne that þe dignite
 of a bysshop is the greuer of þe holy ghoost
 And who somer byeth a bysshop / the
 he agaynst the holy ghoost. Than yf

that bysshop dyd not agaynst the holy
 ghoost / say openly afore all the people
 Gloria patri et filio / et spiritui sancto.
 And many tymes he began to saye it /
 but he coude neuer speke spiritui sancto
 Than he was depose of his bysshop-
 ryche. And after he coude speke it well
 enough. ¶ Victor the thyrde was pope
 after hym one yere. And this man was
 poisoned in heny in þe chalyce. ¶ Uir-
 banus was pope after hym two yere.
 This man cursed the kynge of France
 for his aduourty. And he called a coun-
 seyle at Clari / in þe whiche he ordeyned
 that matyns of our lady sholde be sayd
 euery daye / and on Waterdaye her so-
 lempne masse. And it is sayd that this
 was shewed vnto the monkes of Char-
 terhous. ¶ Also he called an other coun-
 seyle at Turam / for the holy londe to be
 wonne agayn / & prouoked the people to
 that thynge. And within a lytell tyme
 after that the holy londe was recouered
 & the glorious sepulchre of our lord Je-
 su Christ / & Anthiochia in many other
 noble cytees were taken from þe handes
 of þe Saracyns. And it is sayd & men byle-
 ued that. ¶ C. M. chyrche men went to þe
 Journey. For there wente of states olde
 men & yonge / ryche & poore / & no man co-
 pelled them. And this passage was ma-
 de by þe visyon of our lady. And þe pyeces
 of this people were dyuers. One was
 Godfrey of Bollyon þe noblest man of all
 the worlde / & a vertuous man. And an
 ocher was Bemond þe duke of Naples.
 The thyrde was Hugh the kynges bro-
 der of France / & many other the whiche
 dyd full nobly for the sayth of god. And
 it were to longe in this boke to reherse
 the glorious actes that they dyd.

¶ Of kynge William Rouz that was
 kynge Wylliam bastardes sone / that
 destroyed towncs & houses of religyon

to make the new forest.

After this Wylliam baron
 righted his son Wylliam Roue
 this Wylliam was a wonderous con-
 trarious man to god & holy church & let all
 men & make þe town of Carderis that
 the parson had destroyed. This king
 Wylliam destroyed holy churches & they
 possessions in what place he myght fynd
 be there. And therefore there was so mo-
 re debate & sworne hym and the arch-
 bishop of Canterbury. And some by
 cause he repented hym of his wickedness
 that he destroyed holy church. And for þe
 cause þe kynge bore to hym grete wrath
 and therefore exiled hym out of this lode
 And the archbishop than went to the
 court of Rome & there dwelled with þe
 pope. And this kynge made the new
 forest and bestowen & destroyed all
 houses and lxxv. houses of religion all
 for to make his forest longer & broader &
 became wonderous proude & gladd of his
 lode & forest & of þe wyde beestes that
 were within it that it was interuaile to
 wyte that men called hym keeper of
 woods & pastours. And the longer that
 he lured the more wyked he became
 both to god & to all holy church & to all
 his men. And this kynge let make the
 grete hall of Westmyster. So upon a
 day at Wynter he helde therein his
 first feast & holoked aboute hym & sayd
 that þe hall was to lye by þe hall of
 the last he became so contrarious
 that all thyng þe pleased god displeased
 hym & all thyng þe god loved he hated
 deadly. And so it befell that he dreamed
 upon a night a lye that he was to be
 slayn by his own people & a grete quantite
 of blood & a lye of it to be by the
 water he was to be slayn by the water
 and the grete of the day he was to
 be slayn by the water & the grete

ment also. And when he awoke he was
 grete drede so that he wyl not to hat to
 do & tolde his drede to men of his coun-
 seyle & said that he had grete drede and
 supposed that to hym was some mys-
 chaunce to come. And þe second nyght
 before a monke dreamed of the household
 that the kynge went to a church with
 moche people & he was so proude that
 he despyled all þe people that were with
 hym and that he toke the ymage of the
 crucyfyre and shamefully bore it with
 his teth. And the crucyfyre mekly suf-
 fered all that he dyd. But the kynge as a
 wood man rent of the armes of the cru-
 cyfyre and kest it under his feet and de-
 fouled it and chieue it all abyde. And a
 grete flame of fyre came out of the crucy-
 fyre mouth. Of the which drede ma-
 ny men had grete meruayle & wonder.
 And the good man that had dreamed this
 strange drede tolde it to a knyght that
 was moost prey with the kynge of all
 men & the knyght was called Ham-
 mers. Soone the monke and he tolde the
 drede unto the kynge and sayd that it
 sholde betoken other thyng than good.
 And neuertheles þe king laughed therat
 & sayd that he sholde go & hunte and
 playe in the forest. And men counseyled
 hym that he sholde not go that daye for
 no maner thyng ne come in þe lode so
 that he abode at home before meet. But
 among as he had eten no man myght let
 hym but that he sholde go unto þe lode
 for to haue his dysporte. And so it befell
 that one of his knyghtes that byghte
 Walter Wyll was to haue shote to a
 grete batte & his arrowe glancid upon
 a brantche and through mylamentoure
 smote the kynge into the herte. And so
 he fell downe dead to the grounde with-
 out any word spekyng and so ended
 his lyfe days. And it was no meruayle

U.S. 3000 Vol. 93, 100 Vol.

Quill first pope after this cometh
xliij. yers and. d. monethes / the
whiche the xliij. yers of his byll hoppech
with his cardinals. Was put in ppyson
by the emperours Henry the fourth. And
they myght not be brynged tyll þe pope
had sworne þe he shoulde kepe peas with
hym / & that he shoulde nunt our kyng.
And on that promysse the pope gaue the
emperour a ppeuylge. And þe yers after
the pope dampned that ppeuylge / and
sayd on this wyse. Let vs comprehend
all holy scripture the olde testamēt & the
newe / the lawes & the pphetes / the gos-
pell & the canons of apostles / & all the de-
crees of the popes of Rome / that þe they
beloe I hold / & that that they dampne
I dampne / y moost specialy that ppeuyl-
ge graunted to Henry the emperour /
the whiche rather is graunted to benge
his mytye / than to multry his pape-
cy in vertue / for many more I dampne
that same ppeuylge.

**Colting like beautiful food that
from the kitchen of a white house
in the heart of the city.**

into the duke. And with good love the
kyng & the duke departed / and than the
duke went agayne into Normandy. And
when the yere were gone / through the
entertainment of the druppl & of lewde men
a grete debate arose betwene the kyng
and the duke / so that through counseyle
the kyng went ouer the see into Nor-
mandy. And when the kyng was comen
into Normandy / all the grete lordes of
Normandy turned unto þe kyng of Eng-
londe / and helde agaynst the duke they
owne lordes / & forsoke hym / pelyng them
unto the kyng / with all the good castels
& townes of Normandy. And soone after
was the duke taken & ledde to the kyng
into Englonde / and the kyng let put the
duke in to pylson. And this was þe ven-
grace of god. for when the duke was
in the holy londe / god gaue hym suche
myght & grace / that he was chosen for
to haue ben kyng of Jerusalem / and he
forsoke it / & wolde not take it vpon hym
And therfore god sence hym that shame
& despyte for to be put in to his brothers
pylson. That ceased kyng Henry all Nor-
mandy in to his handes / & helde it all his
lyfe tyme. And in the same yere came þe
bysshop Antichure from þe court of Rome
into Englonde agayne. And the kyng &
he were accorded. And in þe yere nexte
comynge after there began a grete be-
tare betwene kyng Philipp of Fraunce
and kyng Henry of Englonde. Wherfore
kyng Henry went into Normandy / and
there was wedde made betwene them
two. And than dyed the kyng of Fraunce
and his sonne his sonne was made kyng
and after his deche. And than went
kyng Henry agayne into Englonde / &
marryed his daughter to Henry
the emperour of Mayne. And in the
yere 1181. a grete debate was betwene kyng
Henry of Englonde and kyng Henry of

Englonde / & how kyng Henryes two
sones were drowned in the hye see.

When kyng Henry had ben kyng
xviij. yere / a grete debate arose
betwene kyng Lewis of Fraunce
& kyng Henry of Englonde / by cause
the kyng had sente in to Normandy to
his men that they shold be helpynge in
to the erle of Bloys as moche as they
myght in warre agaynst the kyng of
Fraunce / & that they shold be as redy to
hym as they were to theyr owne lordes
for by cause that þe erle had spoused his
syster dame Maude. And for this cause
the kyng of Fraunce dyd moche sorowe to
Normandy. Wherfore þe kyng of Eng-
londe was wondrous wrothe / & in haste
went ouer the see with a grete power
and came in to Normandy for to defende
that londe. And þe warre betwene them
lasted two yere / tyll at the last they two
fought togyder / and the kyng of Fraunce
was dyscomfyred / and escaped awaye
with moche payne / and the moost parte
of his men were dyscomfyred and taken
And the kyng dyd with them his plea-
sure / & some of them he let go frely / and
some he let put to dech. But afterwarde
the two kynges were accorded. When
kyng Henry had boolly all the londe of
Normandy & dyscomfyred his enemyes
of Fraunce / he returned agayne in to Eng-
londe with moche honour. And his two
sones William & Rycharde wolde haue
comen after theyr fader & went to the see
with a grete company of people. But of þe
they might come to lode þe shyppe stode
agaynst a roche & brake in peces / & were
all drowned þe were therein / saue one man
þe was in þe same shyppe þe escaped. And
this was on saynt Katherynes daye / &
these were þe names of the þe were drown-
ed. William & Rycharde þe kynges sones
the erle of Chester Ottonell / his brother

William the first / Walter the first / Robert
archbishop the kinges daughter / & sister
of perches / & hys niece / & countesse
of Chester / & many other. When kynge
Henry & other lordes arrived in england
and heard these tydings / they made so
greate ymough / & all they myght & force
was turned into mournynge & sorow.

How Maude & emperesse came agayne
in to england / & how she was afterward
wedded to Gellrey the erle of Angre.

And when thes yere were gone
that the erle had dwelled with
king / the erle went from king & began
to marre hys hym / & dyd moche harme
in the londe of Normandy / & toke there
a stronge castell / & there he dwelled all
yere. And than came to hym tydings
that Henry the emperour of Maynyn &
had spoused Maude his daughter was
dead / & that she dwelled no longer in
Maynyn / & that she shoulde come agayne
in to Normandy to her fader. And when she
was comen unto hym / he toke her than
to hym & came agayne in to Englonde / &
made & englyshmen to do othe & feaute
unto the emperesse. And & first man that
made the othe was William the arche
bysshop of Canturbury / and that other
David king of Scotlande / & after hym
all the lordes and barons of Englonde.
And also after that the noble erle of Angre
a boychy knyght sent unto the king of
Englonde & he shoulde graunte hys to have
his daughter Maude & emperesse to wyfe.
And because & her fader dyd & he was
a noble man / the kynge graunted hym / &
consented thereto. And than toke he his
daughter & ladde her in to Normandy / &
came to & noble knyght Gellrey / & there
he spoused & lady Maude in moche
honour. And the erle begate upon her a
son & was called Henry & emperesse son.

And after told all this was done / King
Henry dwelled all yere in Normandy.
And after that a longe tyme a grievous
sickness toke hys wyfe through he dyed.
And this king Henry reigned .xxv. yere
and .iiij. monethes. His herte was bu-
ryed in the grette churche of our lady in
Norm. And his body was brought with
moche honour in to Englonde / and bu-
ryed in the abbey of Redynge of & whiche
he was founder.

Incitus & fourth was emperour
in Maynyn after Henry the chyld
xv. yere. This man put his owne fader
in prison / & thre helde hym tyll he dyed.
He toke pope Pascall in his cardynalles
and pylowed them / as is sayd afore / for
the whiche cause (as it is supposyd) he
lacked yllie. For he wedded the kinges
daughter of Englonde Maude. But af-
terwarde he came to grace / and all the
lawes of the churche he resygned frey
to Calixte the pope / and besought hym
to grue hym in penance that he shoulde
never come agayne to his empyre / that
he myght have remysyon of his tres-
pace. And after the oppayn of many a
man / he was wythfully excused / and bothe
he and his wyfe dyed at Chester in Eng-
londe. Calixtus was pope after Pas-
call two yere / and fledde from Henry the
emperour in to Burgoyne / and there de-
cessed. This emperour chose Benedicte
a Spanyarde to be pope / the whiche
scone was Calixtus. Calixtus was
pope after hym two yere and four mo-
nethes. This Calixtus was the sonne of
the duke of Burgoyne / and was chosen
in the place of Calixtus. And when he
shoulde come to Rome / he toke & lorde
Benedictus / and made hym to ryde a-
fore hym shamefully. For he on a mule
turned his face to the taylor of & made
hys the taylor in his hande as a byrdell.

tyll he came through the city: & then he
was put in prison. And the pope made
pope with the emperor. **C**lement
was pope after hyen two yere & tyen of
hym as hyen. **C**lement the
fourth Emperor of Germany decessed
this tyme & was buried with his pro-
genyours after some men with suche
an epitaph. *Almus hic pater hic. aumus
hic. proamus iacer hic.* But it is lyhly
to be truer that *¶* Gerald sayth in *Itiner-
ario hibernie*. Where he sayth that after
he had prysoned his carnall fader & his
spirituall fader the pope with his car-
dynals after he was reconciled & wyl-
fully he was exiled. And he left *Maude*
his wyfe the kynges daughter of Eng-
londe pryncesse and lyued an heremytes
lyfe at *Chestre*. x. yere. Where he myght
lyue as no man myght hym. & he called
hys self *Godscallus* the whiche godson
is called. So the emperour went secretly
ly awayne and *Maude* his wyfe the em-
pyesse went to her fader Henry into *Normandy*
where anon after she was wed-
ded unto *Geffrey plantagenet* the duke
of *Anbeganie* / vpon whome he begate
Henry the seounde that afterwarde was
kyng of Englonde vnder whome saynt
Thomas of Caisterbury reigned & dyed.
Lotharius was emperour after Hen-
ry the fourth. xii. yere. And tyell of hym
as hyen / but that he was manerly to
the church / and that he suborned *Roger*
the usurper of the kyngdom of *Cypry*.
Hygo de lancia Victor was a noble
man this tyme at *Barry* and a noble
doctor of *¶* naryon of *Barry*. **C** The
tyde of saynt *John baptyst* at *Jerusa-
lem* began this tyme by *¶* worshipfull
man *Raymond* myghtyly disposed be-
to the workers of mercy. All this tyme
made they wyte to sette poore men.

¶ Anno domini. M. C. xlii.

Innocentius was pope after *Ma-
nusius*. xlii. yere & lii. monethes
This man was a very deuout man &
with suche men he charyged hym. And
he had *steph*. vii. yere agaynst *¶* of
Lyons & whiche named hym *Innocent*
& by strength he toke the paperye the
whiche *Innocent* saith & to the galyes
fledde in to *France* & was worshipfully
receyued of saynt *Bernard* the whiche
that tyme had all the kynges & prynces
in his handes / and he puched them for
to hyng this pope *Innocent* in to his
dignite agayn. At *¶* last all thyng was
cessed / and his enemyes were destroyed
through the iudgement of god & he was
pope agayn / and lyued profitably / and
was buried at saynt *John de Larran*.

C How Stephen *¶* was kyng Henrys
systers sone was made king of englonde.

After this kyng Henry that was
the first was made kyng his
nawen his sisters sone Stephen eric of
Bolloyne. For anon as he herde the ty-
dynges of his vncler deith he passed the
see & came in to Englonde through coun-
seyle and helpe of many grete lordes of
Englonde (agaynst they othe that they
had made to *Maude* the empyesse) toke
the realme & let crowne Stephen kyng
of the londe. And the archbishop *Wyl-
iam* of *Caisterbury* that first made the
othe of *laute* to *Maude* the empyesse let
the crowne vpon Stephens heed / and
hym anoynted & byshop *Roger* of *Was-
tbury* maynteyned the kynges party
in as moche as he might. The first yere
that kyng Stephen began to regne / he
assembled a grete hoost & went towarde
Scotlonde for to haue warred vpon the
kyng of *Scotlonde*. But he came agaynst
hym in pees and in good maner / and to
hym trusted / but he made to hym none

pynge. he ad made ad he had made
 him þe myghty knyght. And in þe fourth
 yere of his reigne ad was the emperesse
 married to England. And then began he
 to be kyng. Kyng Stephen & ad was
 the emperesse. This ad was then to the
 title of Richard & the kyng her selfe
 longe tyme & myght not speke. In this
 tyme was kepte & defended. And those þe
 were win þe cite subtilly escaped alwaye
 without ony manner of harme. And than
 toke þe kyng þe cite & dwelled therein tyll
 Candelmas. And than came þe barons þe
 helpe to the emperesse. that is to saye. the
 erle Randulph of Cheytre. the erle Robert
 of Glocestre. Hugh Bygge. Roberte of
 Glosap. & these brought with them a
 stronge powder. & fought to the kyng. &
 gaue hy a stronge batayle. in þe whiche
 batayle kyng Stephen was taken. and
 set in pryson in the castell of Wyke.

How Gaude the emperies Wente fro
Wynchestre unto Oxfoyd / and after she
escaped to Walyngford / of the sorowes
and dyscase that she had.

Whan kyng Stephen was taken &
 brought in to worde in the castell
 of Byssowe / this Gaude the emperesse
 was made lady of all Englonde and all
 men helde her for lady of the londe. But
 those of Kent helde to kyng Stephens
 wyfe / & also William of Wyce & his re-
 tynur helped them / and helde warre a-
 gaynst Gaude the emperesse. And anon
 after þ kyng of Scotland came to them
 with an huge nobre of people. And than
 went they togider to Winchester where
 as the emperesse was / & wolde haue ta-
 ken her. But the erle of Gloucester came
 with his power & saught with them.
 And the emperesse in the meane tyme þ
 the batayls were escaped from them / &
 went unto Oxford / and there helde her.

And so that he was in the mid of the
winter withouten a shewe. And by hym
many other lecher. And his best acquir-
rance was a wyge. And then he putte
out of poynt. And when he was depur-
red out of poynt / he thowte that he
durst be before the emperor & then
that he durst. And he synged and cryed
for synners sake. And thus he was
tyme. And then he shawed to the
all in white cloth / for he was the
holme was he dwelleth. For in the same
tyme was moche snowe so he escaped
by the Emperour from her enemyes. And
from thence he went to Walsyngham
there he dwelleth. And the kynge wolde
haue besyged her / but he had so moche
to do with the erle Randolf of Chester /
and with Hugh Bigot & strongly war-
red upon hym in every place & he wold
not whether for to turne. And the erle of
Gloucester holpe hym with his power.

¶ Both Gaulryde the erle of Angou-
gane hies Henry the emperours done
all Normandy.

Aftir this the kyngc went
into Wylton / and woode haue
made a castell there. But than came to
him the erle of Gloucester with a stronge
powre / & there almost he had taken the
kyngc / but yet the kyngc escaped with
moche payne / & William Martell then
was taken / and for whose deliuerance
they gaue vnto the erle of Gloucester
the good castell of Wykeham that he had
taken. And when this was done / & erle
Robert & all the kynges enemyes went
into Farington / & began there to make
a stronge castell. But & kyngc came there
with a stronge powre & shoue hym
thens. And in & same yere the erle Ham-
bulf of Cheshire was accorded with the
kyngc / and came vnto the court at his

transferrid. And the erle of Norwiche safely
to come. & the kyng aunter let take up
and put hym in prison. & myght neuer
for no thyng come out. till that he had
payed up to þe kyng þe castell of Richhill
the whiche he had taken from the kyng
with his strength in the. xv. yere of his
regne. And Gaufrey the erle of Ango
gave up to Henry his sone all Norman-
dy. And in þe yere nexte folowynge dyed
the erle Gaufrey. And anone Henry his
sone returned agayne to Ango. & there
was made erle with moche honour of
his men of þe londe. & to hym dyd feaute
and homaige the moost parte of þe londe.
And than was this Henry the emperesse
sone erle of Ango. and also duke of Nor-
mandy. ¶ In the same yere was made
a bywyle bytwene the kyng of Fraunce
and the quene his wyfe that was right
heyr of Gascoyne. for bycause þe it was
known & proued that they were synne
and nye of blode. And than spoused her
Henry the emperesse sone erle of Ango &
duke of Normandy & duke of Gascoyne.
¶ In the. xviii. yere of this Stephen
this Henry came into Englonde with a
stronge power. & began to warre vpon
this kyng Stephen. and toke the castell
of Bamesbury. and dyd moche harme
And the kyng Stephen had so moche
warre. that he wylt not whether for to
go. But at the last they were accorded
through the archebysshop Theobalde
and oher worthy lordes of Englonde.
vpon this condicyon. that they sholde de-
parte the realme of Englonde bytwene
them. so that Henry the emperesse sone
sholde holly haue the halfe of all þe londe
of Englonde. And thus they were accor-
ded and peas was cryed through out all
Englonde. And whan the accorde was
made bytwene those two lordes. kyng
Stephen became very soyr for bycause
that he had lost halfe Englonde. & fell in

to such a malady that he dyed in þe. xix.
yere and. viij. wykes. & .v. dayes of his
regne. all in trouble & warre. & he lyeth
in the abbey of Fowerham. the whiche
he let make in the. vi. yere of his regne.

Celestinus the seconde was pope
after Innocent. .b. monethes. & ly-
tell he dyd. ¶ Lucius was after hym. &
lytell prospered. for they dyed bothe in a
pestilence. ¶ Eugenius þe seconde was
pope after hym. .v. yere & .iiij. monethes
This man fyrst was þe discypyle of saynt
Bernarde. and after the abbot of saynt
Anastasy by Rome. & came to þe churche
of saynt Cesary. & was chosen pope by
the cardynals. he no thyng knowynge
therof. and for drede of the senatours he
was consecrated without the cite. This
man was an holy man. & suffred tribu-
lacyon. And at the last w moche helynes
he decessed. and lyeth at saynt Peters.
And anone after decessed saynt Bernard.
¶ Petrus Lombardus the byshop of
Parys. broder to Gratian compiled the
foure boke of the sentence this tynt.
¶ Petrus comestor broder to Gratian &
to Dyers Lombarde made historia scro-
lastica. & oher boke. ¶ Fredericus pri-
mus after Conradus was emperour in
Almayn and in Rome. cccij. yere. This
man after the dech of Inocent the pope
the whiche crowned hym. dyd curtelly
with Alexander to hym grete preeudice
for he dyd helpe foure þe troue agaynst
the apostles sect. And he fought mighte-
ly agaynst the kyng of Fraunce through
power of þe danes & oher natrons. But
Richard the kyng of Englonde holpe for
to repulse him. And he destroyed Aedun-
land to the groude. of the whiche cite þe
walles were hyer than þe walles of any
oher cite. This man at þe last after that
he had done many betracions to þe pope
he was recorsed. for he dydde lest the

hundredth yere. And when he was crowned agaynst hym. he asked for gyftes of the pope. & gave þe cross upon hym. & went to þe holy londe. & dyd many mercurious thinges there. almost as moche as ever dyd Alexander magnus. And there he came by a towne that men called Armeniam. & in a lytell water he was drowned. & at Cæsarea he was buried. Anastasius was pope after Eugenius. iiii. yere and more. This man was abbot of Ruff. & than he was chosen cardynall. & after pope.

Of kynge Henry the seconde that was the emperesse sone. in whose tyme saynt Thomas of Caunterbury was chaunceler.

After this kynge Stephen reigned Henry the emperesse sone and was crowned of the archebysshop Theobald the. xviij. daie before Chystmasse. And in þe same yere Thomas Becket of London archebysshop of Caunterbury was made the kynges chaunceler of Englonde. The second yere þe he was crowned he let cast downe all the newe castels that were longynge to þe crowne the whiche kynge Stephen had gyuen to dyuers men. & them had made erles and barons for to holde with hym. & to helpe hym agaynst Henry the emperesse sone. And the fourth yere of his regne he put vnder his owne lordshipp þe kyng of Wales. And in the same yere þe kynge of Scotlande had in his owne handes. that is to saye. the cyte of Darleill. the castell of Bamburgh. & the newe castell upon Tyne. & the erldom of Lancastre. The same yere the kyng with a grete power went into Wales. & let cast downe wodes & made wayes. & made stronge the castell of Rutlande Basingwerke. & amonge the castels he made an house of the temple. And in the same yere was

Richard his sone boine that afterward was erle of Oxforde. And þe fourth yere of his regne he made Gauntre erle of Wyrtayn. And in that yere he chaunged his money. And in the. vi. yere of his regne he laboure a grete hoost to Colouise and conquered it. And the. viij. yere of his regne dyed Theobald the archebysshop of Caunterbury. And than almost at the cite of Caunterbury throughe myschance was burnt. The. ix. yere of his regne Thomas Becket that was his chaunceler was chosen archebysshop of Caunterbury. And vpon saynt Bernardes daie he was shered. And in þe yere was boine the kynges daughter Elenore. And in the. x. yere of his regne saynt Edward the kyng was translated in moche honour. And the. xi. yere of his regne he helde his parlyament at Northampton. and fro thens fled saynt Thomas archebysshop of Caunterbury for the grete debate that was bytwene þe kyng & hym. for yf he had ben founde on þe morowe he had be sayne. & therfore he fled thens to thre felowes on fote onely. that no man wold where he was. & went ouer þe see to þe pope of Rome. And this was þe pynnyll cause. for as moche as the kyng wolde haue put clerkes to deeth þe were atteynted of felony. without any pteuplege of holy churche. And the. xii. yere of his regne was John his sone boine. And þe xiii. yere of his regne dyed Maude þe emperesse þe was his moder. The. xiiii. yere of his regne the duke of Baron spoused Maude his daughter. & he begate vpon her thre sones. þe is to say. Henry. Richard & William. And þe. xv. yere of his regne dyed the good erle Robert of Glocestre þe founded the abbey of Bonnes of Eton. And in þe same yere Warke kyng of Jerusalem conquered Babylon. And the. xvi. yere of his regne. he let crowne his sone Henry at Westmynster. & by crowne

ned Roger the archebysshop of Yorke/ in
harmyng of Thomas the archebysshop
of Caüterbury/ wherfoze the same Ro-
ger was accursed of the pope.

Of kynge Henry þ was sone of kynge
Henry the emperesse sone/ & of the debate
that was bytwene hym and his fader/
whyle that he was in Normandy.

After the coronacion of kynge Hen-
ry the sonne of kynge Henry the
emperesse sone/ that same Henry the em-
peresse sone went ouer in to Normandy/ &
there he let mary Elonore his doughter
to the Dolfyn þ was kynge of Almayn.
¶ And in the. vii. yere that the archebys-
shop saynt Thomas had ben outlawed
the kynge of Fraunce made the kynge &
saynt Thomas accorded. And thā came
Thomas þ archebysshop of Caüterbu-
ry agayn to his owne chyrche. And this
accorde was made in the begynnynge of
aduent. And afterward he was slayne &
martyred the fyfth daye of Chyztmasse
next folowynge. For king Henry thought
bpon saynt Thomas the archebysshop
bpon Chyztmasse day as he sate at his
meet and these wordes said. That yf he
had ony good knyghtes w hym/ he had
ben many a daye passed auenged bpon þ
archebysshop Thomas. And anone syz
Wyllm Breton/ syz Hugh Moruyle/ syz
Wyllam Tracy/ & syz Reynold fies byle-
bers sone in englyshe/ pryncely went to
the see and came in to Englonde vnto the
chyrche of Caüterbury/ & there they hþ
martyred at saynt Benets awter/ in the
moder chyrche. And that was in þ yere
of þ incarnacyon of Jesu Chyzt. M. C.
lxxi. yere. ¶ And anone after Henry the
newe kynge began to make warre bpon
Henry his fader and bpon his brethern
Wyllam & Othus. And so bpon a daye
the kynge of Fraunce & all þ kynges sones

and the kynge of Scotland/ & the gretest
lordes of Englonde were rylen agaynst
kynge Henry the fader. And at þ last as
god wolde he cōquered all his enemyes
And the kynge of Fraunce & he were accor-
ded. And than sent kynge Henry þ fader
specyally vnto the kynge of Fraunce/ and
prayed hym hertely for his loue that he
wolde sende to hym the names by lettre
of them þ were þ begynnners of þ warre
agaynst hym. And the kynge of Fraunce
sent agayn to hym by lettre þ names of
them that began the warre. The fyrt
was John his sone & Rycharde his bro-
der/ and Henry the newe kynge his sone.
Thā was kynge Henry wondrous wroth
& cursed þ tyme þ euer he begate them.
And whyle the warre lasted/ Henry his
sone the newe kynge dyed/ soze repen-
tyng his mysdores/ and moost sorowe
made of ony man/ for bycause of saynt
Thomas deth of Caüterbury/ & prayed
his fader with moche sorowe of herte
mercy for his trespase. And his fader
forgaue hym/ and had of hym pite. And
after he dyed þ. xxxvi. yere of his regne
and lyeth at Redyng.

How þ chrysten men lost þ holy londe
in the foresayd kynges tyme through a
fals chrysten man þ became a sarasyn.

Ad whyle this kynge reigned the
grete batayle was in þ holy lode
bytvene þ chrysten men & the sarasyns
but the chrysten men were there slayne
through grete treason of þ erle Tyre þ
wolde haue had to wyfe þ quene of Je-
rusalem/ þ somtyme was Baldewyns
wyfe/ but she forsoke hym/ & toke to her
lord a knyght a worthy man þ was cal-
led syz Gynperches. Wherfoze the erle
Tyre was wroth & went anone righte
to Baladyne þ was soudan of Babylon
& became his man/ & forsoke his churche

dom / & all chryſten lawe. And the chryſt
men dyd not of his dedes / but wende
for to haue had grete helpe of hym as they
were wont to haue befor. And whan
they came to the batayle / this ſaiſ chryſ-
ſten man turned to the ſaracyng / & for-
ſoke his owne nacyon. And ſo were the
chryſt men ouercomen w the ſaracyng.
And thus were the chryſten men ſlayne
and put to horryble deſth / and the cite of
Jeruſalem deſtroyed / and þ holy croſſe
borne awaye. ¶ The kynge of Fraunce &
all the grete lordes of the londe let them
be croſſed for to go to the holy londe. And
amonge them went Rycharde kyng Hen-
ryes ſone fyrſt after the kyng of Fraunce
that toke the croſſe of þ archebyſſhop of
Tours. But he toke not þ vpage at that
tyme / for bycauſe þ he was let by other
maner wayes & nedes to be done. And
whan king Henry his fader had regned
xxvi. yere & v. monethes & foure dayes
he dyed / and lyeth at Founteneuere.

¶ Anno dñi. m. c. lvi.

Adrianus the fourth was pope
after Inaſtaſius. v. yere. ¶ This
pope was an Engliſſhe man / and the
voyce of the comyn people ſayth he was
a bondman to the abbot of ſaint Albons
in Englonde. And whan he deſyred to be
made a monke there / he was expulſed /
and he went ouer the ſee / & gaue hym to
ſtudy & to vertue / and after was made
byſſhop of Albanatens. ¶ Than he was
made legate in to the londe of Wozma-
cian / & he conuerted it to the ſayth. ¶ Than
he was made pope. And for þ wouþyng
of a cardynall he enterdited all the cite of
Rome. And he curſed Wyllyam þ kyng
of Cetyle / & cauſed hym to ſubmyt hym
¶ This man the fyrſt of all the popes with
his cardynalles dwelled in the olde cite.
¶ Alexander the thyrde was pope after
þ. xij. yere. ¶ This Alexander had ſtryfe

xxij. yere / & the foure ſtryuers that the
emperour ſet againſt hym / he ouercame
them / & curſed them / & all dyed an euyl
deſth. ¶ This man alſo accorded Frederyk
the emperour & Emanuel of Coſtancy-
nople / & the kyng of Siculox. And this
man nouriſhed ſaynt Thomas of Cau-
terbury in his exile. ¶ Nota. ¶ Saynt
Bernard was canonized by this Alex-
ander / & his abbot forbade hym þ he ſholde
do no more miracles / bycauſe there was
ſo myghty concourſe of people. And he
obeyed to hym whan he was deed / and
dyd no moo. ¶ Lucius the thyrde was
pope after Alexander. iij. yere and two
monethes / & of hym lytel is wyrtten. In
his dayes deſcelled Henry þ fyrſt ſone to
Henry þ ſecond / & this is his epytaphe.
Dis honoris honos: decor: & decus: bybis
et orbis. Militie ſplendor: glia lumen aper.
Iulius ingenio: virtutib⁹ hector. Achil-
lis virib⁹. Auguſt⁹ morib⁹. Die Paris.
¶ Urban⁹ þ thyrde was pope after Lu-
cius. ij. yere. ¶ This mā deſcelled for ſorrow
whan he herd tell þ Jeruſale was take
with þ ſaracyng. ¶ Gregorius the. viij.
was pope after hym foure monethes / &
he practyſed myghtely how Jeruſalem
myght be wonne agayne / but anone he
deſcelled. ¶ Clemens þ thyrde was pope
after hym thre yere / & lytel he dyd.

¶ Of kyng Rycharde that conquered all
the holy that chryſten men had loſt.

After this kyng Henry regned
Rycharde his ſone / whiche was
a ſoute man & a ſtrong and a worthy
and alſo bolde. And he was crowned at
Weſtmynſter of the archebyſſhop Wal-
deuyn of Caſterbury / the thyrde daye
of September. And the ſeconde yere of
his regne kyng Rycharde hymſelfe and
Waldeuyn the archebyſſhop of Caun-
terbury / and Hubert byſſhop of Salys

bury and Randulfe erle of Glocestre and many other lordes of Englonde went in to the holy londe. And in that wyse de-
 scended the archebysshop of Caüterbury. And kynge Rycharde went before in to the holy londe and rested not tyl that he came forth in his wyse vnto Cypers / & toke it with grete force. And after that kynge Rycharde went forth to ward the holy londe / and gate there as moche as the chrysten men had lost before / & conquered the londe agayne throughe grete myght / saue onely the holy crosse. And whan kynge Rycharde came to the cite of Acres for to gete the cite / there arose a grete debate betwene hym & the kynge of fraunce / so that the kynge of fraunce went agayn in to fraunce / & was wroth towarde kynge Rycharde. But yet for all that oz kynge Rycharde wente agayne he toke the cite of Acres. And whan he had taken it / he dwelled in þe cite a whyle. But to hym came tydynges that þe erle John of Oxford his broder wolde haue leased all Englonde in to his handes / & Normandy also / & wolde crowne hym selfe kynge of all the londe. Whan kynge Rycharde herde these tydynges he came toward Englonde with all þe speede that he myght. But the duke of Ostryche mette with hym / & toke hym & brought hym vnto þe emperour of Almayn. And the emperour put hym in prysen. And afterward he was deliuered for an huge raunsom / that is to saye / an hondred. 99. pounde. For the whiche raunsom to be payed eche other chalice of Englonde was molten & made in to money. And all the monkes of the ordre of Cisteraux gaue all theyr bookes throughe out all Englonde for to be solde / for to paye the raunsom.

¶ How kynge Rycharde came agayn from þe holy londe / and auenged hym on his enemyes.

¶ Whyles this kynge Rycharde was in prysen / the kynge of fraunce warred vpon hy strongly in Normandy. And John his broder warred vpon hym in Englonde. But þe bysshops and barons of Englonde withstode hym with all þe power that they myght gete and toke the castell of Wyndesore & other castelles. And the foresayd John sawe that he had no might ne power agaynst the barons of Englonde for to fyght / but anone wente hym ouer the see vnto the kynge of fraunce. And whan kynge Rycharde came out of prysen and was deliuered & came in to Englonde / anone after Candelmasse in grete haste he went vnto Notyngham / & the castell of Nottingham to hym was yded. And than discomfyted he his broder John and all those that held with hym. And after he went vnto the cite of Wynechestre / and there he let hym to be crowned kynge of Englonde. And after he went vnto Normandy for to warre vpon the kynge of fraunce. And whan the kynge of fraunce herde that he came with syue hondred knyghtes toward Sylors. And kynge Rycharde mette hym and wolde haue gyuen hym batayle. But the kynge of fraunce anone fledde / and an hondred of his knyghtes were taken / & two hondred horses that were trapped with hym. ¶ And anone after went kynge Rycharde for to besyge the castell Gaylard. And vpon a daye as he rode by the castell for to take auysment of the castell / one of the arbalastres smote hym with a quarrell that was enuynmed. And kynge Rycharde drew out the haffe of the quarrell but the quarelles heed abode styll in his heed / and it began for to rankle / that he myght not helpe hymselfe ne meue his armes. And whan he wytt that he had dethe wounde vpon hym / and that he myght not be hole for no maner thyngs

he commaunded among all his men sharply
to assaile the castell. so þe castell was
take as þe dyed. & so many his men dyd
that all were taken þe were won. And the
kyng dyd wth them his wyf & commaunded
his men to byge before h^{is} the man þe so
had wounded hym. And whan he came
before hym the kyng asked hym what
was his name. And he said my name is
Bertra gurdon. Wherfore (sayd þe kyng)
hast þe slayne me / syth I dyd þe neuer no
harne. Sp^{er} sayd he. though ye dyd me
neuer none harne / ye pour selfe wth pour
handes slewe my fader & my broder. & I
therfore haue quyte you now pour tra-
uayle. Than sayd kyng Rycharde he þe
dyed vpon þe crosse to byge manes soule
fro þe paynes of hell / forgyue þe my deth /
& I also forgyue it the. Than he commaun-
ded þe no man shold mysdo hym. But for
all þe kynges defending / some of his men
folowed hym / & priuely slewe hym. And
the. vii. daye after þe kyng dyd shewe h^{is}
& soze repented hym of his mysdoes / &
was houseled & anoynted / & had regned
but. ix. yere &. xxxix. Weekes / & dyed and
lyeth besyde his fader at Fouenteuard.

Henricus the fyfth was emperour
viij. yere. This Henry was sone
to Frederik / & he wedded Constans the
kinges doughter of Cecile. And through
the occasion of her he subdued all þe king-
dom of Apulie / & droue out all þe inhaby-
tantes therof. Celestinus the thyrde
was pope after Clemes almost. iij. yere
This man was crowned on easter daye
& the day folowynge he crowned Henry þe
emperour / & he made a palays at saynt
Peters / & decessed. Innocencius the
thyrde was pope after hym. viij. yere &
b. monethes. This mā was well lettered
& he made a boke of the wyrtchednes of
manes condicyon. And he made speculū
mille / and he made many cōstitucyons.

This man dampned the boke of John
Tostum the whiche he made agaynst
master Peters Lombard the maker of
the sentence. This tyme decessed the
emperour Henry / and the prynces of Al-
mayn dyscorded / for some chose Otto / &
some chose Philip broder to Henry. Thā
Philip was falsly slayne / & Otto was
crowned of Innocent in Fraunce / þe whi-
che anone gaue barayle to the Romans
bycause they gaue hym no due honour.
And for þe cause agaynst the popes wyll
he toke þe kyngdom of Apulie from Fre-
derik / wherfore the pope cursed hym.
Than after the fourth yere of his regne
the prynces of Almayn made Frederik
emperour / and victoriously he subdued
Otto. William of Baris this tyme
began the orde of þe freres Austyns the
whiche ben called freres mendicantes.
Franciscus an prayan a man of grete
perfeccyon / and an ensample to many a
man dyd many a myracle this tyme / &
he ordeyned the freres minours. And
the. vii. yere of pope Innocent the thyrde
the orde of the freres prechours began
vnder Dominik / but it myght not be cō-
fermed tyll the fyft yere of Honorius.

Of kyng John that in the fyft yere
of his regne lost all Normandy.

Because kyng Rycharde had none
heyrer sone ne doughter after his
deth they made John his broder king / &
crowned h^{is} at Westmynster by Hubert
the archebysshop of Caunterbury. And
whan he began to regne / he became so
meruaylous a man þe went ouer in to
Normandy / & warred vpon þe kyng of
Fraunce. And so longe they warred toge-
der tyll at þe last kyng John lost all Nor-
mandy & Angre / wherfore he was soze
anoyed / & it was no meruayle. Than let
he assemble before h^{is} at London arche-

bisshops/bisshops/abbottes & priours
erles & barons & heide there a grete par
tyment & asked there of the clergy the
tench of euery churche of Englonde for to
conquere Normandy and Angeo agayn
that he had lost. They wolde not graunte
that theyge. Wherfore he was wondrous
wooth. **A**n þ same tyme dyed Hubert
Than the priour & the couent of Caun-
terbury chole agaynst the kynges Wyll
to be archbisshop mayster Stephen of
Langton a good clerke that dwelled at
the court of Rome/ and sent to the pope
they electyon. And the pope confirmed
it & sacred hym at Witerbi. Whan the
kyng wyll of these tydynges/ he was
wondrous wothe & droue the priour &
the couet fro Caüterbury & exiled them
out of the londe/ & comaunded þ no lettre
nor comaundement that came fro Rome
wolde be receyued ne pleted in Englobe.
Whan þ pope herd this/ he sent to kyng
John his lettres & prayed þþ lounyngly
to receyue Stephen the archbisshop of
Caüterbury to his churche & suffice the
priour & his monkes to come agayne to
they oþone dwellinge. But the kyng
wolde not graunte it for no thyng.

Chow kyng John wolde no thyng do
for þ popes comaundement/ wherfore all
Englonde was enterdyed & suspended.

And at the last þ pope sent by his
auctorite & enioyned to the bys-
shops of Englonde/ þ yf the kyng wolde
not receyue the priour of Caüterbury &
his monkes/ that they shold do genrall
enterdytyng through out all Englonde
& graunted full power to foure bysshops
to pronouce the enterdytynge yf it were
neede. The fyrst was bysshop Wyllyam
of London & that other bysshop Eustace
of Ely/ the thyrde was bysshop Walter
of Wyndchestre & þ fourth was bysshop
Gyles of Hereford & these iiii. bysshops

prayed þ kyng knetyng on they knees
& soe wepyng that he wolde do þ popes
comaundement & shewd hym the popes
bulles off enterdytyng. But for no pryce
þ they myght praye he wolde not consent
thereto. Wherfore þ bysshops seynge this
departed thens & on þ moxwe of þ An-
nūciacyon of our lady they pronouced þ
generall enterdytyng through all Eng-
londe/ so þ the churche dozes were shette.
Whan þ enterdytyng was pronouced þ
kyng for angre toke the foure bysshops
londes in to his handes & all þ clergy of
englobe & ordeyned men to kepe it & the
clerkes myght not haue they tytyng.
Wherfore þ bysshops cursed all them þ
shold medle w the goodes of holy churche
agaynst þ Wyll of þ owners. Than the
iiij. bysshops seynge þ malice of þ kyng
went ouer þ see to Rome & came to þ ar-
chebisshop of Caüterbury & tolde þþ all
thyng. And þ archbisshop bad them re-
turne agayn to Caüterbury & he wolde
eyther come or sende to them in his stede
þ shold do as moche as yf he hysself were
there. And whan þ bysshops herde this
they returned agayne in to Englonde &
came to Caüterbury. The tydynges ca-
me to þ kyng þ the bysshops were come
agayn to Caüterbury & hymself might
not come thider þ tyme/ he sente thider
bysshops/erles & abbots for to treat w
them þ the kyng sholde receyue þ arch-
bisshop Stephen & the priour & all the
monkes of Caüterbury & þ he shold ne-
uer after þ tyme no thyng take of holy
churche agaynst þ Wyll of them þ owerth
the goodes & þ the kyng shold make full
amendes to them/ of whom he had ony
goodes take & þ holy churche shold haue
all fraunchyse as freforþ as they had in
saynt Edwardes tyme the confessor.

Chow Stephen of Langton came a-
gayn in to Englonde through þ popes co-
maundement & how he went agayne.



When the fourme of accordement was thus ordeyned, it was in a payre of endentures, & they put theyr seales to þe one part, & they þe came in the kynges name put theyr seales to that other parte of the endentures, and fourre bysshops afore sayd toke that one parte of the endentures to them, & that other parte they bare wth them to shewe to the kyng. ¶ When the kyng sawe þe fourme & vnderstode it, he helde hym full wel apayed of al maner charyges as they had ordeyned, sauyng as touchynge to make restitucion agayne of the goodes to that thyng he wold not accorde, & so he sent worde agayne to the fourre bysshops þe they sholde put out þe one point of restitucion. But they answered þe they wold not put out one worde. ¶ Then sent the kyng to þe archebysshop by the fourre bysshops þe he shold come to Caisterbury for to speke wth hym there, & sent to hym safeconduyt vnder pledges, þe is to saye his iustices Gilbert Poiteuin, William de la Biener, & John sir Hugh, that in theyr conuoy safely he sholde come, & go wher he wold. And in this maner the archebysshop Stephen came to

Caisterbury. ¶ When the archebysshop was come, the kyng came to Caisterbury for to speke wth hym. But he first by his restitucion bysshop of Wyndesore that he sholde do out of the endentures the clause of restitucion for to make of þe goodes. And the archebysshop made his othe þe he wold not do out one worde therof, ne yet chaunge of that the bysshops had spoken & ordeyned. And than þe archebysshop went agayne to Rome wout any more doyng. ¶ The kyng John was than more angrier than euer he was before, and let make a comparyng thorough out all Englonde that all those þe had holy churches rented & went ouer þe see, that they sholde come agayne into Englonde at a certayn daye or els they sholde lese all theyr rentes for euer more, & that he comaunded to every sheryff thorough out all Englonde, that they sholde enquire yf any bysshop, abbat, priour, or any other prelate of holy church, from that daye afterwarde receyue any comaundement that cometh fro the pope, that they sholde take þe body and bypnyng wth before hym, and that they sholde take in the kynges handes all theyr lodes of holy church that were gyven to any man by the archebysshop Stephen or by þe priour of Caisterbury from þe tyme of þe electyon of þe archebysshop. And comaunded that all þe lodes þe were the archebysshops shold be casten downe to the grounde, and all sold.

How kyng John destroyed the orde of Cister.

And in the same yere the Iryshe men began to warre vpon kyng John, & kyng John ordeyned hym for to go into Irelonde, & let arere an huge tax thorough out all Englonde, that is to saye, xxxv. thousande marke. And thus

As I have shewyd out all Englonde bnt
the monkes of the cytye of Cisterne that
they sholde helpe hy off by. ap. marke of
spure. And they answered & sayd þ they
durst nothyng do wout they chestrat-
bot of Cisterne. Wherfore kyng John
whan he came agayn from Ireland ord
them so moche sorow & care þ they wyl
not where to abyde. for he toke so moche
ransom of every hous of them. that the
somme amounted to x. m. lxx. s. marke
so that they were cleue lost & destroyed
and boydd they houses & they lordes
through out all Englonde. And þ abbot
of Waverlay dyad so moche his menack
that he forsoke þ abbey & went thens &
pyuely ordeyned hym ouer þ see to the
hous of Cisterne. Whan the cydynges
came to the pope that þ kyng had done
so moche malpre. than was he towarde
the kyng full wyroth. & sent two legates
unto þ kyng. that one was called Pan-
dulf. & that other Wilkyn. þ they sholde
warne the kyng in þ popes name. that
he sholde cesse of his persecucion that he
dyd vnto holy churche. and amende the
wrynges & the trespasses that he had done
to the archebysshop of Canturbury. & to
the ppyour & to the monkes of Caunter-
bury. and to all the clergy of Englonde.
and that he sholde restore all the goodes
agayne þ he had taken of them agaynst
they wyl. or els they sholde curse hym
by name. And to do this thyng & to con-
ferme the pope toke them his letters in
billes patentees. These two legates ca-
me into Englonde. & came to the kyng
to Northampton. where as he helde his
parlyament. & full curtysey they hym sa-
luted & sayd. Wy. we come fro þ pope of
Rome. the prync of holy churche and the
lord of all maner. And for as much as
fust in the popes behalf that ye make
full restoracion of the goodes þ ye have
rauyshed & take of holy churche & of the

lordes. & that ye receyue Stephen arch-
bysshop of Canturbury in to his dignite
and the ppyour of Canturbury and his
monkes. & that ye gyfte agayne unto þ
archebysshop all his lentes and curtes
wout out any witholdyng. And for yet
more sure. that ye shall make resturaci-
on to all holy churche. wherof they shall
holde them well apayed. Than answer-
ed the kyng as touchyng þ ppyour &
his monkes of Canturbury. all þ ye have
sayd I wyl do gladly. & all thyng that
ye wyl ordeyne. But as touchyng the
archebysshop I shall tell you as it lyeth
in my hert. That the archebysshop leue
his archebysshopryche. & that the pope
than for hym wolde praye. & than vpon
auenture me sholde lyke some other bys-
shopryche to gyue hy in Englonde. And
vpon this condicyon I wyl hym accepte
and receyue. And neuer thelesse in Eng-
londe as archebysshop yf he abyde. he
shall neuer haue so good safetieduct but
that he shall be taken. Than sayd Pan-
dulf unto the kyng. Wy. holy churche
was neuer wont to dylharge an arche-
bysshop wout cause reasonable. But
euer it hath be wont to chastise pry-
nces that to god and holy churche were
inobedyent. What hold now quod the
kyng. menace ye me. Nay sayd Pan-
dulf. but ye now openly haue tolde as it
standeth in your herte. And to you we
wyl tell what is the popes wyl. And
thus it standeth that he hath you holy
enterdynt & accursed. for the wrynges
that ye haue done to holy churche & to þ
clergy. And for as moche as ye dwel &
be in wyl to abyde in malpre & in wret-
chednes. & wyl not come out thereof. ne
to none amende. ye shall understode
that this tyme afterwarde þ sentence is
vpon you gyue & holdeth stide & strenght
& vpon all tho that to you haue comened
before this tyme. whether they be clerics

that preestes myght synge masses in conuenable churches / & consecrate our lordes body / & gyue it to ſche me whiche were lykely to paſſe out of this worlde / & alſo that men myght chryſten child: en ouer all ſlonde. And whan the pope wyll & ſawe ſ the kyng wolde not be vnder the rule of holy chirche for no maner thinge the pope than ſent to the kyng of fraunce in remiſſyon of his synnes ſ he ſhoulde take w hym all ſ polver that he myght / & go in to Englonde for to deſtroye kyng Johſſ. Whan theſe epydnges came to kyng Johſſ / than was he ſore anoyed & ſore drad leſt he ſhoulde leſe his realme / & hymſelfe be done to deth. Than ſent he to the pope meſſengers / & ſayd he wolde be iuſt pſyed / & come to amendmēt in all thynges / & wolde make ſatiffaccyon to all maner men after ſ popes ordynauce. Than ſent ſ pope agayn in to englonde Pandulf & ocher meſſengers / & came to Caſterbury to the kyng / & there abode. And the xliij. day of Maye ſ kyng made an othe for to ſtande to ſ popes ordynauce before Pandulf the legate / in all maner of thynges in whiche he was accuſed / & that he ſhoulde make full reſtitucion to all men of holy chirche & of religyon & of the goodes that he had taken of them agaynſt theſ wyll. And all ſ grete lordes of englonde ſware vpon the boke & by the holydome / that yf ſ kyng wolde not holde his othe / they wolde make hy by ſtrength to holde it. Than the kyng put hym to ſ courte of Rome & to ſ pope & than gaue he by ſ realme of englonde & of Irlande for hym & for his heyres for mer more that ſhoulde come after hym / ſo that kyng Johſſ & his heyres ſhoulde take thoſe two realmes of the popes handes. And ſhoulde euery yere paye ſerme vnto the courte of Rome a thouſande marke of ſilver. And than toke the kyng the crowne of his heed & ſet hy on his knees

and theſe wordes he ſayd in heryng of all the grete lordes of englonde. Here I reſygne by the crowne & the realme of englonde in to the handes of pope Innocent the thyrde / & put me hooly in to his mercy & in his ordynauce. Pandulf than receyued ſ crowne of kyng Johſſ / & kept it. b. dayes as for a ſeaſynge takynge of two realmes of Englonde and Irlande. And confirmed all maner thynges by his chartre that ſolloweth after.

Of the lentre obligatory that kyng Johſſ made vnto the courte of Rome / wherfore the Peter pens ben gadered throughth our all Englonde.

All chriſt people throughth out all the worlde dwellynge. Johſſ by the grace of god kyng of Englonde greetynge to your vniuerſite. And be it knowen that for as moche as we haue greued & offended god & our moder chirche of Rome. And for as moche as we haue nece vnto ſ mercy of our lord Jeſu Chryſt / & alſo we may no thyng to wourth offere as competent ſatiffaccyon to make to god & to holy chirche / but yf ſ it were our owne body / as with our realmes of Englonde & of Irlande. Than by ſ grace of god we deſyre to make vs for the loue of hym ſ meked hym to the deth vpon the crolle / throughth counſelle of the noble erles & barons we offere and frely graunte to god & to ſ apoſtles ſaynt Peter & ſaynt Paule / and to our moder chirche of Rome / & to our holy fader the pope Innocent the thyrde / & to all ſ popes ſ come after hym / all the realmes & patronages of churches of Englonde & of Irlande with theyr appertenaunces / for remiſſyon of our synnes / & for helpe & helch of our kynne ſoules & all chryſten ſoules. So ſ from this daye afterward we wyll receyue and holde of our moder

chirche of Rome as fee farme / doynge
fraute to our holy father pope Innocent
the thyrde / & so to all the popes that co-
meth after hym in þe same maner aboue
sayd. And in þe presence of the Wyse man
Dandulf the popes subdenen We make
lpege homage / as it were in the popes
presence & before hym worre / and that do
all maner thynges aboue sayd / & thereto
we bynde vs / & all that cometh after vs
& our heyres for evermore / without ony
gaynsayenge to the pope / & the þe warde
of chirche vacantes. And in toke of this
thyng evermore for to last / We Wyll con-
ferme & ordeyn / that our specyall rentes
of þe foresayd realme / sayunge saynt Pe-
ters pens in all thyng to þe moder chir-
che of Rome payenge by yere a thousand
de marke of syluer at two termes of the
yere for all maner customes þe we sholde
do for þe foresayd realmes / that is to saye
at Myghelmasse / and at Ester / that is
to saye. viij. C. marke for Englonde / and
thre hundred marke for Ireland / sayung
to vs & to our heyres our Justices / and
our other fraunchyses / & other exaltees
that perteyneth unto the crowne. And
these thynges that before ben sayd / We
Wyll that it be ferme and stable without
ende. And to that oblygacyon we & our
successours and our heyres in this ma-
ner be bounde / that yf we or ony of our
heyres through ony presumption fall
in ony poynt agaynst ony of these thyng-
es aboue sayd / and he be warned and
Wyll not ryght amende hym / he shall
than lose the foresayd realmes for ever-
more. And that this chartre of oblyga-
cyon and our warraunt for evermore be
ferme and stable without ony gaynsay-
enge / We shall fro this daye afterwarde
be true to god and to the moder chirche
of Rome / and to the pope Innocent the
thyrde / and to all them that cometh af-
ter hym / and the realmes of Englonde

and of Irelande We shall trewly mayn-
tayne in all maner poyntes agaynst all
maner men by our power through god-
des helpe.

How the clerkes that were outlawed
of Englonde came agayn / & how kynge
John was assolyed.

When this chartre was made &
sealed / the kynge receyved a-
gayne his crowne of Dandulfs
hande / & sente anone unto the archebys-
hop Stephen / & to all his other clerkes
and lewd men that he had exyled out of
this londe / that they sholde come agayn
in to Englonde & haue agayn theyr lon-
des & also theyr rentes / & that he wolde
make restytucyon of the goodes that he
had taken of theyr agaynst theyr Wyll
The kynge hymselfe than & Dandulf / &
the erles & barons went to Wynechestre
agaynst þe archebysshop Stephen. And
whan he was comen the kynge wente
agaynst hym / & fell doونه to his feet / &
thus to hym sayd. Saye syr ye be wel-
come / & I crye you mercy bycause that
I haue trespassed agaynst you. The ar-
chebysshop toke hym by the in his armes
& kyssed hym curteysly oft tymes / & af-
ter ladde hym to the doore of saynt Sym-
thynes chirche by the hande / & assolyed
hym of þe sentence / and hym recoryled to
god & to holy chirche. And that was on
saynt Margaretes daye. And the arche-
bysshop anone went for to synge masse.
And þe kynge offred at the masse a marke
of golde. And whan þe masse was done /
all they went to receyue al theyr londes
without ony maner gaynsayenge. And
that daye they made all myrth and ioye
ynough. But yet was not þe enterdypn-
ge released / bycause þe pope had set that
the enterdypnge sholde not be done tyll
the kynge had made full restytucyon of þe

godes that he had talle of holy chirche
 And þe hymselfe sholde do homage to the
 pope þen cruyne legat that he sholde
 lunde into englonde. And thā was þan
 built his leue of þe kynge & the archbys-
 shop & went agayne to Rome. And the
 archbysshop comit to come before him
 pletates of holy chirche at Medynge for
 to trete & consyle how moche & what
 they sholde aske of þe kynge for to make
 restitucion of þe goodes þe he had taken
 of them. And they ordeyned & sayd that
 the kynge sholde gree to þe archbysshop
 the thousande marke for the wronge þe
 the kynge had done vnto hym. And also
 by portions to other clerekes. x. q. mar-
 ke. And this same tyme Nicolas bys-
 shop of Tuscan cardynall penytence of
 Rome came into Englonde through the
 popes comaundement the. v. kalende of
 October & came to London þe. v. nonas
 of October for bycause that kynge John
 & all the kynges þe came after hym shold
 surmore holde þe realme of Englonde &
 of Irelande of god & of the pope payenge
 to the pope by pere as is aboue sayd.

How þe enterdypnge was vndone in
 englonde & of þe debate þe was bytwene
 kynge John & the barons of the realme

Whan kynge John had done his
 homage to þe legat þe shewed þe
 the popes letre þe he shold paye
 to Julian & yelde agayne that was
 kynge Rycharde Wyse þe thyrde parte
 of the londe of Englonde & of Irelande þe
 he had withholden syth that kynge Ry-
 charde dyed. Whan kynge John herde
 this he was wonderis wroth. For ther
 he þe enterdypnge myght not be vndone
 tyll that he had made gree & restitucion
 to the foreshyd Julian of that the aske
 The legat than went agayne to þe pope
 after Chyasmalle. And the kynge than

sent messengers ouer see to Julian that
 was kynge Rycharde Wyse for to haue
 a relese of þe aces of hym. And so it
 befell þe Julian dyed sone after crist.
 And in so moche the kynge was quyte of
 that thynge that the aske. But than at
 the fest of saynt John that came nexte
 after through the popes comaundement þe
 enterdypnge was first releasid through
 out all Englonde the. vii. daye of July.
 And. vii. pere was the londe enterdrit.
 And on the moorn men ronge and sayd
 masse through out all London & so after
 through out all Englonde. And þe next
 pere after therre began a grete debate by
 twene kynge John & the lordes of Eng-
 londe for bycause he wolde not graunte
 the lawes and holde the whiche saynt
 Edward had ordeyned & had ben bled
 and holden vnto that tyme that he had
 them broke. For he wolde holde no lawe
 but dyd all thynge that hym lyked and
 dysheret many men without consent
 of lordes & petes of the londe. And wold
 dysheret þe good erle Radulf of Chestre
 for bycause that he vnderstode by of his
 wykednes and for cause that he dyd so
 moche shame & blyam to god & to holy
 chirche. And also for he helde & haunted
 his owne broders Wyse and lay also by
 maner other womē grete lordes dough-
 ters for he spared no woman that hym
 lyked for to haue. Wherfore all þe lordes
 of the londe were wroth & roke the cyte
 of London. To cease this debate the ar-
 chbysshop & lordes of the londe assem-
 bled before the fest of saynt John bap-
 tist in a meadow besyde þe towne of Be-
 nes that is called Romney mude. And
 the kynge made them there a charter of
 fraunchyse / suche as they wolde aske
 and in suche maner they were accorded
 And that accordement lasted not longe.
 For the kynge hymselfe sone after dyd
 agaynst the poyntes of þe same charter

that he was made. Therefore the good
part of the nation which were gathered
thither began to murmur both by space
and by time with a great cry of voice
and by all cheynges that they myght
and make shewable as strange as they
myght with all theyr power. y thought
to dyscuse hym out of Englonde. y made
Lords & kynges here of fraunce kyng
of Englonde. And then kyng John sent
ouer see / and ordeyned so moche people
of normand & of pycarden and of flen-
mynges / soe that the londe myght not
suffreue them but with moche sorowle.
And amonge all this people there was
a man of floumandre that was called
faukes of Bient. & this florman & his
cöpany spared neyther church ne hous
of religyon but they burnt and robbed it
& bare awaye all that they myght take
so that þe londe was all destroyed / what
on one syde & what on another. The bar-
ons and lordes of Englonde ordeyned
amonge them the best speakers and wy-
sest men / and sent them ouer the see
to kyng philipp of fraunce / and prayed
hym þe he wolde sende Lords his sone
in to Englonde to be kyng of Englonde
and to receyue the crowne.

Thos Lowys þ kynges sone of france
came in to Englonde in a frange polier
of people to be kyng of Englonde.

When kyng Philip of fraunce herd
the storynges, he made certayn
assent by lawe them by theyr comyn
election þat Llewellyn kyng of
fraunce shold go with them into Eng-
lond and bypue out kyng John of the
londre. And all that doers in the presence
of Llewellyn made him homage and
became his men. And the barons of eng-
lond helde them selfe at London, and
about Llewellyn þat kynged out of fraunce.

[illegible]

¶ So the pope sent in to Englonde a legate that was called Silvano / and of the birth of kynge John.

Ald in þe same tyme þe pope sente
into englonde a legat þe was cal-
led **de hato** & he was preest & cardynall
of **rome** he comen to bruce **John**
cause agaynst the barons of Englonde.
But the barons had so huge party and
brute through **Leopold** þe kynges soun-
der that **John** myght not wone

per to turne ne go. And so it befell that
he wolde haue gone to Wyche / as he
went chydward he came by þe abbey
of Wyke / & there he abode two
dayes. And as he late at meet he asked
a monke of the hous how moche a lufe
was worth þe was set before hym upon
the table. And the monke sayd that the
lufe was worth but an halspeny. O said
the kyng tho / here is grete chepe of bze-
de. How quod the kyng / & I may lyue
suche a lufe shall be worth. xx. shyllinges
or halfe a pere be gone. And whā he had
sayd these wordes / moche he thought &
oft he syghed / & toke and ete of the breed
and sayd / by god þe wordes that I haue
spoken it shall be soch. The monke that
sate before þe kyng was for these word-
des full sorp in his herte / & thought ra-
ther he wolde hymselfe suffre deeth / and
thought how he myght ordeyn therfore
some maner remedy. And the monke a-
none went to his abbot / & was shpyren
of hym / and tolde the abbot all that the
kyng had sayd / and prayed his abbot
for to assyle hym / for he wolde gyue the
kyng suche a drynke that all Englonde
sholde be glad therof and ioyfull. Than
went the monke in to a gardeyn & foude
a grete tobe therin / and toke her vp and
pur her in a cuppe / and prycked the tobe
throug with a bpoche many tymes tyl
that the benym came out on euery syde
in the cuppe / and than toke the cuppe &
fylled it with good ale / & brought it be-
fore the kyng and knelynge sayd. Wy-
quod he Walfayle / for neuer the dayes
of your lpf dranke ye of so good a cuppe.
Begyn monke quod the kyng. And the
monke dranke a grete draught / & after
toke the kyng the cuppe / and the kyng
also dranke a grete draught & set downe
the cup. The monke anone ryght went
in to the farmery and there dyed anone /
on whose soule god haue mercy Amen.

And. v. monkes synge for his soule spe-
cyally / and shall whyles the abbey stan-
deth. The kyng arose vp anone full euyl
at ease / and commaunded to remene the
table / and asked after the monke. And
men tolde hym that he was deed / and
that his wombe was broken in sonder.
Whan the kyng herde this / he comaun-
ded to trulle / but it was all for nought /
for his bely began to swell of the drynke
that he had dronken / and within two
dayes he dyed / on þe morowe after saynt
Lukes daye. And this kyng John had
many fayre chyldren of his body bego-
ten / that is to saye / Henry his sone that
was kyng after his fader / & Rycharde
that was erle of Cornwalle / & Isabel
that was empyrille of Rome / & Clemour
that was quene of Scotlonde. And this
kyng John whan he had regned. xviij.
pere and. v. monethes and. v. dayes he
dyed in the castell of Newmarke / and his
body was buryed at Worcester.

Anno domini. m. cc.

Hedericus the seconde was em-
peroure. xciii. pere. This man
was crownded of Honorius the pope a-
gaynst Otto / bycause þe wolde fyghe
with hym / the whiche he dyd / & expul-
sed hym. And fyrst he nourysshed þe chir-
che / and after he spoyled it as a stepmo-
der. Wherfore Honorius cursed hym / &
all that were contrary to his oppynon
the pope assyled. And the same senten-
ce Gregoipe the. ix. renewed. And this
same man put Henry his owne sone in
pysoun / and there murdered hym. Wher-
fore whā this emperour another frason
was seke / by another sone of his owne
he was murdered / in the tyme of Inno-
cent the fourth. Honorius the chyld
was pope after Innocent. x. pere / & con-
fermed þe orde of freeres prethours & mi-
nours / & made certayne decretalles.

Of kynge Henry the thyrd that
was crowned at Glocestre.

After this kynge John re-
igned his son Henry was crow-
ned at Glocestre when he was .ix. yere
olde. on saynt Symons daye a Jude of
Sawalo þ legat of Rome through coun-
seyle of all the grete lordes þ helde with
kynge John his father that is to say the
erle Radulfe of Chestre / Wyllyam erle
Marshall erle of Denbroke / Wyllyam þ
Bremes erle of Friers. Berle þ manly
baron and all the other grete lordes of
Englonde helde w Loows the kynges
sone of fraunce. ¶ And anone after whā
kynge Henry was crowned / Sawalo the
legat helde his counseyle at Byssow at
saynt Martyns ferst / & there were .xj.
bysshops of Englonde & of Wales / and
of other prelates of holy chirche a grete
nombre / and erles & barons and many
knyghtes of Englonde / & all those that
were at that counseyle swore traute vnto
Henry the kng that was kng Johns
sone. ¶ And anone after þ legat enter-
dyed Wales / bcause they helde w the
barons of Englonde / also all those that
holpe or gaue counseyle to mene warre
agaynst þ newe kng he accursed them
And at þ begynnyng he put in þ sentence
the kynges sone of fraunce Loows. And
nevertheles þ same Loows wolde not
spare for all that / but went and toke the
castell of Barhamstrede / & also the castell
of Hereford. And from þ day afterwarde þ
barons dyd there moche harme through-
out all Englonde / & pyncypally þ frensh
men that were with Loows / wherfore
the grete lordes & all þ comyn people of
Englonde let bysse them for to dyspue out
of Englonde Loows and his company
And some of the barons & of the frenshe
men were gone to the cite of Ryboll / &
toke þ towne & helde it to kng Loows

profyte. But thysde came kng Hen-
ryes men with a grete power / that is
to say the erle Radulfe of Chestre / and
Wyllyam erle Marshall / and Wyllyam
the younger erle of Friers / & many other
lordes with them / & gaue batayle vnto
Loows men. And there was slayne the
erle of Berches / and Loows men were
there soule discomfyted. And there was
taken Berle erle of Wynchestre / & Um-
frey de Bohme erle of Hereford / & Robert
the sone of Walter / and many other that
began warre agaynst the kng / there
they were taken & ladde vnto kng Hen-
ry þ was kng Johns sone. And when
the tydynges came to Loows of þ dis-
fytur þ was the kynges sone of fraunce
he remeured from thens and went vnto
London / and let shette fast the gates of
the cite. And anone after kng Henry
sent to the burgeyses of London þ they
sholde yeide them to hym / & the cite also
and he wolde graunte to them all they
fraunchyses that euer they were wont
to haue before / & wolde cōferme them by
his grete newe chartre vnder his brode
seale. ¶ And in the same tyme a grete
loide that was called Eustace þ monke
came out of fraunce with a grete com-
pany of lordes / & wolde haue comen in
to Englonde for to haue holpen Loows
the kynges sone of fraunce. But Hubert
of Burgh and the .v. portes with .viij.
shyppes tho mette with them in þ high
see / and assayled them egerly / and ouer-
came them with strength / and smote of
the heed of Eustace the monke / and toke
also .x. grete lordes of fraunce & put them
in prison / and slewe almost all the men
that came with them / & anone drowned
the shyppes in the see.

¶ How Loows returned agayne in
to fraunce / and of the confirmacyon
of kng Johns chartre.

When Lowys herde these tydyn-
ges he was so to be deryd & lost
and let ordeyn & speke by wordes
the kyng & Lowys by þe legate Swalo
And through þe archebysshop of Caunter-
bury & other grete lordes all þe prysoners
on that one part & on that other shold be
delivered & go quyte & Lowys hys selfe
sholde haue for his costes a. iii. milles of
syluer & sholde go out of Englonde and
neuer come agayne therin. And in this
maner was the accord made bytwene
kyng Henry & Lowys. And than was
Lowys assayed of þe popes legate that
was called Swalo of þe sentence that he
was in & the barons of Englonde also.
And after this kyng Henry & Swalo þe
legate & Lowys went to Hertford / and
there was þe peas cōfirmed & bytwene
them ordeyned. And after Lowys went
fro thens to London / & toke his leue / &
was brought w moche honour to þe see
with þe archebysshop of Caunterbury &
with other bisshops & erles & barons / &
so went Lowys in to France. ¶ And af-
terwarde the kyng & the archebysshop
& erles & barons assembled them at Lon-
don / & at Wyghelmas nexte folowynge
helde there a grete parlyament / & there
were than renewed all the franchises
that kyng John had graunted at Rome
ney mede / & kyng Henry than cōfirmed
by his chartre / the whiche yet ben hol-
den through out all Englonde. And in þe
tyme þe kyng toke of euery plough londe
two shyllynge. And Hubert of Burgh
was than made cheefe iustice of englonde
And this was in þe fourth yere of kyng
Henrys regne. And in þe same yere was
saynt Thomas of Caunterbury transla-
ted / the .i. yere after his martyrdome.
¶ And after it was ordeyned by all the
lordes of Englonde þe all alpeins shold go
out of Englonde & come no more therin.
And kyng Henry toke than all þe castels

in to his handes þe kyng John his fader
had gyven & taken to alpeins for to kepe
that held w hym. But þe proude faukes
of Bient tpehely let araye his castell of
Bedford / whiche he had of kyng Johns
gyfte / and he helde that castell agaynst
kyng Henrys wyll w might & strength
And the kyng came thider w a stronge
power and besyged the castell. And the
archebysshop mayster Stephen of lang-
ton with a farge company of knyghtes
came to the kyng for to helpe hym. And
from the Assencion of our lord vnto the
Assumpcion of our lady lastid þe syege /
and than was the castell wonne and ras-
ken. And the kyng let hange all those
that were gone in to þe castell with theyr
good wyll for to hold the castell agaynst
hym / that is to say .lxxx. men. And than
afterwarde faukes hymselfe was fou-
de in a chirche of Couenter / and there he
forswore all Englonde w moche othe
and than wente agayne in to his owne
countree. ¶ And whyles that kyng Hen-
ry regned / Edmonde of Ibyndon that
was tresourer of Salysbury was con-
secrate archebysshop of Caunterbury.
¶ And this kyng Henry sente ouer see
vnto the erle of Prouance that he sholde
sende him his doughter in to Englonde
that was called Elnoze / and he wolde
spouse her. And so she came in to Eng-
londe after Chyristmas / and on the mo-
rowe after saynt Sylarys daye the ar-
chebysshop Edmonde spoused them to-
gyder at Westmynster with grete so-
lemnite. And there was a farge syght
bytwene them / that is for to saye / Ed-
warde that was nexte kyng after his
fader shoure of curtesy and of largesse /
and Margarete that was afterwarde
quene of Scotlande / and Beattye that
was afterwarde duchesse of Brytayne
And Katherine that dyed a mayde in
virgyn.

Of the gift of the charter that
were granted by the said charter/
and of the purveyance of Oxford.

And thus it befell þ the lordes of
Englonde wolde haue some abo-
rromme in the charter of fraichprie þ
they had of the kyng: & spake thus by-
twene them. And þ kyng graunted them
all they asayinge: & made to them two
charters / þ one is called þ grete charter
of fraichpries / & that other is called the
charter of forest. And for þ graunt of these
two charters / prelates / erles & barons /
& all the comyns of Englonde gaue to þ
kyng a. 50. mark of syluer. ¶ When
kyng Henry had ben kyng. xiiij. yere/
the same yere he & his lordes / erles & ba-
rons of the realme went to Oxford / and
ordeyned a lawe in amendement of þ re-
alme. And sy: & swore þ kyng hymselfe
and afterwarde all the lordes of þ londe
that they wolde holde þ statute for euer
more / & who that them brake sholde be
deeth. But the seconde yere after that or-
dynaunce / the kyng through counseyle of
sy: Colwarde his sone & of Rycharde his
broder that was erle of Cornewale / &
also of other / repented hym of that othe
that he had made for to holde that lawe
& ordynaunce / & sente to þ court of Rome
to be assayed of that othe. ¶ And in the
yere nexte comynge after was the grete
deth of come in englonde / for a quarter
of whete was worth. xxiij. shyllinges
And the poore people ate natrys & other
herbes for grete hunger / & many a. 50.
dyed for defaunce of merte. ¶ And in the
xiiii. yere of kyng Henrys reigne begyn
warre & debate bytwene hym and his
loves. for because that he had broken þ
counsailes þ were made bytwene them
at Oxford. ¶ And in the same yere was
the towne of Southampton taken & folke
slayne that were within / for because þ

they had made and ordeyned by the type
for to kepe the cite of London. ¶ And
in the month of Maye that came nexte
after upon saynt Pancras daye / was þ
batayle of Lewes / whiche was þ twen-
tyndaye before saynt Dunstons daye / &
there was taken kyng Henry hymselfe
& sy: Colwarde his sone / & Rycharde his
broder erle of Cornewale / & many other
lordes. ¶ And in the same yere nexte fo-
llovyng sy: Colwarde the kynges sone
brake out of the ward of sy: Symon of
Monkeford erle of Lecestre at Hereford /
and went unto the barons of þ Marche
and they receyved hym with moche ho-
nour. ¶ And the same tyme Sylbert of
Clarence erle of Glocestre that was in þ
ward also of þ foresayd Symon / through
the comaundement of kyng Henry / that
went from hym with a grete herte / for
because he sayd þ the foresayd Sylbert
was a foe in his counseyle / wherfore he
ordeyned hy afterwarde so / & helde hy w
kyng Henry. And on þ saterdaye next af-
ter þ myddes of August sy: Colwarde þ
kynges sone discomfited sy: Symon of
Monkeford at Hereford / but the grete
lordes þ were there w hy were taken / þ
is to saye Baldevyn Wake / & Willia de
Bochehamle / & many other grete lordes
And þ twelvedaye nexte after was þ ba-
taye done at Eusham / & there was slay-
ne sy: Symon of Monkeford / Hugh Pen-
ter / & Monkeford that was Rafe Bassets
fader of Beaton / and many other grete
lordes. And wha this batayle was done
all þ gentyemen that had ben w the erle
Symon were disperced / & they ordey-
ned togyder & byd moche harme to all þ
loves. for they destroyed theyr enemyes
in all that they myght.

¶ Of the fyge of Hereford / & how
the gentyemen were disperced through
counseyle of the lordes of the realme of

Englonde. and how they came agayne
and how they loked.

After the next year campaigne in
Maye the fourth daye before
fest of saynt Dunstan was the batayle
of Marston neer Chesterfild of them
that were dyscreyted / & there was ma-
ny of them slayne. And Robert erle of Fe-
rers there was take. & also Waldevyn
and John de la hay with moche sorowe
escaped thens. And on saynt John bap-
tystes eve than nexte folowynge began
the syege of the castell of Kenilworth / &
the syege lastyd to saynt Thomas eve
apostle / on which daye Syr Hugh Da-
rynge had the castell for to kepe / that yel-
ded by the castell unto the kynge in this
maner / that hymself & the other that were
within the castell sholde haue theyr ly-
ues & lynes / & all that they had therein
bothe hors & harneys / & foure dayes of
respyte for to deliuer clercy & castell of
themselves & of all other maner thyng as
they had within the castell. And so they
went from the castell. And Syr Symon
de Montfort & ponger & the countesse his
moder were fledde ouer see into Fraunce
& there helde them as people that were
exiled out of Englonde for evermore. And
soone after it was ordeyned by the legat
Octobone & by other grette lordes the
first of Englonde / that all those that had ben
agaynst the kynge and were dyscreyted
sholde haue agayne theyr lordes by gre-
uous ransons after that it was ordeyned.
And thus they were accorded with the
kynge / & pees was cryed throughe out
Englonde / & thus the warre was ended.
And when this was done the legat toke
his leue of the kynge & of the quene & of all
the grette lordes of englonde / & he went
to Rome the xviij. yere of kynge Henryes
regne. And Comwite kynge Johns sonne
of Brytayne / John Wels / Thomas of

Glouc. & Robert of Artoys / & John of Bure / &
many other lordes of Englonde & of be-
yonde the see that they were to warre
the holy londe. And kynge Henry dyed the
same yere at Westminster wher he had
ben kynge. xv. yere & xij. moethes on saint
Comondes daye the archbishop of Can-
terbury. And he was buryed at West-
minster on saynt Comondes daye the
in the yere of our lord. m. cc. lxxij.

Prophecy of Bertr of kynge Hen-
ry the first expounded that was kynge
Johns sonne.

And of this very ppheryed Ber-
trayn & sayd that a lambe sholde
come out of Wyndchestre in the yere of our
lord. m. cc. and. xvi. with true typpes
& holyntes wyrtten in his better. And he
sayd soth / for good Henry the king was
borne in Wyndchestre in the yere aboue sayd
& he spake good wordes & swete & was
an holy man & of good consyence. And
Bertrayn sayd that this Henry sholde make
the fayrest place of the worlde. & in his ty-
me shold not be fully ended. And he sayd
soth. for he made the newe werke of the
aby of saint Peters church at Westmyn-
ster / & is saynt of lyghte than any other
place & ony man knoweth throughe out
all chrystendom. But kynge Henry dyed
on the werke was fully at an ende / & that
was grette harme. And yet said Bertrayn
that this lambe shold haue praye the most
parte of his regne. And he said soth. for
he was neuer noyed throughe warre ne
dyspleased in no maner wyse / till a yere
before his deith. And Bertrayn said in his
prophecy more. & in the ende of the regne
of the foresayd lambe a wolfe of a straunge
lode sholde do hym moche harme throughe
his war. & he shold at the last be maister
throughe helpe of a redde lode / that sholde

came out of the South with a host
 came from: & that he had been born
 out of the North. And that godly
 that was his name. And that a great
 time on the king's body. And that of
 about the year of 1155. And that
 home in France began to be
 against him. through which he
 many a good bachelor was destroyed.
 And that king Henry had a son
 at Cusum & Symon & his brother
 through help of Gilbert of Clare
 of Gloucester that was in keeping of the
 lordship of Symon. through subornment
 of king Henry. which he gave
 to the king with much power. Which
 for the lordship of Symon was destroyed
 and that was great harm to the country
 of Englonde that is noble a man was
 slain for the crown & bred in charity &
 for the country people of the same folk.
 And therefore almighty god for his
 which he showed many a saye miracle to
 byuers men & women like for his love.
 And after that also tolde & sayd in his
 prophecy that after that time the
 wolde be no more. and than his seed
 wolde be in strange lande without any
 pasture. And he sayd sothe. for king
 Henry lyved no more after that
 Symon was dead. but dyed
 anon after him. And in the same time
 by Edward his son that was the best
 king of the world of honour was than
 in his lande & gat there 3000. And
 in the same he begate on dame Eleanor
 his wyfe. Thome of Arles his daughter
 that after was the countess of Glo-
 cester. And made such a brage in his
 lande that all the world spoke of his
 happy life. & every man loved him
 by and love through out all christen-
 dom. And the day of his death was
 on the 16. of the month of June. And
 that the year of king Henry dyed. 1182.

And that the king had a son
 all the great lordes of englonde were
 foreris christen. And that they
 that they were in the world
 and were against the king.

O Regyne the 11. was pope after
 Gregory. This man canonised ma-
 ny sayntes and defended myghty the
 churche against frederick. that he toke
 he many prelates and two cardinals
 the which he went to counseile against
 him. This pope was besieged in the
 city of Rome by the emperor. & he sawe
 the Romayns were corrupted by the mo-
 ney of the emperor. Then he toke in
 his hande the bedes of the apostles Pe-
 ter and Paule and wente with proce-
 sion fro the churche of saynt John La-
 tranice to saynt Peters churche. And so
 gat he the heretikes of the Romayns. And
 than the emperor went awaye fro the
 cite. This pope made freere Faymonde
 to compyle the true booke of the decre-
 tals of many popes & decrees. And af-
 ter with many tribulacions of this ty-
 rant & other he decessed & went to heven.

Celestinus the fourth was pope after
 Gregory almost a month & he was in
 his life & in his companye laudable &
 he was an old man & a feeble & decessed
 & there was no pope after him almost
 a. xii. month.

Innocentius the fourth
 was pope after him. xi. yeres &. li. monethes.
 This man canonised many sayn-
 tes & he deposed the emperor frederick
 & curst him as an enemy to god & the churche
 in the thirde yere of his papacye. & he
 was made pope & he was helpen by the
 French. And then was Henry the sixth chosen
 king by the pope's commandment against
 frederick one after another. But they
 prevailed not to overcome him. And
 for he was over myghty. and these were
 not crossed. for they decessed anon.

Thomas de aquino. Albert^{us} magn^{us}.
Eustactus & Bonaventure were this ty-
me holy men / whiche destroyed moche
heresy infected by þ^e emperour. ¶ Alexā-
der was pope after Innocent. vii. yere.
& lytel of h^{is} is wyten. ¶ Urban^{us} was
pope after hym. iij. yere & iij. monethes
This man droue a way an host of sara-
zyns by men marked w^{ith} the crosse / that
Gaufred had sent agaynst the churche.
The pope gaue þ^e kyngdom of Sicyle to
the kynges broder of fraunce / þ^e he sholde
fyght w^{ith} Gaufred / & than decessed. And
Gaufred after lost his lyf & his kyngdō
by karol^{us}. ¶ Alphonsus kyng of Castil
& Rycharde broder to þ^e kyng of englonde
were chosen emperours / but Rycharde
died / & Alphonsus renouced his tye of
the empyre before Gregory the. ix. for he
was a wytry mā & a noble astronomer /
& his tables be very famous. ¶ Clemēs
the. iij. was pope after Urban. iij. yere
& ix. monethes. This Clemēs was an
holy man / & sayd by spyrte of pphery þ^e
the enemyes of þ^e churche shold peryshe
as þ^e smoke. And it is to be byleued that
god celled þ^e tribulacions of his churche
throughe his merites. He had afore a wy-
fe & children / & was a prest after & bps.
shop & legate / & beyng in englonde be-
known to h^{is} was chosen pope / & after
for his vertuous lyf decessed blyssedly.
¶ Gregory þ^e. x. was pope after h^{is}. iij.
yere. He assembled a cōcyle at Lodū in
fraunce for þ^e grete desyre þ^e he had to by-
syte personally þ^e holy londe / in þ^e whiche
concyle þ^e Grekes & the Tartares were
and there þ^e Grekes pmyssed to be refor-
med by þ^e vnice of þ^e churche. And þ^e Tar-
tares newly baptysed promysed þ^e same
And there were gadered. vi. C. bishops
& a. ad. prelates. And therefore a certain
mā sayd. Gregory gadereth togyder all
h^{is}des of people. And there was decreed
þ^e all persones & bycaryes shold be called
pcestes / & no prelates / & þ^e no man shold

assygne his tythes to what churche he
wolde / as they dyd afore / but they shold
be payed to his moder churche. And he
dampned þ^e pluralite of bishops / & dyed
a blyssed man. ¶ Innocent the. v. was
after hym. v. monethes / and lytel dyd.
¶ Urban was after hym one moneth &
dyd lesse. ¶ John the. xxi. was after h^{is}
viij. monethes / & he was i diuers serui-
ces a famous man / but in maners a sole
& decessed anon. ¶ Nicholas þ^e. iij. was
pope after John. i. yere. This man was
in his dayes a noble mā in buyldyng / &
wel gouerned þ^e cite all his dayes / & iij.
yere he dyed. ¶ Rodulphus was empe-
rour. c. viij. yere. This man was Erie of
Hantsburgh a wyse man in armes / no-
ble & victorious / & was chosen at basile
& he toke þ^e crosse on hym for þ^e holy londe
The unperryall blessing he had not / but
the pope allowed þ^e electyon for fauour of
the holy londe.

¶ Anno dñi. ad. CC. lxxiij.

¶ Ardyn þ^e fourth was pope after
Nicholas. iij. yere. This man
was a grete louer of retygrous men / &
gretly attendyng to vertuous workes.
He cursed þ^e emperour of Constantinople
in so moche as he promysed to turne to þ^e
fayth in the generall concyle / & dyd not
for þ^e whiche he suffered many passyons
& all holy churche. Also he cursed þ^e kyng
of Aragon for he expelled þ^e kyng of Ci-
cyle fro his kyngdom. And after he had
done many batayles agaynst me of mis-
hpleue / & had suffered many tribulacions
he decessed & dyd many myracles. ¶ Ni-
colas de lira a noble doctour of dyuinite
was this tyme at Paris. this mā was
a iewe / & was couerted / and myghtyly
profyted in þ^e oydre of frete minours / & he
wrote ourt all the byble. Or els he was
in the yere of our lord. ad. ccc. xxx. And
some men saye he was of Baband / & þ^e
his fader & moder were chustien / but for
pouerte he wysyted þ^e scoles of the iewes

And so he learned the limes language of
his this. Apollas was enourmed of
felles in his yonge age. ¶ Honorus
fourth was pope after Martin. ii. yere
a lytell of hym is wyrt. but þ he was a
teperate man & a discreet. ¶ Nicolaus
fourth was pope after hym foure yere.
this ma was a fere minor. & al though
he was a good man in hys self. yet many
unhappy thynges fell in his tyme to the
chirche. for many a batayle was in þ
te through his occasyon. for he dyete to
moche to þ one parte. and after þ there
was no pope two yere &. vii. monethes.

¶ Of kynge Edward that was kynge
Henrys sone. And of his ryalte.



And after this kynge Henry reg-
ned Edward his sone. the wo-
thyest knyght of all þ wolde in honour
for goddes grace was in þ. for he had
þ victorie of his enemyes. And as soone
as his fader was deed he came to Lon-
don with a fayre company of prelates &
of erles & barons. & all maner men dyd
hym moche honour. for in every place
this noble Edward rode in London the
streets were couered over his heed with

ryche clothes of sylke. of tapysserpe and
with ryche couerynges. And for lope of
his comynge the burgeises of the cite
cast out at theyr wyndowes golde & syl-
uer bandes full. in tokenynge of loue &
wylshyp. seruyce & reuerence. And out
of þ condyrt of chepe ran wyhte wyne &
reed as streames of water. & every man
dianke therof that wolde at theyr owne
wyl. And this kynge Edward was
crowned & anoynted as ryght heyre of
Englond with moche honour. And af-
ter masse þ kyng went in to his palays
for to holde a ryall feest amonge them þ
dyd hym honour. And whā he was set
to mete. kynge Alexander of Scotlande
came for to do hym honour & reuerence
with a queyntle. & an. C. knyghtes w
hym well horsed & arayed. And whan
they were alighted they let theyr hedes
go wheder they wolde. & who þ myght
take them. had them styll wout ony cha-
lengynge. And after came sy. Edmonde
kynge Edwardes broder a curteys & a
gentyll knyght. & þ erle of Cornewayle
& þ erle of Glocestre. & after them came
the erle of Denbroke. & þ erle of Garēne.
And eche of them by themselves ladde in
theyr hande an. C. knyghtes gayly dis-
guysed in theyr armes. And whan they
were alighted of theyr horses. they let
them go wheder they wold. & who that
myght them cathe. them to haue styll
wout ony challenge. And whan all this
was done. kynge Edward dyd his dy-
lygence & his myght for to amende & re-
dresse þ wronges in the best maner þ he
myght. to the honour of god & holy chir-
che. & to mayntayne his honour. & to a-
mende the noperite of þ comyn people.

¶ How pdeyne that was Llewelyn
doughter of Wales. and Symon that
was the erles broder of Spountford
were taken on the see.

The fyrst yere after that kynge Edward was crowned / Lewlyn pryncer of Wales sent in to France to the erle Bounrfoyd / that through couſeyle of his frendes the erle ſholde wedde his daughter. And the erle thā auryled hym upon this thyng / & ſent unto Lewlyn and ſayd that he wolde ſende after his daughter. And ſo he ſent Symer his brother after the damoyſell. And Lewlyn arrayed hymſelf for his daughter & for Symer / & for her ſayre company & ſholde go with her. And this Lewlyn did grete wronge / for it was a couenaunt that he ſholde gyue his daughter to no maner man without couſeyle & conſent of kynge Edward. And ſo it befell that a Burgeys of Wyſſowe came in the ſer laden with wyne / & mette them / & toke them with myght and power. And anon the Burgeys ſent them to the kynge. Whan Lewlyn herde theſe tydynges he was wondrous wroth & alſo ſorrowfull / & begā to warre upon kynge Edward / and dyd moche harme to Engliſhe men / & bette downe the kynges caſtels / & began ſayle for to deſtroye kynge Edwardes londres. And whan the tydynges came unto the kynge of this thyng / he went in to Wales / & ſo moche he dyd through goddes grace and his grete power that he droue Lewlyn to grete myſchefe / that he fledde all maner ſtrength & came & yeldd hym unto kynge Edward / & gaue hym .l. m. marks of ſyluer to haue peas / & toke the damoyſell & all his heritage / & made an obligacion to kynge Edward to come to his parlyament two tymes in the yere. And in the ſeconde yere after þat kynge Edward was crowned / he helde a general parlyament at Weſtmynſter / & there he made the ſtatutes for default of lawe by the comyn aſſent of all his baronage. And at eſter nexte after the kynge ſent by his letter unto Lewlyn pryncer of Wa-

les that he ſholde come to his parlyament for his londres / & for his holding of Wales as the ſtrength of the letter obligacion wyneſſed. Than Lewlyn had ſome & deſpyte of þat kynges comādemēt. And ſo pure wrath agayn begā warre upon kynge Edward / & deſtroyed his londres. And whan kynge Edward herde of theſe tydynges / he warde wondrous wroth be to Lewlyn / & in haſte aſſembled a grete power of people & went toward Wales and warred ſo upon Lewlyn the pryncer till þat he brought hym in moche ſorrow & dyſcale. And Lewlyn ſawe that his deſence myght not auayle hym / and came agayn & yeldd hym to þat kynges grace / & cryed hym mercy / & longe tyme taryed before þat kynges ſett. The kynge had of hym pyte / & comāded hym to aryſe / & for his mekenes forgaue hym his warre and to hym ſayd that if he treſpased agaynſt hym another tyme / that he wolde deſtroye hym for euermore. Dauid þat was Lewlyn's brother þat ſame tyme dwelled wth kynge Edward / & was a fell man and a ſubeyll / & enuyous / & alſo ſarre caſtyng and moche treaſon thought / & euermore made good ſemblaunt / & ſemed ſo true þat no man myght perceyue his fallnes.

How Lewlyn through eggrunge of his brother Dauid warred agayn upon kynge Edward.

It was not longe tyme that tyme that kynge Edward gaue to Dauid Lewlyn's brother the lordſhip of Frodeſham / and made hym knyght. And ſo moche honour dyd he nreuer after to no man of Wales bycauſe of hym. And kynge Edward helde his parlyament at London whan he had done in Wales al that he wolde / & chaūged his money þat was ſoule kyte & rouēd / wherfore the people cōplained ſore / ſo þat the king let enquire

of þe trespassours. And. etc. were attenyed of suche maner of falsnes / wherefore some were hanged / and some beawen & hanged. And after ward the kyng ordeyned that þe sterling halfpeny & ferthyng shoulde go through out all his londre. And commaunded þe no man fro that daye after ward gaue no scofferd hous of religyon with londre or tenement without speyall leue of þe kyng. & he þe dyd / shoulde be punished at the kynges Wyll / & the gyfte shoulde be for nought. ¶ And it was not longe after that Llewelyn pryncce of Wales through þe entycement of David his broder / and by bothe theyre consent they thought to dysheryte kyng Edward in as moche as they myght / so þe through them bothe þe kynges peas was broken. And whan kyng Edward herde of this anon he sent his barons in to Northumberland & the surreys also / þe they shold go & take theyre wage vpon þe traytours Llewelyn & David / & wondres harde it was for to warre than. for it is wynter in Wales / whan in other countrees it is somer. And Llewelyn let ordeyne & well aray & vitaple his good castell of Swandon / and therein was an huge nombre of people & plente of vitayles / so that kyng Edward wyll not where to entre. And whan þe kynges men it perceyved / & also þe strength of Wales / they let come in to þe see barges & botes & grette plankes as many as they might ordeyne & haue for to go to the foresayd castell of Swandon w men on fote & also on hors. But þe Walshmen had so moche people & were so stronge / þe they droue þe Englyssmen backe / so þe there was so moche pced of people at the turnynge agayn / that the charge & the burden of men made þe barges & botes to synke / & there was now ned many a good knyght. þe is to say / Roger Cressak. Sir William of Lincok / that was / Sir John lane fitz Robert / &

Sir Richard Tanny / & an huge nombre of ocher / & all was through theyr owne fol / for if they had had good spies they had not ben harmed. Whan kyng Edward herde that his people were so maimed / he made sorowe ynough. But than came Sir John of Ueslye from the kyng of Aragon / & brought with hym much people of bachelers & of Gascoynes & there soubpours & dwellynge w John of Ueslye / & of hym receyued wages / & of hym were holden / & were noble men for to fyght / and bent many to dones / & slewe all þe Walshmen that they myght take. And all those w strength & myght made assaute unto the castell of Swandon & gate the castell. And whan David herde of these tydynge / he ordeyned hym to fyght. Whan Llewelyn þe pryncce knewe that his broder was fledde / tha was he sore abashed / for he had no power his warre to maynteyn. And so Llewelyn began to see / & wende well to haue scaped. But in a moynynge Sir Roger Mortimer mette w hym onely with .x. knyghtes / & set hym rounde aboute / & to hym went & smote of his heed / & presented it to kyng Edward. And in this maner Llewelyn þe pryncce of Wales was taken / & his heed smytten of / & also all his heyres dysherited for evermore / through tyghtfull come of all the lordes of the realme.

¶ How David þe was Llewelyns broder pryncce of Wales was put to deeth.

¶ David þe prynces broder of Wales through pryncce wende to haue be pryncce of Wales after his broders deeth. And by þis he sent after Walshmen to his payntment at Dnbygh / & solpshly made Wales to arple agaynst þe kyng / & began to mene warre agaynst kyng Edward / & dyd all þe wysdom & by craft that he myght by his power. Whan kyng

Edward herde of this thinge by othe-
red men to pursue upon hym. And he
was by hym defended tyll he came
to the towne of Lynne. And there was
Dauin taken as he fledde. And ladde to the
kyng. And the kyng commaunded that he
shoulde be hanged & drawn. And some of
his heed & quartered by. & sende his heed
to London. & the four quarters to the
four thet towne of Wales. for they
shoulde take example therof & be ware.
And after ward kyng Edward let crie
his peas through out all Wales. & sealed
all the lorde into his handes. & all the grete
lordes that were left affue came to do
traute & homaga to kyng Edward. as
to they kyng. And than let kyng
Edward amende the lordes of Wales
that were defectiue. And after he sent to all
the lordes of Wales by his letters patentes
that they shoulde come all to his parlyament.
And when they were comen the kyng
sayd to them full curteisly. Lordes ye be
welcome. & me behoueth your counseyle &
your helpe for to go in to Gascoyn. for to
amende & redress that to me was done
when I was there. & for to entreate of
peas byr the kyng of Aragon & the
prynces of Spayne. And all the kynges lige
men erles & barons consented & graunted
thereto. And than kyng Edward made
hym redy & went in to Gascoyn. & let a-
mende all the trespasses that was done by
in Gascoyn. And of the debate that was by-
twene the kyng of Aragon & the prynces of
Spayne he called & accorded them. And
whyle kyng Edward & quene Elenore
his wyfe were in Gascoyn the good rule
of Councyle was made wardyn of
Englonde tyll that kyng Edward came
agayn. And then enquired he of his tray-
tours & convicted falsnes agaynst hym.
And some of the all reserved theyr name
that they had deserued. But in the
meane tyme whyle that kyng Edward

was beyonde & for to do them for to may-
be amended & had trespasses agaynst by
there was a fals traitour & was called
Bisap. & he began to make warre agaynst
kyng Edward. & that was for
cause of the prynces of Wales & the
granted & released & forsayd Bisap. &
ripoc. And when kyng Edward herde
all this. he sente by his letters to Bisap
ripoc that he shoulde make no warre
but that he shoulde be in peas for his lorde
& when he came agayn in to Englonde
he wolde undertake & quarrell & amende
all that was mysdone. This forsayd
Bisap ripoc despised the kynges com-
maundement. & spared not to do all the
forwre that he myght to the kynges men
of Englonde. But anon after he was ta-
ken & ladde to York. and there he was
drawn & hanged for his felony.

Of the redressing that king Edward
made of his Justices and of his clerkes
that they had done for theyr falsnes. and
how he drove the Jewes out of Englonde
for theyr usury and myschance.

When kyng Edward had dis-
cussed the pees in Gascoyn. a desyre ca-
me to hym for to go in to Englonde agayn.
And when he was comen agayn there
were so many complayntes made to hym
of his Justices & of his clerkes that had
done so many wronges & falsnes. that
wonder it was to here. for whiche fals-
nes by Thomas Weylende the kynges
Justyce forswore Englonde at the Court
of Lombard. for falsnes that men put upon
hym. wherof he was atteynt & proued
fals. And anon after when the kyng
had done his wyll of the Justices. than
let he enquire & espye how the Jewes
deceyved & begyled his people. & how
they spoyled his people of falsnes & of usury. and let
ordern a pryncy parlyament amonge his

and they were sent to the toure of London and there they were byheded.

How sy: John Bailoll kynge of Scotlande withsayd his homage.

Ad whā sy: John Bailoll kynge of Scotlande understode þæt kynge Edward was warred in Gascoyne to whome þæt realme of Scotlande was deuyluered falsly than agaynst his othe wylsayd his homage through procuring of his folke / 3 sent vnto the courte of Rome through a fals suggestion to be assayed of the othe þæt he swore vnto the kynge of Englonde. And so he was by letre embulled. ¶ Than chose they of Scotlande Dousters for to take from Edward his ryght. ¶ And in þæt tyme came two cardynals from Rome fro þæt pope Celestyne to treate of accorde bytwene the kynge of Fraunce & the kynge of Englonde. And as those cardynals spake of accorde / Thomas Turbeluyl was taken at Lyons & made feaute & homage to the Warden of Baris / & to hym put his two sones in hostage / 3 thought to go in to Englonde for to espye the courte / 3 tell them whan he came in to Englonde þæt he had broken the kynges prison of Fraunce by wright / 3 sayd that he wolde do þæt all englyshmen & wallshmen sholde be aboute þæt kynge of Fraunce. And this thynge to byring to an ende he swore / 3 upon this couenaunt dedes were made bytwene them / 3 that he sholde haue by yere a. 99. poundes worth of londe to bypge this thynge to an ende. This fals traytoure toke his leue & went thens & came in to Englonde vnto þæt kynge & sayd þæt he was broken out of prison / 3 that he had put hym in such peryl for his loue. Wherfore þæt kynge coude hym moche thanke / 3 full glad was of his comynge. And the fals traytoure fro þæt day espyed all the doynge of þæt kynge & also his coun-

seyle for the kynge loued hym well and was to hym full prync. But a clerke of Englonde þæt was in the kynges hous of Fraunce herde of this treason & falsnes / 3 wrote to an other clerke that than was dwelling in kynge Edward of Englonde / 3 all holt Thomas Turbeluyl had done his fals consetyng / 3 all the counseyle of Englonde was wyrtten for to haue sent vnto þæt king of Fraunce. And through the foresayd letre that þæt clerke had sent fro Fraunce / it was soude vpon hym. Wherfore he was ladde to London / and there haged and drawn for his treason. And his two sones that he had put in Fraunce for hostage were than byheded.

Of the conquest of Barwyk.

Ad whan the two cardynalles were gone agayn in to Fraunce for to treate of the peas of Cambrey the kynge sent chyff of his erles & barons / that is to saye / sy: Edmonde his broder erle of Lancastre & of Leycestre / sy: Henry Lacy erle of Archoyl / 3 Willyam de Wyke a baron / and of other baronettes aboute xliij. of the best and wyrttest of Englonde. And in þæt same tyme kynge Edward toke his viage to Scotlande for to warre vpon John Bailoll kynge of Scotlande. And sy: Robert Roos of Barwyk fledde fro þæt englyshmen and went to the Scottes. And kynge Edward went to ward Barwyk & besyged the towne. And they þæt were within maly defended hym / 3 set a fyre and burnt two of kynge Edwardes shyppes / 3 sayd in despyte & repete of hym. Weneþ kynge Edward with his longe shankes to haue gette Barwyk all our vnthanked / gas prynces hym / 3 whan he has done gas dikes hym. Whan kynge Edward had herde this scoone / anone through his myght he passed ouer the greches & assailed the towne / and came to the gates and gate and conquered the

to done / & through his gracious power
 Arme. ccv. D. and. vii. C. Scottes. And
 kynge Edward lost no man of renome-
 saue sye Richard of Cornwarle & hym
 drew a demyng out of fere hall with
 a quarell as fforesayd Richard dyd of
 his helme & commaunded them for to yelde
 them & put them in the kynges grace &
 the Scottes wolde not. Wherfore f hall
 was bent & cast downe. & all those that
 were therein were bent. And kyng Ed-
 ward lost no moo men at that byrge of
 symple estate but. xxviij. Englyshmen.
 And the wardeyn of the castell gaue vp
 the keys of the castell wout any assaute
 & there was taken sye William Douglas
 & sye Symond frisel & the erle Patrik
 yelved them to the peas. But Ingham
 of Humstrempl & Robert the Brus that
 were with kyng Edward. forsoke kyng
 Edward & helde with the Scottes. and
 afterwarde they were taken & put in to
 prison. And than let kyng Edward close
 in Barroth with Walles & with dyches
 And afterwarde Robert Rous went to
 Tyndale & let way byrgge a fyre & Ex-
 ham & Lamerstok & sewe & robbed the
 folke of f coultre. And after that he went
 fro thens to Dunbar. And f fyrst wed-
 nesdaye of Marche f kyng sent f erle of
 Garence / sye Hugh Percy / & sye Hugh
 Spenser to a fayre company for to bessege
 the castell. But one f was called sye Ry-
 chard Wyward a traytour & a fals man
 pynagured for to begyle f englyshmen
 and sent to f englyshmen for to deceyue
 them & sayd that he wold yelde to them
 the castell. yf they wold graut hym. viij.
 dayes of respyce. that he myght sende
 a cell to sye John Bayliff that was kyng
 of Scotlande. hoto his men fared that
 were within f castell. & sent hym word
 but yf he wolde remeure the syege of the
 englyshmen. that they wolde yelde the
 castell to the englyshmen. The messen-

ger than came unto sye John Bayliff (f
 than was kyng of Scotlande) wher-
 as he was with his host. and the mes-
 senger tolde hym all the case. And than
 sye John Bayliff toke his host & came
 on the morowe erly towarde the castell.
 And sye Richard Wyward saide hym
 come that was mayster of the couseyle
 and keper of f castell. and sayd unto the
 Englyshmen. O quod he. now I se a
 fayre company and well apparayled. I
 wyl goo agaynst them and were with
 them and assaile them. And sye Hugh
 Spenser saide the falsnes of hym & the
 reason. and sayd to hym. O traytour ta-
 ken and proued. your falsnes shall not
 awayle you. And sye Hugh Spenser co-
 maunded anone for to bynde hym. and in
 all haste went agaynst theyr enemyes.
 and serue of the Scottes the nombre of
 xxij. D. for the Scottes had that tyme
 no man with them of honour. saue sye
 Patrick Graham that many fought &
 longe. & at the last he was slayne. And
 than sayd the englyshmen in repese of
 the Scottes. These scatered Scottes
 holde I for lottes of wyntches byware.
 Erly in a moynynge in an euyl tymynge
 went yf fro Dunbare. ¶ Whan those f
 were in the castell saide the dyscorture
 they yelved vp the castell to f englyshe
 men. and boude theyr bodies londes &
 castels to kyng Edward. And so there
 were taken in f castell thre erles. viij. ba-
 rons. and. xxviij. knyghtes. and. xj. cler-
 kes. and. viij. pycardes. & all were pre-
 sented to kyng Edward. & he sent them
 to f toure of London to be kepte there.

¶ Hoto kyng Edward of his grete
 grace deliuered agayne the Scottes
 out of prison that were cheftaynes
 of the londe. and they dyde them to
 the freyshmen through the couseyle
 of William Walceys.

When Johan kynge Edward had made an ende of the warre & taken the cheftaynes of Scotland. Then came syr John Bapoll wether & peised them unto kynge Edward & put them in his grace & were ladde to London. And when kynge Edward was comen thider they were brought before hy & he kynge asked of them how they wolde make amendes of the trespase & losse þe they had done him & they put them in his mercy. Lordes sayd the kynge / I wyll not pour lordes ne pour goodes / but I wyll þe make to me an othe vpon goddes body to be true to me & neuer after this tyme agaynst me bere armes. And they all consented to the kynges wyll & swore vpon goddes body þis to say / syr John of Comyn þe erle of Strathorne / þe erle of Carrick & also my. bisschops undertoke for al the clergy & so þe kynge deliuered them and gaue them safeconductes to go in to thei owne countree. And it was not longe afterwarde but that they arose agaynst kynge Edward / because that they wyll well that kynge Edwardes folke were taken in Gascoyn / as before is sayd / but syr Johan Bapoll kynge of Scotlande wyll well that his londe sholde haue sorowe ynough & shame for thei fallnes / and in haste went hym ouer þe see to his owne londes / and there helde hym / and neuer came agayne. Wherefore þe Scottes chose unto thei kynge Wyllyam Waleys a rybaud and an harlot / comen bp of nought / & to englyshmen dyd moche harme. And kynge Edward thought how he myght best deliuer his people that were taken in Gascoyne / & in haste went hym ouer the see in to Flaundres for to warre vpon the kynge of Fraunce. And the erle of Flaundres receyued hym with moche honour / & graunted hym all his londes at his owne wyll. And when the kynge of Fraunce herde tell þe kynge

of England was arrayed in Flaundres & came w an huge power to destroye hym he prayed hy of trewe for this yere / so þe englyshe marchauntres and also frenche myght safely go & come on bothe sydes. Kynge Edward graunted it / so þe he had his men out of prison þe were in Gascoyn. And þe kynge of Fraunce graunted anone / & so they were deliuered. In the same tyme the Scottes sent by the bisschop of saynt Andrews in to Fraunce to þe kynge & to syr Charles his brother þe syr Charles shold come w his power / and they of Scotland wolde come w thei power / & so they sholde go in to Englonde þe londe to destroye from Scotlande unto Kent / & the Scottes trusted moche vpon þe frenche men. But of þe thynge they had no maner graunte. Yet neuerthelesse þe Scottes began to robbe & see in Northumberlonde and dyd moche harme.

How Wyllyam Waleys let see syr Hugh of Cressingham / and of the baytyle of Fensike.

When the tynnynges came to kynge Edward that Wyllyam Waleys had ordeyned such a stronge power / & also that all Scotlande to hym was attendant / & ryde for to see Englyshmen and to destroye the londe / he was sore annoyed / & sent anone by lentre to þe erle of Garrow & to syr Henry Percy / and to syr Wyllyam Latimer / and to syr Hugh of Cressingham his tresourer / that they sholde take power & go in to Northumberlonde & so forth in to Scotlande for to kepe the countrees. And when Wyllyam Waleys herde of thei comynge / he began for to see / & þe englyshmen folowed hym & droue hym tyll he came to Derry uelyn / & there he helde hym in þe castell. And the wallshmen euery daye them charyed & thertened / & dyd all the despyte that they myght / so þe Englyshmen

upon a tyme in a mornynge went out fro
the castel the mountaunce of .x. myle &
passed ouer a brydge. And William Wa-
leys came with a strange power & dyne
them backe for the englyshmen had no
power agaynst hym but fledde & they þ
myght take the brydge escaped. But sy
hugh the kynge's resourer there was
slayn & many other also. Wherfore was
made moche sorowe. ¶ Then had kyng
Edward spedde all his maters in Fla-
ndres & was comen agayn in to Englonde
& halp to take his waye in to Scotlande
& came thider at þ' Auncyon tye & all
that he soude he let a fyre & brent. But þ
poore people of Scotlande came to hym
wonders thyrke & prayed hym for god-
des loue to haue mercy on them. Wher-
fore the kyng commaunded þ no man shold
do them harme þ were yowde to hym ne
to no mā of ordre nor no hous of religion
ne no maner church but let espye where
þ he myght fynde ony of his enemyes.
¶ Then came a spee to þ kyng & tolde hþ
where the Scottes were assembled for
to abyde batayle. And so on saynt Mary
Magdaleyns day þ kyng came to fow-
kirk & gaue batayle to þ Scottes & at þ
batayle were slayne .xxxiii. M. Scottes &
of englyshmen .xxvii. & no mo. of þ whi-
che was a worthy knight slayne an hol-
pytaller þ was called Icere Brian Jay.
For whan William Waleys fled from þ
batayle that same Brian hym pursued
spersly & as his hors ran he sturr u to a
myre of a marys by to þ hely & Willyam
Waleys than turned agayne and there
slew sy Brian & þ was grete harme.
And that whyle kyng Edward went
through Scotlande for to enqurye yf he
myght fynde ony of his enemyes & in þ
lunde he dwelled as longe as hym lyked
& there was none enemy that durst hym
abyde. And soone after þ kyng Edward
went to Southamton for he wolde not

abyde in Scotlande in wynter season for
element of his people. And whan he ca-
me to London he let amende many mys-
dedes that were done agaynst his peas
& his lawes whyle he was in Flaunders

¶ Of the last maryage of kyng Ed-
ward and how he went the thyrde
tyme in to Scotlande.

¶ And after ward it was ordeyned
through the counseil of Rome that
kyng Edward shold wedde dame Mar-
garete that was kyng Philips syster of
fraunce. And the archbishop Robert of
Bynchelle spoused the togeder through
whiche mariage there was made peas
betweene kyng Edward of Englonde &
kyng Philip of fraunce. ¶ Kyng Ed-
ward went than the thyrde tyme in to
Scotlande. And than whan þ fyfth yere he
famyshed the lunde so þ he left not one
but that al came to his mercy / save they
that were in þ castell of Etreuclyn that
well was vitayled & stoyed for .vij. yere.

¶ How the castell of Etreuclyn was
besyged and wonne.

¶ Kyng Edward came to the castell
of Etreuclyn w an huge power &
besyged the castell but it lyel awayled
for he myght do the Scottes no harme
tho castell was so stronge & well kept.
Whan kyng Edward sawe that he be-
thought hym on a queynryse & caused
anone to make two payr of hye galowes
belye the toure of þ castell & made his
othe that as many as were within the
castell (were he erle or baron) & he were
taken with strengthe (but yf he wolde
the rather yelde hym) he shold be han-
ged upon þ same payr of galowes. And
whan they that were within the castell
herde this / they came and yeldeo them

all to the kynges grace & mercy. And the kyng forgave them all his full wyll. And there were all þe grete lordes of Scotlande sworne to kyng Edward / þe they sholde come to London to every parliament / & holde stonde to his ordynance.

þe Treplebaston was fyrst ordeyned.

Edyng Edward went thens to London / & thence for to have had rest & peas of his warre / in þe whiche warre he was occupied. xx. yere / that is to say in Wales / in Gascony & in Scotlande / & thought how he myght recover his treasour / þe he had spented about his warre. And let enquire throughe þe realme of all the cyne þe he had don out of his realme that men called Treplebaston / & ordeyned therto Justices. And in this maner he recovered treasour about nombr. And his purpose was for to have gone in to the holy londe for to have warred upon goddes enemyes / because he was troubled longe tyme before. And nevertheless the lawe þe he had ordeyned byd moche good throughe out all Englonde to them that were mylode. For those þe trespass were well chastised / & after warde were moche more meket & better / & the poore comyns were in rest & peas. And þe same tyme kyng Edward prissoned his enemye Colwarde / because þe byshop of Cheshir þe kynges tresourer had complained on hys / sayeng þe he throughe covyle of one Wyers of Canaston a squyer of Gascony had broken his parbes. And this Wyers was prissoned & hadde this same Colwarde. And for this cause kyng Edward cyled this Wyers out of Englonde.

Of the deeth of William Waleys the fals traytour.

Ad when this kyng Edward had overcome his enemyes in

Wales / Gascony & Scotlande / & had recovered all his traytours / save only þe rybau William Waleys / þe never wolde pryd hym to þe kyng / & at þe last he was taken in the towne of Saynt Dominys / the xxiii. yere of kyng Edwardes regne / & was presented to kyng Edward. But the kyng wolde not se hym / & sent hym to London to receyve his judgement / & by þe saynt Barthymewes even he was hanged & quartered / & his herd smitten of and his bowelles taken out of his body and burnt / & his body quartered & sent to four of the best towncs of Scotlande / & his herd put upon a spere & set by London byrge / in ensample þe the Scottes sholde have in mynde for to do anyt agaynst theyr lyege lorde agayne.

How the Scottes came to kyng Edward for to amende theyr trespass that they had done agaynst hym.

Ad at Whychtmas next comyng kyng Edward held his parliament at Westmynstre / & thider came þe Scottes / that is to saye the byshop of Saynt Andrewes / Robert the Duns cric of Carth / Symond the frisen / John þe erle of Ardel. And they were surrounded with þe kyng & bounde / & by orde were that þe any of them afterwarde myghte them agaynst the kyng / they sholde be dyssevered for evermore. And whan theyr peas was thus made / they toke theyr leve & went home unto theyr countres.

How Robert the Duns challenged Scotlande.

Ad after this Robert the Duns cric of Carth sent by his lettres unto the erles and barons of Scotlande that they shold come to hym to Berne on the mynwe after the Cousteperon of our lady for the grete needes of the londe.

Treplebaston

11

And the lordes came at þe daye aspyed.
And the same daye sy Robert the Byng
sayd. I am wyllyng that thou shouldest
be my possessor whiche the right of the
countie of Scotlande. And so he said. I
am rightfull heyr. And þe sy John
Bartholomew that was our kynge hath
been his left hand. And though it be
that kyng Edward of Englonde hath
throughout þe last hath made me assent
to hym agayn my will. If þe sy I
grant þe I may be kyng of Scotlande
I shall kepe you agayn kyng Edward
of Englonde. And agayn all maner men.
And with þe word the abbot of Beconne
arose up and before them all sayd þe word
reasoning to helpe hym and defende þe londe
and sayd he wolde give hym a. 49. pence
for to maynteyn þe londe. And all þe other
granted hym the londe. And with they
power hym for to helpe. And desired kyng
Edward of Englonde. And sayd þe Robert
the Byng shoulde be kyng of Scotlande.

And so sy John of Comyn gaynsayd
the challenge of sy Robert the Byng.

Undyrnges sayd sy John of Co-
myne. I thynke on þe trowth and othe
that ye made to kyng Edward of englonde
and as touching my selfe I wyll not breke
my othe for no man. And so he went from
them. Wherfore Robert þe Byng and all the
that consented to hym were all content in
sy John of Comyn. And ordeyned they
another consyle at Dumfries. To which
came þe lord sayd sy John of Comyn. For
he dwelled but two myle from Dumfries
there he was wont to sojourne and abyde.

And so sy John of Comyn was
traytoursly slayne.

And whan Robert the Byng wyst
that all the grette lordes of Scot-
land were come to Berwick. And sy John

of Comyn that was aboute with the lordes
he sent specially for the daye sy John of
Comyn to come and seeke with hym. And
þen that he came and seke with him at the
gray herne in Dumfries. And that was the
churchday after Candlemasse daye. And sy
John granted to go with hym. And whan
he had herde masse. he take a supper and
dunke. And afterward he desired his pas-
sage and rode to Dumfries. Whan Robert
the Byng sawe hym come as a wayfarer
as he was in his chamber. he made wyte
enough. And came agayn hym. And loked
hym aboute the necke. And made to hym
good semblance. And whan all the lordes
and barons of Scotlande were there pre-
sent. Robert þe Byng sayd. I wyll be wote
well the cause of this comynge. And wher-
fore it is. If þe sy I grant that I may
be kyng of Scotlande as right heyr of
the londe. And all þe lordes þe were there
sayd with one voyce þe shoulde be crowned
kyng of Scotlande. And þe they wolde helpe
hym and maynteyn agayn all men sayyng
and ope for hym yf here were. The gentyl
lord sy John of Comyn answered. Let
ten shetes for me. For to have as muche
helpe of me as þe value of a button. For
othe þe I have made to kyng Edward of
Englonde I shall holde whyle þe my lyfe
lasteth. And with þe word he went from
the company and wolde have lefte upon his
passage. And Robert the Byng pursued
hym with a drawn sword and pierced
hym through the body. And sy John Co-
myne fell downe to the erth. But whan
Roger þe lord sy John Comyns broder
saw þe faillure. he went to Robert þe Byng
and smote hym with a knyfe. but þe knyfe
was armed under. so þe stroke myght
do hym no harme. And so moche helpe came
aboute Robert þe Byng. þe Roger Co-
myne was there slayne and hewen to peeces.
And Robert þe Byng turned agayn wher
re as sy John Comyn the noble baron

lape wounded and dreyne toward his
beth besydes the hye awter in þe churche
of the gray feres / & sayd vnto sy: John
Comyn. O traytour thou shalt be deed
and shalt neuer lette myn auauincement
and shoke his swerde at the hye awter
and smote hym on the heed þe the byarne
fell downe vpon the groude / & the blode
dret on hygh vpon the walles. And yet
vnto this daye is that blode seen there /
& no water may washe it awaye / & so
dyed that noble knyght in holy churche.
¶ When this traytour Robert þe Brus
sawe þe no man wold lette his crowaciō
he comaūded all þe barons to be at saynt
Johns town at his crowaciō. And on
the Annūciaciō of our lady þe byshop of
Glaston & þe byshop of saynt Andrewes
crowned hym kyng. And anon after he
droue all the Englyshmen out of Scot-
londe. And they fledde and came & com-
playned them vnto kyng Edward how
that Robert the Brus had dyspūen them
out of the londe & dysperced them.

¶ How that kyng Edward dubbed at
Westmynstre. xxiiij. score knyghtes.

¶ And when kyng Edward herde
of this myschete / he swoore þe he
wold be auēged therof / & hange & drawe
all the traytours of Scotlonde without
ransom. ¶ Then kyng Edward sent for
all the bachelars of Englonde / that they
shold come to Londo at Whylsoneyde / &
he dubbed at Westmynstre. xxiiij. score
knyghtes. ¶ Then ordeyned he to go in to
Scotlonde agaynst Robert the Brus / &
sent before hy into Scotlonde sy: Symon
the balyauē erle of Derbyshyre / & sy: Henry
Percy baron w a laye company þe pur-
sued þe Scoottes & dynt towne & castels
And afterwarde came þe kyng hymselfe
with erles & barons a laye company.

¶ How Robert the Brus was dyscom-

fyted in batayle / & how Symon Tre-
sell was slayne.

¶ The frydaye nexte before the As-
sumptiō of our lady kyng Ed-
ward mette with Robert þe Brus & his
company besyde saynt Johns towne in
Scotlonde / of þe which company kyng
Edward slewe. viij. ¶ When Robert
the Brus sawe this myschete / he began
to flee & hyd hy secretly / but sy: Symon
Trell was soze pursued / so þe he turned
again & abode batayle / for he was a wor-
thy knyght / but our englyshmen slewe
his hors & toke hym & led hym to kyng
Edward / but or he came to hy he began
to flatter his takers / pmyssyng them. iij.
q. markes of syluer / his hors & harnys
& become a begger. ¶ Thā said Throbalde
of Deuernes that was þe kynges archer.
How so god me helpe it is for nought þe
thou spekest / for all þe golde in englonde
I wold not let the go wout comaūdemēt
of kyng Edward. And kyng Edward
wold not se hym / but comaūded to lede
hym to London to haue his dome. And
on our ladyes sue the statūte he was
hanged & drawen / & his heed smytten of
& hanged agayne with chaynes of yren
vpon the galowes / & his heed was set
vpon London byrdege on a spere / and a-
gaynst Chyrlmasse þe body was burnt /
bycause that the men that kepte þe body
by nyght sawe so many deuylles aboure
hym / turmentyng hym w yren crokes
hoiely vpon þe galowes / & many that
sawe them anon after dyed for drede / &
some wared mad / or soze seke. And in þe
batayle was taken þe byshop of Basson
& þe byshop of saynt Andrewes / & þe abbot
of Brome all armed as fals traytours
& fals prelates agaynst chry: othe. And
they were brought to þe kyng. And the
kyng sent them vnto the pope of Rome
that he shold do w them his wyll.

¶ How John erle of Archeles was taken and put to deth.

And at that tyme fledde sy John erle of Archeles, and went in to a churche, & there hyd hym for dyede, but he myght have there no refuge, because that þe churche was entred throughe a generall sentence, & in þe same churche he was taken. And this sy John went well to have scaped fro þe deth, because þe he claymed kynrede of kyng Edward. And þe kyng wold no longer be betrayed of his traytours, but sent hy to London in haste, & there was hanged & his body smytten of, & his body burnt. But at the prayer of the queene Margarete because þe he claymed kynrede of kyng Edward his deapynge was forgynen hym.

¶ How John that was William Waleys brother was put to deth.

And when the grettest maysters of Scotlande were thus done to euill deth for theyr fallnes and treason, John that was William Waleys brother was taken and done to deth, as sy John erle of Archeles was.

¶ How Robert the Brus fledde from Scotlande to Norway.

And at that same tyme was Robert the Brus moche hated amonge the people of Scotlande, so that he wylt not what was best to do, & for to hyde hym he went in to Norway to þe kyng þe had spoused his syster, & there helde hy for to haue socour. And Robert the Brus myght not be founde in Scotlande. So kyng Edward than let crye his peas throughe out all the londe, and his knyghtes were bidden, & his mynysters serued throughe out all the londe.

¶ How kyng Edward dyed.



And when kyng Edward had abated the pryde of his enemyes he returned agayne southwarde, and a malady toke him at Burgh vpon sandes in the marche of Scotlande, & he wylt well that his deth was full of ghyf, & called to him sy Henry Lacy erle of Richol, sy Guy erle of Warwick, sy Symon de Montfort erle of Denbroke, and sy Robert of Clifford baron, & prayed them vpon the saych þe they ought hym, that they shold make Edward of Carnaruan kyng of Englonde as shortly as they myght, & þe they shold not suffer piers of Canastou come agayn in to Englonde for to make his sone to ryot. And they graunted hym with a good wyll. Than þe kyng toke þe sacramentes of holy churche as a good chrissten man shold, & dyed in depe repentance when he had reigned. xxxv. yere, & was buryed at Westmynster in grette sollemnite, on whose god haue mercy.

¶ Of Merlinys prophetes that were declared of kyng Edward that was kyng Henryes sone.

Of this kyng Edward apperred Merlin, and called hym a dragon the seconde of the. vi. kynges that shold

regne in Englonde. & sayd þ he sholde be
medled with mercy & also w strengthe &
seruice / that shold kepe Englonde from
colde & hete. And that he sholde open his
mouth toward Wales / & that he sholde
set his fote in Wyke / & that he shold close
with Walles þ shold do moche harme to
his seide. And he sayd sothe / for the good
kyng Edward was medled w mercy &
with spertines / with merry agaynst his
menynges of Wales / & after of Scottlode
with spertines wha he put them to deeth
for theyr failnes & traytoze / as they had
deserued it. And well kepthe he Englonde
from colde & hete / syth he kepthe it fro all
maner of enemyes that came vpon him
to do hym ony wyonge. And well he ope
ned his mouth toward Wales / & made
a quake throughe þ hidour of his mouth
whan he conquered it throughe dynt of
swerde. For þ prynce Lewlyn & Daupd
his broder / Byg & Morgan were put to
deeth throughe theyr failnes & theyr foly.
And he set his fote in Wyke / & conquered
Barmyke / at the whiche conquest were
slayn. xxv. M. and. vii. C. out take them
that were bynt in the reed hall. And the
Walles that he let make shall be noyous
vnto his seide / as men shall here after se
in the lyfe of syr Edward of Carnaruan
his sone. And yet sayd Gertyn that he
sholde make ruptures ren in blode & with
brayn / & that semed well in his warres
where as he had the maystry. And yet
Gertyn sayd þ there shold come a people
out of the north west durynge the regne
of the foze sayd dragon / þ sholde be ladde
by an yll greyhoude / þ the dragon sholde
croune kyng / that afterward sholde sle
ouer þ lee for bynde of þ dragon without
comynge agayn / & þ was proued by syr
John Bapoll þ kyng Edward made to
be kyng of Scottlonde / that falsly arose
agaynst hym / & after he fled to his owne
londe of Fraunce / & neuer came agayne

in to Scottlonde for bynde of kyng Ed
ward. And yet sayd Gertyn the people
that sholde lede the foze sayd greyhoude
shold be faderles vnto a certayn tyme / &
he sayd sothe / for þ people of Scottlonde
gretely were dyspleased / syth þ syr John
Bapoll theyr kyng was slayd. And yet
sayd Gertyn þ the sonne shold become in
his tyme as cred as blode in tokenynge
of grette mortallite of people / & that was
well knowe whan þ scottes were slayn.
And Gertyn sayd þ same dragon sholde
nouryshe a fore that sholde mure grette
warre agaynst hym þ shold in his tyme
be ended / & that semed well by Robert þ
Baus that kyng Edward nourysed in
his chambie / that sythen stalle a warre &
mured grette warre agaynst hym / whi
che warre was not ended in his tyme.
And afterward Gertyn tolde þ this dra
gon shold be holden þ best body of all the
worlde / & he sayd sothe / for þ good kyng
Edward was þ worthyst knyght of all
þ worlde in his tyme. And yet said Ger
tyn þ the dragon sholde dye in þ marche
of an other londe / & þ his londe sholde be
longe wout a good keper / & þ men sholde
wepe for his deeth from þ yle of Sebery
vnto þ yle of Gertyn / wherfore alas shall
be theyr longe amonge þ comyn people
faderles in þ londe wasted. And þ pph
cy was knowen ouer all full well. For þ
good kyng Edward dyed at Bergh by
landes / þ is in the marche of Scottlonde
wherfore þ englyshme were dyspleased
& sorowed in Northumberlond / because
þ kyng Edwardes sone let by þ scottes
no force for þ troy of Wyrt of Canaston
wherfore alas was þ song throughe out
all Englonde for defaute of theyr good
wardeyn / from þ yle of Sebery vnto þ
yle of Gertyn þ people made moche so
rowe for good kyng Edwardes deeth. For
they wende þ kyng Edward shold haue
gone in to the holy lond / for þ was holy

his purpose. Upon whose soule god for
his hygh grace haue mercy.

Anno dni. M. CC. lxxxiij.

Celestinus was pope after Nico-
las. v. monethes / and nothyng
noble of hym is wyrtten / but þ he was a
vertuous man. Bonifacius the. viij.
was pope after hy. viij. yere. This Bo-
niface was a man in those thynges that
apperteyneth to courte / for he was very
expert in suche maters. And bycause he
had no pere / he put no mesure to his pru-
dence / & toke so grete pryde upon hym / þ
he sayd he was lord of all þ worlde. And
many thynges he dyd w his myght that
faryed wretchedly in the ende. He gaue
an ensample to all prelates þ they shoulde
not be proude / but vnder the forme of a
very shepherde of god they shoulde more
study to be loued of theyr subiectes than
to be dyad. This man is he of whome it
is sayd þ he entred as a fox / he lyued as
a lyon / & dyed as a dogge. This tyme
the yere of grace was ordeyned from an
C. yere to an. C. yere / & the first Jubile
was in þ yere of our lord god. M. CCC.
Benedictus the. xi. was pope after Bo-
niface. xi. monethes. This man was an
holy man of þ orde of þ frere prechours
& lytell whyle lyued / but decessed anon.
Adolphus was Emperour. vi. yere.
This man was þ erle of Anorone / and
was not crowned by þ pope / for he was
slayne in batayle. Albertus was em-
perour after hy. x. yere. This man was
þ duke of Austrie / & first was repleued
of the pope / & after was confirmed by þ
same pope for the malice of the kyng of
France whiche was an enemy vnto the
chirche. And to that Albert þ same pope
gaue the kyngdom of France / as he dyd
other kyngdomes / but it plyed not / for
at the last he was slayne of his newme.
Clement was pope after Benedictus
xiii. yere. This man was a grete

buylore of castels & other thynges. And
he dampned þ orde of Templers. And
he ordeyned the. viij. boke of decretalles
the whiche he called þ questyons of Cle-
mentyns. And anon after in a coustie
the whiche he heide at Wisenna he reui-
sed that same boke / the whiche his suc-
cessour John called agayn / & incorporated
it & published it. This Clement first of
al popes translated the popes seat from
Rome to Dunyon. And whider it was
done by the mocyon of god / or by þ bold-
nes of man / dyuerse men meruayllith.
John the. xxi. was pope after hym
xviij. yere. This man was all glorious
as for those thynges that were to be bled
through the actyfe lyfe. And he publi-
shed the Constytucyons of the Clemen-
tynes / & sent them to all þ vniuersities.
And many sayntes he canonysed. And þ
farte byshoppyches he drupped. And he
ordeyned many thynges agaynst þ plu-
ralite of benefices / and many heretikes
he dampned / but whider he was saued
or not / our lord god wolde not thewe to
those that he loued very well. Henry
the. viij. was emperour after Albert. v.
yere. This Henry was a noble man in
warre / and he conuerted to haue peas by
londe & water. He was a glorious man
in batayle / & was neuer overcome with
enemies. And at the last he was poi-
soned of a frere whan that he housled
hym by receyvinge of the sacrament.

Of kynge Edward that was
kynge Edwardes sone.

And after this kynge Edward
reigned Edward his sone / that
was borne at Carnaruan. And this Ed-
ward went into France & there he spou-
sed Isabell þ kynges daughter of France
the. xxiij. daye of January at þ chirche
of our lady at Boloyne in the yere of our
lord Jesus Christ. M. CCC. viij. And

the .xx. daye of february the nexte yere
came after he was crowned solemply at
Westmynster of þe archebysshop of Can-
terbury & of þe archebysshop of Winche-
ster And there was so grete pyres of people þat
for John Bakwel was deed & murdered
And anon as the good kynge Edward
was deed. for Edward his sone kynge of
Englonde sent after þe piers of Canaston
into Gascogne & so moche he beloued hym þat
he called hym brother. And anon after he
gave hym þe lordshipp of Watnyngford &
after þat he gave hym þe lordshipp of Corne-
walle agaynst all þe lordes wyll of Eng-
londe. And thus brought he for Walter of
Langton byshop of Chestre to þe court of
London in prison w two knyghtes al onely
to serue hym. for þe kynge was wroth w
þe bycause þat for Walter made complaynt
on hym to his fader. wherfore he was put
in prison in þe tyme of Cretebasson. And
the foresaid piers of Canaston made so
grete wayfayres þat he went in to þe kyn-
ges seruise in þe abbey of Westmynster
& toke þe table of golde w the tressys of þe
lone & many other ryche Jewels þat some-
tyme were kynge Riches & toke them
to a merchant þat was called Symon of
Fultham & so he shold bere them out of
lee in to Gascogne & so he went thens &
never came agayn after. whiche he was a
grette joye to this londe. And whan this
piers was so ryche & auanced. he be-
came woder's proude. wherfore al þe grete
lordes of þe realme had hym in despyte for
his grede & pryng. wherfore for Henry
Lacy erle of Lincolne and for Guy erle of
Warwick the whiche good lordes þat good-
king Edward for Edward his fader kynge
of Englonde charged þe piers of Canas-
ton shold be not comyn in to Englonde for to
lynge & so some Edward in to ryde. And
on þe .xv. daye of Englonde assembled them
in a certayne place at þe fresser pichour
at London. At here they spake of þe piers

nour that kynge Edward dyd to his re-
alme & to his crowne. And so they assen-
ted all bothe erles & barons & all the com-
mys þat the foresaid piers of Canaston
shold be exiled out of Englonde for euer
more. And so it was don: so he forsooke
Englonde & went in to Fyland & there þe
kynge made hym chetayn & gouernour
of the londe by his commission. And there
this piers was chetayn of all þe londe
and dyd there all that hym lyked & had
powre to do what he wolde. And þe tyme
were þe temples ryde through all chry-
stendom by cause þat men put upon them
that they shold be chynge agaynst the
fayth & good bycane. Kynge Edward is-
ued piers of Canaston so moche that he
myght not forbere his company. and so
moche þe kynge gaue & beghyt þe people
of Englonde that þe ryng of þe foresaid
piers shold be rucked at Breantford
through them þat had rucked hym. wher-
fore piers of Canaston came agayne in
to Englonde. And whan he was comen
agayn in to this londe he despyed þe gre-
test lordes of this londe & called for Bo-
bert of Clare erle of Glocestre & Hereford
and the erle of Ryeboll for Henry Lacy
butshendly & for Guy erle of Warwiche
the blacke hound of Arden & also he
called noble erle Thomas of Lancaster
chutic & many other lordes & shames
them sayd & many other grete lordes of
Englonde. wherfore they were toward
hym full angry & wroth and ryght sore
droyed. And in þe same tyme dyd þe erle
of Ryeboll but he charged for þe byed
Thomas erle of Lancaster that was his
sone in lawe. that he shold marrye
his quarell agaynst this same piers of
Canaston upon his blessing. And so it
befell through helpe of the erle Thomas
of Lancaster & also of þe erle of Warwiche
that the foresaid piers was beten at
Brentford betwix Warwiche & the .xv.

Part. lli.

Kynge Edward the seconde.

daye of June in the yere of grace a. 33. cc. xii. Wherfore the kynge was sore a-
noyed & prayed god þ he myght se þ day
to be avenge d upon þ deith of þ foresayd
þyers. And so it befell after ward as ye
shall here. Was the tyme for þ foresayd
erle of Lancaster & many other grete ba-
rons were put to piteous deith & marty-
red bycause of the foresayd quarrell. The
kynge was than at London and helde a
parliament & ordeyned the lawes of sy.
Symond Bounford. Wherfore the erle
of Lancaster & the other erles & all þ cler-
gye of Englonde made an othe througħ
counseyle of Robert of Wyncheste for to
mainteyn the ordinaces for evermore.

How Robert the Brus came agayn in
to Scotlonde & gadied a grete power of
men for to warre vpon kynge Edward.

Ad whan sy Robert the Brus
that made hy kynge of Scotlonde
that before was fledde in to Norway for
diede of deith of þ good kynge Edward &
also he herd of the debate þ than was in
Englonde bytween þ kynge & his lordes
he ordeyned an hoost & came in to Eng-
londe in to Northumberland & clene de-
stroyed þ countree. And whan kynge Ed-
ward herde these tydynge he let assem-
ble his hoost & mette þ Scottes at Etre-
uelyn on the daye of þ Ascensite of saynt
John Baptyt in the thyrde yere of his
regne & in the yere of grace. 33. cc. xiii.
Was þ losse & losse þ there was done.
For there was saynt the noble erle Syl-
bert of Clare sy Robert Clifford baron
& there kynge Edward was discorde &
Comend of Paule the kynge's bellward
for hye went & blowed hymselfe in a
frellhe tyme þ is called Bannokelborne
Wherfore they sayd in reprofe of kynge
Edward for as moche as he loved to go
by water & also for he was discomforted
in Bannokelborne therfore þ maydens

made a songe therof in þ costree of kynge
Edward & in this maner they songe.
Maidens of englonde sore may ye moine
for tye haue lost your lemmans at Ban-
nokelborne in beuelogh. What wenerh
the kynge of Englonde to haue gotten Scot-
londe in rombilogh. ¶ Whan kynge Ed-
ward was discomforted wondrous fast he
fled with his folke þ were lefte alpye &
went to Barbyk & there heide hy. And
after he toke hostages þ is to saye / two
chyldren of þ ryche of the towne & the
kynge went to London & toke counseyle of
thysse þ were nedefull unto þ realme of
Englonde. ¶ In this tyme it befell that
than was in Englonde a rybaud þ was
called John Canner & he said þ he was
the good kynge Edwardes sone & let call
hym Edward of Carnaruan & therfore
he was taken at Oxford & there he chal-
lenged the freere Carmes chirche þ kynge
Edward had gyuen them the whiche
chirche somtyme was the kynge's hall.
And after ward was this John ladde to
Northampton & drawen & haged for his
falsnes & or that he was deed he confes-
sed & said before al those that were there
that the deuyl behyght hym þ he shold
be kynge of Englonde / and that he had
serued the deuyl thye yere.

How the towne of Barbyk was ta-
ken througħ treason & how two cardy-
nals were robbed in Englonde.

On myghte sondaye in the yere of
our lord Jhu Chyrt. 33. cc. xiii.
Barbyk was lost througħ fals treason
of one þyers of Spaldyng the whiche
þyers kynge Edward had put there
for to kepe the same towne with many
burgyses of the same towne. Wherfore
the chyldren that were put in hostage
througħ the burgyses of Barbyk fo-
lloved þ kynge's marchalle many dayes
setted in strynges yrens. ¶ And after

*How the
Barbyk
was taken*

*How the
Barbyk
was taken*

that tyme there came two cardynals in
to Englonde. Whiche þ pope had sent for
to make peas betwene Englonde & Scot-
londe. And as they went toward Dur-
ham for to haue sacred myster Lodys
of Beaumont bysshop of Durham they
were take and robbed vpon the mozt of
Wynglesdown. Of whiche robbery sy-
Gilbert of Spindelton was atteynt and
taken & drawen & hanged at London &
his heed smyten of & put vpon a spere
and set vpon newe gate / and the foure
quarters sent to foure citers of Englonde.
And that same tyme befell many mys-
cheues in Englonde / for the poore people
died for hunger / and so moche & so fast
died that vnneth men myght them bu-
ry. For a quarter of whete was worth
xl. shyllinges / and two pence & an halfe a
quarter of whete was worth .x. marks.
And often tymes the poore people stole
chyldezen and ete them / & ete also all the
houises that they myght take / and also
horses and cattes. And after there fell a
grette mozeyn amonge beestes in diuers
countrees of Englonde durynge kynge
Edwardes lyfe tyme.

CHow the Scottes robbed
Northumberlande.

And in the same tyme came the
Scottes agayne in to Englonde
and destroyed Northumberlande / and
brent & robbed that lond / and slew men
& women / & chyldezen that laye in theyr
crabls / & brent also churches & destroyed
chrystendom / and toke & bare Englyshe
menes goodes as they had be Sarasyns
in paypyns / & of the wychednes þ they
doo all chrystendom spake of it.

CHow the Scottes wolde not amende
theyr trespase / and therfore Scotlande
was enteroyted.

And whā pope John the .xiii. af-
ter saynt Peter herde of þ grette
sorrow & myschefe þ the Scottes wroughte
he was wonders sorry that chrystendom
was so destroyed through the Scottes /
and namely þ they destroyed so churches
wherfore þ pope sent a generall sentence
vnder his bulles of lere vnto the arche-
bysshop of Caunterbury & to the arche-
bysshop of Yorke / that yf Robert þ King
of Scotlonde wolde not be iustified and
make amendes vnto þ kyng of Englonde
Edward theyr lord / & make amendes of
his harmes þ they had done / & also to re-
store the goodes þ they had taken of ho-
ly chirche / that þ sentence shold be pro-
nounced through out all Englonde. And
whā þ Scottes herde this / they wolde
not leue theyr malice for the popes com-
mandement / wherfore Robert the King
James Douglas & Thomas Randul-
erle of Dorset & all those that w them co-
moned oʒ holpe them in worde oʒ dede
were actured in euery chirche through
out all Englonde euery day at masse .iii.
tymes / & no masse shold be songe in holy
chirche through out all Scotlonde / but
yf þ Scottes wolde make restitution of
the harmes þ they had made vnto holy
chirche / wherfore many a good preest &
holy men therfore were saynt through
the realme of Scotlonde / because they
wolde not synge masse agaynst þ popes
commandement & agaynst his wyll / and
to do and fulfill the tyauntes wyll.

CHow syz Hugh Spensers sone was
made the kynges chamberlayne and of
the batayle of Biron.

And it was not longe after ward
that þ kyng ne ordeyned a par-
liament at Yorke / & there was syz Hugh
Spensers sone made chamberlain. And
the meane tyme while the warre lasted

the kyng went agayn in to Scotlande & it was wonder to Wyte / & besyged the towne of Berwyk / but þe Scottes went ouer þe water of Solwarth þe was the myle fro þe kynges hoost / & pryncely they stole away by nyght & came in to englod & robbed & destroyed all þe they myght / & spared no maner thynge tyll þe they came to York. And whan þe englysshmen that were left at home herd these rydynge all tho þe might trauayle as well monks preestes / freeres / chanons & seculers came & mette w the Scottes at Bilton byswale the xii. day of October. Als þe sorow / for the englyshe husbandmen that coude no thynge of warre there were slayne & drow ned in an arme of þe see. And þe chesetay nes sy: William of Bilton archbishop of yorke: & þe abbot of selby w the: stedes fled & came to yorke / & þe was the: owne soþ þe they had þe mischaunce / for they pas sed þe water of swale / & þe Scottes set a fyre the stacks of hey: & þe smoke therof was so huge þe the englysshmen myght not se the Scottes. And whan þe Englysshmen were gone ouer þe water / than came the Scottes w the: wyng in maner of a shelde & came towarde þe englysshmen in araye / & the englysshmen fledde / for bryneth they had on men of armes / for the kyng had them almost lost at þe fyre of Barwyk / and the Scottes hoblers went betwene the byrde & the englysshmen. And whan þe grete hoost them mette / the englysshmen fled betwene þe hoblers & þe grete hoost / & the Englysshmen almost were there slayne / & they þe might go ouer the water were saved / but many were drow ned. Als so: there were slayne ma ny men of reyggon / seculers / preestes & clerkes: & w moche sorow þe archbishop escaped: & therfore þe Scottes called that batayle the Wyte batayle.

¶ How kyng Edward byd all maner thynge that sy: Hugh Spenser wolde.

And whan kyng Edward herde these rydynge / he remeued his fyre from Barwyk & came agayn in to Englonde. But sy: Hugh Spenser the sone that was þe kynges chamberlayne kepte to the kynges chambze / þe no man myght speke w þe kyng. But he had made w þe hym a fette for to do all his nece / & þe ouer mesure. And this Hugh bare hym so stoute / that all men had of hym scoyne and despyte. And the kyng hymselfe wolde not be gouerned ne ruled by no maner man but onely by his fader and by hym. And yf ony knyght of Englonde had wodes / maners or lodges / that they wolde couerte / anone þe kyng must gyue it them / or els the man that ought it sholde be falsly endyted of forsaite or felony. And through suche doyng they dysherited many a bachelor / & so moche londe he gate that it was grete wonder. And whan þe lordes of Englonde sawe þe grete couetyse & the falsnes of sy: Hugh Spenser the fader & sy: Hugh the sone / they came to þe gentyll cite of Lancaster and asked hym of counseyle of the dyke that was in þe realme through sy: Hugh Spenser and his sone. And in halte by one assent they made a grev assemble at Shyrburne in Cumber / and they made there an othe for to breke & destroube þe doyng betwene þe kyng & sy: Hugh Spenser & his sone by þe power. And they wet in to þe marche of Wales & destroyed the londe of the forsaide sy: Hughes.

¶ How sy: Hugh Spenser & his fader were exiled out of Englonde.

When kyng Edward sawe þe grete harme & destruccyon that the barons of Englonde byd to sy: Hugh Spenser londe & to his sones in euery place / they came upon the kyng than through his counseyle exiled sy: John Bombay /

sy Roger Clifford / & sy Gosselyn Dault
 & many other lordes / were consentynge
 to them / wherfore the barons dyd than
 more harme than they dyd before. And
 when sy kynge sawe p the barons wolde
 not traile of theyr crueltie the kynge was
 sore adrad lest they wolde destroye hym &
 his realme for his mayntenance / but yf
 he assented to them / & so he sent for them
 by lettres p they wolde come to London
 to his parliament at a certayne daye as
 in his lettres were coneyned. And they
 came w this barayles well armed at all
 poyntes / and every barayle had cote ar-
 mures of grene clothe / & therof the ryght
 quarter was yelow w whyte bendes /
 wherfore that parliament was called p
 parliament of the whyte bende. And in
 that company was sy Amfery of Bo-
 houne erle of Hereford / & sy Roger Clif-
 ford / sy John Mombay / sy Gosselyn
 Dault / sy Roger Mortimer of Wyg-
 more / sy Henry of Crais / sy John Gif-
 ford / & sy Barthylme we of Badelsmore
 that was the kynges steward / that the
 kynge had sent to Shyburne in Cymede
 to p erle of Lancastre / & to all that were
 with hym for to treate of accord / & hym
 allyed to the barons / & came w that com-
 pany. And sy Roger Dammore / & sy
 Hugh Danbale p had spoused p kynges
 neces syster / & sy Gilbert of Clare erle
 of Glocestre p was slayne in Scotlonde
 as before is sayd. And those two lordes
 had than two partyes of the erledome of
 Glocestre / & sy Hugh Spenser the sone
 had p thyrde parte in his wyues halfe
 the thyrde syster / & those two lordes wnt
 to p barons w all theyr power agaynst
 sy Hugh theyr broder i lawe / & so there
 came with them sy Roger Clifford / sy
 John Mombay / sy Gosselyn Dault /
 sy Roger Mortimer of Wygmore his
 neww / sy Henry Crais / sy John Gif-
 ford / sy Barthylme we of Badelsmore

with all theyr company & many other p
 to them were consentyng. All the grete
 lordes came to Westmynster to the kyn-
 ges parliament / & so they spake & dyd p
 bothe sy Hugh Spenser the fader & al-
 so the sone were outlawed of Englonde
 for evermore. And so sy Hugh the fader
 went to Douer & made moche sayw / &
 fell downe upon p grounde by p see banke
 accrosse with his armes / & sore wepyng
 sayd. Adow saye Englonde & good Eng-
 londe to almyghty god I the betake / &
 thyres kyssed p grounde / & wende never
 to haue comen agayn / & wepyng cursed
 the tyme p euer he begate sy Hugh his
 sone / & sayd for hf he had lost all englonde
 & in presence of all gaue him his curse / &
 went ouer the see to his lordes. But sy
 Hugh the sone wolde not go out of Eng-
 londe / but helde hym on p see / & he & his
 copany robbed two Dromondes besyde
 Sandwyche / & toke & bare awaye all p
 was in them the value of. xl. p. poude.

How the kynge created p erle Thomas
 of Lancastre / & all that helde with hym
 and how Mortimer came & yelded hym
 to the kynge / and of the lordes.

It was not longe after p the kynge
 ne made sy Hugh Spenser the fa-
 der & sy Hugh the sone come agayn in
 to Englonde agaynst the lordes wyll of
 the realme. And soone after the kynge w
 a stronge power came and besyged the
 castell of Ledes / & in the castell was the
 lady of Badelsmore / bycause p she wolde
 not graunte that castell to the queene Jas-
 bell kynge Edwardes wyfe. But p prin-
 cypall cause was bycause p sy Barthyl-
 me we was agaynst the kynge & helde w
 the lordes of Englonde / & neuer thelesse
 the kynge by helpe and socour of men of
 London / and also of helpe of southeren
 men gate the castell maugre of them all

That were within & take them all
that they myght fynde. And when the
barons of Englonde herde this treu-
gys: sy Roger Bontimer & many other
loydis toke the towne of Burgwarth w
strength: wherfore the kyng was won-
ders wiothe: & let outlaine Thomas of
Lancastre & Wulfray de Bohune erle of
Hereford: & all those that were assentyn-
g to the same quarrell. And the kyng assem-
bled an huge host: & came agaynst the
lordes of Englonde: wherfore the Bo-
timers put them in the kynges mercy &
grace. And anon they were sente to the
toure of London: & there kept in prison.
And when þ barons herde this thyng
they came to Pouitrefet castell: where as
the erle Thomas sojourned: & told hym
how that þ Bontimers both had yelde
them to þ kyng: & put them i his grace.

Of the spege of Trehyll.

When Thomas erle of Lancastre
herde this: he was wondrous woth
and all þ were of his company: & gretly
they were discōforted: & ordeyned they
power togyder: & besyged the castell of
Trehyll. But those that were within
manly defended them: that the barons
coude not gete the castell. And when the
kyng herde þ his castell was besyged
he swore by god & by his names: that þ
spege sholde be retrued: & assembled an
huge power of people and went thider:
ward to reskowre the castell: & his power
encreased from daye to daye. When the
erle of Lancastre & the erle of Hereford:
the barons of theyr company herde of this
thyng: they assembled all theyr power
& went to Burton vpon Trent & kepte þ
byrge þ the kyng sholde not passe ouer.
But it befell soon the .x. daye of marche
in the yere of grace. 13. 111. the kyng
gave spensers: sy: Symon of Gloucestre

erle of Hereford: & John erle of Ariswell
and theyr power went ouer the water &
discōforted the erle Thomas & his com-
pany. And they fled to the castell of Tur-
bery: & from thence to Pouitrefet. And w
byrge byed sy: Roger Bontimer in the
abbey of Eathery. And that same tyme
the erle Thomas had a traptour w him
that was called Robert Holand a knyght
that þ erle had brought up of nougt: &
had newlyd byn in his buttry: and
had gyven hym a. 33. marke of londe by
yere: & so moche the erle loued hym þ he
myght do in þ erles counseil: all þ hym ly-
ked w hys & lome: & so trustly the thefe
bare hym: þ his lord trusted hym more
than any man on lyue. And the erle had
ordeyned hym by his letters: for to go in
to the erldom of Lancastre to make men
arple to helpe hym in þ biage: that is to
saye. h. C. men of armes. But the false
traptour came not there no maner men
for to warne ne reyse to helpe his lord.
And when the fals traptour herde tell þ
his lord was discōforted at Burton vpon
Trent: as a fals traptour these shale a-
waye & robbed in Kestonsle his lordes
men þ came from the discōfytur: & toke
of them hors & harneys & all þ they had
& slewe of them al that he myght take: &
came & yelden hym to the kyng. When
the good erle Thomas wytt þ he was so
betrayed: he was sore abashed: & sayd
to hymself. O almighty god how myght
Robert Holand fynde in his herte me to
betraye: syth I loued hym so moche. O
god well may now a man se by hys: þ no
man may deceyue another rather than
he that he trusteth most vpon: he hath
full euyl yelden me þ goodnes & þ wor-
thyn þ I haue done to hym: & throug
my kynnes haue awaked hym & made
hym hys wher: that he was lome: and
he maketh me go from hys into lome:
but yet shall he be an euyl deth.

Of the discomfytur of Burbygge.

The good erle sy Thomas of Lancaster / Umfrey de Bohoune erle of Derby / & the barons that were with them toke counseyle bytwene them at the freest p'chours in Pouffret / Thomas of Lancaster than thought vpon þe treason of Robert Holand / & sayd in repese. Was Robert Holand hath me betrayed / yf is the reed of some euill shced. And by the compyn assent they shold go to the castell of Dunstanburgh / þe whiche appertained to the erldom of Lancaster / & that they shold abyde there tyll that the kyng had forgyuen them his maletail. But whan the good erle Thomas herde this / he answered in this maner & sayd. Lordes said he / yf we go toward þe north the northeren men wyll saye that we go toward the Scottes / and so we shall be holden traytours / for cause of distaunce þe is bytwene kyng Edward & Robert the Brus that made him kyng of Scotland & therfore I saye as touchynge my selfe I wyll not go no ferther in to the north than to myn owne castell of Pouffret. And whan sy Roger Clifford herd this he arose by anone in wyath & drewe his swerde on hygh / & swoze by almyghty god & by his holy names / but yf that he wolde go w' them / he shold there see þe. The noble & genyill erle Thomas was soze adrad & sayd. Saye sy I wyll go with you whether so euer ye me bydde. Than went they togidre in to þe north / & with them they had. vij. C. men of armes / & came to Burbygge. Whan sy Andrieu of Berkeia þe was in the north cosseire through obynadure of the kyng for to kepe þe cosstres of Scotlande herde tell how þe Thomas of Lancaster was dyscomfyred & his company at Burton vpon Trent / he ordeyned hym a stronge power / & sy Raymond Ward also that

than was shyyet of yorke / and mette the barons at Burbygge / and anone they brake þe byrge that was made of tre. And whan þe erle Thomas of Lancaster herde that sy Andrieu of Berkeia had brought w' hym suche a power / he was soze adrad / and sente soz sy Andrieu of Berkeia / and with hym spake & sayd to hym in this maner. Sy Andrieu sayd he / ye may well vnderstande how þe our lord the kyng is ladde and mysgouerned by moche false counseyle through sy Hugh Spenser the faber and sy Hugh his sone / & sy John erle of Brundell / & through mayster Robert Baldok a false pylled clerke / that now is dwelling in þe kynges court. Wherfore I praye you that ye wyll come with vs w'ch all the power that ye haue ordeyned & helpe to destroye þe venym of Englonde / and the traytours that ben therein / and we wyll gyue vnto you all þe best parte of. v. erles domes that we haue & holde / & we wyll make vnto you an othe þe we wyll neuer do thyng without your counseyle / & so ye shall be eft as well w' vs as euer was Robert Holand. Than answered sy Andrieu of Berkeia & sayd. Sy Thomas that wold I not do ne consent thereto for no maner ch'ge ye myght me gyue without the wyll & comaundement of our lord the kyng / for than sholde I be holden a traytour for euermore. And whan þe noble erle Thomas of Lancaster sawe þe he wolde not consent to hym for no maner thyng / he sayd. Sy Andrieu wyll ye not consent to destroye þe venym of the realme as we be consent at one woide / sy Andrieu I tell the that or this yere be passed that ye shall be taken & holden for a traytour / and more than ony of you holde vs now / & of a worse deeth ye shall dye than euer dyd knyght in Englonde / & vnderstande well þe ye dyd neuer thyng þe loze shal rep'et you / & now go & do what

you good lphard / & I wyll put me into
the mercy of god. And so wente the fals
traitour troyant and as a fals forsworne
man. For through þ noble erle Thomas
of Lancaster he receyued the armes of
chivalry / & of hym was made knyght.
Then myght men se archers drawe the
on that one syde & on þ other / & knightes
also / & the fought togyder wondrous fore.
And also amongst all other knyghtes
de Boughon erle of Hereford & worthy
knyght of renome through all chrysten
dom / stode & fought with his curmyes
þpon the byrge / & as þ noble lord stode
& fought þpon þ byrge / & these troyants
skulked under the byrge / & secretly with
a spere smote the noble knyght in to the
foudament / so þ his bowelles fell about
his feet. Alas for smowe / for there was
slayne the floure of solace & confort & also
of curtesy. And knyght of Clifford a
noble knyght stode euer & fought / & well
& worthely hym defended / but at þ last
he was sore wounded in his heed / & knyght
William of Sallap & knyght Roger of Ber-
neshelde were slayne at þ batayle. When
knyght Andrew of Berkeley saw þ knyght Tho-
mas men of Lancaster killed & taken / &
none he & his company came unto þ gen-
tyll knyght / & sayd unto hym to avenge
hym. Yelde the traitour yelde the. The
gentyll erle Thomas than answered &
sayd. Say lordes / troyants be the wode
& to you wyll I be mynemye yelde whyle
that our lyues lasteth / but rather wyll
I speake out treuth than yelde to any
man. And knyght Andrew agayne behelde
knyght Thomas & his company yelde yelde
as curmyes & wood wyffe / & sayd yelde
you troyant taken yelde you / & sayge
with a lyke voyce / & sayd knyght Thomas
of þat he shal be slayne by þ knyght
and knyght Thomas of Lancaster. And
sayd that word the knyght Thomas
went unto the chynge / & sayd to the

þpon his knees / and turned his bysage
towarde the crosse and sayd. Almyghty
god unto the I yelde me / & holly I put
me unto thy mercy. And with that the
bysage & troyantes lepte aboute hym
on euery syde as troyantes & wood cur-
mentours / and despoyled hym of his ar-
mure / and clothed hym in a robe of raye
that was of his luyers luyere / & forth
ladde hym unto York by water. Then
myght men se moche sorowe & care / for
the gentyll knyghtes fled on euery syde
and þ troyantes & bysages egerly them
despyed / and cryed on hygh yelde you
troyants yelde you. And when they
were yolden / they were robbed & boude
as theues. Alas the shame and despyte
that þ generyll ordre of knyghthode had
there at that batayle. And the lord was
than without lawe / for holy chirche had
than no more reuerence than yf it had ben
a brodel hous. And in that batayle was
the fader agaynst the sone / and the uncle
agaynst the newelle. For somoche hit
kynnes there was neuer seen before in
Englonde as was than tyme amonge
folkes of one nacyon. For one kyngdome
had no more pite on the other / than an
houshold wyffe hath of a sheperde / & it was
no wonder. For the grete lordes of Eng-
londe. Were not all borne of one nacyon /
but were medled with other nacyon /
that is to saye / some were Bretons /
some Normans / some Danes / some
hyten / some Frensch / some Flemyshe /
Spanyshes / Burgons / Flanders /
Flamynghes / with many other nacyon /
the which nacyon accorded not so the
kynde blood of Englonde. And yf the grete
lordes had be truly medled so englyshe
people / & than shoulde rest and peas haue
ben amongst them without any envye.
And at þ batayle were taken many lordes
knyghts / Roger Clifford / knyght John de Mont-
knyght William de Gault / knyght William de

Willpaim & many other worthy knyghtes there were take at that batayle. And sye Hugh Wandell the nexte daye after was taken & put in to prison / and sholde haue be done to deth yf he had not spouled the kynges nece that was erle Sylbertes syster of Glocestre. And anone after was sye Barthilmew of Badlesmere taken at Etowe parke / a manory of the bysshop of Lyncolnes / that was his newwe / & many other barons & baronets wherfoze was made moche sorowe.

How sye Thomas of Lancastre was byheded at Pountfret / and .v. barons & a knyght drawen & hanged there.

NOW I shall tell you of the noble erle sye Thomas of Lancastre. Whan he was taken & brought to porke many of the cyte were full glad / & vpon hym cryed with an hygh voyce. O sye traytour ye be welcome / blyssed be god / for now ye shall haue the rewarde that longe tyme ye haue deserued. And cast vpon hym many snowe balles / & many other reproues they dyd hym. But the gentyll erle suffred all and sayd not one worde agayne. And at þe same tyme the kyng herde of this discorde / & was full glad / and in haste came to Pountfret and sye Hugh Spenser & sye Hugh his sone / & sye John erle of Arundel / and sye Edmond of Woodstok the kynges broder erle of Kent / sye Aymer of Valaunce erle of Penbroke / & mayster Robert Baldok a fals pylled clerke / that was preuy and dwelled in the kynges courte / & all came thider with the kyng. And the kyng entred in to the castell. And sye Andiewe of Berkeley a fals tpyaste through þe kynges comaundement toke with hym the gentyll erle Thomas to Pountfret / and there he was pylsoned in his owne castell that he had newe made / that stode

agaynst the abbey of kyngs Edward. And sye Hugh Spenser the sader & his sone cast in theyr thoughtes how and in what maner the good erle Thomas of Lancastre shold be put to deth without any iudgement of his peeres. Wherfore it was ordeyned through þe kynges Justices that the kyng shold put vpon hym poyntes of treason. And so it befell that he was ledde to barre before the kynges Justices barre heded as a thefe in a sayre hall in his owne castell / where as he had made many a greet fest to riche & poore. And these were his Justices / sye Hugh Spenser the sader / & Aymer of Valaunce erle of Penbroke / sye Edmond of Woodstok erle of Kent / sye John of Byrtyn erle of Rychmond / & sye Robert Baldemethrop Justice / & this sye Robert him accoupled in this maner. Thomas at the first our lord þe kyng & this courte excludeth you of all maner answer. Thomas our lord the kyng putteth vpon you þe ye haue in his lod tyden w banner displayed agaynst his peas as a traytour. And with that worde þe gentyll erle Thomas w an hie voyce sayd. Nay lordes forsoth & by saye Thomas I was neuer traytour. The Justice sayd agayn. Thomas our lord the kyng putteth vpon you þe ye haue robbed his folke & murdered his people as a thefe. Thomas also þe kyng putteth vpon you þe he discorde you & your people w his folke in his owne realme / wherfore ye went & fled to þe woode as an outlawe. And Thomas as a traytour ye ought to be hanged by reason / but the kyng hath forgyuen you that Iudgement for loue of queene Flabell. And Thomas reason wolde that ye sholde be hanged / but the kyng hath forgyuen you þe iudgement for loue of your lagnage. But Thomas for as moche as ye were taken sleynge & as an outlawe þe kyng wyll þe your heed be synpten of / as ye haue well deserued

*The Ryme
of the
Princes of
the*

Some have hym out of piers & byrge
hym to his iudgement. Whan þe gentyll
knyght Thomas had herd al these wo-
des/ with an hye voyce he cryed soye wei-
pyng & sayd. Alas saint Thomas saye
fader/ alas shall I be deed thus. Graue
me now bluffedfull god answere. But all
awayled hym: no thynge. For the cursed
Gastornys put hym byder & chyder/ & on
hym cryed w an hye voyce. O kyng Ar-
thur moost terribile and dyedefull/ Well
knownen is now thyn open traytoyr/ an
euyl deeth shalt thou anone dye/ as thou
hast well deserued it. And than they set
vpon his heed in scoyne an olde chapellet
that was all to rent that was not worth
an halfpeny. And after that they set hy
vpon a lene whyte palfrey full vnsme-
ly/ & also all bare/ & with an olde byrdell
and with an horryble noyse they droue
hym out of the castell toward his deeth/
and they cast vpon hym many balles of
snotte in despyte. And as the traytoirs
ladde hym out of the castel he sayd these
pyteous wordes/ holdynge vp his han-
des toward heuen. Now the kyng of
heuen gve vs mercy/ for þe erthly kyng
hath vs forsaken. And a frete preehour
went with hym out of the castell tyll he
came to the place that he ended his lyfe/
vnto whom he shroue hy of all his lyfe.
And the gentyll erle helde the frete won-
ders fast by the clothes & sayd to hym.
Saye fader abyde with vs tyll that I
be deed/ for my selfe quaketh for drede
of deeth. And the soche to saye/ the gentyl
erle set hym vpon his knees and turned
hym toward þe east. But a rybaud that
was called Pigone of Boston set hande
vpon the gentyl erle/ & sayd in despyte of
hym. Spye traytour turne the toward þe
Southes thy soule dethe to receyue/ and
turned hym toward the north. The no-
ble erle Thomas answered than with a
rythe voyce & sayd. Now saye lodes

I shall do your wyl. And with þe worde
the frete went from hym soye wepyng
And anone a rybaud went to hym and
smote of his heed the. xi. kal. of Apryll/
in the yere of grace. M. CCC. and. xxi.
Alas þe euerliche a gentyll blode sholde
be put to deeth wout cause & reason. And
traytoursly was the kyng counseyled
Whan he through the fals counseyle of þe
Spensers suffred sye Thomas his vn-
cles sone to be put to suche a deeth & so by-
heded agaynst all reason. And grete pite
it was also þe suche a noble kyng sholde
be deceyued and mys gouerned through
counseyle of þe fals Spensers the whiche
he maynteyned through losely agaynst
his honour & also ppyte. For afterwarde
there fell grete vengeance in Englonde
bycause of the foresayd Thomas de the.
Whan the gentyll erle of his lyf was
passed/ the pryour & þe monkes of Douit-
fret gate the body of sye Thomas of the
kyng/ and they buryed it before the hye
altre on þe ryght syde. That same daye
that this gentyl knyght was deed/ there
were hanged & drawen for þe same qua-
rell at Douitfret/ sye Wyllyam Tuchet/
sye William fitz William/ sye Warreyn
of pcell/ sye Henry of Bradborne/ and sye
Wyllyam Chayny/ barons all/ & John
Page squyer. And soone after at Porke
were drawen & hanged sir Roger Clifford
sye John of Hambray baron/ & sye Go-
selyn Daupyl knyght. And at Bytstowe
were drawen and hanged/ sye Henry of
Wemyngton/ and sye Henry Mounford
barons. And at Glocestre were drawen
and hanged sye John Giffard/ and sye
Wyllyam of Elmchurche barons. And
at London were drawen & hanged/ sye
Henry Cres baron. And at Wyndchelle
sye Thomas Colepeper knyght. And at
Wyndesore was drawen and hanged sye
francis of Walsenham baron. And at
Canterbury was drawen & hanged sye

Barthylme de Badellmore / & sy; Barthylme de of Althebournham barons / And at Cardyfe in Wales sy; Wyllyam Flemmyng baron.

How kyng Edward went in to Scotlande with an hondred thousande men of armes / and myght not spede.

And whā kyng Edward of Englonde had brought the flour of chivalry vnto they; deth through counseyle & consent of sy; Hugh Spenser the fader / and sy; Hugh the sone / he became as wood as ony lyon. And what so euer the Spensers wolde haue / it was done / so well the kyng loued them that they myght do w; hym all thyng & them lyked / wherfore & kyng gaue to sy; Hugh Spenser the fader the erldom of Wyntchestre / & to sy; Andew of Herkela the erldom of Cardoyll in preudye and in harmyng of his crowne. And kyng Edward than through counseyle of & Spensers disherited all them that had ben agaynst hy; in ony quarell w; Thomas of Lancastre / & many other were disherited also / bycause & the Spensers coueyted to haue they; lodes / & so they had all that they wolde desyre with wronge & agaynst all reason. Than made & kyng Robert Baldok a fals pylled clerke chaunceler of Englonde / through counseyle of & foresayd Spensers / & he was a fals rybaude and a couetous. And so they counseyled the kyng moche that the kyng let take to his own warde all & goodes of & lordes & were put wrongfully to deth in to his own handes. And as well they toke the goodes & were win holy chirche as & goodes & were wout / & let them be put in to his tresoury in London / & let them call his forseytes. And by they; counseyle the kyng wrought / for euermore he disherited them & ought the goodes. And

through they; counseyle let sette a tallage of all & goodes of Englonde / wherfore he was & richest kyng & euer was in englonde after Wyllyam bassard of Floumard & conquered Englonde. And yet through counseyle of them hy; semed & he had not ynough / but made yet euer tollone of Englonde for to fynde a man of armes vpon they; own costes / so; to go & warre vpon the Scottes & were his enemyes / wherfore & kyng went in to Scotlande w; an. C. M. men of armes at Whitsontyde in & yere of our lord. M. CCC. xxi. But the Scottes went & hyd them in wodes & in mountaynes & tarred & englysshmen fro day to day / & the kyng myght for no maner th;ge fynde them in playne felde wherfore many englysshmen & had lyf bytayles dyed there for hunger woder fast & lodeynly in goynge & comynge / & namely those that had ben agaynst Thomas of Lancastre & robbed his men vpon his lodes. Whan kyng Edward sawe & bytayles fayled hym / he was wondrous soze dyscōforted / bycause also & his men dyed / & for he might not spede of his enemyes. So at & last he came agayne in to Englonde. And anon after came James douglas & also Thomas Randull w; a huge host into Northumberlonde / & w; them & englysshmen & were deryuen out of Englonde / & came & robbed & courtre & dwelt the people / & also bynt a towne that was called Northallerton & many other tollones to porke. And whan the kyng herde these rydynge he let somon all maner of men that myght traualle. And so the Englysshmen mette & Scottes at the abbey of Berghlonde the. xv. daye after Wygbrimasse in & same yere aboue sayd / and the Englysshmen were discomforted. And at that dyscomfure was taken sy; John of Byrrenett of Rychemond that helde the courtre and the erldome of Lancastre / and after he

payed an huge ransom and was let go
and after that he went in to France &
came neuer afterwarde agayne.

Thow saye Andrieue of Berckela was ta-
ken & put to death & was erle of Cardoill.

When at þe tyme was sye Andrieu
of Berckela that newe was made
erle of Cardoill because þe he had taken
the good erle Thomas of Lancastre. He
had ordeyned through þe kynges comaun-
demēt of Englonde for to bynge him all
the power þe he myght for to helpe hy a-
gaynst þe Scottes at þe abbey of Beygh-
londe. And whan the fals traytour had
gadered all þe people þe he myght & wolde
haue comē to þe king to þe abbey of Beygh-
londe the fals traytour ladde them by an
other countree through Copelonde and
through þe erledom of Lancastre & went
through þe countree & robbed & slewe folke
all þe he myght. And fethermore þe fals
traytour had taken a grete some of gold
& syluer of sye James Douglas for to be
agaynst þe kyng of Englonde & to be hel-
pyng & holdyng wth the Scottes through
wholse treason þe kyng of Englonde was
discomfyted at Beyghlonde or þe he came
thider. Wherfore þe kyng was toward
hym wondrous wroth & let pryuely en-
quyre by þe countre aboute how þe it was.
And so men enquyred & espyed that at þe
last the trowth was foude & sought and
he atteynt & taken as a fals traitour as
the good erle Thomas of Lancastre hym
tolde or that he was put to death at his
takeinge at Burbydge & to hym sayd
or that yere were done he shold be taken
& holden a traytour. And so it was as þe
hoi man sayd. Wherfore the kyng sent
pryuely to sye Anthony of Lure a knight
of the countree of Cardoill that he sholde
take sye Andrieue of Berckela & put hym
to death. And to bynge this chyng to an

ende the kyng sente his comysyon so
that this same Andrieue was taken at
Cardoill & ledde to the barre in þe maner
of an erle worthely arrayed and with a
swerde gyde aboute hym and boted &
spoyred. Thā spake sye Anthony in this
maner sye Andrieue sayd he the kyng
putteth vpon the for as moche as þe hast
ben ordeyned in thy debes he byd to the mor-
che honour & made the erle of Cardoill
& thou as a traytour to thy lord laddest
the people of his countree þe sholde haue
holpe hym at þe batayle of Beighlonde &
thou laddest them a way by þe countree of
Copelonde & through þe erledom of Lan-
castre. Wherfore our lord þe kyng was
discomfyted there of the Scottes through
thy treason & falsnes & yf thou haddest
comen betymes he had had the barayle
And treason þe dydest for þe grete somme
of gold and syluer that thou receyued of
James Douglas a Scotte the kynges
enemy. And our lord þe kyng wyll that
the orde of knyghthode by the whiche þe
receyued all thyne honour and worship
vpon thy body be all brought to nought
& thyne estate vndone & other knyghtes
of lowber degree may after be ware the
whiche lord hath hugely auanced the
in dyuers countrees of Englonde & that
all may take ensample by þe theyr lord
afterward truly for to serue. Than com-
maunded he a knaue anon to helpe of his
spoyres on his heles. And after he lette
bryke the swerde ouer his heed the whi-
che the kyng gaue hym for to kepe & de-
fende his londe ther wth whan he had
made hym erle of Cardoill. And after he
let þe be vndrothed of his furred tabard
and of his hode & of his furred cotes &
of his gyrdell. And whā this was done
sye Anthony sayd than to hym. Andrieu
sayd he now arte thou no knyght but
a knaue and for thy treason the kyng
wyll that þe shalte be hanged & drawen

and thy heed smytten of / & thy bowelles
taken out of thy body & hent before the
& thy body quartered / & thy heed sente to
Londō / & there it shall stande vpon Lon-
don byrge / & the foure quarters shal be
sente to foure towncs of Englonde / that
all othe may be ware & chastised by the
And as Syr Anthony said / so it was done
all maner thyng on þ last daye of Octo-
ber / in the yere of grace. M. CCC. xxi.
And þ sonne turned in to blode as þ peo-
ple it sawe / & that dured from þ moowne
tyll it was. xi. of the clocke of the daye.

¶ Of þ myracles that god wrought for
saynt Thomas of Lancastre / wherfore
the kynge let close in the churche doores
of the priory of Poustret / that no man
sholde come therein for to offre.

And soone after that þ good erle
Thomas of Lancastre was mar-
tyred / there was a priest that longe tyme
had ben blynde / dreamed in his slepe þ he
sholde go to þ hyll there þ good erle Tho-
mas of Lancastre was put to deth / & he
sholde haue his syght agayn / & so he dre-
med thre nyghtes suynge / & þ priest let
lede him to þ same hyll / & whan he came
to the place þ he was martyred on / full
devoutly he made there his prayers / &
prayed god & saynt Thomas þ he myght
haue his syght agayne / & as he was in
his prayers / he layde his ryght hande
vpon þ same place þ the good man was
martyred on / and a drop of dye blode &
small sande cleued on his hande / & ther-
with styked his eyen / & anon through
the myght of god and saint Thomas he
had his syght agayne / & thanked than
almyghty god & saynt Thomas. ¶ And
whā this myracle was known amōge
men / þ people came thyder on euery syde
and knyled & made theyr prayers at his
tombe that is in þ priory of Poustret / &

prayed þ holy martyr of socour & helpe
& god herde theyr prayers. ¶ Also there
was a yonge childe drowned in a well
in þ towne of Poustret / & was dede thre
dayes & thre nyghtes / and men came &
layde þ dede childe vpon saynt Thomas
tombe þ holy martyr / & the chyld arose
fro deth to lyfe / as many a man it sawe.
¶ Also moche people were out of theyr
mynde / & god sent them theyr mynde a-
gayn / through vertue of þ holy martyr.
¶ Also god hath gyuen there to crepys
theyr goynge / & to croked theyr handes
& theyr feet / & to blynde also theyr syght
and to many seke folke theyr heile of dy-
uers dyscaies / for þ loue of this martyr.
¶ Also there was a ryche man in Coun-
dom in Gascoyne / and such a malady he
had that all his ryght syde rotted & fell
away fro hym þ men might se his luer
& his herte / & so he stanke þ vnnethe men
myght come nye hyr / wherfore his fren-
des were for hym wondres sorry / but at
the last as god wold they prayd to saynt
Thomas of Lancastre þ he wold praye
to god for that prisoner / & behyght to go
to Poustret for to do theyr pylgrymage
he thought þ the martyr saint Thomas
came to him & anointed ouer all his seke
body / & therwith the good man awoke
& was all hole / & his fleshe was restored
agayn þ before was rotted & falle away
for whiche myracle the good man & his
frendes loued god & saint Thomas euer
more after. And this good man came in
to Englonde / & toke with hym foure se-
lowses and came to Poustret to the hely
martyr / & dyd theyr pylgrymage / & the
good man that was seke came thyder al-
naked / saue his precyous clothes. And whā
they had done / they turned home agayn
in to theyr owne countree / and tolde of the
myracle where so euer that they came.
¶ And also two men haue be heled there
of the mortale / through helpe of þ holy

martyr though that euyl be holden incurable. And when the Spensers herd that god dyd such miracles for this holy man they wold not beleue it in no manner wyse but said openly þ it was grete herelyliche dectue of hys conuylence. And when syr Hugh Spenser the sone came all this voyage anone he sente his messenger from Doustret where as he dwelled to kyng Edward that than was at Chaen at Scipton bycause þ the kyng sholde vndo þ pylgrymage. And as þ erbaud messenger went to ward the kyng for to do his message he came by the hyll where as the good martyr was done to deth / and in the same place he made his orature / and whā he had done he rode to ward the kyng / and a stronge fyre came vpon hys or that he came to Porke / and thā he shedde all his bowels at his foundament. And when syr Hugh Spenser herde these thynges / somdele he was adradde / and thought for to vndo þ pylgrymage yf he myght by any maner waye. And anone he went to the kyng and sayd þ they shold be in grete schadowe through out all christendom for the deth of Thomas of Lancaster yf that he suffred the people to do thei pylgrymage at Doustret / and so he coulsyld þ kyng þ he comaunded to close the church doores of Doustret / in þ which the þ holy martyr was buryed / and thus they dyd agaynst all fraunchyses of holy church / so þ four yere after myght no pylgrym come to þ holy body / and bycause that the monkes suffred men to come and honour þ holy body of saynt Thomas þ martyr / through counseyle of syr Hugh Spenser the sone / and through counseyle of mayster Robert Baldok the false pylled clerke the kynges chaunceler / the kyng consented that they sholde be set to theyi wages / and let make wardens ouer theyi / and good longe tyme / and through comaundement of þ foresayd syr Hugh Spenser

and gyltornes well armed kept the hyl where as the good man saynt Thomas was done to deth / so that no pylgrym might come by þ waye. Full well wend he to haue taken Chyrtres myght and his power / and the grete bond of miracles that he shewed for his martyr saynt Thomas through all christendom. And that same tyme the kyng made Robert Baldok the false pylled clerke through prayer of syr Hugh Spensers sone chaunceler of Englonde. And in þ same tyme was þ castell of Walyngford holden agaynst þ kyng through þ prisoners that were win the castell for saynt Thomas quarrell of Lancaster. Wherefore the people of þ countree came and toke the castell vpon þ prisoners. Wherefore syr John Goldington knyght and syr Edmond of Berke prisoners and a squer þ was Roger of Walton were taken and sent to þ kyng to Doustret / and there they were put in prison / and þ foresayd Roger was sent to porke / and there he was drawen and hanged. And anone after syr Roger Mortimer of Wigmore brake out of the Toure of London in this maner. The foresayd Roger herde þ he shold be drawen and hanged at London on the morowe after saynt Laurence daye / and on þ daye before he helde a fayre feast in the toure of London / and there was syr Stephen Segraue costable of þ toure and many grete men with them / and whā they shold soupe / þ foresayd Stephen sent for all þ officers of þ toure / and they came and souped with hym / and whā they shold take theyi leue of hys / a squer þ byght Stephen þ was still dreuy with the foresayd Roger through his counseyle gaue them such a dyshe þ the lest of them al slept. ii. days and ii. nyghtes / and in the meane tyme he escaped away by þ ryuer of Camys / and went ouer þ see and helde hym in France. Wherefore the kyng was sore anoyed / and put the same Stephen out of his Costableness.

How quene Isabel went into Fraunce
to see to treate of peas betwene her lord
the kynge of Englonde and the kynge of
Fraunce her broder.

The kynge went than to London
and there through consyle of sy:
Hugh Spenser the fader & of his sone &
of mayster Robert Baldok a fals pylled
merke his chaunceler / let lease than all
the quenes londes in to his handes / and
also all the londes þ were sy: Edwardes
his sone / & were so put to they: wages
agaynst all maner of reason / & that was
through þ falsnes of the Spensers. And
whan the kynge of Fraunce þ was quene
Isabelles broder herde of this falsnes /
he was sore annoyed agaynst þ kynge of
Englonde & his fals consyleys. Where-
fore he sent a lettre to kynge Edward by
her his seale / þ he shold come in to Fra-
nce at a certayn day for to do his homage
& thereto he somoned hym / & els he shold
lose all Gascoyn. And so it was ordeyn-
ed in Englonde through the kynge & his
consyle that quene Isabel sholde go in
to Fraunce for to treate of peas betwene
her lord & her broder. And that Wyuer
of yngham sholde go in to Gascoyn / and
haue with hym. vii. M. men of armes &
more / to be seneschall & wardeyn of Gas-
coyn. And so it was ordeyned that quene
Isabel went in to Fraunce / & with her
went sy: Symet of Valaunce erle of Den-
broke / that was there murdered sodeyn-
ly in a preyng syce / but þ was through
goddes vengeance / for he was one of the
Justices þ consented to laynt Thomas
berth of Lancaster / & wolde neuer after
repent him of that wycked dede. And at
that tyme sy: Wyuer of yngham went
out in to Gascoyn / & byd moche harme
to the kynge of Fraunce / and than he gate
agayne that kynge Edward had lost /
and moche moze therto.

How kynge Edward sent sy: Ed-
ward his sone the eldest in to Fraunce.

The quene Isabel had but a quar-
ter of a yere dwelled in Fraunce
whan sy: Edward her eldest sone asked
leue for to go in to Fraunce for to speke w
his moder Isabel & quene. And his fa-
der þ kynge graunted hym w a good wyll
& sayd to hy / go my fayre sone in goddes
blessyng & myne / & thynke for to come a-
gayn as hastily as ye may. And he wer
ouer set in to Fraunce / & þ kynge of Fraunce
his uncle receyved hy w moche honour
& sayd to hym. Fayre sone ye be welcome
& for bycause þ your fader came not to do
his homage for þ duchy of Guyenne as
his auncestres were wont to do. I gyue
you þ lordship to hold it of me i heritage
as all maner auncestres byd before you
wherefore he was called duke of Guyen.

How the kynge called his quene Isa-
bell and Edward his eldest sone.

Whan kynge Edward of Englonde
herde tell how þ kynge of Fraunce
had gyuen þ duchy of Guyen to sy: Ed-
ward his sone / wout consent & wyll of hy
& that his sone had receyved þ duchy / he
became widders with: & sent to his sone
by lettre & to his wyfe also / þ they shold
come agayn in to Englonde in all haste.
And the quene Isabel & sy: Edward her
sone were wondrous sore adrad of þ kyn-
ges menaces & of his wrath / & prynci-
pally for þ falsnes of þ Spensers / bothe
of the fader & also of the sone / & at his co-
mmandement they wold not come. Where-
fore kynge Edward was full sore annoyed
& let make a crye at London / that yf the
quene Isabel & Edward his eldest sone
came not in to Englonde þ they shold be
holden as enemyes / bothe to þ realme &
also to the crowne of Englonde. And for þ
they wold not come in to Englonde / but

bothe were exiled the moder & her sone. When þe quene herd these tydings she was sore adrad to be destroyed through the fals coniectyng of the Spensers & went wth the knyghtes þe were exiled out of Englonde for saynt Thomas cause of Lancaster that is to saye / sye Roger of Mortmore / sye Willia Crustell / sye John of Cromwell & many other good knyghtes / wherfore they toke thei consyle & ordeyned amōge them for to make a maytage bytwene þe duke of Guyen þe kynges sone of Englonde & þe erles daughter of Henaud / þe was a noble knyght of name & a doughty in his tyme / & yf þe thyng myght be brought about / than shode they trouwyng to þe bryde of god & wth his helpe to recouer thei heritage in Englonde / wherof they were put out through the fals coniectyng of the Spensers.

How kyng Edward through counseyle of the Spensers sente to the dousepers of fraunce that they sholde helpe that the quene Isabell & her sone sye Edward were exiled out of fraunce.

When kyng Edward & the Spensers herde how þe quene Isabell & sye Edward her sone had alped them to the erle of Henaud / & to them that were exiled out of Englonde for cause of Thomas of Lancaster / they were so sorow that they wist not what to do. Wherfore sye Hugh Spenser þe sone sayd to sye Hugh his fader in this maner wyse. Fader curre be þe tyme & the consyle that euer ye consented that quene Isabell shold go in to fraunce for to treate of accord bytwene the kyng of Englonde & her broder the kyng of fraunce / for that was your consyle / for at þe tyme forsothe your wyte sayed / for I drede me sore lest through her & her sone we shall be destroyed / but yf we take the better consyle.

How kyng Edward let kepe þe costes saye sye understode how mercurious felony & falshede the Spensers ymagyned & cast. for pryvely they let fyll. v. barrels fetrouers wth siluer / the somme amōnted to. v. M. poundes & they sent those barrels ouer see pryvely by an alpen þe was called Arnold of Spayne / that was a broder of London / that he sholde go to þe dousepers of fraunce / that they sholde procure & speke to the kyng of fraunce that quene Isabell & her sone Edward were dyuen & exiled out of fraunce / and amōge all other thynges that they were brought to the deth as pryvely as they myght. But almyghty god wolde not so for whā this Arnold was in þe hygh see he was taken wth Melanders þe mette hym in the hygh see / & toke hym & ladde hym to the erle of Henaud thei lord / & moche ioye was made for that takyng. And at the last this Arnold pryvely stole away fro thens & came to London. And of this takyng and of other thynges the erle of Henaud sayd to the quene Isabell Dame make you mery & be of good cheere / for ye be richer than ye wend to haue ben / & take these. v. barrels full of siluer þe were sente to the dousepers of fraunce for to see you and your sone Edward / & thynke hastely for to go in to Englonde / & take ye wth you sye John of Henaud my broder and. v. C. men of armes / for many of them of fraunce in whome ye haue had grete trust / do but scorne you. And almyghty god graunte you grace pour enemyes to ouercome. Than sent the quene Isabell through Henaud and flāntges for her sūdours / and ordeyned her eury daye for to goo in to Englonde agayne. And so she had in her company sye Edmonde of Woodstocke that was erle of Kent / and was also sye Edwardes broder of Englonde.

How kyng Edward let kepe þe costes

by the see / & let tye all the pyer men of
armes & soe men throughe Englonde.

And whan kynge Edward herde
tell that quene Isabel & Edward
her sone wolde come into Englonde with
a grette power of alpens / and with them
that were outlawed out of Englonde for
theyr rebelliousnes / he was for adrad
to be put downe / and for to lese his kyng
dome / wherfore he ordeyned to kepe his
castels in Wales as well as in Englonde
with bycayles & theyr apparayle / & let
kepe his rivers & also þe see costes / wher
of the h. portes toke to kepe them & also
the see. And at the fest of Decollacion of
saynt John baptist / the citezens of Lon
don sente to the king to Doerchestre an. C.
men of armes. And also he comaunded by
his lettres ordeyned / þe elyct hundred &
wepentake of Englonde / to tye as well
men of armes as me on soke / & that they
sholde be put in. xx. somme / & in an hon
dred somme / & comaunded þe al those men
were redy whan ony oyes or tye were
made / for to pursue & take þe alpens that
came in to Englonde for to take the londe
from hym & put hy out of his kyngdom
And moze ouer he let tye throughe his
patent in euery tyepe & in euery market
of Englonde / þe quene Isabel & sy: Ed
ward his eldest sone & the erle of Kent / þe
they were taken & safely kepte wout ony
maner of harme vnto them doyng / & al
other maner people þe came with them
anone smyte of theyr hedes without ony
maner of ransom takynge of them. And
what man might by þe sy: Roger Boz
timers heed of Wygmore / wold haue an
C. pounde of money for his trauayle. And
furthermoze he ordeyned by his patent
& comaunded to make a tye upon euery
hyll / belyde þe ryuers & in londe costres
for to make hyr bekens of tymbre / that
yt shold be so were that the alpens came to the

londe by nyght / that men shold kenne
the bekens / that the countree myght be
warned & come & mete theyr enemyes.
And in that tyme dyed sy: Roger Boz
timers his vntie in the towre of London.

Chow the quene Isabel & sy: Edward
duke of Guyenne her sone came to londe
at Herewych / and how they dyd.

And whan quene Isabel and sy:
Edward her sone duke of Guy
enne / sy: Edmonde of Woodstocke erle of
Kent / and sy: John the erles broder of
Henaud and theyr company dyadde not
the thirtynnges of kynge Edward ne
of his traptours / for they trusted all in
goddes grace / and came vnto Herewych
in Wyssolke the. xxiii. daye of Seytens
ber. & in the yere of our lord Iesu Chryst
M. CCC. xxvi. And the quene & sy: Ed
ward her sone sente lettres to the Mayre
and compynalte of London / requyringe
them that they wolde be helyping in the
quarrell and cause that they had begun /
that is to saye to destroye the traptours
of the realme. But none answere was
sent agayne / wherfore þe quene & sy: Ed
ward her sone sent an other patent letre
vnder theyr scales / the tenoure of whiche
lettre here foloweth in this maner.
Isabell by the grace of god quene of
Englonde / lady of Irelande / & countesse of
Pountif / & we Edward the eldest sone
of the kynge of Englonde / duke of Guy
enne / erle of Cheyre / of Pountif / and of
Goustroull / to the Mayre and to all the
comynalte of the cite of London sendeth
greetinge. For as moche as we haue be
fore this tyme sent to you by our lettres
how we be come in to this londe in good
araye & in good maner / for the honour &
pkyte of holy church & of our ryghte dere
loide þe kynge & all þe realme with all our
myght to kepe & maynteyn / as we & all

The good folke of the foresayd realme are
 bounden to do. And upon þe we praye you
 that ye wyll be helpynge to us in as mo-
 che as ye may in this quarrell that is for
 the comyn prosper of þe foresayd realme.
 And we haue had to this tyme none an-
 swere to the foresayd letters / ne knowe
 not your mynde in that party. Wherfore
 we sende to you agayn a praye & charge
 you that ye bere you so agaynst us that
 we haue no cause to greue you / but that
 ye be vnto us helpynge by all the wayes
 that ye may / or may knowe. For wyte ye
 well in certayn that we & all þe comen
 wyth us in to this realme / thynke not to
 do ony thyng / but þe thyng þe shall be to
 the comyn pryte of all þe realme / & onely
 to destroie Hugh Spenser our enemy / &
 enemy to al þe realme / as ye it well knowe
 Wherfore we praye you & charge you in
 the fapth þe ye owe to our lyege lord the
 kyng & to us / & upon all þe ye shall moue
 forsaite agaynst us / þe ye the sayd Hugh
 speler our enemy come wien your powet
 that ye do hþ hastily to be taken & safely
 kepe but yll we haue ordeyned of hþ our
 wyll / & þe ye leue it not in no maner wyse
 as ye desyre honour & profyte of us all &
 of all the realme. Understande ye well
 that ye do this our prayer & comaun-
 dement / we wyll the more be holden vn-
 to you. And also ye shall gete you wor-
 shipp and pryfite ye ye sende us hastily
 and were of all your wyll agayn at Bal-
 dok the fyrth dape of October. Whiche
 lettre erly in the dawnyng of the day of
 saynt Denys was tacked vpon þe we
 crosse in chepe / & many coppes of þe same
 lettre were tacked vpon windowes and
 doores and vpon other places in the cite of
 London / þe all men passynge by the waye
 myghte them se & rede. And in the same
 tyme kyng Edward was at London in
 the toure at his meet / and a messenger
 came in to the hall & sayd that the quene

Isabell was come to londe at Herewych
 & hath brought in her company syz John
 of Henaude / & with hym men of armes
 without nombre. And with that word
 syz Hugh Spenser þe sader spake & thus
 sayd vnto þe kyng. O my most worshipful
 full lord & kyng of England / now make
 we good chere / for certaynly they ben all
 ours. The kyng herde this word co-
 fortably / yet was he full sorowfull & pen-
 syfe in his herte. And the kyng had not
 fully eten / but there came in to þe hall an
 other messenger / & sayd þe the quene Isa-
 bell was arryued at Herewych belyde
 Ipsowche in Suffolk. Syz Hugh Spen-
 ser the sader spake to þe messenger & said
 Tell soth in good fayth my sayre frende
 is she come w a grete strength. Now cer-
 tes syz the soth for to saye / she ne hath in
 her company but. vij. hundred men of ar-
 mes. And with þe word syz Hugh Spen-
 ser the sader cryed wyth an hygh voyce
 and sayd. Alas alas we ben al betrayed
 for certes w so lytel power she had neuer
 comen to londe but ye þe folke of this lon-
 de were vnto her consentynge. And ther-
 fore after meet they toke theyr counseyle
 and went to warde Wales for to sette þe
 Malshmen agaynst the quene Isabell &
 Edward her sone / all for to fyght / and so
 they were in purpose euerychone.

How mayster Walter Stappilton
 bishop of Excestre þe was the kynges
 tresourer was hedded at London.

As in the same tyme kyng Ed-
 ward was sore adrad lest þe men
 of London wolde yelde them to þe quene
 Isabell & to her sone Edward. Wherfore
 he set mayster Walter Stappilton his
 tresourer for to be wardeyn & keeper of þe
 cite of London w the keye / & so came
 to the Wynde hall of London & asked the
 keyes of the gates of the Cytie through

bertue and strength of his comysyon / and wolde haue had þe keepyng of þe cite. And the comuners answered and sayd that they wolde kepe the cite to the honour of kynge Edward and of Isabel the quene and of the duke þe kynges sone wout ony moo. Than was þe bysshop sore anoyed / and moore othes þe they all sholde abyte it anone as kynge Edward were comen out of Wales. And all the comuners of the cite anone toke the bysshop and laddre hym amyddes of the Chepe / and there they smote of his heed / and set his heed in his ryght hande. And after they heded two of his squyers that helde with the bysshop / and one of them was called Wylliam of Waple / that was the bysshops newelwe / and that other was called John of Badington. And also they toke a burgeys of London that was called John Parshall / that was syr Hugh spensers sype the fader / and smote of his heed also. In the same tyme þe bysshop had at London a fayre toure in makynge in his close vpon the ryuer of Camys / þe was wout temple barre / and stene sayled to make an ende therof / wherfore he comaunded his men to go to the freres Carmes / and there they toke stene to make therw the toure and moche sande and mortar and olde robous þe was lefte. And for the despyte þe the bysshop had done vnto holy chyrche: he and his two squyers were buryed in þe sande / as though they had ben houdes / and there they laye. xj. wekes / tyll that the quene Isabel sent her lettres to the comuners and prayed them that they wolde suffer and graunt that the bysshop myght be taken out of þe place and be buryed at Exetere in his own chyrche / and so he was / and his two squyers were buryed at saint Clemes chyrche wout temple barre. And it was no wonder though that bysshop dyed an euyl deth / for he was a couetous man / and had w hym no mercy / and euyl conspyled

the kynge. And soone after was Arnold of Spayne taken / that assented to haue laddre. v. m. pounde of syluer in. v. barres ferryers vnto þe doueyers of Fraunce / for to helpe and haste the quene Isabel to her deth / and Edward her sone also. And this Arnold was put to deth wout the cite.

How kynge Edward and syr Hugh spenser and the erle of Brundell were taken.

When kynge Edward had sente mayster Walter Stapilton his tresourer to London / for to kepe the cite vnto hym agaynst þe quene Isabel his wyfe / and agaynst Edward his sone / anone hymselfe toke with hym syr Hugh Spenser þe sene / and syr John of Brundell / and mayster Robert Baldok his chaunceler a fals pryed preest / and toke theyr waye toward Bysshope / and there þe kynge abode a lytell tyme / and made syr Hugh Spenser the fader as Costable and keeper of þe castell. And þe kyg and that other spenser went to Wypppe and sayled toward Wales / and toke no leue of þe steward ne of none of þe kynges household / and went our in to Wales for to arrete the Walshmen agaynst dame Isabel the quene and the duke her sone / and the erle of Kent and syr John of Henaub. And they went and pursued after the / and theyr polwer increased dayly. So at þe last the kynge was taken vpon an hyll in Wales / and syr Hugh spenser þe sene on þe other syde of þe same hyll / and the fals pryed clerke mayster Robert Baldok there fast besydes them / and they were brought agayn in to Englonde as almyghty god wolde. And þe kynge hymselfe was put in safe keepyng in þe castell of Kelynworth / and hym kepte syr Henry that was saynt Thomas broder of Lancaster. And syr Hugh þe fader came and put hym in the quenes grace / and syr Edward her sone duke of Guyen. But syr Hugh

Spenser after the tyme þ he was taken
he wolde neyther ete nor drynke / for he
wyll well he shold haue no mercy / saue
only to be deyd. And the quene & her coun-
seyle had ordeyned that he shold haue
ben done to deyth at London / but he was
so feble for his moche fastynge þ he was
nygh deyd / & therfore it was ordeyned þ
he shold haue his iudgement at Berford.
And at a place of þ court his hode was
taken fro his heed / & also fro Robert Bal-
dok þ fals pylled clerke & þ kynges chaun-
celier / & me set vpo thei heres chapters
of sharpe nettyis / & two squyers blywe
in thei cres w two grete bugles hornes
vpon the two prisoners / that one myght
here thei blowynge more than a myle.
And one Symond of Redyng þ kynges
marshall bare before them vpon a spere
thei armes reuerled: in token that they
sholde be vndone for euermore. And on þ
morowe was syr Hugh Spenser þ lone
dampned to deyth / & was drawen & han-
ged & heded / & his bowelles taken out of
his body & brened / & after þ he was quar-
tered / & his .iiii. quarters were sent to .iiii.
townes of Englonde / & his heed sente to
London bydye. And this Symond for
cause that he despyled quene Isabell he
was drawen & hanged on a stage made
amydde þ forsaide syr Hughs galowes.
And þ same daye a lptell fro thens was
syr John of Arundell byheded / bycause
he was one of syr Hugh Spenses coun-
seylers. And anone after was syr Hugh
Spenser þ fader drawen & hanged & he-
ded at Wythowe / & after hanged agayn
by the armes w two stronge ropes: & the
fourth day after he was beten all to pe-
ces / & holdes ete hym. And bycause the
kyng had gyven hym þ erldom of Wyn-
chestre his heed was put vpon a spere &
sente thyder. And the fals Baldok was
sent to London / & there he dyed in prison
amonge theues / for men dyd hy no more

reuerence than they wold do to a dogge.
And so dyed þ traytours of Englod blis-
sed be god. And it was no wonder / for
through thei counseyle þ good erle Tho-
mas of Lancastre was done to deyth / & all
that helde with Thomas of Lancastre
through the traytours were vndone / &
all thei heyres dysherited.

Chow kyng Edward was put downe
and his dignite taken from hym.

Ad anone after as all this was
done / quene Isabell & Edward
her lone duke of Guyenne / & all the grete
lordes of Englonde at one assent sente to
kyng Edward to þ castell of Kenilworth
where as he was in keepynge vnder the
warde of syr John Bachum that was þ
bysshop of Ely / & of syr John of Percy a
baron / for bycause that he sholde ordeyn
his parlyament at a certayne place in
Englonde / for to redresse and amende the
estate of the realme. And kyng Edward
them answered & sayd. Lordes sayd he
ye se full well how it is / to haue here my
seale / and I gyue you all my power for
to ordeyne a parlyament where that ye
wyll. And than they toke thei leue of
hym & came agayn to þ barons of Eng-
londe. And whan they had the kynges
patent of this thyng / they shewed it to
the lordes. And than was ordeyned that
the parlyament shold be at Westmynster
at the beas of saynt Mylary. And all the
grete lordes of Englonde let ordeyne for
them there agayn that tyme that the
parlyament sholde be. At whiche daye
that þ parlyament was / the kyng wold
de not come there for no maner thyng
as he had let hymselfe & assygned. And
nevertheless the barons sent vnto hym
one tyme & other. And he swore by god-
des soule that he wolde not come there
one fore. Wherefore it was ordeyned by
all the grete Lordes of Englonde that

John Arundell
was beheaded at the
galows

he sholde no longer be kyng / but be deposed / & sayd they wolde crowne Edward his sone & elder & was duke of Guyenne And sent epynghes vnto the kyng there as he was in warde vnder syr Iohn erle of Garen / & syr Iohn of Bothun & was byshop of Ely / & syr Henry Percy a baron / & syr William Trussell a knyght & was with y^e erle Thomas of Lancastre for to yeld vp they^r homages vnto hym for all them of Englonde. And syr William Trussell sayd these wordes. Syr Edward / bycause that ye haue betrayed your people of Englonde / & haue vndone many grete lordes of Englonde without any cause / ye shall be deposed / & now ye be withstande thanked be god. And also bycause that ye wold not come to y^e parliament as ye ordeyned at Westmynster as in your owne lettre patent is conteyned / for to treate wth your lyege men as a kyng sholde. And therfore through all y^e commons assent & of all the lordes of Englonde I tell vnto you these wordes. Ye shall vnderstande syr that the barons of Englonde at one assent wyll that ye be no more kyng of Englonde / but betterly haue put you out of your ryalte for euermore. And the byshop of Ely than sayd to the kyng. Syr Edward here I yelde vp feaute & homage for all y^e archebyschops & byshopps of Englonde & for all y^e clergy. Than sayd syr Iohn erle of Garen. Syr Edward I yelde vp here vnto you feaute and homage for me & for all y^e erles of Englonde. And syr Henry Percy gaue vp also there his homage for him & for all y^e barons of Englonde. And than sayd syr William Trussell. I yelde vp now vnto you syr myn homage for me & for all the knyghtes of Englonde / & for all them & holde by sergeantry or by any other manner thyng of you / so & from this day afterward ye shall not be claymed kyng / nor for kyng be holden. But from this

tyme afterwarde ye shall be holden for a singuler man of all y^e people. And so they went thens to London / where y^e lordes of Englonde abode them / & syr Edward abode in prizon i good keepyng. And this was on the daye of y^e couertyon of saynt Paule / in the .xx. yere of his regne.

Of the prophery of Merlin declared of kyng Edward the sone of kyng Edward the fyrst.

Of this kyng Edward propheryed Merlin & sayd & there sholde come a gote out of Carre & sholde haue hornes of syluer / & a berde as whyte as snowe / and a droppe shold come out of his nose / thys ples & sholde betoken moche harme hunger & dethe of people / & grete losse of his londe. And that in y^e begynnyng of his regne sholde be haunted moche lichesy. And he sayd sothe / alas the tyme for kyng Edward & was kyng Edwardes sone was borne at Carnaruan in Wales for sothe he had hornes of syluer and a berd as whyte as snowe whan he was made prync of Wales / to moche he gaue hym to ryot and to foly. And sothe sayd Merlin in his pphery / that there shold come out of his nose a droppe. for in his tyme was grete hunger among y^e poore people / & stronge dethe amonge y^e ryche that dyed in straunge londe with sorowe & in warre in Scotlonde. And afterward he lost Scotlonde & Gascorn / & moche lichesy in his dayes was haunted. Also Merlin sayd & this gote sholde seeke the floure of lyfe & of deeth. And he sayd sothe for he spoused Iabell & kynges dchter of Fraunce. And in this tyme Merlin sayd that there shold be made byrdes of folk vpon dyches of the see. And & was well seen at Bannocksbourn in Scotlonde whan he was destroyed there of y^e Scottes. And Merlin tolde also that sonys

sholde fall from castels / & many coloures
shold be made playne. And he sayd sothe
for when kynge Edward was discom-
fyt in Scotlande & came than south-
warde / the Scottes besyged castels &
doyd moche harme / & dyent coloures vnto
the harde erth. And after ward Her-
lyn tolde that an eagle sholde come out of
Cornewayle that sholde haue fethers of
golde / that of pryde sholde haue no pere /
and he shold despylle lordes of blode / and
after he shold dye through a bere at Ga-
uerlyche / & that prophery was full well
known & soude sothe. for by the eagle is
vnderstande sy: Herys Canaston / that
than was erle of Cornewayle / whiche
was a wondrous proude man / & despyed
the barons of Englonde / but after ward
he was heded at Gauerlyche through p
erle of Lancastre & the erle of Warwyk.
And Heryn tolde that in this tyme
it sholde seme that the bere shold brenne
and that batayle shold be vpon an arme
of the fer in a felde araped lyke a helde
wher sholde dye many whyte hedes / &
he sayd sothe. for by the brennyng of p
bere is betokened grete dyede through
cuttpage of lyberdes at that batayle of
Bryton / for there came p Scottes in ma-
ner of a helde in a wyng / & fewe men
of religyon / prestes and seculers / wher
fore the Scottes called that batayle in
despyte of Englyshmen the whyte ba-
taye. And after Heryn sayd that the
foresayd Bere sholde do the Gote moche
harme / & p sholde be vpon p south west /
and also vpon his blode. And sayd also p
the Gote shold lese moche dele of his lon-
de / tyll the tyme that shame sholde hym
ouercome / & than he shold clothe hym in
a Lyons skynne / & sholde wyne agayne
that he had lost / & more through people
that sholde come out of the north west / p
sholde make hym to be fered and hym a-
stenge vpon his enemyes through coun

seyle of two owles / that syt shold be in
peryl to be vndone. And those two owles
sholde go ouer see in to a straunge londe / &
there dwell a certayn tyme / & after shold
returme agayn in to Englonde / & shold do
moche harme to many one / & that they
sholde couseple p Gote to mene warre a-
gaynst the foresayd bere / & the Gote & the
owles sholde come to an arme of p see at
Burton vpon Trent / & shold go ouer / &
that for dyede the bere sholde flee with a
swan in his copany to Bury to warde p
north through an vnsynde outpultre / &
that p swan thā shold be dayne w sorow
and the bere shold be dayne full nye his
owne nest / p shold stande vpon Doustret
vpon whome the sonne sholde shede his
brines / & many folke shold seke hym for
his vertue. And he sayd sothe. for p good
erle Thomas of Lancastre was borne in
the north west / & colyn to p kynge & his
vncles sone / & by latre he made p kynge
lese moche lode p he had purchased wyl-
fully / tyll at p last the kynge toke therof
shame / & hymselfe selled w cruelte. And
after gate agayne p he had lost & moche
more / through helpe of folk comyng out
of p north west / by whom he was trad / &
auenged dy on his barons through cou-
seple of p two Spensers p afore were out
lawed for theyr wickednes / & after came
agayne out of fraunce / & so moche these
Spensers couseyled p kynge p he shold
warre vpon Thomas of Lancastre / so p
the kyng & the Spensers and the erle of
Arundell and theyr powder mette with
Thomas of Lancastre at Burton vpon
Trent / and hym there discomfyt / and
sy: Umfrey erle of Berford was in his
company. And after fledde the foresayd
Thomas and Umfrey with theyr com-
pany to Burhygge / meetyng with sy:
Andewe of Berkeia / that is called p vns-
ynde outpultre / and also sy: Symond
Warde erle of York theyr came & met w

Thomas of Lancastre is an huge compa-
ny & them there discorde & in f. d. d.
figure p. erle of Hereford was layne upon
the hyrge towardy North a spere in the
judgement & the erle Thomas was sa-
ken & ladde to Douvres & than was he
heded beynde his owne castell. But a lre
ward many hym sought for myracles p.
god v. d. for hym. And in p. tyme Spertyn
sayd for joyne and harme sholde be
people of his londe. Wherfore many lon-
des sholde be upon hym the more bolde
And he sayd sothe for bycause of his ba-
rons that were put to deeth for safe Tho-
mas quarrell of Lancastre people of ma-
ny londes became the bolde for to make
warre upon theyr kyng for theyr blode
was turned to many nacions. And af-
terward Spertyn tolde & sayd p. the fore-
sayd omes sholde do moche harme unto
the flour of lyfe & deeth and they sholde
bynge her to moche dysleste so that she
sholde go ouer see in to France for to ma-
ke peas to p. flour depece & there sholde
abyde tyll on a tyme her seve shold come
and seke her and there they shold abyde
bothe tyll p. tyme that they sholde clothe
them with grace & those two omes she
sholde seke & put them to pyteous deeth.
And that prophery was well known &
was full sothe. For sy. Hugh Spenser
the father & sy. Hugh the sone did moche
knowe and persecucion unto the queene
Isabell through theyr p. c. m. to her
law p. kyng. So they ordeyned amonge
them p. she was put unto her wages p.
to lye. xx. shyllinges in p. daye. In her
tyme the kyng of France her brother was
the wynde & sent in to Englonde by his
letters unto kyng Edward p. he sholde
come unto his parliament to Darys in
France. But kyng Edward was that
wylle to come there for he wolde to
have bested tyll that he had made a
mercy for the trespass that sy. Hugh

Spenser the father & the sone had done &
for p. harme p. they had done to the queene
Isabell his syster. Wherfore through
her ordynance & consent of p. Spensers p.
queene Isabell went ouer see in to France
for to make accord bytwene kyng Ed-
ward & the kyng of France her brother.
And there dwelled she in France tyll Ed-
ward her eldest sone came for to seke her
and so they dwelled there bothe tyll that
alyaunce was made bytwene them & the
gentyl erle of Hereford p. yf they w. they
vertue myght destroye & overcome p. be-
nyne & the falsnes of the Spensers that
sy. Edward sholde spouse dame Philip-
pe the Douglasfull lady & the erles dought-
ter of Hereford. Wherfore the queene Isa-
bell & Edward her sone & sy. Edmund
of Woodstocke the kynges brother of Eng-
lond & sy. John of Hereford & sy. Roger
Bokyn of Wygmore & sy. Thomas
Botelyn & sy. John of Cromwell & sy.
William Crussell & many other of the
alyaunce of the gentyl erle Thomas of
Lancastre p. were exiled out of Englonde
for his quarrell & were dysperced of theyr
londes & ordeyned them a grete polber &
arrayed at Herewich in Suffolke. And
soone after they pursued the Spensers
tyll p. they were taken & put to pyteous
deeth as before is said & theyr company
also for p. grete falsnes that they d. to
kyng Edward and to his people. And
Spertyn sayd also more p. the gote sholde
be put to grete dysleste & grete angur she
& in grete knowe he sholde lede his lyfe.
And he sayd sothe for after p. tyme that
kyng Edward was taken he was put
in to wards tyll that p. Spensers were
put to deeth & also bycause he wolde not
come to his parliament at London as he
had ordeyned & assygned by mysle into
his baronyge & also wolde not gouerne
and rule his people nor his realme as a
kyng sholde do. Wherfore some of p. ba-

king of Englonde was gretly hated by the
barons of Englonde for that he had all the
other of the realme on the daye of p
untyon of saynt Poul. In p yere of his
reigne. xx. And they put hym out of his
counsaile for cruelte. & ever he lyved ab
terward in moche sorowe & anguryshe.

Henry. viii. yere. This Lovelock
was duke of Bauare & he despyed the
crownacion of p pope. wherfore p pope
deposed him. and moche labour & many
peryl he had after. & he troubled gret
ly the unite of holy church. Than was
chofen agaynst hym Frederic duke of
Austryche. And he overcame the duke &
abode a rebellon to his ende. & in grette
perill to his soule. And at the last Haro
lus was chofen agaynst hym. the whiche
preuayled. & soderly Lodowick fell
down of his hors and detelled. ¶ John
Gaundens a doctour of physyk and a
knyght was borne in Englonde aboute
this tyme. And he made a mercuriall
prygramme. for he went almost about
all p wolde. & he wrote his verses in the
languages. & detelled & was buried at
saynt Albons. ¶ Benedictus the. xxi.
was pope after John. vii. yere & more.
This man was a monke. and in all his
youth he was of good counsaile. and
a doctour of diuinite. And whiche he was
made pope he reformed p orde of saynt
Benet in that thyng & was necessary.
And he was an harde man to graunte
benefices. And he had graunted it to an
incunpaign man. he made a decretall p
whiche began Benedictus de. In domi
nus. And he was very cruell in his forep
And for p of some men was lyell loun.
he was so fowre a man that almost he
was not knowe his owne name.

¶ Anno. vii. m. ccc. xvi.

Colonge Colwode the thyrde
after the conquest.

Here this kyng Edward of Care
naum reigned the Colwode of
Wyndesore his sone. p whiche was crown
ed kyng & anoynted at Westmynster.
through consyle & consens of all p grette
lounes of p realme p lounes on Landels
made even in p yere of grace. m. ccc.
xxi. that was of age at p tyme but. xii.
yere. And he because p his father was in
ward in the castel of Herefordth & also
was put downe of his royaltie. p realme
of Englonde was without kyng from p
last of saint Mathew in the yere above
sayd into the last of Candelmasse. And
than were all maner pices of p kynges
benche assent. And than was commaun
ded to all p shyrres of Englonde through
writte to warne p parties to defendail
tes through sommyng agayn. And also
furthermore p at prisoners p were in the
kynges gyles p were attached through
thequere. whiche be let go quyte. ¶ Kyng
Edward after his crownacion at the
palace & deschyng of his lyege men of
the realme graunted the a charter of free
fall peas to all them p wolde asse it. And
for John of Benand & his company toke
there leue of the kyng & of p lordes of the
realme & turned home to theyr owne coun
tre agayn. & eche of them had full cyche
gyftes. every man as he was of value &
of estate. And than was Englonde in rest
& peas & grette loun bytweene the kyng &
his lordes. And sompny Englyshmen
sayd amonge them p the beupt was dem
But the innumerable treisours of p kyng
his father & the treisour of the Appenters
berche of the father of p sone. & of p erle of
Arundell. & of mayster Robert Rialdof
was p kynges chancelier and departed
after p quene Isabelle's ordynance & for
Roger Spynners of Wygmore. so that

the kynge had no thynge therof / but at
her wyll & her despuerance / noz of the
jondex / as afterwarde ye shall here.

How kynge Edward went to Stan-
hope for to mete the Scottes.

And yet in þe same tyme was the
kynge in the castel of Kendworch
under þe keepynge of syr Henry that was
erle Thomas broder of Lancaster þe than
was erle of Lecestre / & the kynge gra-
nted hym þe erledom of Lancaster / that þe
kynge his fader had sealed i to his hādes
& put out Thomas of Lancaster his bro-
der. And so was he erle of Lancaster & of
Lecestre / & also steward of Englōde as
his broder was in his tyme. But syr Ed-
ward that was kynge Edwardes fader
made sorowe wout ende / for bycause he
myght not speke w his wyfe nor w his
sone / wherfore he was i moche mischefe
for though it were so þe he was lad & ru-
led by fals counseyle / yet was he king Ed-
wardes sone called Edward w the longe
shankes / & came out of þe worthiest blode
of all þe worlde / & they to whom he was
wont to geue grete gyftes & large / were
moost pteup w the kynge his sone / & they
were his encmyes bothe by nyght & by
daye þe peured to make debate & contake
bytvene hym & his sone and Isabel his
wyfe. But þe frere prechers were to him
good frendes evermore / & call bothe by
nyght & by day how they myght bynge
hym out of prylon. And amonge theye co-
pany þe freres had pryvely brought
there was a frere þe called Dunhened / &
he had ordeyned & gadied a grete compa-
ny of folke to kepe at þe dede / but þe frere
was takē & put in þe castell of Doffret / &
there he dyed in prylon / & syr Henry erle
of Lancaster that had þe kynges fader in
keepynge through comaundment of the
kynge despuered Edward þe kynges fa-
der by endenture to syr Thomas of Ber-

keley / & so syr John Mautreuers & they
led him from þe castel of Kendworch to þe
castell of Berkley / & kept hē there safely
And at cester next after his coronacyon
the kynge ordeyned an huge host for to
fyght agaynst þe Scottes. And syr John
the erles broder of Henaud came fro be-
yonde þe see for to helpe kynge Edward / &
brought w hym. vii. C. men of armes / &
arrayed at Douer / & they had leue for to
go forth tyl they came to porke wher as
the king them abode / & þe Scottes came
thyder to þe kynge for to make peas & ac-
corde / but the accordment lasted not by-
twene them but a lytell tyme. And at þe
tyme the Englysshmen were clothed all
in cotes & hodes peynted w lictres &
w flouris full semely w lōge berdes /
& therfore the Scottes made a byll that
was fastened vpon the chyrche dores of
saynt Peters towarde stengate / & thus
sayd þe scripture in despyte of Englyshe
men. Longe berdes bertles / peyn-
ted hodes wyrtles / gave cotes gracclis /
maketh Englonde thyrtyles.

On Trinite sondaye nexte after be-
gan the cōtake in the cite of porke
bytvene the Englysshmen and the He-
naudes / & in that debate were slayne of
the erledom of Rychoill & murdered. lxxx.
men / & after they were buried vnder a
stone in saynt Clementes chyrche in Jos-
gate. And bycause þe Henaudes came
to helpe the king / theye peas was cryed
vpon payne of lyfe & limme / & in þe other
halfe it was founde by an enquest of þe cite
that the Englysshmen began þe debate.

How þe Englysshmen stopped þe Scot-
tes in þe parke of Stanhope / & how they
returned agayne in to Scotlande.

And at þe tyme þe Scottes had as-
sembled all theye polwer & came
in to Englōde & slawe & robbed all þe they
myght take / & also byente & destroyed all

the north countree throughout tyll þ they came to the park of Stanhope in Wyre dale / & there þ Scottes helde them in a bushmēt. But when þ kyng had herde throughe certayn spyes where þ Scottes were / anone right in his hoost besyged them within þ foresayd park / so that þ Scottes wylt not where to go out / but onely to theyr harmes / & they abode in þ park .xv. days / & bycayles layed them on euery syde / so þ they were greetly appayred of theyr bodyes. And syth þ Wyte came fyrst in to Wyrtayn to this tyme there was neuer seen soo fayre an hoost what of Englyshmen & of alpens & of men on fote / the whiche ordeyned them for to fyght with the Scottes / throughe eggyng of syr Henry of Lancaster & of syr John of Henaud þ wold haue gone ouer the water of Wyth for to haue fought w the Scottes. But syr Roger Mortimer consented not thereto / for he had pryncely take meke of the Scottes to helpe them that they myght go in to theyr countree. And this Mortimer counseyled so moche Thomas of Brotherton þ erle Marshall that was kyng Edwardes vncle that þ foresayd Thomas sholde not assemble at that tyme wth þ Scottes / & he assented but he wylt not the doyng bytwene the Scottes & the foresayd Mortimer. And bycause þ he was Marshall of Englonde & to hym perteyned euery þ baillwarde / he sent hastily to þ erle of Lancaster & to syr John of Henaud that they shold not fyght with the Scottes / in pryncyde & harmyng of hym & his see / & yf they did that they sholde stande to theyr owne peryll. And þ foresayd erle Marshall was al arayed in his batayle at þ retreuous of the erle of Lancaster for to haue fought w hym & w his folke / yf he had meued for to fyght w the Scottes. And in this maner he was deceyued / & wylt nothyng of the treason. And thus was the kyng

pryncipally deceyued. And when it was nyght Mortimer that had the watche for to kepe of the hoost þ nyght / dyscombled þ watche that nothyng myght be done. And in þ meane whyle þ Scottes stole by nyght toward theyr owne countree as fast as they myght. And so was the kyng falsly betrayed / that wende þ all the traytours of his londe had ben brought to an ende as it was said before. Now here ye lordes how traytoursly þ kyng Edward was deceyued / and how meruaylously & boldly the Scottes dyd of warre. For James Douglas w two hundred men of armes rode througheout all the hoost of kyng Edward / the same nyght þ Scottes escaped to ward theyr owne countree as is aboue sayd tyll þ they came to þ kynges pauplyon / and there many men i theyr beddes / & cryed natward natward / & an other tyme a douglas & douglas. Wherfore þ kyng that was in his pauplyon & moche other folk were wondrous sore asrayde. But blissed be god þ kyng was not taken / & in grete peryll was than þ realme of Englonde. And þ nyght the mone shone full clere & bryght. And for all the kynges men the Scottes escaped harmeles. And on the morowe when the kyng wylt that the Scottes were escaped in to theyr owne countree / he was widders soz / & full hertely wepte w his pynge eyen / & yet wylt he not who had done hym þ treason / but that fals treason was full well knowne a good whyle after as the story telleth. Then kyng Edward came agayne to York full soz w full / & his hoost departed / and euery man went in to his owne countree wth full heuy chere and mourninge semblaunt / & the Henaudes toke theyr leue & went in to theyr owne countree / & the king for theyr traunple hugely rewarded them. And for bycause of that byage the kyng had dyspended moche

of his tresour & wasted. And in that tyme were seen two mones in þe skye: that one was clere and that other was derte: as men myght se through þe woode. And a grete debate was þe same tyme agaynst pope John the. xxi. after saynt Peter: & the emperor of Almayn tho made hym emperor agaynst þe popes wyll: & tho helde his see at Aumpon. Wherfore þe emperor made his crye at Rome & ordeyned an other pope þe hyght Nicholas þe was a frere Minour: & that was agaynst the ryght of holy churche: wherfore he was cursed: & the power of that other pope soone was layd. And by cause þe suche meruayles were seen: men sayd þe woode was nygh at an ende.

Of the deth of kynge Edward of Carnaruan.

Ad now go we agayn to sye Edward of Carnaruan þe was king Edwardes fader somtyme kyng of Englonde: & was put downe of his dignite. Alas for his tribulacion & sorowe þe hym befall through fals counseyle þe he loued & trusted vpon to moche: that afterwarde were destroyed through theyr falsnesse as god wold. And this Edward of Carnaruan was in þe castell of Berkeley: vnder þe keepynge of sye Boyce of Berkeley: and sye John of Gaunt: & to them he made his complaynt of his sorowe & of his disease. And ofte tymes asked of his wardens what he hadde trespassed agaynst dame Isabell his wyfe & sye Edward his sone þe was made newe kyng that they wold not visyte hym. And than answered one of his wardens & sayd. My worthy lord by displease you not þe I shall tell you: the cause is: for it is done them to vnderstande: þe if my lady your wyfe come ony thyng nye you: that ye wolde her strangle & sle: & also that ye

wolde do to my lady your sone þe same. Than answered he with a symple chere. Alas alas am not I in prison: and all as your owne wyll: now god it wote I neuer thought it: & now I wolde þe I were dead: so wolde to god þe I were: for than were all my sorowe passed. It was not longe after þe the kyng through counseyle of Roger Mortimer graunted þe ward & keepynge of sye Edward his fader to sye Thomas Colourney: & to þe foresayd sye John Gaunt: through the kinges lettre: & put out holly þe foresayd sye Mortimer of the ward of the kyng. And they toke & lad the kyng to þe castell of Corf: þe whiche castell þe kyng hated as ony deth. And they kept hym there tyll it came to saynt Mathewes day in September in the yere of grace. M. CCC. xxv. that the foresayd sye Roger Mortimer sent þe maner of þe deth: how & in what wyse he shold be put to deth. And anon as þe foresayd Thomas & John had seen þe lettre & comaundement: they made kyng Edward of Carnaruan good chere & good solace as they might at þe souper: and no thyng the kyng wyll of þe treason. And whan tyme was for to go to bedde: the kyng wente vnto his bedde & laye and slepte fast. And as the kyng laye & slepte the traytours false forsworne agaynst theyr homage & feaute came pryvely in to þe kynges chambre: & theyr company with them: & layde an huge table vpon his wombe: & with men pressed & helde fast down the foure corners of þe table on his body: wherwith þe good man awoke and was wondrous sore adrad to be deed there & slayne: & turned his body the vp so downe. Than toke þe fals traytours & cyrantes an hoine & put it in to his founteyment as depe as they myght: & toke a spyt of coppe byrnynge: & put it through the hoine in to his body: and ofte tymes therewith thpyled his bowelles: & so they

And they had that withynge was per-
ceived & was taken at Gloucester.

How kynge Edward spoused Philipp
the erles daughter of Flandre at Porke.

After Christmalle than here
followynge Syr John of Flandre
brought with hym Philipp his brothers
daughter & was erle of Flandre his nece
into Englonde & kynge Edward spoused
her at Porke wth moche honour. And Syr
John of Beche bisshop of Ely and Syr
William of Selton archbisshop of por-
ke saunge the masse & sonday on & even of
the conversion of saint Paule in & yere of
grace. M. CCC. xxv. But bycause that
the kynge was yonge and tender of age
whan he was crowned full many wyon-
ges were done whyle & his fader lyved
bycause & he bylewed the counseilers that
were fais aboute hym to do other wyse
than reason wolde. Wherfore grete har-
me was done to & realme & to & kynge &
all men directed it to & kynges dede & it
was not so almyghty god it knoweth.
Wherfore it was ordeyned at & kynges
crowning & the kynge for his tender age
sholde be gouerned by. xij. of the gretest
lordes of Englonde without whome no
thyng shold be done that is to saye the
archbisshop of Canturbury the arch-
bisshop of porke the bisshop of Wyche-
ster & the bisshop of Hereford the erle of
Lancastre the erle of Archaill & & erle of
Kent & were & kynges vices & the erle
of Salcey Syr Thomas Wake Syr Henry
Percy Syr Wylliam of Wyngham & John
of Roos barons. All these were sworne
truly for to counseyle & & they shold
answer every yere in & parlyament of &
that sholde be done in the tyme of they
gouernall. But & ordynance was loone
undone & that was moche harme to all
Englonde. For the kynge & all the lordes &
shold gouerne hym were gouerned and

ruled after the kynges moder dame Jac-
bell & by Syr Roger Mortimer. And as
they wolde all thyng was done bothe
amonge hye & lowe. And they toke vnto
them castels / townes / lordes / & rentes /
in grete harme & losse to the crowne & of
the kynges estate out of measure.

How the peas was made betwene
Englissmen & the Scottes and also of
justfyng of Treplebaston.

Edward the thirde at Wythontyde
in the seconde yere of his regne
through the counseyle of his moder & Syr
Roger Mortimer ordeyned a parlyament
at Northampton. And at that parlyament
the kynge through theyr counseyle & none
other of the londe within age graunted
to be accorded with the Scottes in this
maner. That all the feautees and homa-
ges that the Scottes sholde do vnto the
crowne of Englonde forgaue them for
ever more by his chartre ensealed. And
forthermore an endenture was made of
the Scottes vnto kynge Edward that
was kynge Henryes sone whiche enden-
ture they called ragman in the whiche
were coterneid al & homages & feautees
first of the kynge of Scotlande & of all
the prelates / erles & barons of & realme
of Scotlande wth theyr scales for theton
and other chartres & remembraunces &
kynge Edward and his barons had of
theyr right in & foresayd realme of Scot-
land it was forgyuen them agaynst ho-
ly chirche. And also with & blacke crosse
of Scotlande the whiche & good kynge
Edward conquered in Scotlande and
brought it out of the abbey of Deone &
is a full piteuous retyke. And also for-
thermore he relefed & forgaue all the lon-
des that the barons of Englonde had in
Scotlande by olde conquest. And this
peas for to be hold and last the Scottes
were bounde vnto the kynge in. xxx. M.

poside of syluer to be payed within thye
yere / that is euery yere. x. sh. poside by
euery porcyng. And forthermore aboue
all this they spake bytwene the partys
aboue sayd / that Dauid Wytonautier
that was kynge Robert the Brus sone
of fals tyrant & fals forsworne agaynst
his othe & arose agaynst his lyege lord
the noble and good kynge Edward / and
falsly made him kynge of Scotlande / that
was of y age of. v. yere. And so through
this cursed counseyle Dauid spoused at
Bartholomew dawe Jone of the toure / that
was kynge Edwardes syster / as y gest
tellet by upon Mary Magdalenys dawe /
in y yere of grace. M. CCC. and. xxviii.
to grete harme & empaynyng of all the
kynges blode / wherof that gentyll lady
tame / alas y tyme / for wonders moche
was that fayre damoyzell desparaged
syth that she was maried agaynst all
the comyns assent of Englonde. And fro
the tyme that Brute had conquered Al-
bion / & named the londe after his owne
name Brytayne / that now is called Eng-
londe / after the name of Engys / and so
the realme of Scotlande was holden of
the realme of Englonde / & of the crowne
by feaute & homage. For Brute conque-
red that londe / and gaue it to Albanack
that was his seconde sone / and he called
that londe Albayne after his owne name /
so that the heyres that came after hym
sholde holde of Brute and of his heyres /
that is to saye of y kynge of Brytayne
by feaute & homage. And fro that tyme
unto this tyme of kynge Edward / the
realme of Scotlande was holden of the
realme of Englonde by feaute & seruyce
as aboue is sayd in y Cronycles of Eng-
londe & of Scotlande / and bereth wy-
nes moze plenary. And cursed be the
tyme that this parliament was holden
at Northampton. For there through fals
counseyle the kynge was there falsly dys-

herpyed / & yet he was within age. And
yet whan that kynge Edward was put
out of his royaume of Englonde / yet men
put not hym out of y freutes & seruyce
of Scotlande / ne of the franchises dys-
herpyed hym for euermore. And neuer-
theles the grete lordes of Englonde were
agaynst to confyrme y peas & the trewe
aboue sayd / saue onely quene Isabell y
was the kynge's moder Edward / and
the bysshop of Ely / and the lord Morti-
mer. But reason & lawe wolde not y a
nall peas sholde be made bytwene them
without the comyn assent of Englonde.

¶ Of the debate y was bytwene quene
Isabell & syr Henry erle of Lancaster & of
Lecestre / & of the rydyng of Bedfard.

¶ Whan y foresayd Dauid had spou-
sed dame Jone of the toure in the
towne of Bartholomew (as before is sayd) the
Scottes in despyte of the Englyshmen
called dame Jone y countesse make peas
for the cowardly peas that was ordey-
ned. But the kynge's persone bare al the
wyte & blame with wronge of the ma-
kyng of the accorde. And all was done
through the quene & Roger Mortimer.
And it was not longe after that y quene
Isabell ne toke in to her handes all the
lordshipp of Pountreue almost all y lon-
des that were of any value that apper-
teyned to the crowne of Englonde. So y
the kynge had not for to dyspende but of
his vles & of his exchequer. For the quene
Isabell & Mortimer had a grete menyng
of they retynue that folowed euermore
the kynge's court / & went & toke y kyn-
ge's pyces for her penyworthes at good
chepe. Wherfore the countre y they came
in / were full sore abyrd and almost de-
stroyed of them. And began y comynalte
of Englonde for to haue enuy to Isabell
the quene that so moche loued her before

When he came agayne fro France for to
pursue the said traytours & Speners.
And in that same tyme & false traytours
Robert of Flandre that betrayed his lord
sy Thomas of Lancaster was then de-
livered out of payson & was wonder-
prouly with & quene Isabell & also with
Roger Mortimer. But that awayled by
but lytell for he was taken at Wyghel-
masse next folowynge as he rode toward
the quene Isabell to London & sy Tho-
mas wyther smote of his heed besydes
the towne of Saynt Albons. And this sy
Thomas dwelled with sy Henry erle of
Lancastre & he put hym asyde for drede
of the quene for she loued hym wonder-
moche & prayed vnto & kyng for hym &
the same Thomas myght be exiled out
of Englonde. And & noble erle sy Henry
of Lancastre had oftentymes herde the
comyn clamour of & Englyshmen / of &
disease that was done in Englonde & al-
so for byrres wronges & were done to &
comyn people. Of the whiche the kyng
bare the blame w wronge. For he was
yonge & tender of age. And thought as a
good man for to do alwaye and sake the
sclaundre of & kynges person / so that he
myght in any maner wyse / so as & kyng
was therof nothyng gylty / wherfore
he was in peryll of his lyfe. And so he
assembled all his retenaunces & went &
spoke w them of & kynges honour & al-
so for to amende his estate. And sy Tho-
mas Beucherton erle of Barthail / and sy
Edmond of Woodstok & were the kynges
buciers & also men of Lond made theyr
oche for to maynteyn hym in that same
quarrell. And theyr cause was this / that
the kyng sholde holde his hous and his
meyn as a king ought to do & haue all
his realte / & that & quene Isabell sholde
deliuer out of her handes into & kynges
handes all maner lordshippes / rentes /
colones & castles & apperteyned vnto &

crowne of Englonde as other quenes dyd
before her / and meddle with none other
thyng. And also that sy Roger Morti-
mer sholde abyde & dwell vpon his owne
londes / for & whiche landes he had hol-
pen to disheryte moche people / in so mo-
che that & comyn people were destroyed
through wrongfull takynge. And also
to enquire how & by whome the kyng
was betrayed & falsly deceiued at Stan-
hope / and through whose counseyle that
the Scottes went away by nyght from
the kyng. And also how and through
whose counseyle & ordynance that was
made at the kynges crownyng was
put downe / that is for to saye / that the
kyng for amendement and helpynge of
the realme / and in honour of hym sholde
be gouerned and ruled by .xii. of the gre-
test and wisest lordes of the realme / and
without them sholde nothyng be gra-
ted ne done (as before is sayd) the whi-
che couenauntes were malprouly put
downe from the kyng / wherfore many
harmes shames & reproues haue fallen
to the kyng and his realme. And that is
to vnderstand for as moche as Edward
somtyme kyng of Englonde was orde-
ned by assent of the comynalte in playne
parlyament for to be vnder the warde &
gouernaunce of Henry erle of Lancastre
his cosyn for saluacion of his body / he
was taken out of & castel of Kenilworth
where he was in warde / & through co-
lour of quene Isabell & of Mortimer w-
out consent of any parlyament they took &
lad by where as neuer after none of his
kynges myght speke w hy / & after tray-
toursly murdered hym / for whose deth a-
rose a sclaundre throught all christendom
whan it was done. And also & tresour &
sy Edward of Carnaruan left in many
places in englod & in Wales was wasted
& boine a waye without & wyll of kyng
Edward his sone / in destruction of hym

and all his folke. ¶ Also through whose counseyle that the kyng gaue vp þe kyngdom of Scotlande for þe whiche realme the kynges auncesters had full soze traynyed/ and so byd many a noble mā for theyr ryght/ & was delpyrred to Dauid that was Robert þe Brus sone al þe right that no ryght had to þe realme/ as al the worlde it wyll. ¶ And also by whome þe charters & remembraunces þe they had of the right of Scotlande were taken out of the tresoury & taken to the Scottes the kynges enemyes/ to the dysherpyng of hym & his successours/ & to grete harme of his lyege/ & grete reprefe to all Englyshmen for evermore. ¶ Also wherfore hame Jone of þe toure kyng Edwardes syster was disparaged & maryed to Dauid þe was Robert þe Brus sone/ þe was a traitour & enemy to Englod/ & through whose counseyle she was taken in to our enemyes handes out of Englod. ¶ And in the meane whyle the good erle Henry of Lancastre & his company toke counseyle how these poyntes aboue said might be amended to þe worship of þe kyng & to his profyte/ & to þe profyte also of his lyege. ¶ And the quene Isabell through conlectyng & subtylle & also of Mortimer let ordeyn a parlyament at Salysbury. And at that parlyament was Mortimer made erle of Marche agaynst all the barons wyll of Englonde in preiudice of þe kyng & his crowne. And sye John of Gloucestre þe kynges broder was gyft with a swerde of Cornwale/ & the was called erle of Cornwale. And evermore quene Isabell peured so moche anent her sone the kyng/ þe she had þe warde of þe foresaid sye Edward & of his lordes. And at that parlyament þe erle of Lancastre wold not come/ but ordeyned his power agaynst quene Isabell & Mortimer/ and men of London ordeyned them with. b. c. men of armes. Whan quene Isabell wyll of

the dorynge/ she swoze by god & by his names full angerly/ that in an euyl tyme he thought vpon those poyntes. ¶ Than sent the quene Isabell & Mortimer after theyr retynue/ & after þe kynges retynue so that they had ordeyned amonge them an huge hoost. And they so counseyled the kyng/ that vpon a nyght they rode. xxiij. myle towarde Bedford/ wher as þe erle of Lancastre was with his company/ & thought to haue destroyed hym/ & that nyght she rode besyde the kyng her sone as a knight armed for dyce of deeth. And it was done the kyng to vnderstande þe the erle Henry of Lancastre & his company wold haue destroyed the kyng & his counseyle for evermore/ wherfore þe kyng was somdele towarde hym hury and anoyed. ¶ Whan þe erle Marshall & the erle of Kent the kynges broder herde of these tydpynges/ they rode so in message betwene them/ that the kyng graunted hym his peas to the erle Henry of Lancastre for a certayne ransom of. xi. m. ponde. But that was neuer payed after warde. And these were þe lordes þe helde with sye Henry of Lancastre/ sye Henry Beaufort/ sye John Fitz Warren/ sye Thomas Mowbray/ sye William Trussell/ sye Thomas Wycher/ & aboute an hondred knyghtes moo than were to hym cōsented/ & all those were cryed through counseyle of quene Isabell and of Mortimer/ for Mortimer wanted for to haue theyr lordes yf þe he might through any maner coniecting/ for he was so couerous & had to moche wyll/ & that was grete pyte.

¶ How kyng Edward went ouer the see for to do his homage to the kyng of Fraunce for the duchy of Guyen.

¶ It was not longe after þe the kyng of Fraunce through counseyle of his Douzpers sent vnto kyng Edward of

Englond that he sholde come to Paris and do his homage (as reason it wolde) for þe duchy of Guyen / & so through consyle of þe lordes of Englond kynge Edward went ouer þe see / & at þe Ascenyon tyme he came to Paris the thyrde yere of his regne for to do his homage vnto the kynge of Fraunce. And the kynge receyued his homage / & made of hym moche ioye & worship. But whā kynge Edward had done his homage / hastily he was sente for in to Englond through þe queene Isabella his moder / & mone hastily he came agayn in to Englond vpon Whyrsonday wout takynge leue of þe kynge of Fraunce / wherfore he was wondrous wyth.

Chow say Roger Mortimer bare hym proudly and wondrous hye.

And now shall ye here of say Roger Mortimer of Wygmore that desyred & couerped to be at an hye estate so that þe kynge graunted hym to be called erle of March / throughout all his lordshipp. And he became so proude & so haughty þe he wolde lese & forsake the name þe his riders had euer before / & for þe cause he let call hym erle of March / and none of the comyns of Englond durst call hym by other name. For he was called so by the kynges crie / þe men sholde call hym erle of March. And Mortimer bare hym so hauteyne & so proude / that wonder was for to wyte / & also dysguyfled hym with wondrous ryche clothes out of all maner of reason / bothe of shapynge & of weyng. Wherof þe Englyshmen had grete wonder / how & in what maner he myght contryue of fynde suche maner proude / & they sayd amonge them comynly that his pryde sholde not longe endure. And þe same tyme the Grete Mortimer that was Mortimers sone let call hym kyng of fely / & so it befell after wards in

debe. For he was so full of pryde and of wytebrones / that he held a roide table in Wales to all men that came thyder / & counterseyted the doyngs & the maner of kynge Arthurs table / but openly he sayled. For the noble kynge Arthur was the most noble lord of renome þe was in all the world in his tyme / & yet came neuer none suche after / for al þe noble knyghtes in all chyrstendom of dedes of armes as sayed dwellyng to kynge Arthur / & helde hym for the lord & souerayn. And that was well seen / for he conquered in batayle a Romayn that was called Jroll / and gatre of hym the realme of Fraunce / & sette hym in his own handes. And also he faght with a graunt þe was called Dinabus & sette hym þe had rauysshed saye Cleyn that was kynge Howelles nere kynge of Irtell Brytayne. And after he setre in batayle þe emperour of Rome that was called Lucie / that had assembled agaynst kynge Arthur for to fyght with hym so moche people of Romayns & Jherthis & Sarayns / þe no man coude nombre them / & he discomfited them all as þe story telleth. And in þe same tyme the comyn boyce spronge in Englond through comectynge & ordynance of the seere prechers / that say Edward of Carnaruan that was kynge Edwardes fader / of whome the gest telleth / sayd þe he was alyue in þe castell of Corf / wherfore al þe comyns of Englond almost were in sorowe & dyede whether it were so or not for they wyll not hold traytoursly Mortimer had done hym to be murdered.

Chow Edmond of Woodstock þe was erle of Kent & the kynges brother Edward of Carnaruan was heded at Wyndchestre.

And on a certayne tyme it befell so that say Edmond of Woodstock erle of Kent spake vnto the pope John

the xlii. at Dunyng & sayd þat almyghy god had often tymes done for Thomas lorde of Lancastre many grete myracles to many men & women þat were through byrth or maladye vndone (as vnto the wynde) & through his prayer they were brought to theyr helth. & so sye Edmond prayed þat pope heretofore þat he wolde graunt hym grace þat the foresayd Thomas might be translated. But þat pope sayd nay that he shoulde not be translated vnto the tyme he were better cerryed of the clergy of Englonde and seen by theyr obeynence what thyng god had done for þat lorde of saynt Thomas of Lancastre after þat suggestion that þat foresayd erle of Kent had made to hym. And whan this Edmond saw þat he might not speke of his purpose as touchyng the translatyon he prayed hym of consyle as touchyng sye Edward of Carnaruan his broder & sayd not longe ago he was king of Englonde. What thyng myght best be done as touchyng his deliuerance. syth þat accomplisshment is through Englonde þat he is alure & safe. Whan the pope herde hym tell þat sye Edward was alure he commaunded the erle upon his benyson þat he shoulde helpe w all the power þat he myght þat he were deliuered out of prison & saue his body in all þat he myght & to brynge this thyng to an ende he assayed hym & his copany (a peccat culpa) & altho þat holpe to his deliuerance. Than toke Edmond of Woodstok his leue of the pope & came agayne in to Englonde. And whan sye Edmond was comen / some of þat freere prechers came & sayd þat sye Edward his broder yet was alure in þat castell of Coz / vnder þat keeping of sye Thomas Burey. Tho sped hym the foresayd Edmond as fast as he might tyll he came to þat castell of Coz & aquerynt hym and spake so saye with John Burey that was constable of þat same castell & gaue him ryche gyses to haue

acquyntance of hym & to knowe of his consyle. And thus it befel þat the foresayd sye Edmond prayed specially to tell hym ppyrly of his lorde his broder sye Edward. & þat he lured hym thereto & þat he were alure he prayed hym ones to haue a syght of hym. And this sye John Burey was a hys heretico man & full of courage & answered shortly to sye Edmond & sayd that sye Edward his broder was in helth & vnder his keeping & durst not shewe hym to no man syth it was defended hym in þat hynges hall Edward þat was Edwardes lorde of Carnaruan & also by the comaundement of queene Isabell þat hynges moder & of sye Roger Spottimer þat he shoulde shewe his body to no man of the world / saue onely to them whos lye & lyme & dyscretyng of his deyres for euermore. But the fals traytour falsly lped / for he was not in his warde / but he was taken thens & lad to þat castell of Bercheley by sye Thomas Burey / by comaundement of Spottimer tyll he was deed as before is sayd. But sye Edmond of Woodstok wylt no thyng þat sye Edward his broder was deed / wherupon he toke a letter to kyng Edward his broder as to his worthy lord. And receyued þat letter of hym & dehyght hym to do his message wout ony sayle. And with þat sye Edmond toke leue of the foresayd John & went in to his owne countree & lordshipp of Kent þat he had there. And anon as this same John wylt þat sye Edmond was gone in to Kent his owne lordshipp / he went in all the haste þat he myght fro the castell of Coz & came to sye Roger Spottimer & toke hym þat letter þat sye Edmond of Woodstok erle of Kent had taken hym clost & ensealed w his owne seale. And whan sye Roger Spottimer had receyued the letter / he vncloset it & sawe what was contrayned therein & began to reder it / wherof þat begynnyng was this. **C**Wyltys & reuerence with broders

bygone and forgotten. Now I might
have been a baron of the land of
I have you but I am not in good
luck. For I shall be a prisoner for you. That
ye shall come out of prison & be delivered
of that villain that ye be in. And under-
stande of your grace I have I have
to myne allyng almost all the grete
lodes of Englonde with all they appa-
rable & is to saye. North armur. West-
sax. Northumber. To myne allyng
your quarrell. So forsooth that ye shall be
kyng againe as ye were before. & that
they have sowne to me upon a hope. & as
well pyllars as cries & barons. When
sy Roger Spontimer saide & understode
the myght & the strengthe of the letter.
anone his herte for Joye began to boll
& curll hert bare toward sy Edmund of
Woodstock & was erle of Kent. & in all the
haste that he might he went unto dame
Isabel & quene & was & bynges moder
& she shewd her sy Edmundes letter. his
wyll & his purpose. & how that he had
conferred & ordeyned to put to done kyng
Edward of Wyndesore her sone of his cy-
alte & of his kyngdom. Soth certes sy
Roger sayd she hath sy Edmund done so
now by my fathers soule sayd she I wyll
be therof auncer. yf that god graffe me
lyfe. & that in a shorte tyme. And soch
the quene Isabel went to king Edward
her sone there as he was at the parly-
ment at Wyndesore for to amende the
lawes & the trespasses that were done
amonge the people of his realme. & she
take and shewd hym the letters that sy
Edmund of Woodstock had made and en-
sealed with his owne seale. and hadde
hym upon her blessing that he shoulde
be ancyer upon sy Edmundes as upon
his heedy enemy. Then was the quene
for Joye towarde sy Edmund erle of
Kent. and called neuer to praye unto her
sone yll that he had done in all the helle

after hym. And upon that the kyng sent
by his letters after sy Edmund of Wood-
stock. that he shoulde come & speke wth hym
at Wyndesore all manner thynges lyste.
Then when sy Edmund saide & the king
saw after hym with his letters sealed
he hadde hym in all that he myght yll
that he came to Wyndesore. But when
the quene wote that sy Edmund was
comen to Wyndesore. anone she went &
prayed to fall unto kyng. Edward her
sone that & good erle was arrested anone
and ladde unto & barre before Robert of
Parham & was Crouner of the kynges
housholde. & he assayed to hym sy Ro-
ger Spontimer. And then spake the fore-
sayd Robert & saide. sy Edmund erle of
Kent. ye shall understode that it is done
as to wyte. & p^{er}spicably unto our lyege
lorde the kyng Edward of Englonde
almighty god hym save & kepe. that ye
be his verdy enemy & a traitour. & also
a comyn enemy unto the realme. & that
ye have ben aboute many a daye for to
make meny delverance of sy Edward
fourth kyng of Englonde your brother
the whiche thynge was put to done of
his counsaile by & comyn assent of & lordes
of Englonde in apperallinge of our lorde
the kynges estate. & also of his realme.
Then answered the good man & saide.
Forsothe sy understode well & I was
never traitour to my kyng. ne to the re-
alme. & that I do me on god & on all the
world. & therin my kynges leue I
shall it p^{er}me & defende as a man ought
to do. Then sayd Spontimer. sy Ed-
mund it is so frendly knowen & it may
not be well gapered. & that in presence
of all that he here & shall be well p^{ro}ved
Soth was this Spontimer the same
lettre that sy Edmund had taken to sy
John Mowbray in the castell of Cois for
to take to kyng Edward his brother that
sy Edmund wote not of. ne supposed

nothynge þat John Daueryll had ben
so fals to deliuer his lettre in suche wyse
to Mortimer / & thoughte no maner thyn-
ge of the lettre. Than Mortimer sayd to
sy: Edmonde & shewed þe lettre sealed / &
asked him yf that he knewe that lettre &
the scale. This sy: Edmond lokyd thereon
& auyted hym longe tyme on þe print of þe
scale / for he myghte not se þe lettre win / &
wyll well þat it was his scale / & thought
that it had be some lettre þat had boyne no
grette charge / & thoughte nothynge on þe
other lettre / & sayd openly in herynge of
them all. Ye forsothe this is my scale / &
I wyll it not forsake. Loo sayd Morty-
mer / sy: ye here all what he hath sayd
& that he knowlegeth þat this is his lettre
& his scale / & now ye shall here what is
conteyned therein. And than this Morti-
mer opened þe lettre þat he had solden afore
to gyder / & red it openly worde by worde
in hering of them all. And whan þe lettre
was red he sayd / loo sy: ye haue herde
all that here is wyrtten / & that he hath
knowleged þat this is his lettre & his scale
& he may not go therfro. And than they
cryed & gaue dome that he sholde be han-
ged & drawen & his heed smytte of in ma-
ner of a traytoure / & he & his heyes dys-
crypted for euer more / & so he was ladde
forth & put in to pryson. And whan this
was done / & þe quene wyll that he was
dampned by wyse of þe lawe bothe of lyl
and lymme / & his heyes dyscrypted for
euer more / through open knowlegynge
in playn court / wherfore them thoughte
that it were good þat the foresayd sy: Ed-
mond were hastily slayne without wy-
tyng of þe kyng / or els the kyng wolde
lyghtly forgyue hym his deth / & than it
sholde turne them to moche sorowe / so as
he was emperched. And anon the quene
through counseyle of Mortimer / & about
any other counseyle / sente in haste to the
baylyfe of Wyndchestre þat he sholde smyte

of sy: Edmondes heved of Wyndchestre erle of
Kent without any maner abydinge or
respit / upon payne of lyl & lymme / &
that he sholde haue none other excusyon
bycause of carynge / not withstanding
the iudgement. Than toke þe baylyfe sy:
Edmond out of pryson / & ladde hym be-
tyde þe castel of Wyndchestre / & there they
made a gongfermer to smyte of his heed
for none other durst do it. And so he dyed
there / alas þe whyle þat is to say þe .x. day
of October / the thyrde yere of kyng Ed-
wardes regne. And whan þe kyng wyll
therof he was wondrous sorow / & let bury
hym at þe frete Wynours at Wyndchestre.

Of the deeth of sy: Roger Mortimer erle of March.

And so it befell at þe tyme that sy:
Roger Mortimer erle of marche
was so proude & so hardy that he herde
no lord of the realme his pere. And than
became he so courtous that he folowed
dame Isabell the quenes court þat was
kyng Edwardes moder / & beset his pe-
nyworthes wth the officers of the quenes
houshold in þe same maner þat the kynges
officers dyd. And so he made his takynge
as touchynge bytayles / & also of cary-
ges / & all he dyd for bycause of expences
and to gadre tresour / & so he dyd with-
out nombre in all that he myght. Than
made he hym wondrous pryncyple wth the
quene Isabell / and so moche lordshyp &
retynue he had / that all the grette lordes
of Englonde of hym were adrad. Wher-
fore the kyng & his counseyle towarde
hym were agreed / & ordeyned amonge
them to vndo hym through pure reason
and lawe / bycause that kyng Edward
that was the kynges fader traytoure
through hym was murdered in þe castell
of Corf / as before is sayd more playn-
ly in the same parte of this boke of his
deth. And some that were of the kynges

counseyle touch spoynter / & tolde hym
in psonate how that the kyng & his coun
seyle were aboute fro daye to daye hym
for to destroye & vndo. Wherfore spoynt
mer was sore annoyed and angry as the
deuyl agaynst them þ were of þ kynges
counseyle / & sayd he wolde of them be a
uenged both so curte he toke on. It was
not longe afterward that king Edward
and dame Philip his wyfe & dame Isa
bell the kynges moder & sy Roger spoy
ntmer ne went vnto Notyngham there
for to sojourn. And so it befel that quene
Isabell through counseyle of spoyntmer
toke to her the keys of þ gates of þ castel
of Notyngham / so that no man myght
come in nor out by nyght / but through
comaundement of spoyntmer ne þ kyng
nor none of his counseyle. And that tyme
it befell so that spoyntmer as a deuyl for
wrauth boyled / & also for wrauth þ he had
agaynst the kynges men / & pynceppally
agaynst them þ had accused hym to the
kyng of þ deth of sy Edward his fader.
And pynceully a counseyle was taken by
thene quene Isabell & spoyntmer & the
bysshop of Lyncolne and sy Symond of
Bedford & sy Hugh of Crompyngton &
other pynce of theyr counseyle for to vndo
them as þ had accused spoyntmer vnto þ
kyng of his faders deth of treason & of
felony. Wherfore all those þ were of the
kynges counseyle whā they wyll of spoy
ntmers castynge / pynceully came to kyng
Edward & sayd that spoyntmer wolde
destroye them / bycause they had accused
hym of kyng Edwardes deth his fader
and prayed hym þ he wolde maynteyne
them in theyr right. And these were the
lordes þ pursued this quarell / sy Willia
m of Mountagu / sy Umfrey de Bohun /
sy Willia his broder / sy Rauf of Totel
ford / sy Robert of Hereford / sy William
of Clynton / sy John deuyll of Homby
and many other of theyr consent / and all

these swoore vpon a boke to maynteyne
the quarell in as moche as they myght.
And it befell so after that sy William
of Mountagu ne none of þ kynges fren
des must not be herborowed in the castel
for spoyntmer / but went and toke theyr
herborowe in dyuers places of þ towne
of Notyngham. And tho were they sore
adrad lest that spoyntmer shold destroye
them / and in haste came vnto kyng Ed
ward sy William of Mountagu þ than
was in þ castel / and pynceully tolde hym
that he nor none of his company shold
not take spoyntmer without counseyle &
helpe of William of Gloucoun constable of
the same castel. Now truly sayd þ king
I loue you well / & therfore I counseyle
you that ye go to the foresayd constable
and comaunde hym in my name that he
be your frende and your helpe for to take
spoyntmer / all thyng left vpon peryll of
lyfe & lymme. Than sayd Mountagu / sy
my lord graunt me that. Than went forth
the foresayd Mountagu and came to the
constable of the castel / and told hym the
kynges wyll. And he answered & sayd
the kynges wyll shold be done in as mo
che as he myght / and that he wolde not
spare for no maner deth / and so he swoore
and made his othe. Than sayd sy Wil
liam of Mountagu to the constable / in
herynge of all them that were helppng
vnto the same quarell. Now certes dere
frende / vs behoueth to werke and do by
your aduysle for to take spoyntmer / syth
that ye be keper of the castel & haue the
keys in your ward. Sy sayd the con
stable ye shall vnderstande that þ gates
of the castel ben locked with the lockes
that dame Isabell sente hyther / and by
nyght she hath the keys therof & layeth
them vnder the leuesell of the bedde tyll
on the morowe / and so ye may not come
in to the castel by the gates in no ma
ner of wyse / but I knowe an aley that

the land took
the full name
the danger
the danger

Stretcheth out of the wardes under þe erth
in to þe foresayd castel. þe goth in to þe well
whiche aley dame Isabell the quene ne
none of her men nor Mortimer ne none
of his company knoweth it not. And so þe
shall lede you through þe aley / and so ye
shall come in to the castel about espynge
of ony men þe be your enemyes. And the
same nyght sy William Mortimer & all
the lordes of his quarell / & the same con-
stable also wente to hoys them / & made
semblaunt as it were for to go out of Mor-
timers lyght. But anone as Mortimer
herde these rydynge / he wende þe they
wold haue gone ouer see for fere of hym
And anone he & his company toke a coun-
seyle amonge them for to lette theyr pas-
sage / & sent lettres anone to the portes /
so that none of the grete lordes sholde go
home to theyr owne countrees but yf they
were arrested & taken. And amonge other
thynges William Cland constable of þe
foresayd castel / pryncely lad sy William
of Mortimer & his company by the fore-
sayd waye vnder the erth tyl they came
in to the castel / & went vp in to the toure
where as Mortimer was in. But sy
Hugh of Crompyngton theym espyed
hydously & sayd. A traytours it is all for
nought that ye be comē in to this castell
ye shall dye yet an euyl deeth euerychone
And anone one of them þe was in Moun-
tagues company vp with a mace & smote
the same Hugh vpon þe heed þe the brayn
blast out & fell on þe ground / & so dyed he
an euyl deeth. Than toke they Morty-
mer as he armed hym at þe toures doore
whan he herde þe noyse of them for drede
And whan quene Isabell sawe þe Mor-
timer was taken / she made moche so-
rowe in hert / and these wordes to them
sayd. Now say sy I pray you þe ye do
no harme to his body & worthy knyght
our welbeloued frende & our dere cosyn.
Tha went they thens & came & broughte

Mortimer & presented hym into kyng
Edward. And he commaunded to bypge
hym in safe warde. But anone as they
that were consentyng vnto Mortimers
doyng herde tell þe he was taken / they
wene and hydde them / and pryncely by
nyght wente out of the towne eueryche
in to his countree with an heuy herte &
mourning chere / and spued vpon theyr
lordes as well as they myght. And so
that same yere þe Mortimer was taken
he had at his retynue .ix. score knyghtes
without squyers and sergentours of ar-
mes and fote men. And than was Mor-
timer ladde to London / & sy Symond
of Bedford was ladde with hym / and
was taken to the constable of the toure
to kepe. But after warde was Morty-
mers lpf examyned at Westmynster be-
fore the kyng & before all the grete lordes
of Englonde / for peryll that myght
fall to the realme / & to enquire also whi-
che were consentyng to sy Edwardes
deeth the kynges fader / and also through
whome the Scottes escaped fro Stan-
hope in to Scotlonde without the wyll
of kyng Edward. And also how þe char-
ter of Ragman was deliuered vnto the
Scottes / wherein the homages & fran-
tees of þe lordes of Scotlonde were con-
teyned / that the Scottes sholde do euer
more vnto the Englyshe kyng for the
realme of Scotlode / wherfore in his ab-
sence he was dampned to be hanged &
hanged for his treason. And this mys-
chere came to hym on saynt Andrewes
euen / in the yere of þe incarnation of our
lord Iesu Chyrt. M. CCC. and. xii.

How kyng Edward gatt agayne vnto
hym graciously þe homages & fran-
tees of Scotlonde / wherof he was put out
through false counseyle of quene Isabell
his moder & sy Roger Mortimer / that
was newly made erle of March.

Durynge the tyme of peas was chosen to be kyng of Scotlande because that he came of þe eldest daughter of the erle David of Huntington þe was kyng Wyndesore brother of Scotlande þe dyed without heire of his body begeten. And how this John made his fraute and homage to kyng Edward Henryes sone þe thyrde for his lordes of Scotlande. And how he afterwarde wylayd his homage through counseyle of the Scottes / in the yere of our lord. M. CC. lxxiii. and sent vnto the pope through a fals suggestion that he made his othe vnto the foresayd kyng Edward ouer his estate & his wyf of the whiche othe þe pope hym assopled through his bulles to hys sent. And anon as kyng Edward wyth therof / he ordeyned anone his barons & came to Barwyk & conquered the towne / at whiche conquest there were slayne. xlv. and vii. C. and Bayloll þe was kyng of Scotlande came & yelied hym to good kyng Edward / & the kyng afterward deliuered hym out of þe toure of London / & all þe grette lordes wth hym that the were taken at Barwyk / & gaue them saufconduyte to go in to Scotlande. And the Scottes lych through theyr falsnes warred vpon the good kyng Edward. And whan syr John Bayloll kyng of Scotlande sawe all this he went ouer see vnto Dunsyre and layd there vpon his lordes as wel as he myght tyll þe Scottes wold amende them of theyr mysdores & trespass & so wth syr Edward his sone / Robert for þe Scottes in despyte of hym called hym syr John Turnilabard / for bycause that he wolde not offende ne trespass agaynst þe good kyng Edward of Englonde. And so he forsoke his realme of Scotlande and set therof but lytel preyce. And whan syr Johan dwelled longe tyme in Fraunce tyll þe he dyed there. And syr Ed-

ward his sone receyued his herpytage / & dyd homage to þe kyng of Fraunce / for his lordes of Dunsyre. And so it befell afterwarde that Edward þe was John Baylolls sone had wth hym a squyer of englonde that was borne in yorshyre / þe was called John of Barnaby / & this Edward Bayloll loued hym moche / & was nygh hym and full preyce. And so this John of Barnaby was in debate wth a frenshe man in þe towne of Dunsyre / & so he selde hym & went his waye in all þe haste þe myght in to þe castell for to haue helpe of his lord. And anon came þe officers of þe towne to take John of Barnaby as a felon / & syr Edward his lord holpe hym & rescoued hym / & by night made hym go out of þe castell / & so he went his waye & came in to Englonde wout ony harme. And whan þe kyng of Fraunce sawe þe syr Edward had rescoued his felon / he became wondrous wythe agaynst syr Edward / & anone let arrest hym / & toke in to his hādes all his lordes. Than dwelled syr Edward in prysoun vnto þe tyme þe syr Henry of Beaumont came in to Fraunce / the whiche Henry was somtyme erle of Angos in Scotlande through his wyfe & was put out therof whā þe accordement was bytwene Englonde and Scotlande through quene Isabell & Roger Mortimer & theyr cōpany / for þe marriage þe she made bytwene Dauid þe was Robert þe Byus sone & dame Jone of þe toure kyng Edwardes syster of Englonde / & well vnderstode this þe at þe ende he shold come to his ryght / but yf it were syr Edward Bayloll þe was ryght heire of þe realme of Scotlande. And the kyng of Fraunce Lollors loued moche this syr Henry / & he was wth hym ful preyce / & thought for to make a despuerance of syr Edward Bayloll yf he myght in ony maner of wyse. Tho prayed he þe kyng þe it wolde please his noble grace to graunt hym syr

Edward Baylols body vnto þ next par-
lyament that he myght lyue w his own
rentes in the meane tyme / & þ he myght
stande to be iudged w his peres at þ par-
lyament. And þ kyng graunted hym his
prayer / & made the foresayd Edward to
be deliuered out of prysoun in the maner
aboue said. And anone as he was out of
prysoun / syz Henry toke hym forth w hym
& ladde hym into Englode / & made hym
dwell pryuely at þ maner of Sandhall
vpon Duse in Porkehsyre w the lady
Uesey. And so he ordeyned him there an
huge retynue of Englysshemmen & also of
alyens for to conquere agayne his her-
tage. And so he gaue moche siluer to the
sowdours & to alyens for to helpe hym
And they behyght for to helpe hym in þ
they myght / but they sayled hym at his
moost nede. And at þ tyme Donald erle
of Morry herde tell how þ syz Edward
Bayloll was pryuely come in to Englode
& came to hym & made grete ioye of his
comynge agayn / and sayd to hym & be-
hyght hym þ all þ grete lordes of Scot-
londe shold be to hym attendaunt / & shold
holde hym for kyng as ryght heyre of
Scotlonde / & dyd to hyf homage & feaute.
Than came syz Henry of Beaumont to
kyng Edward of Englode / & prayed
hym in þ waye of charite that he wolde
gratit of his grace to syz Edward Bay-
loll that he myght safely go by londe fro
Sandhal vnto Scotlonde to coquere his
ryght & herytaunce in Scotlonde. The
kyng answered & sayd. yf that I suffre
Bayloll go through my londe in to Scot-
londe / the people wold saye þ I shold be
assentynge vnto þ company. Now syz I
praye you that ye wolde gyue hym leue
to take w hym sowdours of Englysshe
men þ they myght safely lede hyf through
your londe in to Scotlonde. And syz vpon
this couenaunt þ yf it so befall (as god it
sholdde) he be dyscomfyted in batayle

through the Scottes / that I & also all þ
lordes that holde w Bayloll ben for ever
moze out of your rentes that we haue in
Englode. And there þ kyng vpon this
couenaunt graunted theyf bone as tou-
chynge hym & those þ were of the same
quarrell the whiche claymed for to haue
londes & rentes in þ realme of Scotlonde
And these were þ names of those lordes
that pursued this foresayd quarrell / þ is
to saye / syz Edward Bayloll the whiche
chalenged the realme of Scotlonde / syz
Henry Beaumont erle of Angos / syz Da-
uid of Stroboly erle of Arches / syz Geo-
frey of Bombay / Walter Comyn and
many other þ were put out of theyf he-
rytage in Scotlonde whan þ prass was
made bytween Englode & Scotlonde as
before is sayd. And ye shall vnderstande
that these lordes toke w them. v. C. men
of armes and. ij. M. archers & four men /
& tho wente in to shyppe at Ravenspore
and sayled by the see tyll that they came
vnto Scotlonde / & came to londe at Lyn-
keborne. xij. myle from saynt Iohanes
to Wne. And anone sente out theyf shyp-
pes agayne / for that they shold not be
hurt ne empayred / neyther that no man
shold go in to þ shippes agayn though
that they had nede / but abyde all peris
and not flee but stande / & rather suffre
deth thā flee for to maynteyn theyf true
quarrell. Whan the erle of fyffe & fyres
man & a sterne herde that Bayloll was
comen for to take the londe of Scotlonde
he came in haste to Lynkeborne w
xij. M. Scottes for to destroye hym / that
he shold not come to londe. But syz Ed-
warde Bayloll & his company dyscom-
fyted hym there / at þ whiche dyscomfy-
ture syz Myssander of Seton was there
slayne & many other. The erle of fyffe
was tho sore & full yll ashamed / that to
lytell a company had dyscomfyted hym
and shamefully put hym & all his com-

camp that were about to flee. Then
 came Syr Edward Bayliff & toke þe coun-
 tre all aboute hym till he came vnto the
 abbey of Dunfermlin. & there he founde
 bytayles for hym & for his folke. and a-
 monge all thys he founde in a chambie
 aboute. b. C. of grete stauces of fyne oke
 with longe pykes of yren & of stele. & he
 toke them & deliuered them to the moost
 strongest men of his cōpany. And anone
 after he went from thens & lodged hym
 in a feide two myle fro saynt Iohannes
 towne. And whan the burgysses of the
 towne herde how the erle of Fife was
 dyscōfyt through Bayliff. they were
 sore adrad. & brake theyr byrdes þe they
 had made ouer þe water of Erne. so that
 Bayliff myght not go ouer. wherfore he
 lodged hym there all þe nyght. but ytell
 hede he toke of rest. & sayd vnto his pro-
 ple. Now dere lordes ye knowe full well
 that we be now lodged bytwene our ene-
 myes. & yf they may vs hampre there is
 no bote but death. wherfore yf we abyde
 wyll here all this nyght. I wene it shall
 turne vs to moche harme. for þe power
 of Scotlande may euer increace
 and we may not so do. & we be but lytell
 people agaynst them. wherfore I praye
 you for þe loue of almighty god make we
 vs bolde & hardy. & þe we may myghtely
 take the Scottes this nyght. and boldly
 warre vpon them. & let vs pursue them
 this nyght. & yf they be through vs tra-
 uayled & se our hardynes. other Scottes
 that se them so trauayled and wery. the
 sorer wyll they be adrad w vs to fyght.
 & sorerly than shall we fyght with them
 & on them pursue. so þe through þe grace
 of god al þe world shall speke of þe doughty-
 tynges of our chyualtry. And syz vnder-
 stande well that at the company þe came
 with syr Edward Bayliff graunted well
 to þe cōsyle. & were therof ryght glad.
 and anone pursued vpon the Scottes þe

they became wondrous wery. And Bay-
 liff & his company sore folowed them. &
 did them moche harme & sorrow through
 theyr assaut. so þe they myght not for fe-
 blesnes them helpe. and for lytell people.
 But tho sayd þe Scottes amonge them.
 What is now befall that so lytell people
 as Bayliff hath in wynges dothe vs so
 moche trauayle & sorrow. Now certes it
 semeth vs that he werketh by grace. for
 he is wondrous gracys in his quarell.
 & we certes shal be deed or that we may
 come to hy vs for to yelde. syth that his
 fader set of vs no pryce. And amonge all
 other thynges Bayliff & his people pas-
 sed the water of Erne. so that syr Roger
 of Wynerton the sone was fyers & an-
 gry & went forth. & they sawe people of
 armes full well arayed. and forth they
 went vnto them & with them faught. &
 slewe & toke as many as wolde abyde.
 And neuertheles at þe assaut they wende
 it had ben the grete hoost of Scotlande.
 And whan it came to the morowe they
 gadred them togyder and rested them a
 whyle. And whyle þe englyshmen rested
 them. the noble baron Thomas Wescy &
 the noble baron of Stafford pricked theyr
 hores vp & down by þe hylles for to kepe
 the estres of þe cōtre. & as they pryched
 vp and down they sawe a grete hoost of
 good araye ordeyned in theyr wynges
 with helmes and sheldes shynynge co-
 mynge vpon them. And there came tho
 two lordes agayn to Bayliffs folke. and
 sayd. Now for the loue of god be of good
 cōforte. for ye shall haue batayle anone
 right. And tho spake syr Fouke þe sone of
 Gareyne a baron of grete renome and of
 dedes of armes. syz vnderstode what
 I wyll saye. I haue seen many dyuers
 wynges. as wel amonge sarasyns and
 ieiwes as amonge þe Scottes. & yet sawe
 I neuer the fourth parte of the wynges
 fyght. & therfore yf ye wyll abyde our

enemys we be ynough to fight agaynst them. But yf we be not of good hert & of good courage we be but lost / & therfore for the loue of god let vs take to vs good herte / & let vs be bolde / & thynke we neuer on our wyues ne on our chyldre / but onely to cōquere our enemys in batayle & through the helpe of our lord god we shall them overcome. And with þ came the host of the Scottes towarde them full surely & agaynst sy Edward Bayloll in thre bataylles well arrayed in armure / & wonders spere they came towarde Baylolls company. But whā sy Donald erle of Marcil that was with þ Scottes sawe all this / he said to Robert Brus the sone of Robert the Brus these wordes. Sy Roberte sayd he / full soze me forthynketh at my herte þ these people that Bayloll hathe brought w hym sholde dye with dynt of scottes swerdes syth þ they be chrysten men as we be / & therfore me thpkeþ þ it were grete charity to sende vnto them for to yelde them to our mercy / & raunson them through greuous raunson / for as moche as they haue take our lond & done yll. Now certes sayd sy Robert þ Brus / I haue wel percepued that þ art an enemy & a traytour to Scotlande / syth that þ wilt consent to saue our deadly enemys / þ haue done vs so moche sorowe & shame / & now it semeth well that ye be of they assent. Now certes Roberte (sayd sy Donald) falsly ye lye / I am not of they company ne of they cōsent / & that hastely ye shall se / for I will fyght w them rather than any of this cōpany / & certes sy Roberte sayd he I shal in maugre of thy herbe as sayle them oʒ thou. And with that they pyched theyr stedes spere on Gaskmore / & theyr wynges them folowed on a rige / & tho came they & mette w Bayloll & his cōpany at an hangynge bough of the moze in a straye passage / and so fast

they hasted them vnto the englyshmen that thousandes fell to the groude eche ouer other into an hepe bothe hors & mā. Sy Bayloll & his men myghtely stode agaynst them & fast stode the Scottes to the groude / & many they soze wounded so longe tyll that they stode vpon them & forned them w theyr swerdes & speres through theyr bodyes / and full soze they were trauayled vpon them / tyll þ they became wōders werry / & wylt not what for to do. And þ Scottes that were left alpyue fledde a way for to saue themselves in the best maner that they myght. And tho pursued them sy Edward Bayloll and his men / & stode of them tyll it was night. And fro thens they went to saynt Johns towne / and toke it & helde them there / and bytayed themselves at theyr owne wyll / for they foude ynough wher with to make them merry. Than made Bayloll his men þ were wounded go to shyppe for to sayle in to Englonde to heale theyr wōundes. And in þ tyme there was a stemyng in þ see a stronge thef & a robber þ was called Crab / & this stemyng was dryue out of flaunders for his wyckednes / & therfore he came in to Scotlande to holde with þ Scottes / & dyd as moche harme to þ Englyshme as he myght do. And this Crab mette this Baylolls men in þ see þ were wounded before in batayle that were sent agayn in to Englonde for to heale theyr wōundes / & this Crab gaue to them a grete assaute / and wold haue slayne them. But þ Englyshmen defended them manfully & dyscofyred Crab & his cōpany / & he fledde in to Scotlande. And as he came towarde saynt Johns towne / he foude a grete cōpany of Scottes þ were comen agayn togyder after þ discomfyture of Gaskmore the whiche besyged Bayloll & his men in the same towne of saynt John. And anone tolde to the Scottes how that he was disco-

fynded of þe Englyshmen that were wed-
ded at Gaskmoure þe went to warder Eng-
londe for to helpe theiȝ weddes. & sayd to
the scottes þe they sholde haue no power
ne myght nor grace agaynst Edward
Bayloll/ bycause that he bystrumfyred &
empayred all the chivalry of Scotlande
with a handfull of men as to accompte
agaynst the Scottes that were slayne/
wherfore he couseyled to remoue þe siege
from saynt Johns towne/ & kepe them
in þe best maner that they myght. The
Scottes vnderstode þe Crab sayd sothe/
& forsoke þe syege & went thens by nyght
& holpe themselves in þe best maner þe they
myght. Whan this thyng was knowen
through Scotlande how that þe lordes &
knyghtes were discoufyred at Gaskmoure
of Scotlande through syȝ Edward Bay-
loll/ ye shall vnderstande that þe lordes &
ladys & the gentyls of Scotlande came
wonders fast to saynt Johns towne/ &
yelded them to Bayloll/ & to him dyd ho-
mage & feaute for theiȝ lordes/ & yelded
them to his peas. And he them receiued
freely/ & fro thens he went to þe abbey of
Scone/ & there he was crowned kyng of
Scotlande/ & after he let crye his peas
throughout all the londe. And at þe same
tyme it befell that kyng Edward helde
his parlyament amonge his lyeiges at
newe castell vpon Tyne/ for to amende þe
trespaces & the wronges þe had ben done
in his londe/ & syȝ Edward Bayloll kyng
of Scotlande came to hym thyrder/ & dyd
to hym homage & feaute for þe realme of
Scotlande. And in this maner kyng Ed-
ward of Englobe gadred agayn his ho-
mages & feauters of Scotlande/ wherof
he was put out through counseyle & as-
sent of dame Isabell his moder/ & of syȝ
Roger Mortimer erle of Marche. Than
toke Bayloll kyng of Scotlande his leue
of kyng Edward of Englobe/ & went
thens in to his owne londe of Scotlande

& set out byll by surche as had couseyled
& holpen hym in his quatell/ wherfore
they went from hym/ & went & lyued by
theiȝ lordes & rentes in Scotlande. And
so it befell not longe after ward that the
king of Scotlande ne remeued & came to
the court of Irland/ and there toke his
dwellyng/ & thyrder came to hym a compa-
ny of knyghtes/ stronge men & worthy/
and yelded them vnto þe kyng/ and bare
them so fayre in dede & in countenaunce/ so
that he trusted moche vpon them. And
anone as þe traytours sawe þe he trusted
moche vpo them/ they ordeyned amonge
them fyfte in a company/ & wolde haue
slayne theiȝ lord þe kyng. But through þe
grace of almighty god he brake through
a wall an hole in his chambrye/ & as god
wolde escaped theiȝ trechery/ & all his
men were slayne/ & he escaped w moche
dred vnto þe towne of Cardopill/ & there
he helde hȝ soze anoyed. And this befell
on our ladys euen þe concepcion. Than
sent kyng Edward Bayloll to kyng Ed-
ward of Englobe how falsly & traytours-
ly he was in lytell tyme put to shame &
forow through his lyege men/ on whom
he trusted wonders moche/ & prayed hȝ
for the loue of god þe he wolde maynteyn
hym & helpe hym agaynst his enemyes
The kyng of Englobe had of hym grete
pyte/ & behygght to helpe & socour hym/
and sent hym worde that he shold holde
hym in the foresayd cite of Cardopill tyll
that he had gadred his power. Than or-
deyned kyng Edward of Englobe a
counseyle at London/ & he let gadre his
men in dyuers shyrres of Englobe. And
whan he was all redy/ he went toward
the towne of Barwyk vpon Tweede/ &
thyrder came vnto hym kyng Edward
Bayloll of Scotlande with his power &
besyged the towne/ & made without þe
towne a fayre towne of paupryons/ & dy-
ched them all about/ so that they had no

made of the Scottes / & made many assaults wth gonnes & wth other engynes to the towne / wherwth they destroyed many saye houses / and churches also were beten downe to p^ryth wth grete stones that spytfully came out of gonnes & of other engynes. Nevertheless p^r Scottes kept well the towne / that p^r two kynges myght not come therein longe tyme. And the kynges abode there so longe tyll those that were wthin the town sayed bitayles & also they were so werry of wabynge / p^r they wylt not what to do. And y^e shall vnderstand p^r the Scottes p^r were in the towne of Barw^rch throug^h p^r compyncon seyle and they assent let crye vpon the walles of the towne p^r they myght haue peas of the Englyshmen / & therof they prayed the kyng of his grace & mercy / & prayed h^{is} of trespase for. viij. dayes vpon this couenaunt / p^r yf they were not rescolued in p^r syde of the towne toward Scotlande of p^r Scottes wthin. viij. dayes / p^r they wold yelde them vnto p^r kyng & the towne also / & to hold this couenaunt they proffered to p^r king. xij. hostages out of the towne of Barw^rch. Whan the hostages were deliuered to p^r kyng / anon they of the towne sent to p^r Scottes / & told them of they^r sorow & myschefe. And p^r Scottes came than priuely ouer the water of Tweede to p^r bought of p^r abbey / & s^r William Diket p^r was the steward of Scotlande & many other p^r came wth hym / put themselves in grete peryll of they^r lyues at p^r tyme / for they came ouer a byrge p^r was broken & the stones away / & many of they^r company were there dyownd / but the foresayd William went ouer & other of his company / & came by p^r shippes of Englonde / & stode in a barge of Hull xvi. men / & after they went in to p^r towne of Barw^rch by p^r water syde. Wherfore p^r Scottes helde than p^r towne rescolued / & asked they^r hostages agayn of the kyng

of Englonde. And the kyng sente them wode agayne p^r they asked they^r hostages wth wronge / s^r that they came in to the towne of Englonde syde / for couenaunt was bytweene them p^r the towne shold be rescolued by p^r halfe of Scotlande. Than anon commaunded kyng Edward to yelde the towne or he wold hange p^r hostages. And the Scottes sayd the towne was rescolued well ynough / and thereto they wold them holde. Whan kyng Edward sawe the Scottes byke they^r couenaunt that they had made / he was wondrous wroth / & anon let take s^r Thomas frey William & s^r Mylauber of fcton Wardeyn of Barw^rch / the whiche Thomas was parson of Dunbar / & let them be taken s^r also that other hostages / by cause that s^r Mylaubers fathers was keeper of the towne. And tho commaunded euery daye two hostages of p^r towne tyll that they were all done to dethe / but yf they yelved p^r towne / & so he shold teche them to byke they^r couenaunt. And wha they of the towne herde these tydrynges they became wondrous say / & sent to the kyng p^r he wold graunt them other. viij. dayes of resp^rte / so p^r bytweene tho hundred men of armes and. xx. me of armes myght by strength go bytweene them to the towne of Barw^rch them for to bitayle that p^r towne must be holde for rescolued And yf so were that. xxi. or. xxii. or more were sayne of tho. C. before sayd / that p^r towne shold not be holden for rescolued And this couenaunt to be holde they sent to hym other. xii. of p^r foresayd to them in hostage. The kyng graunted them they^r prayer / & toke p^r hostages on saynt Margaretes euen in p^r p^rere of grace. W. cc. & xxii. the Scottes came p^r king freely in fourte wynges well arrayed in armes for to mete kyng Edward of Englonde & Edward p^r kyng of Scotlande & wth they^r powder / and came fast & sharply agaynst

marriage tyme / & the same tyme that
 that an man myght go out on his hors
 may on fote / & the water was by the
 the two kynges & the realm of Englonde
 And that tyme abode the Scottes on
 other syde / because þe Englyshmen
 wolde haue ben dyshonored.

¶ This was þe araye of þe lottres how
 they came in batayle agaynst þe two kyn
 ges of Englonde & of Scotlonde. In þe bat
 tle of Scotlonde were these lordes.

The erle of Moray / James frater
 Symond / seynt Walter Stewart
 de / Reynold Cheyn / Patrik of Graham
 John le graut / James of Cardoyll / Pa
 trik Barreis / Robert Caldecottes / Phi
 lip of Melroth / Thomas Gilbert / Rafe
 Wyseman / Donn Surdon / James Gya
 mar / Robert Boi / Hugh Barke / With
 xl. knyghtes newe dubbed / & .viij. C. men
 of armes / & .iiij. M. of comyns. ¶ In the
 fyrst parte of þe batayle were these
 lordes / the steward of Scotlonde / þe erle
 of Moray & James his uncle / William
 Douglas / David of Lyndeley / Panco
 lyn Flemmyng / William of Kerke / Dūken
 Cāboke / With .xxx. bachelers newe dub
 bed. ¶ In the second parte of þe batayle
 were these lordes. James Stewart of
 Coliden / Reyn Stewart / William Ab
 beyn / William Moray / John firs Wil
 lyam / Adam le noble / Walter firs Gilbert
 John of Cerrton / Robert Wailham With
 vij. C. men of armes & .xviij. M. comyns
 ¶ In the thyrde parte of the batayle of
 Scotlonde were these lordes / the erle of
 Arrat the erle of Ros / the erle of Strath
 borne / the erle of Sotherland / William of
 Kyndley / John Cambion / Gilbert of
 Hay / William of Hamley / William Den
 degeit / Ryslyn Harde / William Cur
 don / Arnolde Garde / Thomas Dolphyn
 With .xl. knyghtes newe dubbed / & .ix. C.

men of armes and .xv. M. of comyns.
 ¶ In the fourth ward of þe batayle of
 Scotlonde were these lordes. Archibald
 Douglas the erle of Lennox / Myssoun
 der le Duns þe erle of Fife / John Cambell
 erle of Archeles / Robert Lawther / Wil
 lyam of Wyndesore / William of Londone
 John de Labais / Goud de Berenham
 John de Lyndeley / Myssander de Gray
 Ingram de Wunsterville / Patrik de Pol
 lesworth / Dauid de Wymes / Wyche
 Beete / William Landy / Thomas de
 Bopp / Roger the spoynter / With .xx.
 bachelers newe dubbed .ix. C. men of ar
 mes / and .xviij. M. of comyns.
 The erle of Dunbar keeper of þe castell of
 Barduk holpe the Scottes With .l. men
 of armes. And firs Myssander of Seton
 keeper of the foylseyd towne of Barwyk
 With an. C. men of armes / & also the co
 myns of þe towne With .iiij. C. men of ar
 mes / & to them .viij. C. fote men. ¶ The
 somme of the erles & lordes aboue sayd
 amounteth .lxxvj. The somme of þe bache
 lers newe dubbed amounteth to .C. & .xl.
 The somme of men of armes amounteth
 to .iiij. M. C. The somme of the comyns
 amounteth to .iiij. M. & .iiij. C. The somme
 totall of þe people aboue sayd amounteth
 lxxvj. M. & .xlv. C. And these .lxxvj. grete
 lordes had all þe other grete lordes aboue
 sayd in .iiij. batayles / as it is told before
 all on fote. And kynge Edward of Eng
 londe & Edward Bayloll kynge of Scot
 londe had wel apparayled theyr folke in
 .iiij. batayles for to fyght on fote agaynst
 the Scottes theyr enemyes. And þe Eng
 lysh men myghte blyde theyr trumpets &
 theyr laryngs / & houndes cryed þe Scott
 es. And the had eury englysh batayle
 two wynges of pyce archers / þe whiche
 at þe batayl shotte arrows so fast & so sope
 that the Scottes myghte not helpe them
 selfe / & they smote þe Scottes thousandes
 to the grounde / & they began for to flee fro

the englysshme to saue theyr lyues. And whan þe scottyshe knyghtes sawe þe dys-
fytur & the scottes fall fast to þe grounde
they fast prycked theyr maysters horses
with the spures for to kepe them fro pe-
ryl & set theyr maysters at no force. And
whan þe Englysshmen sawe þe they lepte
on theyr horses & fast pursued þe scottes/
and all þe abode they stode downe ryght.
There men myght se þe doughtyness of þe
noble kyng Edward & of his men/ how
manly they pursued þe scottes þe fled for
diede. And there men myght se many a
scottishman cast down to þe grounde deed
& theyr baners displayed backed in to pe-
ces/ & many a good habergeon of stele in
the blode bath. And many a tyme þe scot-
tes were gadred in to companyes. But
euermore they were discōfited. And so it
befell as god wolde þe scottes had þe
daye no more fopson ne myght agaynst
the Englysshmen than. xx. shepe sholde
haue agaynst. v. wolues. And so were þe
scottes discōfited/ & yet þe scottes had
well. v. men agaynst one Englysshman/
& þe batayle was done on Halpdownhyll
besyde þe towne of Barwrik/ at þe whiche
batayle were slayne of þe scottes. xxxv.
M. vii. C. and. xij. And of Englysshmen
but onely. xiiij. and those were fote men.
And this victorie befell to þe Englysshmen
on saynt Margaretes euē / in þe yere of
the incarnacion of our lord Jesu Chryst
M. CCC. xxxij. And whyle this doyng
lasted þe Englyssh pages toke the pylfre
of the scottes þe were slayn/ euery man
myght take without ony chalengynge
of ony man. And so after this gracious
victory the kyng returned agayn vnto þe
same spege of Barwrik. And whā they
were besyged sawe & herde how kyng
Edward had sped/ they yelded to hym þe
towne wth the castell on the morowe nexte
after saynt Margaretes day. And than
the kynges ordeyned sye Edward Bayl-

loill with other noble & worthy men to
be keepers and gouvrenours of Scotlande
in his absence / and hymselfe returned
agayne and came in to Englonde after
this victory with moche ioye and wo-
shipp. ¶ And in the nexte yere folowynge
that is for to saye / in the yere of the in-
carnacion of our lord Jesu Chryst. M.
CCC. and. xxxij. and of kyng Edwardes
regne. vii. he went agayn in to Scot-
londe in wynter tyme / at whiche tyme
the castell of Rulbygge in Scotlande for
hym & for his men that were with hym
he recovered and had agaynst the Scot-
tes all at his owne wyll. ¶ And in that
same yere sye Edward Baylloill kyng
of Scotlande helde his parlyament in
Scotlande with many noble lordes of
Englonde that were at that same par-
lyament / bycause of theyr lordes and
also lordshyppes that they had in the re-
alme of Scotlande / and helde all of the
same Edward Baylloill. ¶ And in the
viij. yere of kyng Edwardes regne / a-
bout the feest of saynt Iohn Baptyst sye
Edward Baylloill the very & true kyng
of Scotlande / as by heretage and righte
lyne / made his homage and fraute vn-
to kyng Edward of Englonde for the
realme of Scotlande at Actre castell vpon
Tyne / in the presence of many worthy
lordes and also of the comyns / bethe of
the realme of Englonde and also of Scot-
londe. And anon after in the same yere
kyng Edward of Englonde receyued of
the duke of Burrayn his homage for the
erledome and lordshipp of Rychemond.
¶ And so folowynge in the. ix. yere of his
regne after Whigheymas rode in to Scot-
londe / and there was fast by saynt Jo-
hannes towne almost all the wynter
tyme / & so he helde his Chrysmasse at þe
castell of Rokesburgh. And in the same
yere throughtout al Englonde about saynt
Clementes tyme in wynter there arose

Part. vii. Kyng Edward the thyrde.

suche a springynge and wellynge by of water / & also of fodes / bothe of the see & also of freshe ryuers & springes / that þe see bankes / walles and colles brake by that men / bestes & houses in many places & namely in lowe countrees violently & sodenly were dyrowned / & fruytes dyruen alwaie of the erth throughe contynuaunce & aboundaunce of waters of the see / euer more afterwarde were turned in to more saltnes and sournes of saluour. ¶ The .x. yere of kyng Edwardes regne kyng Edward entred the Scottysse see after mydolmer / & to many of the Scottes he gaue batayle & ouercame them / & many he treated & bowed to his peas throughe his doughtynes. And after at Myghelmasse than next folowynge was the erle of Moray taken at Edenburgh and brought in to Englonde and put in to pryson. ¶ And in the monethes of June and July than next folowynge in the .xi. yere of his regne was seen and appered in þe firmament a beimed sterre the whiche clerkes call Stella Cometa / and that sterre was seen in dyuers partes of the firmament. Where after anon there folowed in Englonde good chepe & wonders grete plente of all chaffer bytayles and marchaundysse / and there agaynst hunger / scarcete / myschese / and nede of money. In so moche that a quarter of whete at London was solde for two shyllynge / and a good fatte oxe at a noble / and fyue good boue byrdes for a peny. In whiche yere dyed sye John of Githam erle of Cornewayle that was kyng Edwardes broder / and lyeth at Westmynster.

¶ How kyng Edward made a duchy of the erldome of Cornewayle / and also of fyve other erles that were nowe made / and of the fyft chalenge of the kyng some of Fraunce.

In the yere of our lord. M. CCC. & .xxxviij. and the .xii. yere of kyng Edward / in the moneth of Marche / durynge the parlyament at Westmynster in lent tyme kyng Edward made of the erldome of Cornewayle a duchy / & let it call þe duchy of Cornewayle / the whiche duchy he gaue to Edward his fyrt sone / with the erldome of Chestre. And also kyng Edward made at the same tyme. vi. other erles / that is to saye / sye Henry erle of Lancaster sone erle of Hereford / Willyam of Boughun erle of Northhamton / Willyam of Mountagu erle of Salisbury / Hugh of Audell erle of Glocestre / Robert of Ufford erle of Suffolke and Willyam of Clinton erle of Huntington. ¶ And in that same yere it was ordeyned in the same parlyament þe no man shold were no cloth that was wrought out of Englonde / as of cloth of golde ne of sylke or beluet or damaske or satyn baudryn / ne none suche other / ne none wyde ware ne furrer of beyonde þe see / but suche as myght spende an hondred pounde of rent by yere. But this ordeynance and statute was but of lytel effect / for it was nothyng holden. ¶ In the .xiiij. yere of his regne kyng Edward went ouer the see in to Brabant with quene Philip his wyfe there beryng a childe at Andwerp there he dwelled more than a yere for to trete with the duke of Brabant & other alied unto hym of the chalengynge of þe kyngdome of Fraunce to kyng Edward of Englonde by ryght & by heritage after the deth of Karoll the grete kyng of Fraunce broder germayn of quene Isabel kyng Edwardes moder / the whiche was holden & occupied vnrighfully by Philip of Valoys þe emes sone of Karoll. The whiche duke & all his in þe foresayd thynges & all other longynge therto with all his men and goodes kyng Edward soude redy unto hym & made & behyghe

Item that it beyn to be þ þe regne of Fraunce
to be a toke a myght þ þe regne armed
of fraunce quartered in the armes of Eng-
londe. a chequyered fynch with his coynes
of golde under delivrayson a mytting of
the name of Englonde a of fraunce to be
made best þ myght be. a þ is to save the
doyern þ was called þ noble payre of. vi.
shyllinges. viii. pens sterling. a þ hallis
noble þ value. iii. shyllinges a iii. pens
a the farthynge of þ value of. x. pens.

¶ Dolly kynge Edward came into the
 Schypp and dyscomfited all the power
 of fraunce in the haven.

And in þ nexte yere after that is
to saye the .xv. yere of his regne
he comaunded & let wytte in his chartres
wytted & other litters the date of the
regne of fraunce þ fyrst. And whyle that
he was thus doynge & traunayfynge in
fraunce through his counseyle he wrote
to al the prelatos / dukes / crles & barons
& the noble lordes of þ countre & also to dy
uers of the comyn people by uers litters
& mandementes berynge date at Gens
dauie the .viii. daie of february. And a
nion after wiche in a lytell tyme he came
agayn in to Englonde in the queene & her
childe. And in þ same yere on midsumer
euen he began to sayle toward fraunce as
gayn & mauly & syerly he fell vpon Phil
lyp of Flaioys / the whiche longe tyme
laye & had gathered to hym a full gerte &
bousious mynn of dyuers nations in þ
haumen of flours & there they foughte to
gyder þ kyng of fraunce & he with they
bottes fro myddaye to thre of þ cloche on
the mornynge in þ whiche batayle were
slayne .xii. th. men of þ kynges cōpany
of froies and many shippes & cogges
were taken. And so through goddes be
nye he had there þ victory & bare thens a
gloious chensly. And in þ same yere

And thus he went to the king's court
 of France. And when he came to the
 court of France he found the king
 and queen and all the courtiers
 and he was very glad to see them
 and he told them of all the things
 that he had done. And the king
 and queen were very glad to hear
 of his adventures. And the king
 gave him a great reward for his
 service. And he went home
 to his father and mother and
 told them of all the things that
 he had done. And they were
 very glad to hear of his
 adventures. And he lived
 happily ever after.

[illegible]

ye of þe men. x. viii. yere passed they
 cyphered & chaged them every yere by
 wate shoppes & disguysing of clothe
 of longe large & wyde clothes destitute &
 deferte for all olde honeste & good blage.
 And an other tyme shoyt clothes & strait
 waisted sagged & hys & on every syde shew
 erred & botched with stenes & tapytes of
 surcotes & hodes ouer longe & ouer mo:
 che hanging. þ. yf þe sothe shall saye
 they were more lyke to turnytours & de
 uyls in theyr clothing & shopyng & other
 aseye than to men. And þe women more
 nyctly yet passed the men in aseye & cu
 tiousshep for they were so strait clothed
 that they let hangge fore tayles sewed by
 uerthe win theyr clothes for to hele & hide
 theyr arses the whiche disguysing &
 wyde perauenture afterwarde broughe
 forth & caused many myshappes & myf
 shes in þe realme of Englynde. ¶ The. xx.
 yere of kynge Edward he went ouer in to
 Biptayn & Gascoyn in whols company
 went þe erle of Warwyke the erle of Glou
 cester the erle of Huntingdon & the erle of
 Arundell & many other lordes & compa
 ny people in a grete multitude with a gre
 te many of. C. and. xi. shippes anone
 after myshomer for to auenge hy of ma
 ny wronges & harmes to hym done by
 Philip of Walois kynge of fraunce a
 gaynst þe trowthe before hande graunted
 the whiche trowthe he falsly and vntreuly
 by couellacions losed & disquatte.

¶ How kynge Edward sayled in
 to Floumaby & arryued at Hogges
 with a grete hoost.

In the. xxi. yere of his regne kynge
 Edward throughe consyle of all þe
 grete lordes of Englynde called & gadged
 togyder in his parlyament at Westmyn
 ster before eeser ordeyned hy for to passe
 ouer þe see agayn for to destruye & destruy
 the rebelles of fraunce. And whan his

navy was come togyder & made ready he
 went in a grete hoost the. xii. daye of Ju
 ly & sailled in to Floumaby & arryued at
 Hogges. And whan he had rested hym
 there. vii. days for þe cause of traouayng
 of the see & for to haue out all his men w
 al theyr necessities out of theyr shippes
 he went towarde Cadomū by waye
 wastynge & destroyng all þe towne þe
 he founde in his waye. And the. xxi. day
 of July at þe byrde of Cadomū manly &
 nobly strenghted & defended with Ro
 mans he had there a stronge batayle & a
 longe butynge throughe whiche a grete
 multitude of people were slayne. And
 there were taken of prisoners the erle of
 Cwe. the lord Tankerayll and an. C. of
 other knyghtes & men of armes. &. vi. C.
 fote men noblyd & the towne & þe subbar
 bes vnto þe bare wall of all thyng that
 they myght bere & cary out was robbed
 & despoyled. After þe king passed south by
 the countre about the byrde of. xx. myle he
 wasted all maner thyng that he founde.
 Whan Philip of Walois perceyued this
 all though he were fast by hym with a
 stronge hoost yet he wolde not come nye
 hym but brake all þe byrdes beyonde þe
 water of Seyn fro Roen to Parys & by
 selfe fledde vnto þe same cite of Parys w
 all þe heste þe he myght. For sette þe noble
 kynge Edward whan he came to Parys
 byrde & founde it broken wthin two dayes
 he let make it agayne. And on þe morowe
 after the Assumpcion of our lady kynge
 Edward passed ouer þe water of Seyn
 goynge towarde the water of Cressy &
 destroyed by þe waye to wiche in the peo
 ple d'auylunge them. And in the last of
 saynt Bartheleme he passed ouer the
 water of Somme vnto wiche in all his hoost
 there as neuer before had be any maner
 waye ne passage where t. lxx. &. lxx. were
 slayne of them that letted theyr passage
 ouer. Therefore the. xxvi. daye of August

Byng Edward in a felle fast by Crise
buryng the batayles of Englyshmen
encountred & mette in the feld of Marston
buryng to him. In batayle of which
the best passed greatly & number of Eng-
lysh people. And whil these two hostes
mette togyder / there fell upon hym the
king of Berne / & duke of Acre / & cries
all of fladons / Saladon / Blois / Bar
count / Tamaric and others / and many
other cries / barons / lordes / knyghtes &
men of armes the number of a. viij. b. C.
xiiij. About fote men & other men armed &
were northynge taken. And for al this
the victorious Philip more in by in the
respon of his people. Wherfore it was
sayd in comyn amonge his owne people
After del for retreat / & to saye our saye
wherwith hym. Then byng Edward
our englyshmen thanked god of suche
a victorie after they grete labour taken
to them all thynge needful to they suste-
nance & saynge of they lyues / and for
dede of they enemyes rested the there.
And full cry in the morninge after the
frenschmen in a grete host came agayn
for to gyue batayle & syght with & eng-
lyshmen / with whome mette & encour-
ted the erle of Warwike / Northampton &
Northfolke with they copany & helpe
ii. iii. and toke many prisoners of & gen-
tles of them / & the remenaunt of the same
host fled. iij. myle thens. And the thyrde
daye after & batayle & byng went to Ca-
larys warde destroyng all & towncs as
he rode thider. Whan he was comen &
to Calarys / the thyrde daye of September
he began to besyge & to take the castel
wherwith his syege fro & forsaue thyrde
daye of September to & thyrde daye of Au-
gust & next yere after. And in & same yere
buryng & syege of Calarys & byng of Scot-
lande with a grete multitude of scottes
came into Englon to shewles crosse a.
And in yere Lutes daye the mungey &

buryng & trustyng that same felle in
the lande best yere and boyde of people /
for as much as the byng of Englonde
was beynde & for / and they were
men of holy church & women & children
and prisoners & such other labourers / &
there they came & cobled & byd miche
many sayd / but & at last they pough
that miche them by & grace of almygh-
ty god. And so a daye of batayle was as-
signed by them them & a daye to be
& men of holy church & were of fowles to
with other comyn people fast by the cite
of Durham / at which daye though &
grace of almyghety god & shewles were
overcomen / & yet were there thre tymes
as many of them as of the myghty shewles.
And there was anye all the cheunier &
knyghts of the realm of Scotlonde
And there was taken as they wolde ha-
ue fled thens & daye the byng of Scot-
londe hymselfe / & the erle of Gentyf / &
William Douglas / & many other grete
men of Scotlonde. And after & our Eng-
lyshmen whan they had rested them a
fewe dayes & had ordeined they kepers
of & north to there / they came to London
& brought with them & Dauid & byng
of Scotlonde & all & other lordes & were
taken prisoners unto & towne of London
with all the hoste & they mpyght / & left
them there in safe keepyng unto the kyn-
ges comyng / & went home agayn in to
they owne castles. And after ward was
the kynges ransom of Scotlonde taxed
to an hundred thousand marke of sylver
to be payed within .x. yere / & is to saye
euery yere .x. thousande marke.

And both byng Edward besyged
Calarys / and both it was wonne &
passed into hym.

In the .xxij. yere of & regne of king
Edward he went over the see in

the Wynter tyme / & laye all the Wynter
at the syege of Calays / the whiche yere
whyle þe syege lasted & endured / Whylp
the kyng of Fraunce cast & purposed tray
courly & wth fraude to put away þe syege /
& came the .xxvii. day of July in þe same
yere wth a grete hoost & a stronge power &
nighed to þe syege of Calays / the whiche
Philip the last day of July sent to kyng
Edward worde that he wold gyue hym
playne batayle þe thyrde daye after that
about euensonge tyme / yf he durst come
fro þe syege & abyde. And whan kyng Ed
ward herde that / without ony longe tar
ryenge or longe auysemet accepted glad
ly þe day & houre of batayle þe Philip had
assygnd. And whan þe kyng of Fraunce
herde þe / the nexte nyght after he set his
tentres a fyre & remeued & wente awaye
towardly. Than they þe were in þe towne
& in þe castel besyged seynge al this how
that they had none other helpe ne socour
of the kyng of Fraunce ne of his men / & al
so þe theyr vitayles wthin them were spen
ded & wasted / & for faute of vitayles & re
freshing they ete horses / houndes / cattes
& myce for to kepe theyr treuth as longe
as they myght / & whā they sawe & was
foude amonge them at þe last þe they had
no thynge amōge them for to ete ne lyue
by / ne no socour nor rescowe of þe frensh
men of þe other syde / they wyll well that
they must nedes dye for defaute / or elles
yelde þe towne / & anone they went & toke
downe þe baners & þe armes of Fraunce on
every syde þe were hangen out / & wente
on the walles of þe towne in dyuers pla
ces as naked as they were boine / saue
onely theyr wyertes & their prey clothes
& helde theyr swerdes naked & the poynt
dowward in theyr hādes / & put ropes
& halters aboute theyr neckes / & yeldeb
by the keys of þe towne & of the castell to
kyng Edward of Englonde wth grete
lre and dreeve of herte. And whan kyng

Edward sawe this / as a merriable kyng
and lord receyued them all to grace / & a
fewe of the gretest persones of estate & of
gouvernaunce of the towne he sente in to
Englonde there to abyde theyr ransom
& the kynges grace. And all þe comynalte
of the towne the kyng let go whither
they wolde in pras & wthout ony harme
and let them bere wth them all theyr
thynges that they myght bere and car
aways / kepynge the towne & the castell
to hymselfe. Than throughe medycyon
of cardinals that were sent from þe pope
trewse was take there bytwene Fraunce
& Englonde for .ix. monethes than netre
folowynge. And aboute Whyschmasse
kyng Edward came agayne in to Eng
lond wth a glorious victory. ¶ And in
the .xxiii. yere of his regne in þe rest par
tyes of the worlde there began a pesty
lence and deth of sarasyns & paynyms
that so grete a deth was neuert herde of
afore / & that wasted a way the people so
that vnneth the tenth persone was left
alyue. ¶ And in the same yere aboute þe
south countrees there fell so moche rayne
& so grete waters / that fro Chyristmasse
vnto mydsomer there was vnnethes no
daye nor nyght but that it rayned some
what / throughe whiche waters þe pesty
lence was so enfectet & so haboundant
in all countrees / & namely about þe court
of Rome & other places & sece colles / that
vnneth there were left lyuyng folke for
to bury them honestly þe were deed. But
made grete diches & pyttes þe were won
ders brode & depe / & therin buried them
& made a renge of deed bodyes & call a ly
tell erth to couer them aboue / & than call
in an other renge of deed bodyes / and an
other renge about them. And thus were
they buried & none other wyse / but yf it
were so þe they were men of grete estate
so that they were buried as honestly as
they myght. ¶ And after all this in the

xxiiij. yere of kynge Edwardes regne it was done him to wyte of a treason that was begon at Calays & ordeyned to sell that towne for a grete somme of florens to kynge Philip of Fraunce through the falsnes & ordynance of a knyght þ was called s^r Gessrey of Cherney that was woorders preuy wth kyng Philip of Fraunce And whā kyng Edward herde this/ he toke wth hym þ noblest & gentyllest lordes & many other worthy mē of armes that were present wth him for þ solempnite of þ hygh feast. And well & wysely in all the haste that he myght & as pryncely as he myght he went ouer the see to Calays. And þ same yere þ good kynge Edward helde his Chyrstmasse at Hauerynge & the moxow after newe yeres day þ kyng was in þ castell of Calays wth his men of armes þ none of the alyens wylt therof. And þ fals cōspyratour & traytour Gessrey of Cherney syth that he myght not openly haue his purpose of þ castell/ pryncely & stelingly he came & helde þ towne wth a grete hoost. And whan he wth his men were comen/ he payed the foresayd somme of florens as couenaūt was to a Genewey in þ towne þ was keper of the castell & consentyng to the same Gessrey in all this falsnes & trechery / & bounde þ Englyshe mynstrels & seruauntes that were in þ castell þ they myght not helpe themselfe ne let them of theyr purpose. And than wenyng þ they had ben sure ynough/ they spake al theyr wickednes & falsnes openly on hygh þ al mē might here. And now shall ye here how they were deceyued/ for they came in by a pryuy posterne ouer a lytell byrdege of trex/ & whan they were comen in subtylly & pryncely þ byrdege was drawn vp & kepte þ none of them þ came in might go out/ ne no moo come in to them. And anone our Englyshe men went out at pryuy holes and wyndowes & ouer the walles of the

towne & of þ castell & went & saught manly wth þ frensshmen þ were without/ & had þ better of them/ the whiche whan they were occupped by the selfe on theyr syde/ the kyng þ was wthin the towne haupnge wth hym scarcely but. xxx. men of armes dreyue out his swerde & wth a loude bopee he cryed on hye. A saynt Edward A saynt George. And whan the people herde that/ they came rēnyng to hym & gaue to theyr enemyes so grete assaute that there were moo than. iij. C. men of armes & many moo other slayn/ & many fled awayne. And so by þ grace of god the victory fell to þ Englyshmen. Than the kyng toke wth hym this Gessrey þ was fynder of this treason & also many other frenshe prisoners/ & wthin a whyle after he came agayne in to Englonde. And in this same yere & in the yere afore/ & in the yere nexte folowynge was so grete a pestylence of men from the east in to the west/ & namely through botches/ þ they that sekened as on this daye dyed on the thyrde daye after / to þ whiche men þ so dyed in this pestylence had but lytell respyte of theyr lyggynge. Than pope Clement of his goodnes & grace gaue them full remysyon & forgyuenes of all theyr synnes that they were shryuen of/ & this pestylence lasted in London fro Whighelmasse vnto August nexte folowynge/ almost an hole yere. And in these dayes was deth without sorowe/ weddynge without frendshyp/ wylfull penaunce/ & deth without scarlete / & sleynge wout refuse or socour/ for many fledde fro place to place bycause of the pestylence/ but they were infected & might not escape þ deth / after that þ prophete Isaie sayth Who that fleeth fro the face of drede/ he shall fall in to the dyche. And he þ wyndeth hym out of þ dyche/ he shall be holden and tyed wth a grenne. But whan this pestylence was cefed as god wolde

hundredes þe tenth parte of þe people was left on lyue. And in þe same yere began a wonder of thyng that all þe were bove after þe pestylence had two chetethen in theyr heed lesse than they had afore.

How kynge Edward had a grete batayle with Spanyardes in þe see fast by Wynchelsea.

About saynt Johns daye in haryest in þe see fast by Wynchelsea kynge Edward had a grete batayle with men of Spayne where þe theyr shippes and nauy laye chayned togyder that eyther they must fyght or be drowned. And so whan all our worthy men of armes and of the see costes fast by Winchelsea and Romney were gadged togyder and our nauy and shippes all redy to the warre the Englyshmen mette manly and strongly with theyr enemyes comynge fyrstly agaynst them. And whan þe spaynysh vessels and nauy were closed in all aboute there myght men se stronge batayle on bothe sydes and longe durynge in whiche batayle was but fewe that faught but they were pyteously hurte. And after þe batayle there were xxiiij. shippes taken and so the Englyshmen had the better. And in þe nexte yere folowynge of his regne þe is to saye the xxvi. yere the kynge throughe his counseyle let ordeyn and make his newe money that is to saye the peny the grote value of. iiii. pens and the halfe grote of. ii. pens but it was of lesse weyght than the olde sterlynge was by. b. shyllynge in þe pounde. And in the xxviij. yere of his regne was the grete derth of vytayles the whiche was called þe dere somer. And the xxviii. yere of his regne in þe parlyament holden at Westmynster after easter sye Henry erle of Lancastre was made duke of Lancastre. And in this yere was so grete a drought þe from the moneth of Marche

to the moneth of July there fel no rayne on the erth. Wherfore all fruytes and herbes for þe moost part were lost in de faute. Wherfore came so grete bysease of men and bestes and derth of vytayles in englonde so þe this londe þe euer afore had be plenteous had nebe þe tyme to seke vytayles and refresshyng at other out ryas and countrees. And in þe xxx. yere of kynge Edward it was accorded graunted and sworne bytwene the kynge of France and kynge Edward of Englonde þe he shold haue agayn all his lodes and lordshippes þe longed to the duchy of Guyen of olde tyme. þe whiche had ben wyrtaken and wrongfully occupied by diuers kynges of France before hand to haue and to holde to kynge Edward and to his heyres and successours for euermore frely peasably and in good quite. Upon this cournaunt that the kynge of Englonde shold leue of and relese all his ryght and clayme that he had claymed of þe kingdom of France and of the tytel þe he toke therof. Upon whiche speche and cournaunt it was sent to the court of Rome on bothe sydes of þe kynges that þe foresayd cournaunt shold be embulled but god ordeyned better for þe kynges worship of Englonde so what throughe fraude and deceyte of þe frenshmen and what throughe lattyng of þe pope and of þe court of Rome þe foresayd cournaunt were disquat and left of. And in the same yere þe kynge reuoked by his wyse and dyscrete counseyle the staple of wolles out of Flaunders in to Englonde whal þe libertees franchises and free customes that longed therto and ordeyned it in Englonde in dyuers places that is to saye at Westminster Caunterbury Chichester Byskopp Lyncolne and Hull with all the foresayd thynges þe longe therto. And þe this thyng þe shold thus be done þe kynge wrote hymself therto and pryncce Edward his sone with other many grete wittneses þe there were present. And þe xxx. yere of

his regne anone after Whylsontyde in þ
parlyament ordeyned at Westmynster it
was tolde & certifyed to þ kyng þ Philip
that helde the kyngdom of Fraunce was
deed & that John his sone was crowned
king & that this John had gyue Karoll
his sone þ duchy of Guyen / of þ whiche
thynge Whan kyng Edward wyst therof
he had grete indignacion to hym & was
wonders wroth & strongly meured. And
therfore afore al þ worthy lordes þ were
there assembled at þ parlyament he called
Edward his sone vnto hym / to Whom þ
duchy of Guyen by right herytage shold
longe to / & gaue it hy there / byddyng &
strengthenyng hym þ he sholde ordeyn hy
for to defend hym / & auenge hym on his
enemyes / & saue & maynteyn his ryght
And afterward kyng Edward hymselfe
& his eldest sone Edward went to diuers
places & sayntes in Englonde on pylgry
mage for to haue þ more helpe & grace of
god & of his sayntes. And þ seconde hal.
of July Whan all thynge was redy to þ
biage & batayl / & al his retynue & power
assembled / & his nauy also redy / he toke
with hym þ erle of Warwyk / the erle of
Suffolk / the erle of Salysbury / & þ erle
of Oxford / and a. M. men of armes & as
many archers / & on þ Natyuite of our la
dy toke they / shippes at Plommouth &
began to sayle. And Whan he was arry
ued in Guyen / he was there woorthy
fully receyued of the moost noble men &
lordes of þ countre. And anone after kyng
Edward toke w him his two sones / þ is
to saye / sy: Leonell erle of Ulton / and sy:
John his broder erle of Rychemonde / &
sy: Henry duke of Lancastre / with ma
ny erles & lordes & men of armes / & two
M. archers / & sayled towarde Fraunce / &
rested hym a whyle at Calays / & after
warde the kyng went w his folke afore
said & w other soudpours of beyonde the
see that there abode þ kynges compynge

the seconde day of Nouember & toke his
iourney toward kyng John of Fraunce
there as he had crowed to haue sounde
hym fast by Odomar as his lettres &
couenaunt made mencyon that he wolde
abyde hym there w his hoost. And Whā
kyng John of Fraunce herd tell of the co
mynge of þ kyng of Englonde / he went
a way w his men & carpage cowardly &
shamefully slepyng & wastynge all by
tayles þ englysshme shold not haue ther
of. Whan kyng Edward herde tell þ he
slede / he pursued hym w all his hoost tyll
Bedyn / & than he beholdynge þ scarlete
& wantynge of vitayles & also þ co war
dyle of the kyng of Fraunce / he returned
agayn wastynge all the countree. ¶ And
Whyle all these thynge were a doyng
the Scottes pryuely & by night toke the
towne of Barwyk / slepyng them that
withstode them & no man els / but bly
sed be god the castell was saued & kepte
by englysshmen þ were therein. Whan þ
kyng wyst of al this / he returned agayn
in to Englod as wroth as he myght be /
Wherfore in þ parlyament at Westmyn
ster was graunted to the kyng of euer
lacke of wolle. i. shyllinges duryng the
terme of. vi. yere / þ he myght þ myghte
lyer fyght & defende the realme agaynst
the Scottes & other mysdoers. And so
Whan all thynge were redy the kyng
hasted hym towarde the spege.

¶ How kyng Edward was crowned
kyng of Scotlode / & how prync Edward
toke þ kyng of Fraunce & sy: Philip his
yonger sone at the batayle of Poitiers.

¶ And in the. xxxi. yere of his regne
the. xiiij. daye Januer the king
beyng in the castell of Barwyk with a
fewe men / but he haunyng there fast by
a grete hoost and a goodly / the towne
was yelden vnto hym without ony ma

Whiche many men sawe / & after it me-
ured & fell in þe myddes of the see. And
in the same tyme in Fraunce & Englonde
& many other londes as they that were
in playnes coūtries & desert bare wytnes
sodeynly there appered two castels / of þe
whiche wente out two hostes of armed
men. And that one host was clothed in
whyte / & that other in blacke / & when
batayle bytvene them was begon / the
whyte overcame the blacke / & anone af-
ter the blacke toke herte to them & over-
came the whyte / & after that they went
agayn i to theyr castels / & than þe castels
& all the host banysshed awayne. And
in the same yere there was a grete & an
huge pestilence of people & namely of men
whose wyves as women out of gouer-
nauce toke husbands as well straungers
as other letwde & symple people / þe whi-
che forgetyng theyr honour & worshipp
& birth coupled & married them w them þe
were of lowe degree & lytell reputacyon.
In this same yere died Henry duke of
Lancastre / & also in this yere Edward
prynce of Wales wedded the countesse of
het þe was wyf Thomas wyf of Holand
the whiche was departed somtyme & de-
uorced fro þe erle of Salysbury for cause
of þe fals knyght. And about this tyme
began & rose a grete cōpany of diuers na-
tyons gadred togider / whose leders were
Englysshmen wout any heed / þe whiche
dyd moche harme in þe party of Fraunce.
And not longe after there arose an other
cōpany of dyvers nations / þe was called
the whyte cōpany þe which in þe parties
of Lombardy dyd moche sorowe. The
same yere wyf John of Gaunt the sone of
king Edward þe thyrde was made duke
of Lancastre by reason and cause of his
wyf that was the daughter & heyr of
Henry somtyme duke of Lancastre.

Of the grete wynde / and how prynces

Edward toke the lordshipp of Gupen of
his fader / and went thyder.

And in the. xxxvii. yere of kyng
Edward the. xii. day of Januer
that is to saye / on saynt Shaurys daye
about euensongtyme there arose & came
suche a wynde out of þe south w suche a
spertnes & strength that it blast & blew
downe to þe groude high houses & stroge
burynges / toures / churches & steeples
& other stronge places / & all other stroge
werkys þe stode styl were shaken ther w
that they ben yet & shall euermore be the
sebler & weyker whyle they stande. And
this wynde lasted wout any cōtyng. but
dayes cōtinually. And anone after there
folowed suche water in hey tyme & in þe
haruest tyme that al felde werkys were
gretly letted & left vndone. And in the
same yere prynces Edward toke þe lord-
shipp of Gupen / & dyd to kyng Edward
his fader homage & fraunte therof / & wet
our see into Gascoyne wth his wyf &
chyliden. And anone after kyng Ed-
ward made wyf A conell his sone duke of
Clarence / & wyf Edmonde his other sone
erle of Cambridg. And in þe. xxxvii.
yere of his regne it was ordeyned in the
parlyament that men of lawe bothe of þe
chirche & ciuill lawe sholde fro þe tyme
forth plede in theyr moder tongue. And
in þe same yere came in to Englonde thre
kynges / þe is to saye / þe kyng of Fraunce / þe
kyng of Cypris / & þe kyng of Secciende
bycause to visyte & to speke w the kyng
of Englonde. And after they had be here
loge tyme / two of them went home in to
theyr owne coūtries & kyngdomes / but
the kyng of Fraunce through grete sick-
nes & malady that he had abode styl in
Englonde. And in þe. xxxix. yere of his
regne was a stronge & grete frost / & it ac-
lasted loge / that is to saye / fro saynt An-
drewes tyde to the. xiiij. kal. of Apryl / þe

the tythe & lowynge of the erth & other
 suche felde werke & hande werkes were
 moche let & leste indone for colde & hard-
 nes of þe erth. And at Oyray in Bytarn
 was ordeyned a grete deedly batayle by
 twene sy: John of Goufford duke of By-
 taryn & sy: Charles of Bloys but þe victo-
 ry fell to the foresayd sy: John through
 helpe & socour of þe englyshmen & there
 were taken many knyghtes & squyers &
 other men þe were bunnombred in þe whi-
 che batayle was slayne Charles hys selfe
 with all þe stode about hym & of þe Eng-
 lyshmen were slayne but. vii. ¶ And in
 this yere dyed at þe Sauoy John þe king
 of Fraunce whose seruyce and exequyes
 kynge Edward let ordeyn & dyd in dy-
 uers places worthypfully to be done &
 at Douer ordeyned hym worthely to be
 ledde wth his owne costes & expences & fro
 thens he was fet in to Fraunce & buried
 at saynt Denys. ¶ In þe .xl. yere of king
 Edward the. vii. hal. of february was
 borne Edward pryncce Edwardes sone
 the whiche whā he was. vii. yere of age
 dyed. And in the same yere it was ordey-
 ned þe saint Peters pens fro þe tyme forth
 sholde not be payed. þe whiche kynge yuo
 somtyme kynge of Englode of þe coultre of
 Westsaxons þe began to regne the yere of
 our lord god. vi. C. lxxix. fyrst graūtes to
 Rome for þe scole of Englonde there to be
 cōpnyrd. ¶ And in this same yere fel so
 moche rayne in hey tyme þe it wasted &
 destroyed bothe corne & hey. And there
 was suche debate and fyghtyng of spa-
 rowes by diuers places in these days. þe
 men soude innumerable deed in þe felde
 as they went. And there fell also suche a
 pestilence. þe neuer was seen suche in no
 mannes dayes þe than lyued. for men þe
 went to bedde hole and soude. sodeynly
 they dyed. ¶ Also þe tyme a lechenes that
 men call þe poches slewe bothe men & wo-
 men through theyr infectyng. ¶ And in

the. xli. yere of king Edward was borne
 at Burbeur Rycharde the seconde sone of
 pryncce Edward of Englonde. þe whiche
 Rycharde kynge Rycharde of Armoyn
 heued at the fontstone. after whome he
 was called Rycharde. And this same Ry-
 charde whan his fader was deed & kynge
 Edward also. he was crowned kynge of
 Englonde the. xi. yere of his age through
 right lyne & heretage. & also by þe comyn
 assent & desyre of the comynalte of the re-
 alme. ¶ Aboute this tyme at kynge Ed-
 wardes cōmaūdemēt of Englode whan
 all the castels & towneys were yelded to
 hym þe were holden in Fraunce by a grete
 cōpany assembled togyder sy: Bartram
 Claphyn a noble knyght & a good war-
 ryour went & purposed hy to put þe
 kynge of Spayne out of his kyngdome
 with helpe of þe moost party of þe foresaid
 grete cōpany. trustyng also vpon helpe
 and fauour of þe pope. for as moche as it
 came to his ere þe the same þeys sholde
 lede & vse a synfull lyfe. þe whiche þeys
 synntē wth drede of these tydnynges fledde
 in to Gascoyne to pryncce Edward for to
 haue socour of hym. And whan he was
 fledde out of Spayne. Henry his broder
 that was a bastard by assent of þe moost
 partye of Spayne & through helpe of þe
 ferefull company þe Ispake of fyrst was
 crowned king of Spayne. & the nobye of
 that same cōpany was rekened and let
 at the nombre of. lx. M. fyghetyng men.
 ¶ This same yere in þe moneth of June
 there came a grete company & a nauy of
 Danes. and gadied them togyder in the
 north see. purposyng to come in to Eng-
 londe to reue & robbe & also to see wth
 whome they encounterd & mette in þe see.
 Maryners & other good fyghetyng men
 of the coultre dysperpled them. And they
 ashamed went home agayne in to theyr
 owne coultre. but amonge all other there
 was a buillous vessel & a strōge of theyr

the doctes for that many a man is false
the dayes of the north there were from the
Clyst. of the north & out came out of
south. & & other out of & north. & cruelly
& strongly they fought & handled toge-
ther. & the south Cyle first overcame the
north Cyle & al to rent hym in his byll &
his clothes that he shoulde not rest ne take
no breath. And after the south Cyle drew
home to his own costes. And anon after
there foloweth & was seen on the morowe
about & fower tyng & after in & last day
of October sawe one daye many sterres
gathered together on a hye hill adoun to
earth. & manye behynde them fyre burned
in maner of lighenynge. Whose flames
burnt & consumed manyes clothes & men
was here walkyng on & earth as it had
been & knowen of many a man. And yet &
northern wynde & is curvyng & de-
viate to all yll fro caput. & other ynes even
tyll. iiii. dayes after last grete good wout
noble & recoverable. And i & same daye
there fell & came also sicke lighenynge
shonder. & hyle. & that & was &
destroyed men. & best. & houses & trees.

Of the batayle of Spayne beynde the
Water of Alaya. & was bynne prince
Edward & sy. Henry bassard of Spayne.

In the yere of our lord. a. m. cccc.
lxxv. & of Ryng Colward. xlii. the
thyrde day of Apryl there was a stroge
batayle & a grete in a large felde called
Alaya. & was by the Water of Alaya in
Spayne bynne sy. Edward & prince
& sy. Henry of Spayne. but the victory
fell to prince Colward by & grace of god.
And this same prince Colward had
hym sy. John duke of Lancaster his bro-
der. and other worthy men of armes a-
bout the number of. xxx. m. And & kyng
of Spayne had on his syde men of ar-
mes & harpys to & number of an hundred

thousand & men. & therfore the sharpe-
ness and speed of his army which
his full hard & grete strength made
and drove the ryngull party abacke &
grete maye. but through & grace of god
almyghty passyng our manes strength
that grete host was disperced myght
fully by & noble duke of Lancaster & his
host in that prince Colward came up to
hym. And when Henry had the same
that returned with his men in a grete
baste & strength to see. that a grete com-
pany of them in the fowlsayd felde and of
the wynde thereof fell to done. and peris-
hed. And also there were taken the erle
of Hereford & sy. Bartram Cleghyn that
was cheif maker & causer of the warre
and also cheifayne of the battaile of
the batayle with many other grete lo-
des and knyghtes to the nombre of two
thousand. of whome two hundred were
of France & many also of Scotland. And
there were killed in the felde on our ene-
myes syde of lordes and knyghtes with
other people to the nombre of. vi. m. and
m. and of Englyshe men but a fewe.
And after this & noble prince Colward
relayed & same wynter to his kyngdom
agayne. the whiche wynter afterwarde
through trechery & falsnes of & fowlsayd
bassard of Spayne as he sat as his met
he was strangled & dyed. But after this
victory many noble and hardy men of
Englonde in Spayne through the sure
and others other benedict took they
both. And also in the same yere in the
Spayne was seen a comet & bitmens
the north costes and the west. whose be-
mes stretched to ward France. & And in
the next yere followinge of Ryng Ed-
wardes regne. xlii. in Apryl the Lord
Ryng Colwardes sone that was duke of
Gloucester went to ward & pleyed with a
cholonnyer of & genyis of Englonde
by to Jorde. & was daughter and haue

her to his wyfe by whom he shold haue
haile þ lordshipp of Wylyen. But after þ
they were solemply wedded & aboute þ
natiuite of our lady þ same duke of Wy-
lyen dyed. And in þ same yere þ frenssh
men brake þ peas & trewe rydyng on þ
kynge's grounde & lordshipp of Englonde
in the shyre & countre of Dorssete & toke &
helde castels & towne: & bare þ englysh
men on honde saly & subtylly that they
were cause of brykynge of þ trewe. And
in this yere dyed þ duchesse of Lancastre
and is buried in saynt Paules chyrche.

The. xliii. yere of þ regne of kyng Ed-
ward was the grettest pestilence of men
& of grette bestes & by þ grette fallynge of
waters þ fell at þ tyme / there fell grette
hyndrynge & destroyenge of corne / in so
moche þ the nexte yere after a bullhell of
Whete was solod for. xl. pens. And in the
same yere about þ last ende of Maye the
king held his parliamēt at Westmynstere
in whiche parliamēt was spoken of the
othe & trewe þ was broken bytwene þ
& the kyng of Fraunce / & how he myght
best be auenged vpon his wronge. In þ
same yere on þ Assumpeyon of our lady
dyed quene Philipp of englode & ful noble
lady & a good woman / & at Westmynstere
wozshippfully is buried. And about myd-
somere the duke of Lancastre & the erle of
Derford w a grette company of knyghtes
wet in to Fraunce where they gate them
burlytel wozshipp / for there was a grette
hoost of the frensshmen vpon Calkehull
bydye / & an other hoost of englyshmen
fast by þ same bydye þ longe tyme had
lyued there / & many wozshy & grette men
of the englyshmen ordeyned & gaue cou-
seyle for to fichte and gyue batayle to the
frensshmen / but þ foresayd lordes wold
not consent therto for no maner thyng.

Another after it happed that the erle of
Warwik came thiderward for to warre
And whan þ frensshmen herde of his com-
ing / or that he came fully to londe they
left they tentes & paupyrions w al they
batayles & fled pryvely away. And whā
the erle was comen to londe w his men
he went in all haste toward Normandy
& destroyed þ yle of Caux w strengthe of
swerde & throughe fyre. But alas i his re-
turnynge to Englonde agayn at Calays
he was taken w schenes of pestilence &
dyed / not leuyng behynde him after his
dayes so noble a knyght of armes. In
whiche tyme reigned & warred the noble
knyght syr John Hawkewod þ was an
englyshman boine / haupnge w hym at
his gouernaunce þ whete copany afore-
sayd the whiche one tyme agaynst holy
chyrche / & an other tyme agaynst lordes
warred & ordeyned grette batayles / & the-
re in the same countre he dyd many mir-
uaylous thynges.

And aboute þ count-
ryon of saynt Paule þ kyng whā he had
ended & done þ enterpryse & exequyes w
grette costes & rialtees about þ sepulture
and buryenge of quene Philipp his wyfe
he helde a parliamēt at Westmynstere in
whiche parliamēt was asked of þ clergie
a thre yerres byme / þ is to say / a grette by-
me to be payed. iii. yerres duryng. And the
clergie put it of & wolde not graunt it vnto
Efter next comynge & than they graunted
wel þ in. iii. yerres by certayn termes that
byme sholde be payed / & also of þ lay fre
was a. iii. yerres. xv. graunted to þ kyng.

How syr Robert Knolles w other cer-
tayne lordes of the realme went ouer see
in to Fraunce / & of they gouernaunce.

Ad in the. xlv. yere of kyng Ed-
ward in þ begynnynge he wold
vntoyle consyle & vndiscrete borrowed a
grette some of golde of þ prelates / lordes /
marchauntres & other ryche men of his re-
alme / sayenge þ it shold be spent in defen-
dyng of holy chyrche & of his realme. He
uertheles it pyfied no thyng / wherfore

about mydolmer after he made a grete
hoost of the worthiest men of his realme
amonge Whome were some lordes / þ is
to saye / the lordes Fitz Water / & the lordes
Graunson / & other worthy knyghtes / of
Whiche knyghtes the kyng ordeyned syz
Robert Knolles a proued knyght & well
assaid in dedes of armes for to be gouer
nour / and that through his counseyle all
thynges shold be gouerned & dressed. And
Whā they came in to fraunce / as lōge as
they dwelled & helde them hole togyder
the frenshmen durst not fall vpon them
And at þ last about þ begynnyng of wynt
ter for enuy & couetyse that was amōge
them & also discorde / they sondred them &
parted in to dyuers cōpanyes bntwysely
& solisshly. But syz Robert Knolles & his
men went & kepte them safe wīn a castel
in Byrtayn. And Whā the frenshmen
saue þ our men were deuyded in to dy
uers cōpanyes & places / not holdyng ne
strengthyng them togyder as they ought
to do / they fell sperdy on our men / & for þ
moost party toke them or slewe them / &
those þ they myght take led w them pry
soners. ¶ And in þ same yere pope Ur
ban came fro Rome to Auinyon bycause
that he shold accorde and make peas by
twene þ kyng of fraunce & the kyng of
Englonde for euermore. But alas or he
began his treatyse he dyed w sekenes þ
xxi. day of December / & was buryed as
for þ tyme in þ cathedral chyrche of Auin
yon fast by the hye awter. And the nexte
yere after Whā he had lye so his bones
were taken out of þ erth & buryed newe
in þ abbey of saynt Vlctory fast by War
cile / of þ whiche abbey he was somtyme
abbot hymself. And in bothe places þ he
was buryed in there be many grete my
racles done & wrought through þ grace
of god to many a manes helpe & to þ wo
rshyp of almyghty god. ¶ After Whome
folowed next & was made pope Gregorzy

cardynall deken / that before was called
Wiers Roger. ¶ In this same yere þ cite
of Lymoge rebelled & fought agaynst þ
prynce as other cyties dyd in Guyen for
grete taxes / costages / & ransoms þ they
were put & set to by þ kyng Edward / Whi
che charges were importable & charge
able / Wherfore they turned fro hym & fel
to þ kyng of fraunce. And Whā prynce
Edward saue this / he was soze chafed &
greued / & in turnyng homeward agayn
in to Englonde with soze scarmysches &
fpyghtyng & grete assautes fought with
them / & toke þ forslayd cite & destroyed it
almost to þ groude / & slewe al that were
foude in þ cite. And thā for to say þ sothe
for dyuers sekenes & maladyes þ he had
& also for defaute of money þ he myght
not withstande ne tary on his enemyes
he hyed hym agayn in to Englonde w his
wyfe & meyny / leuyng behynde hym in
Gascopn the duke of Lancastre & syz Co
mod erle of Cambridge w other worthy
and noble men of armes. ¶ In the xlii.
yere of kyng Edward at the ordinaunce &
sendyng of kyng Edward / the kyng of
flauerne came to hym to Claringdon to
treate w hym of certayne thynges tou
chyng his warre in Normandy / where
kyng Edward had lefte certayn lyeiges
in his stede tyl he came agayn. But kyng
Edward might not spede of that that he
asked hym. And so þ kyng of flauerne
with grete woorthyp & grete gyftes toke
his leue & went home agayn. ¶ And a
bout the begynnnyng of Marche Whā
the parliamēt at Westmynster was be
gon the kyng asked of the clergy a sub
sydy of .l. sh. posid / þ whiche by a good
auplement & by a generall conuocacyon
of the clergy it was graunted & ordeyned
that it shold be payed & repayed of the lay
fee. And in this parlyament at þ request
& askyng of the lordes in hatred of men
of holy chyrche / the chaunceler & the tre.

fourer that were bysshops / & the clerke of the preuys seale were remeued and put out of thei offyce / & in thei stede were secular men put in. And whyle this parliament lasted there came solempne embassatours fro þe pope to treate with the kynge of peas / & sayd þe pope desyred to fulfyll his predestours wyll / but for all thei comynge they spedde not.

¶ Of the besyegynge of Rochell / & how the erle of Denbroke & his company was there taken in þe haueu w Spanyardez and all his shippes brent.

¶ The .iiij. daye of June kynge Edward in þe .xlvij. yere of his regne helde his parliament at Wynchestre / & it lasted but .viij. dayes / to whiche parliament were sompned by wyte of men of holy chirche .iiij. bysshops & .iiij. abbots wout ony moo. This parliament was holden for marchautes of Londō / of Norwiche / and of othe dyuers places in dyuers thynge & poyntes of treason þe they were defamed of / þis to saye / that they were rebell & wold arple agaynst þe kyng ¶ This same yere þe duke of Lacastr & the erle of Cambridghe his broder came out of Gascoyne in to Englonde / & toke & wedded to thei wyues Peters doughters somtyme kyng of Spayne / of whiche two doughters þe duke had þe elder / & the erle þe yonger. And þe same time there were sent two cardynals fro þe pope / þis to saye an Englyshe cardynall & a cardynall of Parys to treate of peas bytwene these two realmes / whiche whan they had ben bothe longe tyme in his pynce & colitrees fast by tretyng of the foresayd peas / at þe last they toke w them þe litters of procuracy & went agayne to Rome wout ony effect of thei purpose. In this yere there was a stroge batayle on þe see bytwene Englyshmen & Flemynge / & the Englyshmen had the victory / & toke

xxv. shippes w salte / & sleyng & brownyng all þe men þe were therein vntoyting them þe they were of þe cuntrye / & moche harme sholde haue fallen thros had not peas & accord soone be made bytwene them. ¶ This yere þe frenshmen besyeged þe towne of Rochell / wherfore þe erle of Denbroke was sent in to Gascoyne w a grete company of men of armes for to destroye þe syege which passed þe see & came safe to þe haueu of Rochell / & whan they were there at þe hauens mouth or þe they myght entre / sodeynly came vpon them a stronge nauy of Spanyardez whiche ouercame þe Englyshmen in moche blomysshynge / hurtyng & sleyng of many people / for as moche as þe Englyshmen were not than redy for to fyght ne warned of the. And as þe Spanyardez came vpon them all the Englyshmen eyther they were take or slayne / and .x. of them were sore wounded to the deith / & al thei shippes brent / & there they toke þe erle w a grete tresour of the realme of Englonde & many other noble men also on mydsomer euen þe whiche is last Etheldredes day / & ledde them w them in to Spayne. And of this myschance was no grete wonder / for this erle was a full yll luer as an open lechour. And also in a certayne parliament he stode & was agaynst the ryghtes & fraunchyses of holy chirche / & also he counseyled þe kyng & his counseyle that they shold aske more of men of holy chirche than othe psones of the lay see. And for the kyng and othe men of his counseyle accepted and toke rather euyl oppynyons & causes agaynst men of holy chirche than he dyd for to defende and maynteyne the ryght of holy chirche / it was after seen many tymes for lacke of fortune and grace they had not so grete victory ne power agaynst thei enemyes as they dyd before. ¶ This same yere þe kyng w a grete host entred the see to re-

Parc. vii. Kyng Edward the thyrde.

meue the spege of Rochell / but þe wynde
was euer contrary to hym / & suffred þe
not longe tyme to go ferre fro the londe /
wherfore he abode a certayn tyme vpon
þe see costes abyding after a good wynde
& yet came it not. So at the last he came
thens w his men to londward agayn / &
anone as he was on lode þe wynde turned
& was in another coste thā it was afore.

**How the duke of Lancastre w a grete
hoost wente in to flaundres & passed by
Darys through Burgoyne and through
all fraunce tyll he came to Burdeux.**

S Done after in the .xliiij. yere of þe
regne of kyng Edward the duke
of Lancastre w a grete power went in to
flaundres and passed by Darys through
Burgoyne & through all fraunce tyll he
came to Burdeux wout ony maner with
standyng of þe frenshmen / & he did them
but lytel harme / saue he toke & raunsomed
many places & towncs & many men: & af
ter let them go frely. **The same yere þe
kyng sent certayne embassatours to the
pope / prayenge hym þe he shold leue of &
not medle in his courte of the keepynges
& reseruacyons of benefices in Englonde
& þe those þe were chosen to bysshops sees
& dignitees frely & wouth full myght ioye
& haue & be confermed to þe same of the
metropolitans & archebysshops as they
were wont to be of olde tyme. Of these
poyntes & of other touchyng þe kyng & his
realme / whā they had they: answered of
the pope / the pope enioyned them þe they
shold certify hym agayn by they: lettre
of þe kynges wyll & of his realme or they
determined ought of þe foresayd articles**
**In this same yere dyed John þe arche
bysshop of York / John bysshop of Ely /
William bysshop of Worcester / in whose
sees folowed & were made bysshops by
auctorite of þe pope / mayster Alexander**

**Reyn to the archebysshopryche of York
he / Thomas of Brundell to the bysshop
ryche of Ely / & Henry Wakefelde to þe
bysshopryche of Worcester. In þe whiche
tyme it was ordeyned in þe parliament
that all cathedrall churches sholde ioye &
haue they: electyons hole / & that þe kyng
fro þe tyme afterwarde sholde not wyte
agaynst them þe were chosen / but rather
helpe them by his lettres to they: cōfyr
macyon. This statute dyd moche ppyte
And in this parliament was graunted to
the kyng a dyme of the clergys & a .xv. of
lay see. **In the .xliij. yere of kyng Ed
ward dyed mayster William Wykelesy
archebysshop of Caunterbury / and the
monkes of þe same churche asked & desy
red a Cardynall of Englonde to be arche
bysshop / & therfore þe kyng was agreued
& purposed to haue exiled þe monkes of þe
same hous. And they spent moche good
or they myght haue the kynges grace &
his loue agayn / but yet wold þe kyng not
cōsent to they: electyons of þe cardynall / ne
of þe pope also ne his cardynals. And
at þe begynnyng of August it was trea
ted & spoken at Wyges of certayn poyntes
& articles hangyng bytwene þe pope
& the kyng of Englonde / & this treatyse
lasted almost two yere. At þe last it was
accorded bytwene them þe the pope fro þe
tyme forth sholde not vse ne dele wouth þe
reseruacyons of benefices in Englonde
and that þe kyng sholde not graunte ne let
no benefices by his wyte that is called
Quare impedit. But as touchyng the
electyons abovesayd there was no thyng
touched ne done. And that was wyted
& put vpon certayne clerkes the whiche
rather supposed & hoped to be auauenced
and promoted to bysshopryches whiche
they desyred & coueyted by the courte of
Rome rather thā by ony other elections.**
**This same yere about Candelmasse
there mette togyder at Wyges many****

noble & worthy men of bothe kynges & re-
simes to treate of peas betwene the two
kynges. And this treatye lasted. ii. yere
w grete costes & large expenses of bothe
partyes. And at þ last they went & depar-
ted thens wout any accord or effect. The
next yere after the. i. yere of kyng Ed-
ward the. iii. moost of spaye beyng yet
wyde & vacount þ archbishoppe of
Canterbury mayster Symond subberp
byshop of London was made archbys-
shop: & mayster William Courtney that
was byshop of Hereford was than made
byshop of London: & þ byshop of Bangor
was made byshop of Hereford. And this
same tyme in a certayne treatye & spe-
kyng of peas trewse was take betwene
Englond & Fraunce fro mysdomet to the
next mysdomet after. And aboute þ be-
gynnyng of Apryll þ duke of Wyrtayne
w many erles, barons & worthie lordes &
men of Englond went ouer see in to Bri-
taine where he had all his lust, desyre &
purpose he had þ forsoke trewse ben so
wome tyme whiche letted them. ¶ This
same tyme þ ylof Constantin where þ
the castel of saint Sauoure is in þ longe
tyme was fought at: & besyged of the
frenschmen was than solden to them w
all the appertenaunces, to grete harme &
hynnyng of þ realme of Englond. And
this same yere there were so grete & so
passyng betes & therewithall a grete pesty-
lence in Englond & in othe dyuers par-
tes of the world þ it destroyed & slew
violently & strongly bothe men & womn
wout nobie. ¶ This same yere dyed kyng
Edward þ lord Spencer & worthy knyght
& a bolde & in þ mynster of Tewkesbury
wouthfully is buried. And last þg this
pessilence þ pope at þ instance & prayer
of an englyshe Cardynall graunted to all
people þ dyed in Englond þ were soye &
repente for they synnes & also shew-
full remysyon by two bulles under isde

by. monethes cha next to last. ¶ In this
same yere þ erle of Penbroke was taken
and ransomed by Bertram Clapham by-
twene Warys & Calays as he came to-
ward Englond vpon saynt Etheldredes
daye: the whiche saynt as it was said þ
erle oftentymes had offended & within
a lytell whyle after he dyed. And in No-
uember nexte after there mette at Wynges
the duke of Lancastre & þ duke of Angou
w many other lordes and prelates of
bothe realmes for to treate of peas.

¶ Of the deth of pryncer Edward: & of
the lord Latimer and dame Myer Peris
throug whom & her maynteyners the
realme many a day was mysgourmed.

Nexte lōge after the. ii. yere of kyng
Edwardes regne he let ordeyn &
holde at Westmynster the gretest parlia-
ment þ was seen many a yere afore. In
the whiche parlyament he asked of the
comynalte of þ realme as he had done a-
fore a grete subsidy to be graunted to him
for defendyng of hym & his realme. But
the comyns answered þ they were so oft
day by day greued & charged w so many
talages & subsidies þ they might no lon-
ger suffre suche burthens & charges: & þ
they knewe & wyll well ynough that þ
kyng had ynough for sauryng of hym &
his realme: yf þ realme were wel & truly
gouerned: but þ it had ben so longe euyl
gouerned by yll offycers: that þ realme
myght nerther be plentiful of chasce &
marchandise ne also w rychesse. And in
these thynges they proferd themselves: yf
the kyng wolde certaynly to pryncer and
stande by. And yf it were founde & prynced
afterwarde that þ kyng had neede: they
wolde gladly curry man after his power
and state hym helpe and lene. And after
this were publyshed & shewed in þ par-
lyament many playntes and defaultes of

ten.iii. pens / out take the.iii. ordres of the fretes beggers. ¶ This same yere after Wyghelmalle Rycharde prynce Edwardes sone was made pryce of Wales to whome þe kyng gaue also the duchy of Cornwalle to the erledome of Chestre. And aboute this tyme the Cardynall of Englonde the fourth daye before Mary Magdeleyns daye after dyner sodeinly was stryken w a palleys & lost his speche and on Mary Magdeleyns daye dyed.

¶ Of the deth of kyng Edward & how þe John Monsterwarth knyght was drawen and hanged for his fallnes.

Ryghe anone after i the.lij. yere of kyng Edward in the begynnyng of October pope Gregory þe.xi. brought and remeued his courte wth hym from Quynon to Rome. ¶ And the.xij. day of Apryll John Monsterwarth knyght at London was drawen & hanged & than quattered & sent to foure chefe townes of Englonde & his heed smitte of & set vpon Londons byrge. For this John was full untrue to þe kyng & to the realme & countrys & unstable / for he toke oftentymes grete somes of money of the kyng & his counseyle for men of armes wages that he shold haue payed them / & toke it to his owne vse / & he dyad that at þe last he shold be shent & accused for þe same cause & fledde pryuely to þe kyng of fraunce / & was sworne to hym & became his man and behyghe hym a grete nauy out of Spayne to cofusyon and destropenge of Englonde. But þe ryghetfull god to whom no pryncle is unknown / suffred þe first to be shent & spyle of þe he so traytoursly & falsly betrayed his lyge lord þe kyng of Englonde & his people in his realme / in the which growde this same John was boine / & wyckedly through batayle destroyed of he broughte aboute his cursed purpose. ¶ In þe feest of saynt Gregory

nexte after kyng Edward gaue to Rycharde of Burdeux his heyr that was prynce Edwardes sone at Wyndesore the ordre of knyghthode & made þe knyght / the whiche kyng Edward whan he had reigned.ij. yere & more þe.xi. kal. of June he dyed at Wyghelmalle & is buryed wothryp fully at Westmynster on whose soule god haue mercy. This kyng Edward was forsothe of a passyng goodnes & full gracious among all the worthy men of the world / for he passed & shone by vertue of grace gryn to hym fro god aboute all his pderessours þe were noble men & worthy & he was a well herted man & an hardy for he dyad neuer no myshappes ne harmes ne euyl fortune þe myght fall a noble warrour & a fortunate / for both on lode & see & in al batayles & assemblies w a passing gloze & iop he had þe victory / he was meke / benigne / homely / sobre & soft to al men as wel to straungers as to his owne subiectes & to other þe were vnder his gouernance / he was deuout & holy both to god & holy chyrche / for he worshipped hope & maynteyned holy chyrche & chery mynistres w al maner reuerence / he was cretable & well auysed in tēporall & worldly nedes / wyse i counseyle / & discrete & meke to speke w i his dedes & maners genty & well taught / hauyng pitye on them þe were in discaise / plenteous in grynng of benefaytes & almes / besy & curyous in buynding / & lyghetly he bare & suffred wōges & harmes / & whan he was gryn to ony occupacyō he left all other chynge for þe tyme & tended thereto / semely of body & a mene stature / hauyng alway to bygh & to lowe a good chere. And therē spōge & shone so moche grace of hym þe what mā had behold his face / or had dremed of þe he hoped þe daye þe al thyng shold hap to hym ioyfull & lykynge. And he gouerned his kingdom gloriouly vnto his age / he was large in grynng & wyse in expectes

he was full of both al houre of good
maners & vertues. Under whom to lyue
it was as for to regne. Wherfore his fa-
me & his good spynge so ferre þ it came
into bothynelle & Barbary. Wherfore
þ tellynge his worthynes & manhode in
all countre. & þ no londe under heuyn had
broughte forth so noble a kyng. so gentyll
& so blisse. as might reyle such another
whā he was born. Wherfore his lechery
& inuynge of his selfe banished hym in
his age. Wherfore the rather as it is to
suppose for durable fullfyllynge of
his lust his lyfe shoyed the sooner. And
hercof take good hede lyke as his dedes
bereth wytnes. for as in his begynnyng
all thynges were Joyfull and lyhyng to
hym & to all people. And in his myddle
age he passed all people in hygh Joye/
worshyp & blessednes. Wyght so whan
he dyed into age dyalyng downeward
through lechery & other synnes lytell
lytell all those Joyfull & blessed thynges
and prosperite decreased & myshappes/
and unfortunate thynges and unprofy-
table harmes with many euyls began
for to sprynge. and the more harme is. it
contynued longe tyme after.

Clement þ syth was pope after
Benedict. x. yere. This mā in na-
me & dede was vertuous. & many thyng-
es þ Benedict was rigous in. he made
casp. & certeyn that he depyued he resto-
red. & the rygousnes of þ sayth of Bene-
dict was laudable. but moche more lau-
dable was þ mekenes of Clemen. This
man was a noble ppechour. & many ser-
mons he gadyed. & let no man passe from
hym but he gaue hym good counseyle. &
deceased a blisse man. **Carolus þ. iij.**
was emperour after Rodolph. xxx. yere.
This mā was kyng of Rome & wyse
man & a myghty. & this mā was chosen
emperour by þ commandment of Clemen

Rodolph þe kyng alpye in his contema-
cy. & because he asked mekety the popes
blessynge and to be crowned of hym. as
other good kynges did. therfore he was
protected of god. & preuayled ouer all his
enmyes. & many favourable lawes he
made to spirytual men. the whiche yet
are called Karolins. & þ last he deceased
a cyche mā in vertue & goodes. **Inno-**
centius the. vi. was pope after Clemen
x. yere. and he was a grete lover of rely-
gious men. & he founde a monastery in
France of þ ordre of Cartusians. & was
a grete canonys. **Urban⁹ the. v.** was
pope after Innocent. This man was ab-
bot of Wyndesore of þ ordre of S. Benet
a doctour. & is take for a saynt. He made
the crose to be preched agaynst þ turkes
And he made a passage to þ turkes. And
to hym last Wyght was sent fro Chyrt
for the confirmacyon of theyr rule. & than
he was popsoned & deceased. **Gregory**
the. xi. was pope after hym. viij. yere.
This Gregory dyd lytell. & after hym so
lived þ tribulacyon þ our loyde shewed
to saynt Wyght for the synne of þ clergy.
Wenslans son to Karolus aforesaid
was emperour. xiiij. yere. and he was a
chylde. and was chosen whan his fader
was on lyue. but he toke no hepe of the
empyre. And whā he was warned ma-
ny tymes to take hede vnto it and wold
not. he was deposid. for he gaue all his
delyte and lust vnto lechery. & the ende
was without honour. for he went gret-
ly from the maners & the vertues of his
noble fader. And he was crowned with
the imperall dyademe. & the wysdome
of his fader passed in to Wygyslans his
broder. as after it shall appere. **Urban⁹**
was pope after Gregory. vi. yere.
This Urban was chosen in the Cite of
Rome by strength of þ Romayns. but þ
cardynals dyd that for dyede & not wy-
lyngly. Wherfore they fledde to þ Cite of

And they sayd that he was not pope / & chose in his place syr Robert of Segemys the same yere / whiche was called Clement the. vii. ¶ And here began the. xxi. crys in the churche And it was more woyle than ever was any other before. for it was so subtyll / & the wysest men that were & the best conspenced coude not disterne with whom it was best to save and holde. And this crye dured. xl. yere in a grete schandye unto al the clergy and grete peryll unto mennes soules for herelyes & other evyl churges & whiche were brought in than In so moche that there was no doctryne in the churche for mydoynge. And therefore from this Urban the. vii. unto Edward I knowe not who was pope. The first of the byspracyon of our lady was ordeyned by Urban the. vii. after & forme of the sacrament of the awter for a peas and an unite for to be had amonge them through the merytes of our blisshed lady. ¶ Bonifac^{us} the. ix. was pope after Urban. x. yere. This Bonifac was chosen at Rome in the sede of Urban / & the crye contynued / for Benedictus was chosen in Quynon in & place of Clement and was called Petrus de luna / and he dured to the consyle of Constantynys / and than he wolde not obey / but ever a bove obstynate. And at & last he decessed in the kyngdome of Dragon. And he commadid his cardynals to chose an other pope / the whiche they dyd none. And they set up an ydell and named hym Clement / but they ppropted not.

¶ Circa anni dñi. m. CCC. lxxx.

And after kynge Edward the thyrde that was boine at Wyndesore regned Rycharde of Burdeur that was pynce Edwardes sone of Wales / whiche pynce Edward was kynge Edwardes sone.

And after & good kynge Edward the thyrde & was boine at Wyndesore regned Rycharde & second that was the good syr Edwardes sone pynce of Wales / the whiche kynge Rycharde was boine in the cite of Burdeur in Galtorn and was crownd at Westmynstre in & xi. yere of his age. And in & seconde yere of his regne for & debare & was bydwene the lord Lacynier & syr Raufe Ferrers knyght that were agaynst Havel and Whakell squyers / for & pysoner & was taken in Spayne by these two squyers / the whiche pysoner the lord Lacynier & syr Raufe Ferrers wolde have had / the whiche pysoner was the erle of Wene that they toke in the batayle of Spayne wherfore these two lordes came in to the churche at Westmynstre / and soide this one squyer her yng a masse besyde saynt Edwardes wyne / and there they stode hym the whiche was called Havel and Whakell was arrestid & put in to & tour of London / & there he was longe tyme for he wolde not delivure the erle of Wene his pysoner unto these two lordes by syr Meyn Burghill constable of the tour / & by syr Raufe Ferrers one of his aduersaries / till the kynge had graunted hym grace. ¶ In the thyrde yere of kynge Rycharde came the Galays of fraunce in to Englonde unto dyvers portes / & byent & robbed & stole moche people of Englonde that is to saye / at Wynchelste / Rye and Hastinges / Portesmouth / Dilton / Deor / more & Grauesend / and they dyd moche harme & went home agayne. ¶ And in this same yere was a parliament holden at Westmynstre / and at that same parliament was ordeyned that every man woman & chylde that were of the age of xiii. yere and about throughout all the realme shoulde folke & other shoulde paye to the tallage. iii. pens. Wherfore came & defell after wards grete myschance & mo-

the disaile to all the compaignes of the re-
 alme. And in the iij. yere of kyng Ry-
 chardes regne y comyns arose bp in dy-
 vers parties of the realme, & did moche
 harme the whiche tyme they called the
 buryng tyme. And they of Kent and of
 Essex made them two cheshtaynes for to
 rule & gouerne the company of Kent & of
 Essex, that one was called Jacke strawe
 & that other Watte Tyler, & they came
 and assembled them vpon blacke berth in
 Kent. And on Corpus Christi daye after
 they came doloure in to Southwerke, &
 brake vp the prison hous, that is to saye
 the kynges benche & the Marchallse, &
 deliuered out all the prysoners. And so
 the same daye they came in to London &
 there they robbed the people, and slewe
 all the alyens that they myght fynde in
 the cite & aboute the cite, and despoiled
 all theyr goodes & made hauoke. And on
 the frydaye nexte folowynge that was
 in the moynynge they came to the toure
 of London, and the kyng beyng theris
 they sette out of p coure the archbishopp
 of Caunterbury syr Edmond Sudderp
 and syr Robert Balys hospitaller pryor
 and mayster of saynt Johns hous, and
 a whyte frere that was confessor vnto
 kyng Richard, & brought them to the
 toure hyl, and there they smote of theyr
 herdes, and came agayne to London and
 slewe moche people of the cite. And then
 they went vnto the dukes place of Lan-
 castre beyonde saynt Mary of p strete
 that was called the Spayre, and there
 they deuoured & destroyed al the goodes
 that they myght fynde therein, and bare
 them awaie, & then brent vp the place.
 And then afterward they went to saynt
 Johns without Burthsewe and there
 they destroyed all the goodes, and brent
 vp that hous. And after they went to
 Westmyster and to saynt Margarets the
 graunde, and made them to go out of the

scutewary all that were within for any
 maner of gylt. And then they came vnto
 the temple and to all the other Tunes of
 men of lawe, & despoiled them & robbed
 them of theyr goodes, & also toke theyr
 booke of lawe. And then they came to
 London & brake vp the payson of New-
 gate, & dyone out all p prysoners felons &
 othe, and of bothe Counters & all p peo-
 ple that were within them, & destroyed
 all the booke of the Counters. And thus
 they cōtinued bothe saterday & sondaye
 vnto the monday nexte after in all theyr
 malice & wyckednes. And then on mon-
 daye kyng Richard with his lordes p
 were w hym p tyme, & with the Mayre
 of London Wyllyam Walworth p was
 that tyme came with the aldermen & the
 comyns of the Cite, and they came in to
 Southwerke to here & to knowe the in-
 tencion of these rebelles & mysgouerned
 people. And this Jacke strawe than ma-
 de a crye in the felde that all p people of
 acorde shoulde come nere & here his cla-
 mours and his crye & his Wyll. And the
 lordes & the Mayre & the aldermen with
 the comynalte hauynge indignacyon of
 his couerys & falsnes and his foule pre-
 sumpeyon. Thone Wyllyam Walworth
 that tyme beyng Mayre drew out his
 knyfe & slewe Jacke strawe, and anon
 ryght there smote of his heed, and let it
 vpon a spere, & so it was boine through
 London & set vpon London hydye. Thone
 these ryfles & mysgouerned men were
 slawe banyshed as it had not ben they.
 And then the kyng of his grete goodnes
 & by prayer of his lordes made there. vi.
 hundredes of good & worthy men of p cite
 of London, p is to saye, Wyllyam Wal-
 worth at p tyme Mayre & John Jacke
 Straun, & second was Nicolas Brember
 and the thyrde John Phillippe, and the
 fourth Nicholas Coplest, and the fyfth
 Robert Louder, and the sixth Robert

Bayton. And than the kynge wth his lordes & knyghtes returned agayne to the court of London / & there he rested hym tyll this people were better lered & set in rest & peas. And than by p^{er}cell of tyme as they might take & gete these rebelles & ryfers they henge them vpon the next galous throug^h out euery lordshipp in þe realme of Englonde by. xl. & by. xxx. by. x. & by. xij. euer as they myght be gotten & take in ony partyes. ¶ And in þ. v. yere of kynge Rychardes regne was þe grete erth quake / & was generall throug^hout the worlde the Wednesday after Whytsondaye in þe yere of our lord. M. CCC. lxxxvi. Wherfore all maner people were sore agast & aferde longe tyme for drede of vengeance þe our lord shewed & dyd. ¶ And in the. vi. yere of kynge Rycharde s^{on} Henry Speler bysshop of Norwiche went with a Croiserie ouer the see in to Flaundres / & there they gate þe towne of Gaunepynge & the towne of Burburgh / Dūkerk & Arwport / & there they laded & traug^htred. li. shippes wth pyllage for to haue comen in to Englonde wth these shippes & goodes. And þe bysshop of Norwiche & his counseyle let bren these shippes with all þe pyllage in þe same haue in to harde asshes. And at Dūkerk was done a batayle bytwene the Flemynge & the Englysshmen. And at that batayle were slayne a grete multytude of Flemynge. And than went the bysshop with his retinue to ypers / and besyged it a longe tyme / but it myght not be gotten / and so leste that syege & came agayn in to Englonde. For our Englysshmen were souly destroyed / & many dyed of þe flyr. ¶ And in this same yere came quene Anne in to Englonde for to be spoused to kynge Rycharde. And her fader was emperour of Mayne & kyng of Beme. And with her came þe duke of Calys her vncle / & many other worthy lordes & knyghtes of her

countrie of Beme & of other duche togues to do her reuerence & worship. And s^{on} Symond Beuerle a worthy knyght of þe garter & other knyghtes & squyers that were þe kynges embassadours brought her in to Englonde / & so forth to London. And the people of the cite that is to saye the Mayre & þe aldermen & all þe compyns rode agaynst her to welcome her / & euery man in good aray / & euery crafter wth his mynstrally in the best maner mette with her on the blacke herth in Kent / & so brought her vnto London throug^h þe cite / and so forth to Westmynster vnto the kynges palays. And there she was spoused vnto kynge Rycharde well & worthely in the abbey of Westmynster / and there she was crowned quene of Englonde. And all her frendes that came with her had grete gyftes & were wel cheryshed and refreshed as longe tyme as they abode there. ¶ And in þe same yere there was a batayle done in the kynges palays at Westmynster for certayn poyntes of treason of sir John Andrey knight defendante and Carton squyer the appellaunt. But this sir John Andrey ouerrame this Carton / & made hym to yeide hym within þe lyfte. And anon was this Carton depoyled of his harners & drawen out of þe lyftes / & so forth to Tyburne / & there he was hanged for his falsnes. ¶ And in þe viii. yere of the regne of kynge Rycharde s^{on} Edmonde of Langley erle of Cambridghe & kynges vncle went in to Portygale with a fayre company of men of armes and archers / in strengthe and helppinge the kynge of Portygale agaynst the kynge of Spayne and his power / & there the kynge of Portygale had the victo^{ry} of his enemyes throug^h helpe and conforte of our Englysshmen. And whan the journey was done þe erle of Cambridghe came home agayn with his people in to Englonde in haste bygd

led be god & his blyssed gyftes. Amen.
 ¶ And this same yere kynge Rycharde helde his Chyrlmasse in the manor of Eirham. ¶ And the same yere þe kyng of Armony fledde out of his owne londe & came in to Englonde for to haue helpe & socour of our kyng agaynst his enemyes that had dyruen hym out of his realme. And so he was brought unto the kynge to Eirham there as the kynge helde his ryall feest of Chyrlmasse. And there our kyng welcomed hym & dyd hym moche reuerence & woꝛshyp/ and comaunded all his lordes to make hym all þe chere that they coude. And than he besought the kynge of his grace & of helpe and of his coforte in his neede/ & that he myght be brought agayn to his kyngdom & londe for the Turkes had destroyed the moost parte of his londe/ and how he fledde for drede/ and came hyder for socour & helpe. And than the kyng haupnge on hys pyte and compassyon of his grete myschefe & greuous dyscase/ anon he toke his counseyle & asked what was best to do. And they answered & sayd/ if it lyked hym to gyue hym any good/ it were well done/ and as touchynge his people for to traualle so ferre in to out londes/ it were a grete Jeopardy. And so the kynge gaue hym golde & syluer & many other ryche gyftes & iewels & betaught hym to god/ and so he passed agayn out of Englonde. ¶ And this same yere kynge Rycharde w a roiall power went in to Scotlonde for to warre vpon the Scottes for the fallnes & destruccyon that the Scottes had done to the Englyshmen in þe marches. And than the Scottes came downe to þe kyng for to treate with hym & with his lordes for trowse as for certayne yerres. And so our kyng & his counseyle graunted them trowse for certayne yerres/ and our kyng turned hym agayn in to Englonde. And whā he was comen to porke there

he abode and rested hym. And there sʒ John Holand the erle of Kentes broder sʒwe the erles sone of Stafford and his heyre with a dagger in the cure of porke wherfore the kynge was sore anoyed & greued/ and remeued thens and came to London. And the Maye with the aldermen & the comyns with all þe solempnite that might be done rode agaynst þe kyng and brought him roially throughe þe cure and so forth to Westmynster to his owne palays. ¶ And in the. ix. yere of kynge Rychardes regne he helde a parliament at Westmynster/ and there he made two dukes and a markeys/ and. v. erles. The fyrst that was made duke was the kynges vncle sir Edmond of Langley erle of Cambridg/ and hym he made duke of porke. And his other vncle sʒ Thomas of Woodstok that was erle of Bokpygham hym he made duke of Glocestre. And sʒ Leonner that was erle of Oxforde hym he made markeys of Deuelyn. And Henry of Balynbroke the dukes sone of Lancastre hym he made erle of Derby. And sʒ Edward þe dukes sone of porke hym he made erle of Rutlonde. And sʒ John Holand þe was the erle of Kentes broder hym he made erle of Huntynghdon. And sʒ Thomas Mombray hym he made erle of Notyngham and erle Marshall of Englonde. And sʒ Wycheil de la pole knyght hym he made erle of Suffolk & chaunceler of Englonde. And the erle of the Marche at þe same parliament holden at Westmynster in playne parliament amonge all the lordes and comyns was pchaymed erle of the Marche and heyre parent to the crowne of Englonde after kynge Rycharde/ the whiche erle of the Marche went ouer the see in to Irelande unto his lordshypps and londes/ for the erle of Marche is erle of Ulster in Irelande and by ryghte lygne and herpytage. And there at the castell of his he lay that

tyne & there came vpon hy a grete mul-
tytude in bullhimentes of wyde Jersly
men for to take & destroye hym. And he
came out fyrst of his castell with his
people & manly fought w them & there
he was take & hewen all to peces & so he
died vpon whose soule god haue mercy
¶ And in the .x. yere of kyng Richardes
regne the erle of Arundell went to the see
with a grete nauy of shippes enarmed
with me of armes & good archers. And
whā they came in þe bode for they mette
with the hole flete þe came w wyne laden
fro Rochell the whiche wyne were enes
myes goodes & there our nauy set vpon
them & toke them all and brought them
to dyuers portes & hauens of Englonde
and some to London & there ye myght
haue had a tounce of Rochell Wyne of the
best for .xx. myllinges sterlynge / and so
we had grete chepe of wyne in Englonde
that tyme thanked be god almyghty.

¶ How the fyue lordes arose at
Bartote bydye.

And in þe regne of kyng Richard
the .x. yere the fyue lordes arose
at Bartote bydye in the destruction of þe
rebelles þe were þe tyme in all the realme.
The fyrst of þe fyue lordes was sy: Tho-
mas of Woodstok the kynges vncle & duke
of Glocestre. The seconde was sy: Ry-
chard erle of Arundell. The thyrde was
sy: Richard erle of Warwick. The fourth
was sy: Henry Bolynbroke erle of Der-
by. The fyfth was sy: Thomas Mon-
bray erle of Notyngham. And these .v.
lordes sawe the myschefe & mys gouer-
nauce & the falsnes of þe kynges counseyle
wherfore they that were þe tyme chefe of
the kynges counseyle fled out of this lode
ouer þe see / that is to saye / sy: Alysaider
Beuell the archbishop of Yorke & sy:
Robert Le Wer markys of Deuelyn &
erle of Oxforde & sy: Wythell de la Pole

erle of Suffolke and chaunceler of Eng-
londe. And these thre lordes went ouer þe
see & neuer came agayne for there they
died. And than these fyue lordes aboue
sayd made a parliamēt at Westmynster
And there they toke sy: Robert Tresilian
the Justyce / and sy: Archoll Bembre
knyght & cutryn of London & sy: John
Salisbury a knyght of þe kynges hous-
holde & Alske sergeant of armes & ma-
ny moo of other people were taken and
iudged to deeth by the counseyle of these
fyue lordes in that parliamēt at West-
mynster for the treason þe they put vpon
them / to be drawen from þe tour of Lon-
don throughtout the Cite and so forth to
Tyburne & there they shold be hangyd
and they: throttes to be cutte / and thus
they were serued & dyed. And after that
in this same parliamēt at Westmynster
was sy: Symond Beuclyer that was a
knyght of the garter & sy: John Scou-
champ knyght that was steward of the
kinges household & sy: James Berners
were foriudged to deeth & thā they were
ledde on fote to the tour byll and there
were they: hedes smytten of and many
other moo by these .v. lordes. ¶ In this
same parliamēt and in the .xii. yere of
kyng Richardes regne he let crye & or-
deyne a generall Justes that is called a
turneymēt of lordes knyghtes & squyers
And these Justes and turneyment were
holden at London in smythfelde of all ma-
ner of straungers of what londe or countre
that euer they were & thider they were
ryght welcome & to them & to all other
was holden open household & grete feest
& also grete gyftes were gyuen to al ma-
ner of straungers. And of þe kynges syde
were al of one sute they: cotes they: ar-
mure / helmes / hors trappures / and all
was whyte herres w crownes aboute
they: neckes & chaynes of gold hāgng
ther vpon & the crowne hangynge lowe

before the hartes body the whiche hart was þe kynges lyveray þe he gaue to lordes & ladyes / knyghtes & squyers for to knowe his housholde from other people. And in this feest came to þe Justes. xxiij. ladyes & ledde. xxiij. lordes of the garter with chaynes of gold & all þe same lutes of hartes as it is before sayd fro þe court on horsbacke through the cite of London into smythfelde where as þe iustes shold be holde. And this feest & iustes was holden generally for all those þe wolde come thyder of what lode or nacyon that euer they were. And this was holde during xxiij. dayes of þe kynges costes / & these xxiij. lordes to answer al maner people that wolde come thyder. And thyder came the erle of saynt Paule of fraunce / & many other worthy knyghtes w hym of dyuerse parties full worthely arrayed. And out of Hollande & Frenaud came the lord Ostreuaunt þe was the dukes sone of Holland / & many other worthy knyghtes w hym of Holland full well arrayed. And whā this feest & iusting was ended the kyng thanked these straungers / and gaue them many ryche gyftes. And thā they toke theyr leue of þe kyng & of other lordes & ladyes & went home agayn into theyr owne countrees w grete loue & moche thanke. ¶ And in þe. xxiij. yere of kyng Richardes regne there was a batayle done in þe kynges palays at Westmystre brytwene a squyer of Flaerne þe was w kyng Richard / & another squyer þe was called John Walshe for poyntes of treason þe this Flaerne put vpo this Walshe man. But this Flaerne was overcome & yelded hym ttraunt to his aduersary / & anon he was despoiled of his armure & drawen out of the palays to Tyburne and there was hanged for his falsnes. ¶ And in þe. xxiij. yere of kyng Richardes regne syr John of Gaunt duke of Lancastre went ouer see in to Spayne for to

challenge his ryght þe he had by his wyues tytell vnto þe crowne of Spayne w a grete hoost of people / & he had w hym þe duchesse his wyfe & his thre daughters in to Spayne / & there they were a grete whyle. And at þe last þe kyng of Spayne began for to treate with þe duke of Lancaster / and they were accorded togyder through bothe theyr counseyles in this maner / that the kyng of Spayne sholde wedde the dukes daughter that was þe ryght heire of Spayne / & he shold gyue vnto the duke golde & syluer þe were call in to grete weddinges / & many other felwels as moche as. viij. charyottes myght carry. And euery yere after during þe dukes lyf & the duchesse his wyfe. i. m. marke of golde / of whiche golde the auenture & charges sholde be to them of Spayne / & peryly brynge to Bayon to the dukes assygnies by surete made. And also þe duke maryed another of his daughters to the kyng of Portyngeale þe same tyme. And whā he had done thus he came home agayn in to Englonde / & þe good lady his wyfe also / but many worthy men dyed of the flux. ¶ In the. xv. yere of kyng Richardes regne he helde his Christmasse in þe manoir of Woodstok / & there þe erle of Denbroke a yonge lord & tender of age wolde lerne to Just w a knyght þe was called syr John of saynt John / & rode togyder in þe parke of Woodstok. And there this worthy erle of Denbroke was slayne with þe other knyghtes spere as he cast it from hym whā they had coupled / & thus this good erle made there his ende and therfore the kyng & the quene made moche sorowe for his deeth. ¶ And in the. xvi. yere of kyng Richardes regne John Hende beyng þe tyme Maye of London and John Walsworth & Henry Wanner beyng sheryues of London / that same tyme a bakers mā bare a basket of horsbryede in to fletestrete towarde an hostre

and there came a yonge man of the bys-
shops of Salysbury that was called Ro-
mayn/ & he toke a hors lose out of þe bak-
ket of þe bakers/ & he asked hym why he
dyd so. And this Romayn turned agayn
& brake the bakers heed/ & neyghbours
came out & wolde haue arrested this Ro-
mayn/ & he brake from them & fledde to
his lordes place/ and the constable wolde
haue had hym out/ but þe bysshops men
shette fast the gates/ & kepte the place þe
no man myght entre. And than moche
more people gathered thyder/ & sayd that
they wold haue hym out/ or els they wold
brenne hym þe place & all that were therein.
And then came the Mayre & sheryues wth
moche other people & celled þe malice of þe
comyns/ & made euery man to go home
to theyr houses & kepe þe peas. And this
Romayns lord þe bysshop of Salysbury
mayster John Waltham that at þe tyme
was tresourer of Englonde went to syr
Thomas Arundel archebysshop of Can-
terbury & chaunceler of Englonde/ & there
the bysshop made his cōplaynt vnto the
chaunceler vpon the people of the cite of
Londō. And than these two bysshops of
grette malice & benegaunce came vnto the
kyng at Wyndsoze & made a grette com-
playnt vnto the Mayre & sheryues. And
anone all þe cite afterward came before þe
kyng & his cōseyle/ & they cast vnto the
cite a greuous here & wonders grette ma-
lice. And anone sodaynly the kyng sent
for þe Mayre of Londō & the sheryues/ &
they came to hym in þe castell of Wyndsoze
And the kyng rebuked the Mayre & shes-
ryues ful foule for the offence þe they had
done agaynst hym & his officers in his
chambre at Londō. Wherefore he depolde
& put out the Mayre & bothe sheryues/ &
this was done xiiii. dayes before þe feast
of saynt John baptyst. And than þe kyng
called to hym a knyght that was called
sy Edward Dalingrigge/ & made hym

warden & gouernour of þe cite & cham-
bre of London/ & ouer all his people ther
in. And so he kepte that offyce but foure
wekes bycause that he was so gentyll &
tendre to the citeyns of London/ wher-
fore the kyng depolde hym/ & made syr
Bawdewyn Badynghton knyght þe was
Controller of the kynges household war-
den & gouernour of his chambre and of
his people therein/ and chose to hym two
worthy men of the cite to be sheryues wth
hym to gouerne & kepe þe kynges lawes
in the cite/ that one was called Gilbert
Bawleide/ & þe other Thomas Arden-
ton sheryues. And than the Mayre & the
two sheryues & all þe aldermen wth all the
worthy craftes of London went on fore
to the toure of London/ & there came out
the Constable of the toure/ and gaue the
Mayre & sheryues theyr othe & charge
as they wolde haue takē in þe eschequer of
Westmynstre in þe kynges court of his
Justyce & barons of the eschequer/ & than
went they home agayne. And than the
kyng & his cōseyle for þe grette malice &
despyte þe they had to þe cite of London re-
meued all his courtes fro Westmynstre
vnto the cite of porke/ that is to saye/ the
chaunceler/ the eschequer/ the kynges ben-
che/ & the comyn place/ & there they held
all these courtes of lawe fro midsummer. þe
is to saye/ the feast of saynt John baptyst
vnto þe feast of Chrysmasse next comyng
And than the kyng & his cōseyle sawe
it not so ppytable there as it was at Lon-
don. Than anone he remeued it agayne
to London & so to Westmynstre for grette
ease of his officers and auantage to the
kyng and al the comyns of the realme.
And whan the people of London sawe þe
knewe þe these courtes were come agayne
and the kyng & his people also/ than the
Mayre & the aldermen wth þe cheefe co-
myns of the cite let gadre a grette somme
of golde of all the comyns of the cite/ and

and made grete rialtees agaynst
his comynge to London for to haue his
grace & good lordshipp. and also they ly-
bertees & fraunchyses graunted to them as
gayne as they were wont to haue afore
tyme. And through grete instaunce and
prayer of the quene & of other lordes & la-
dyes the king graunted them grace. And
this was done at Whene i sothery. And
than þ kyng wen two dayes after came
to London. And the Mayre of the cite w
the sheryues aldermen & all the worthy
men of the cite afterwarde rode agaynst
hym in good aray to þ beth on this syde
the manory of Whene humbly & meke-
ly submyttynge them w all maner obey-
saunce vnto hy as they ought to do. And
thus they brought þ kyng & the quene
to London. & when the kyng came to þ
gate of London bydge. there they pre-
sented hym with a mylke whyte stede
sabled & byddled & trapped with cloth of
golde and reed partyed togyder. And the
quene a palfrey all whyte in the same a-
raye trapped w whyte & reed. & all the
cōdytes of London ranne w wyne bothe
whyte and reed. for all maner people to
drynke who wolde. And bytweene saynt
Paule and the crosse in chepe there was
made a stage a ryall standyng on hye. &
therin were many aūgels with dyuers
melodyes & songes. And than an aūgell
came downe from the stage on hygh by
a byce & set a crowne of gold pyght with
ryche perles & peryous stones vpon the
kynges heed. & an other vpo the quenes
heed. And so þ citeyngs brought þ kyng
and þ quene to Westmynster in to theyr
palays. And than on the morowe after þ
Mayre & the sheryues & the aldermen of
London came vnto the kyng to his pa-
lays at Westmynster & presented hym w
two basyns of syluer & ouer gylded ful of
corned golde the somme of .xx. C. pounde
payenge hy of his hygh mercy & grace

and lordshipp & sperrall grace that they
myght haue his good loue with the ly-
bertees & fraunchyses lyke wyse as they
were wont for to haue before tyme. and
by his lettres patentis and his chartre
confyrmid. And þ quene & other worthy
lordes & lades fell on theyr knees & be-
sought þ kyng of grace to cōfyrme this
Than the kyng toke by the quene and
graunted her all her askynge. And than
they thāked þ kyng & the quene & went
home agayne. And in the .xvi. yere of
kyng Rychardes regne certayn lordes
of Scotlande came in to Englonde for to
gete worthyp as by fayte of armes. And
these were þ persones. the erle of Marre
& he chalenged þ erle Marshall of Eng-
lōde to Just with hym certayn poyntes
on horsbacke with sharpe speres. & they
rode togyder as two worthy knyghtes
& lordes certayne courses. but not þ full
challenge that þ scottyshe erle made. for
he was cast downe bothe hors & man. &
two of his rybbes broken w the fall. & so
he was borne thens out of Smythfelde
home to his inne. & within a lytell tyme
after he was caried home in a hors lyt-
ter. & at porke he dyed. And sy William
Darell knyght & the kynges banerier of
Scotlande than made an other challenge
w sy Diers currayn knyght & þ kynges
banerier of Englonde of certayn courses
yet on horsback in þ same felde. & when
he had rydden certayn courses & assayed
he myght not haue the better. he gaue it
ouer & wolde no more of his challenge w
sy Diers courtayn knyght & þ kynges
banerier of Englonde. & turned his hors
& rode to his inne. And one Cokborne a
squier of Scotlande chalenged sy Ry-
choll Hawberke knyght of certayn cour-
ses yet w sharpe speres. & rode .v. cour-
ses togyder. & at euery course þ scotte
was cast downe bothe hors & man. And
thus our Englyshe lordes thanked be

god had the seide. ¶ In the. xviij. yere of kyng Rycharde's regne dyed the good & gracious quene Anne that was wyfe to kyng Rycharde in the manorye of Wyke in the Wyre of Surrey on Whylsondaye And than was she brought to London & so to Westmynster/ & there was she buried and worthely entered besyde saynt Edwardes shyrne/ vpon whose soule almyghty god haue pyte & mercy Amen.

¶ How kyng Rycharde spoused dame Isabell þ kynges doughter of fraunce in the towne of Calays/ & brought her in to Englobe & let her be crowned quene in þ abbey of saynt Peters of Westmynster.

In the. xx. yere of kyng Rycharde's regne he went ouer see to Calays With dukes/erles/ lordes and barons/ & many other worthy squyers With grete araye and comyn people of the realme in good araye as longed to suche a kyng & p'f'ce of his nobley and of his owne persone to do hym reuerence & obseruaunce as ought to be done to theyr lyege lorde & so myghty a kyng & emperour in his owne/ to abyde & receyue there that worthy & gracyous lady that sholde be his wyfe a yonge creature of. xix. yere of age dame Isabell the kynges doughter of fraunce/ & many other worthy lordes of grete name/ bothe barons & knyghtes/ With moche other people that came to þ towne of Grauenynge and two dukes of fraunce/ that one was the duke of Burgoyne/ and that other the duke of Barre that wold no ferther lesse than they had pledges for them. And than kyng Rycharde deliuered two pledges for them to go safe and come safe his two worthy vncl'es/ the duke of Glocestre & the duke of York/ & these two went ouer þ water of Grauenynge & abode there as for pledges vnto þ tyme that the maryage & the fest was done & that these two dukes of

fraunce were comen agayn vnto Grauenynge water. And than these two worthy dukes came ouer þ water at Grauenynge & so to Calays With this worshypfull lady dame Isabell þ was þ kynges doughter of fraunce/ and With her came many a worthy lord & lady & knyghtes & squyers in þ best araye that myght be And there they met w our meyn at Calays whiche welcomed her & her meyn w grete reuerence/ & so brought her in to the towne of Calays/ & there she was receyued w all the solempnute & wooshypp þ myght be done to suche a lady. And than they brought her to þ kyng/ & the kyng toke her & welcomed her & all her fayre cōpany/ & made there a grete solempnute And than þ kyng & his counseyle asked of the frenshe lordes whether all the cōuenantes & forwarde w the cōposycon þ were ordeyned & made on bothe partyes shold be truly kepte & holden bytweene the And they sayd yea/ & thre they swore & toke theyr charge vpon a boke and made theyr othe well & truly it to holde i al maner poyntes & couenautes wout contradiccyō or delay in any maner wyse. And thā was she brought to saynt Nicolas churche in Calays/ & there was worthely wedded w the moost solempnute þ any kyng or quene myght be/ w archbyschops & byschops & all þ mynystres of holy churche. And than they were brought to the castell & set to meet/ & were serued w all delycasy of ryall metes & dyskes plentifully to all maner of straungers & al other & no creature warned þ fecit/ but al were welcome/ for there were grete halles & tentes set vpon þ grene wout þ castell to receiue al maner of people/ & curry office redy to serue the all. And thus this worthy marriage was solemply done & ended With all ryalte. Than these two dukes of fraunce With theyr people toke theyr leue of the kyng & of the quene & wente

agayne into Flaumynge Water. And there the frenche lordes that is to saye the two dukes & all they folke were comen ouer the Water to Flaumynge and there they mette & euery bone toke leue of other & so they departed & our lordes came agayne to Calays & the frenche lordes wente ouer the Water & so home in to Fraunce agayne. And anone after the kyng made hym redy with þe quene and all his lordes & ladyes and all they people with them & came ouer þe see in to Englonde and so vnto London. And the Maye and the Sheryues with all the aldermen & worthy compyns rode agaynst them vnto the blacke beth in Kent and there they mette with the kyng and the quene & welcomed them & that in good araye and euery man in the clothyng of his craft & they mynistris before them. And so they broughte them to saynt Georges barre in Southwerke & there they toke they leue. And the kyng and the quene rode to Henyngton and than the people of London turned home agayne & in turnynge agayne to London byrge there was so grete pres of people bothe on hoys & on fote that there were deed on the byrge. xx. persones of men & women and chyldren on whose soules god haue mercy & pte Amen. And than afterwarde the quene was brought to the court of London and there she was all nyght & on þe morowe she was brought through the cite of London and so forth to Westmynstre & there she was crowned quene of Englonde & than she was brought agayne vnto þe kynges palays and there was holden open court and a ryall feest at her crownyng of all maner people that thider came. And this was done the sondaye nexte after the feest of saynt Clement in the. xx. yere of kyng Richardes regne. And than the. xxi. daye of August nexte after by euill exci-

cacyon & fals counseyle and grete wrath & malice that the kyng had of olde tyme to his vncle the good duke of Glocestre & to the erle of Arundell & to þe erle of Warwyk. Anone the kyng by his euill exci- tacyon & his euill counseyle and malice late in the euenyng on the same daye as boue sayd made hym redy with his strength and rode in to Calays & so vnto þe erle of Chelmesford and so came to Blasse lodep- ly there spake Thomas of Wodstok þe good duke of Glocestre laye. And þe good duke came anone to welcome the kyng. And the kyng arested þe good duke hymselfe his owne body & so he was ladde down to the Water & anone put in to a shyppe and hed to Calays & brought in to þe capytayns warde to be kepte in holde by þe kynges comaundement. And that tyme the erle Marshall was capytayn of Calays. And anone after by comaundement of the kyng & by his fals counseyle/ com- maunded þe capytayn to put hym to deth. And anone certayn yemen that had the good duke in keepyng toke they counseyle how that they sholde put hym to deth. And this was they appoyntment that they shold come vpon hym whan he were in his bedde & a slepe on a fether bedde & anone they boude hym hande & fote and charged hym so to lye styll. And whan that they had done thus they toke two towelles & made on them two rydyng knottes & cast the towelles aboute his necke & than they toke the fether bedde that laye vnder hym & cast it vpon hym and than they drew the towelles eche waye & so me laye vpon þe fether bedde and vpon hym vnto the tyme þe he was deed/ bycause þe he sholde make no noyse. And thus they strangled this worthy duke vnto þe deth/ vpon whose soule god for his hygh pte haue mercy. Amen. And whan the kyng had thus arested this worthy duke & his vncle and sente

hym to Calais he came agayn to London in all þe haste with a wondrous grete nobles of people. And as soone as he was comen he sente for þe erle of Arundell & for the good erle of Warwyk. And anon as they came he arrested them hymself and sʒ John Cobham and sʒ John Cheyn knyghtes he arrested them in þe same maner tyll he made his parliament & anon they were put in to holde / but the erle of Arundell went at large unto the parliament tyme / for he foude sufficient surety to abyde the lawe / & to answer to all manner poyntes that þe kyng & his counseyle wolde put upon hym. And the .xxi. yere of kyng Rycharde's regne he ordeyned hym a parliament at Westmynster whiche was called þe grete parliament. And this parliament was made for to iudge these thre worthy lordes & other moore as them lyst at that tyme. And for þe iudgement the kyng let make in all the haste a long house & a large of tymbre þe whiche was called in hall & covered with tyles ouer / & it was open all aboute on bothe sydes & at the endes / þe all manner of men myght se throughtout / & there the dome was holden upon these foresayd lordes & iudgement given at this foresayd parliament. And for to come to this parliament the kyng sent his wyntes to euery lord / baron / knyght & squyer in euery shyre throughtout Englonde / that euery lord shoulde gadre & bringe his retynue with hym in his best array & in the best shype þe they myght gete in maynteynynge & strengthynge of þe kyng agaynst them þe were his enemyes / & that this shoulde be done in all the haste come to hym in payne of death. And the kyng hymself sent into Cheshyre to the castles of þe countree / & they gathered & brought a grete and an huge multitude of people bothe of knyghtes & squyers & knyghtpail of yemen of Cheshyre / whiche yemen &

archers the kyng toke to his owne courtte and gaue them bolege of courtte & good wages to be keepers of his owne body bothe by nyght & by daye aboute al other persones & moost loued & best trust / the whiche soone after ward turned þe kyng to grete losse & shame / hyndrynge & his bitter vndoynge & destruction as ye shall here afterwarde. And that tyme came sir Henry of Derby with a grete meyny of men of armes & archers. And þe erle of Bucklonde came with a stronge power of people bothe of men of armes & archers. The erle of Kent brought a grete power of men of armes & archers / the erle of Arundell came in the same maner & the lord Spenser in the same maner. The erle of Northumberlonde and sir Henry Percy his sone & sʒ Thomas Percy the erles brother / all the worthy lordes brought a fayre meyny & a stronge power / and the man in his best array & the duke of Lancastre & the duke of York came in þe same maner with men of armes & archers following þe kyng / & sʒ William Scrope tresourer of Englonde came in the same maner. And thus in this array came all the worthy men of this londe unto our kyng / & all this people came to London in one daye / in so moche þe euery strete & lane in London & in the subbarbes were full of them lodged / and .x. or .xii. myle about London euery waye. And this people brought the kyng to Westmynster & went home agayne to theyr lodgynges bothe hors & man / & than on þe mondaye the .xii. daye of September þe parliament began at Westmynster whiche was called þe grete parliament. And on þe frydaye next after þe erle of Arundell was brought in to the parliament amonge all þe lordes and þe was on saynt Mathewes daye the apostle and euangelist / there he was for iudged vnto the death in this hall þe was made in þe palays at Westmynster. And

that was his iudgement. He then went
 fore to his bandes before he yade hym
 from þe place that he was iudged in. & he
 sayd through the cite of London unto þe
 tourne byll. & his heed to be smyten of. &
 so it was done in dede in the same place.
 And, by of the gretest lordes that were on
 his iudgement rode with hym unto the
 place there he was done to deathe. & so to
 se that þe execution were done after the
 dome. & by the kynges comaundement
 with them wente on fote men of armes
 & archers a grete multitude of Chestre
 shyre men in strengthe of þe lordes þe
 brought this erle to his deathe. for they
 were in dyede leest þe erle sholde be resto-
 red & taken from them whan they ca-
 me in to London. Thus he passed forth
 through the Cite unto his deeth. & there
 he toke it full pacyently. on whose soule
 god haue mercy Amen. And than came
 the Austyn freres & toke by þe body & the
 heed of this good erle. & bare it home to
 theyr place. & buried hym in theyr quere.
 And on þe moyn after was sye Richard
 erle of Warwik brought in to the parly-
 ment there as the erle of Arundell was
 for iudged. & they gaue the erle of War-
 wik the same iudgement that þe foresayd
 erle had. but the lordes had compassyon
 on hym because he was of more greter
 age. and released hym to perpetual pry-
 son. & put hym in the yle of Man. And
 than on the mondaye nexte after þe lord
 Cobham of Kent and sye John Cheyn-
 nynght were brought also in to the par-
 lyament in to the same hall. & there they
 were iudged to be hanged and hewen.
 but through the prayers and grete in-
 stance of all the lordes that iudgement
 was forgiven them. and released to per-
 petuall pryson. And this same tyme
 was Richard Wyllyngton knyght of
 London. and John Wodehouse & Wyl-
 liam Wyllyngton of London. And

they appeared at curry gate of London
 during this same parlyament strange
 watche of men of armes & archers. and
 theyng out every wardrall. And the
 kyng made. 3. dukes & one earle. &
 four erles. & the fyrst of them was the
 erle of Derby. and he was made duke of
 Exetor. and the secunde was the erle of
 Rutlande. & he was made duke of Buck-
 ingham. & the thyrde was the erle of Kent
 and he was made duke of Gloucestre. & the
 fourth was the erle of Humphrey. & he
 was made duke of Exetor. & the fyfth
 was the erle of Northampton. & he was
 made duke of Northfolke. And the erle of
 Somerset was made earle of Dor-
 set. & the lord Spencer was made erle
 of Glocestre. & the lord Aynall of Raby
 was made erle of Westmerlande. & sye
 Thomas Percy was made erle of Wore-
 cester. & sye William Scrope that was
 treasurer of Englonde was made erle of
 Wylshyre. & sye John Montague erle of
 Salisbury. And whan þe king had thus
 done he helde the parlyament & calld forth
 unto all his lordes & to all manner of peo-
 ple that theyr woide come. And this
 same yere dyed sye John of Gales þe hym-
 ges uncle & duke of Lancastre in the bys-
 shops Anne in Welborne. & was brought
 fro thens to saynt pauls. & there þe kyng
 made & helde his entremet well & wy-
 thely with all his lordes in the chyrche of
 saynt pauls in London. & there he was
 buried before some blacke his wyfe
 that was daughter & heire unto þe good
 Henry þe was duke of Lancaster. And þe
 same yere there fell a dyssencion bytwene
 the duke of Derby & þe duke of Northfolke
 in so moche þe they fought batayle & calld
 to be cheryng. & than they were ta-
 ken by & iudged. & the batayle forned &
 the duke of Northfolke was slayn. & he
 was slayn. & this shewing he at Coventre
 And theyr name the byng to all his lordes

des at that day / & was set in the fild / & than these two worthy lordes came into þe fild well & clene armed & well arrayed with all theyr wepen & redy to do theyr batayle / & were redy in þe place to fyght at viterastur. But þe kyng had them callyd & toke the quarrell into his handes. And forthwith ryght there present exiled the duke of Hereford for terme of .x. yere / & the duke of Norfolk for euermore. And sye Thomas Beundell archebysshop of Caunterbury was exiled þe same tyme for euer & deposed out of his see for malyce of the kyng. And anone these thye worthy lordes were commaunded & defended þe kynges realme. And anone they gate them theyppes at ouers hauens & went ouer the see into ouers lodes ethe his waye. And þe duke of Norfolk went to Venise & there he died / on whose soule god haue mercy Amen. And than kyng Richard made a cloke of his sye Roger Walden archebysshop of Caunterbury. And in the .xxii. yere of kynges Richardes regne by fals counseyle & ymaginacyon of couetous men that were aboute hym were made & ordeyned blanke chartres / and made them to be ensealed of al maner ryche men throughtout þe realme / in so moche þe they compelled ouers people to set theyr seales therto. And this was done for grete couetyse / wherfore al good herites of þe realme were clene turned away fro þe kyng for euer after. And that was bitter destruccyon & ende to hym þe was so hygh & so excellent a pryncce & kyng / & throughtout couetous & fals counseyle falsly betrayed. Was for pte þe suche a kyng myght not se. And than kyng Richard set his kyngdome and his ryall londe of Englonde to ferme vnto foure persones whiche were these / sye Wyllyam de Crope erle of Wylshyre & tresourer of Englonde & sye John Busshe / & Henry Greene / & sye John Bage knyghtes / whiche turned

them to myschefe & deth within a lytell tyme / as ye shall fynde here afterwarde wyrtten. And than kyng Richard made grete ordynance & went hymself ouer see into Irelande & many grete lordes to hym with grete hookes for to strength theyr kyng / to men of armes & archers & moche grete stuffe & ryght good ordynance as longed vnto warre. And as he passed ouer þe see he ordeyned & made sye Edmond of Langley his uncle þe duke of York his leutenant of Englonde in his absence / with the gouernance & counseyle of these .iiii. knyghtes þe had taken Englonde to ferme of the kyng. And than he passed the see & came in to Irelande / and there he was well & worthily receyued. And these rebelles that ben called wyld Irishmen came downe to the kyng & yelded them to him bothe body & goodes all at his owne wyll / & swore vnto hym to be his lyege men / & there dyd to hym homage & fraute & good seruyce / & thus he coquered þe moost parte of Irelande in a lytell tyme. And whyle that kyng Richard was thus in Irelande sye Henry of Bolynghroke erle of Derby that þe kyng had made before duke of Hereford / þe whiche duke the kyng had exiled out of this londe was comen agayn in to Englonde for to chalenge þe dukedom of Lancastrie as for his right & true heritage. And he came downe out of Fraunce vnto Calays. And there mette hye sye Thomas Beundell þe was archebysshop of Caunterbury that was exiled out of Englonde / & with hym came the erle of Arundel his sone & heye the whiche was in kepynge of sye John Melley knight somtyme to the erle of Huntingdon & to the duke of Excestre the whiche was tho in the castell of Kewgate in Suffex / & there he stalle away & came to Calays / & there he was well & worthily kepte tyll these other two lordes were comen to Calays. And tha this

Worthy duke & the archbishop of Canterbury Jambell shipped in þe haven of Calais & dyene theyr courte northward & arrived in Fokshyre at Rauncisporne fast by Wyndyngton & there he came & entred byst the londe & two lordes with hym and theyr meny. And than moche people of the realme that herde of his comynge & kenne where þe he was / anone they dyene unto hym & welcomed these lordes / & so couraged them in all maner thyng / and passed forth in to the londe and gabred moche people to them. And whan kyng Richard herde & wytt that these two lordes were comen agayne in to Englonde and were londe. Than the kyng leste his ordynance in Irelande & came in to Englonde in all the haste that he myght / and came to the castell of Flint / and there he abode for to take his counseyle & what myght be done / but to hym came none. And whā syr Thomas Percy erle of Worcester þe was þe kynges steward wytt and knewe this / anone he came in to the hall amonge all þe people / and he brake the yerde of þe ryall kynges housholde / & anone euery man was disperd & went his waye & forsoke theyr mayster & souerayn lord / and leste hym alone. And thus was kyng Richard brought downe & destroyed / & stode hym selfe alone without comforte or socour or ony good counseyle of ony man / alas for pite of this ryall kyng. And anone came tydnges that syr Henry of Bolingbroke was by with a stronge power of people and that all þe squyers of Englonde ressed by the shyres in strengthynge of hym agaynst kyng Richard. And thus soone he was comen out of the North countree to Byrtholme / & there he mette with syr Wylliam Scrope erle of Wythshyre and tresourer of Englonde / & with syr John Busshe and syr Henry Greene / and John Bagot / but he escaped fro them & went

over the see in to Irelande. And these thre knyghtes were taken and theyr heedes mynted of. And thus they dyed for theyr fals couerys. And then was kyng Richard taken and brought unto the duke. And anone þe duke put þe in fast warde and stronge holde unto his comynge to London. And than was there a rumoure in London & a stronge noise that kyng Richard came to Westminster / and the people of London ranne thydre & wolde haue done moche harme & hurte in theyr woodnes / had not þe alye & aldermen and other worthy men celled them with saye wordes / and turned them home agayne to London. ¶ And there was syr John Blake dome of the kynges chapel of Westminster taken & brought to London & put in prysen in Ludgate. And after that John Bagot was taken in Irelande & brought to London / & put in prysen in Belegate / there to be kepte and abyde his answer. ¶ And soone after the duke brought kyng Richarde pryncip to London / & put him in the toure under sure keepynge as a prysoner. And than came the lordes of the realme w al theyr counseyle unto þe toure to kyng Richard & sayd to hym of his mysgouernaunce & extortion that he had done / made & ordeyned to oppresse all þe comyn people / & also to all the realme. Wherfore all þe comyn people of þe realme wolde haue hym deposed of his kyngdome. And so he was deposed at that tyme in the toure of London by all his lordes counseyle & comyn assent of all þe realme. And than he was put from þe toure unto þe castell of Leches in Kent / & there he was kepte a whyle / and than he was had from thens unto þe castell of Downfret in the North countree to be kepte in prysen / & ryght soone after there he made his ende. And than whan kyng Richard was deposed & had resigned his crowne & his kyngdom & was

kept fast to holde. Than all the lordes of the realme with the comyns assent & by accord chose this worthy lordes sy: Henry of Bolynghbroke erle of Derby, duke of Hereford & duke of Lancaster by ryght lyne & heretage, and for his ryghtfull manhode that þ people fonde in him before all other & chose hym & made hym kyng of Englonde amonge them.

In the year of our lordes thousand four hundred and thirtye. And than Henry the. iiij. was after his. xij. yere. and was deposed. Than was Alexander chosen in possession of Persia & he was called sy: Petrus de Candia & so was put to the sword. And there was there a counseil of the lordes where they began to make a rebelle and they deposed þ two & the thyrde. And so was worse division made than before for that they ordeyned pryncples not.

Robert was emperour after Wenceslaw. x. yere. This man was duke of Bavaria & erle of Palatyn & a iust man and a good & was crowned of Boniface the. ix. This man entred praly w a grete hoost of Almayns agaynst John the duke of Calais but he returned w a grete woide & was a thynge iust that he suffered by iustice diuine. **J**ohn the. xxij. succeeded Alexander. iij. yere & syll he began tock for an vntre & he was in þ cōseyl of Constance & offered hym to resigne the poperythe & after secretly & vntrely he fledde awaye but it pleyed hym not for he was taken & constrained to peas & was made a cardynall & buried at florens. **S**igismundus was emperour after Robert. xx. yere & he was sone to Matheus & kyng of Ungary & moost chrystian pryncer and he was so deuoute to god that he deserved to be canonysed. This man holpe þ church through his

mercyous prudence and wytt for he spared no labour ne no thynge þ he had tyll he had made a full peas amonge the clerge. And he had. ix. batayles agaynst the Turke. And he had þ victory. And what more all chynge þ curt was wyten in booke to Constantyne Theodosio. Matheo. And may truly be wyten of hym. And he was crowned in Ungary and decessed a blessed man.

Circa annu dñi. m. cccc.

Of sy: Henry of Bolynghbroke erle of Derby that reigned after kyng Richard. Whiche was the fourth Henry after the conquest.

After kyng Richard the seconde was deposed & out of his kingdom the lordes & the comyns all w one assent & all other worthy men of the realme chose sy: Henry of Bolynghbroke erle of Derby sone & heyr of John duke of Lancaster for his worthy manhode þ often tymes had ben founde in hym & in dedes prynced vpon last Edwardes day the confessour he was crowned kyng of Englonde at Westmynster by assent of all the realme nexte after the depolyng of kyng Richard. Thā he made Henry his eldest sone prync of Wales & duke of Cornewayle & erle of Chestre. And he made sy: Thomas of Arundell archebysshop of Caisterbury agayne as he was before. And sy: Roger Walden þ kyng Richard had made archebysshop of Caisterbury he made byshop of London for þ tyme it shode voyde. And he made þ erles sone of Arundell that came w hym ouer þ see fro Calais in to Englonde erle of Arundell as his fader had ben & put hym in possession of all his lordes. And he made homage & fraute vnto his lyrgt lord the kyng as all other lordes had done. And than anon dyed kyng Richard in

the taylor of Westminster in the north countrey. For there he was sampted to death by his haper. For he was hope there. iiii. or. v. dayes from meet & dyneke / & so he made his ende in this world. Yet moche people in Englonde and in other londes sayd þ he was on lyue many a yere after his deeth. But whether he were al yue or dead the people helde theyr fals opinyon & belyue that many had. & moche people came to grete myschefe & foule dethe as ye shal here afterward. And whan kynge Henry dyd & knewe þ he was deed / he let scere hym in the best maner / & closed it in a sayre chest w dyuers spyerres and barres / & closed hym in a linnen cloth all saue his visage / & that was left open that all men myght se his persone from all other men. And so he was brought to London with torches lighte brennyng to saint Pauls church. & there he had his masse & his Dirige w moche reuerence & solempnite of seruyce. And whan all this was done / he was brought from saynt Pauls in to the abbey of Westmynster & there he had al his hole seruyce agayn. And from Westmynster he was brought to Langley / and there he was buryed / on whose soule god haue mercy Amen.

¶ And in þ fyrst yere of kynge Henryes regne he helde his Chyrmasse in þ castle of Wyndesore. And on. xii. euene came the duke of Bedemarle unto the kynge & tolde hym that he & the duke of Burrey & the duke of Excestre / & the erle of Salisbury / & þ erle of Glocestre / & other moo of theyr assynite were accorded to make a mommyng into þ kynge on. xii. daye at nyght / & there they purposed to see þ kyng in the reuelynge. And thus þ duke of Bedemarle warned þ kyng. And than the kyng came to London pryvely in all the haste þ he myght to grete hym helpe faster & cospate and cosileye. And amonge other þ wolde haue put þ kyng to

death fledde in all the haste þ they myght for they knewe well that theyr cosileye was beloyapen. And than fledde þ duke of Burrey & the erle of Salisbury w all theyr menynto þ towne of Chichestre. And there the people of the towne wolde haue arrested them / and they wolde not stande to theyr arrestynge / but stode at defence & fought manly. But at þ last they were overcomen & take. And there they smote of the dukes heed of Burrey & the erles heed of Salisbury / & many other moo / & there they put theyr quarters in to larches & theyr heedes on poles borne on hye / & so they were brought through the cite of London to London bydye / & there these heedes were set vpon hygh / & theyr quarters were sent to other good tolnes and cytees of Englonde / and set vpon there.

¶ At Oxford was take Blouche knyght / & Benet Cely knyght / and Thomas Wynterfell squyer / and there were hyhed & quartered / and the knyghtes heedes were set vpon poles & brought to London & set vpon þ bydye / & the quarters sent forth unto other good tolnes.

¶ And in þ same yere at Wynterwell in a myll in Essex there ly John Holand the duke of Excestre was taken with the comyns of the countrey / and they brought hym from the myll unto the Plasse / & to the same place þ kyng Rycharde had arrested ly Thomas of Woodstok þ duke of Glocestre / and right there in the same place they smote of þ dukes heed of Excestre / and brought it to London vpon a pole / & it was set vpon London bydye.

¶ And in þ same yere at Wynterwell was taken the lord Spencer that kyng Rycharde had made erle of Glocestre / & the comyns of the towne of Wynterwell toke hym and brought hym in to the market place of the towne / and there they smote of his heed / & sente it to London / & there it was set vpon London bydye. ¶ And

In this same yere was syr Bernard Wyke knight taken & arrested & put in the tower of London: and syr John Schelle knight & syr John Spawdeyn and syr William Ferbe persons of kynge Rycharde: & they were arrested & put in to the tower of London. And thider came þe kynges Justices and satte upon them in the tower of London: & there they were dampned all. iiii. to death: & þe same was gyuen to syr Bernard Wyke that he shoulde go on fore from the tower through the cite of London vnto Tyburne: & there to be hanged: & after his deeth synniten of: & syr John Schelle knight: & syr John Spawdeyn & syr William Ferbe persons were drawn through out þe cite of London to Tyburne: & there they were hanged: & theyr hebes synniten of and set on London by yde. ¶ And in this same yere kyng Henry sente quene Isabell home agayn into France: þe whiche was kyng Rycharde wyfe: & gaue her golde & syluer & many other Jewels: & so she was discharged of all her dowry & sent out of Englonde. ¶ And in þe second yere of kyng Henry þe fourth was syr Roger Clarington knight & two of his men: & þe pryncer of Launce & his freeres mynours & some maysters of bymme & other for treason that they wrought agaynst the kyng: were drawn & hanged at Tyburne all. iij. persons. ¶ And there began a grete vileracion & debate in þe countre of Wales betwene þe lord Grey Bishop & Owen of Glendore squyer of Wales: & this Owen wroght a grete nombre of Walshmen: & kepte all that countre about ryght strongly & did moche harme: and destroyed the kynges townes & byshops: through out al Wales: & robbed & stole þe kynges people bothe englishe & walsh: & thus he endured a. xii. yere largely: & he toke the lord Grey Bishop prisoner: & kepte hym fast in holde tyll he was ransomed

of prisoners of the marche: & kepte hym longe tyme in holde. And at the last he made hym to wedde one of his daughters & kepte hym there styll with his wyfe: and soone after he dyed. And than kyng Henry knowyng this mischance: destruc- cion & treason þe this Owen had wroughte anone he ordeyned a strong power of me of armes and archers and moche other stuffe that longed to warre: for to abate & destroye þe malice of this fals Walsh- man. And than the kyng came in to Wa- les with his power for to destroye this Owen & other rebelles fals Walshmen. And anone they fledde in to þe moorayns and there myght the kyng do them no harme in no maner wyse for þe moorayns. And so the kyng came agayn in to Eng- londe for letynge of moo of his people: & thus he spedde not there. ¶ And in this same yere was grete fearre of whete in Englonde: for a quarter of whete was at. xviij. shyllinges. And there was mar- chaunte of Englonde sent in to Spayne for whete: & anone they had laden and fraught shippes ynough: & came home in safete charged be god of all his gyfes. ¶ And in the thyrde yere of kyng Hen- ryes regne there was a sterre seen in the firmament þe shewed hymselfe through all the world for dyuers tokens þe shoulde befall soone after: the whiche sterre was named by clergy Stella cometa. And on saynt Mary Spawdeyns daye next fol- lowyng in þe same yere was þe barayle of Shrewesbury: & thider came sir Henry Percy þe erle of Northumberland with a grete multitude of men of armes & archers: & gaue a barayle to kyng Hen- ry the fourth: through þe fals & wyched conseil of syr Thomas Percy his uncle erle of Worcester: & there was sir Henry Percy slain: & þe moost parte of his pro- ple in þe felde: & syr Thomas Percy take and kepte fast in holde two days tyll the

king had sit rest amonge his people on
bothe sides. And the say Thomas per-
cy was hangid to be a traitor & hanged &
his head shewen of for his false treason
at Salisbury & his head brought to
London & set on a poyge. And the other
people that were there layne on bothe par-
ties the kyng let bury. And there was
layne on the kynges syde in the batayle the
erie of Westmarch & sy Walter Blount in the
kynges entremure under the kynges ba-
ner & many moe worthy men on whose
soules god haue mercy Amen. ¶ And in
the fourth yere of kyng Henryes regne
came the emperour of Constantinople w
many grete lordes & knyghtes & moche
other people of his countre into Englonde
to kyng Henry wth hym to speke & to
dispute & to be good gouernas & con-
ditions of our people & to knowe the com-
byters of Englonde. And our kyng wth all
his lordes goodly & worshipfully recey-
ued & welcomed hym & all his meny &
came wth hym & dyd hym all the honour &
worshipp that they coude & myght & amonge
the kyng commaunded al maner officers that
he shold be serued as ryally as it longed
to such a worthy lord & emperour upon
his owne cost as longe as he & his men
were in Englonde. ¶ In this same yere
came hame Jane the duchesse of Brytayne
into Englonde and landed at Salmons-
th in Cornewyle and from thens she was
brought to the cite of Wyndesore & there
she was wedded vnto kyng Henry the
fourth in the abbey of saynt Marye wth
all the solempnite & myght be done &
made. And some after she was brought
from thens to London. And the maye &
the aldermen wth the commons of the cite of
London receyued agayn her & welcomed her
& brought her through the cite of London
on Westmynster & there she was crow-
ned quene of Englonde & there the kyng
made a ryall & a solempne feast for her &

for all maner men that shold come.
¶ And in this same yere hame Blanche
the eldest daughter of kyng Henry was
sent ouer see to the erle of Somerset her
uncle & with mayster Richard Clyfford
than byshop of Worcester & with many
other worthy lordes & ladyes & worthy
suyers as longed to such a noble ky-
nges daughter & came hnto Coleyn. And
thyder came the dukes sone of Barre w
a fayre company & receyued this worthy
lady & the byshop of Worcester wedded &
sacred them togyder as holy chirche re-
wold. And there was made a ryall feast
& a grete iustynge in the reuerence & wor-
shipp of them & all people that came thyder.
And sohan this marriage and feast was
done & the erle & the byshop & all theyr meny
toke theyr leue of the lord & lady & came
home agayne into Englonde in safete
thanked be god. ¶ And in the v. yere of
kyng Henryes regne the lord Thomas
his sone went ouer see & the erle of Kent
& many other lordes & knyghtes wth men
of armes and archers & grete nombre to
chauncy the rebelles that afore had done
moche harme to our englyshmen & mar-
chauntes & to many towncs & portes in
Englonde on the see coast. And the lord
Thomas the kynges sone came into Fla-
ndres before a towne that is called Broule
amonge all the shippes of dyuers nacions
that were there & after there they rode
wth theyr shippes amonge them and
went on land & spoyled them there two
dayes & came agayne to theyr shippes &
toke the hyde see & there they mette w
the Carackes of Bone that were laden w
dyuers marchandyses & well manned &
they fought togyder longe tyme but the
englyshmen had the victory & brought the
Carackes into the Cambrise before Wyn-
chester and there they ranted all these
goodes and one of these Carackes was
specially bent there. And the lordes and

they people turned them home agayne
 & went no farther at þe tyme. ¶ And in þe
 same tyme Werle person of kynge Ry-
 chardes robes came in to Englonde out
 of Scotlande & tolde to dyuers people þe
 kynge Rycharde was on lyue in Scotlande
 & so moche people beleued his wordes/
 wherfor a grete parte of the people of þe
 realme were in grete errour & grutchyng
 agaynst the kyng through informacion
 of yres & fals leylinges þe this Werle had
 made. For moche people trusted & bele-
 ued in his sayenge. But at þe last he was
 taken in the northcountree & there by lawe
 iudged to be drawen through euery cite
 & good burgh towne in Englonde & so he
 was serued & at þe last he was brought
 to London to þe gyld hall before þe Justice
 & there he was iudged for to be brought
 to þe Courte of London & there to be layd
 on a hurbell & thā to be drawen through
 the cite of London to Tyburne & there to
 be hāged & than quartered & his heed
 smytten of & set on London brydge & his
 quarters to be sent to foure good townes
 of Englonde & there set by & thus was
 he rewarded for his fals treason. ¶ And
 in the fyrth yere of kynge Henryes regne
 the erle of Barre of Scotlande by safcon
 dupte came in to englonde to chalenge sye
 Comond erle of Kent to certayn courtes
 of warre on horsbacke. And so this cha-
 lenge was accepted & granted & þe place
 taken in Smythfelde at London. And this
 erle of Barre came proudly in to þe felde
 as his chalenge asked. And anon came
 in the erle of Kent & rode to the Scotte &
 manfully rode togyder wth sharpe speeres
 dyuers courtes but þe erle of Kent had þe
 felde & gawe hym moche worship and
 thanke of all maner men for his manfull
 dedes. ¶ And in þe .viij. yere of kynge Hen-
 ryes regne sye Richard Scrop archebys-
 hop of Yorke & þe erle Marshall of Eng-
 londe gaderd unto them a stronge power

agaynst kynge Henry. And the kyng be-
 ryngetherof in all the haste þe myght
 came with his power Southward & an-
 mette with them at York & there were
 these two lordes taken & brought to the
 kyng. And anon the iudges were set &
 these two lordes brought forth & there
 they were iudged to deth & bothe they
 heedes smytten of & there they made
 theyr ende on whose soules god for his
 pyte haue mercy Amē. And when this
 was done the kyng came to London a-
 gayn & there rested hym. In one god of
 his grete goodnes brought and shewed
 many grete myracles for this worthy
 clerke archebysshop of York that thus
 was done to deth. ¶ And in þe .viij. yere
 of kynge Henryes regne dame Lucie the
 dukes syster of Wylen came in to Eng-
 londe & so to London & there was wed-
 ded to sye Comond Holland erle of Kent
 in the pryory of saynt Mary ouerrys in
 Southwarke with moche solempnitye &
 grete worship. The kyng was there
 hymself & gawe her at þe church dore &
 when they were wedded & masse was
 done the kyng his owne pson brought
 & lad this worthy lady in to þe byshops
 place of Winchester & there was a won-
 ders grete feest holden to all maner peo-
 ple þe wolde come. ¶ And þe same yere sye
 Robert Anolles knyght a worthy war-
 ryour dyed at his manor in Norfolk &
 fro thens he was brought to London on
 a hors bere wth moche toyrhe light & so he
 was brought to þe whyte freres in flete
 strete & there was done & made for hym
 a solempne feest & a ryall enterment for
 those þe thyder wolde come bothe cyche &
 poore & there lyeth buryed by dame Co-
 stance his wyfe in þe myddes of the body
 of the chirche / on whose soule god haue
 mercy Amē. ¶ And in this same yere sir
 Thomas Rampton knyght Constable
 of the Courte of London was drawen

came in to þe felde an other man of armes
of the Heneffhals party / & agaynst him
came sy: Rycharde of Arundel knyght / &
the Heneff had þe better of hym on fote
in one poynt / for he brought hym on his
knee. And on the thyrde daye came in an
other man of armes in to þe felde / and a-
gaynst hym there came sy: John Come
wayte a knyght / & manly & knyghtly he
quyte hy in all maner poyntes agaynst
his aduersary / & had þe better in þe felde.
And on the fourth daye came an other
man of armes of Heneff in to the felde /
& agaynst him came sy: John Chaynes
sone / & manly quyte hym agaynst his
aduersary / for he cast hors & man in to þe
felde. And the kyng for his manhode at
that tyme dubbed hym knyght. And on
the fyfth daye there came an other man
of armes of the Heneffes party in to þe
felde / & to hym came sy: John Steward
knyght / & manfully he quyte him there
in all maner poyntes / & had the better.
And on þe fyfth daye after came an other
Heneff / & to hym came William Do-
cter squyer / & manfully he quyte hym / &
had the better in þe felde. And the kyng
dubbed hym knyght þe same tyme. And
on the seventh daye after came an other
man of armes of Heneff in to the felde /
& to him came John Standish squyer
and manfully he quyte hym on his ad-
uersary / & had the better of hym in the
felde / and þe kyng dubbed hym knyght
the same daye. And on þe same day came
an other man of armes of Heneff / and
to hym came a squyer of Gascoyne / and
proudy and maily he quyte hym on his
aduersary / & had the better of hym / and
anone the kyng dubbed hym knyght.
And on the viij. day came in to the felde
two men of armes of Heneff / & to them
came two folowpours of Calais whiche
were bretherne þe were called Burghes
and Well & manly quyte them on theyr

aduersaries / & had the better in þe felde.
And thus ended þe challenges with ma-
ny grete wooshyppes. And the kyng at
the reuerence of these worthy stratiges
made a grete fest / and gaue them ma-
ny ricche gyses. And thā they toke theyr
leue and went home agayne in to theyr
owne countrey. ¶ And in the. xj. yere of
kyng Henryes regne the fourth there
was a grete batayle done in Smythfelde
betwene two squyers / that one was cal-
led Glocestre that was appellaut / and
Arthur was the defendaut / and Well &
manly they fought toggyder longe tyme
And the kyng for theyr manlines and
of his grace toke theyr quarrell in to his
handes / and made them to go out of the
felde at ones / & so they were deuyded of
theyr batayle / and the kyng gaue them
grace. ¶ And the. xii. yere of kyng Hen-
ryes regne the fourth Ryche a squyer of
Wales that was a rebell a ryfel & sup-
porter to Owen of Glendore whiche dyd
moche destruction to the people of Wa-
les was taken & brought to London / &
there he came before the Justices / and
was dampned for his treason / & than he
was layde on an hurrell and so drawn
to Tyburne throughe the cite / & there he
was hanged & let downe agayne / & his
heed smytten of / and the body quartered
and sent to foure townes / & his heed set
vpon London byrdege. ¶ And in the. xiiij.
yere of kyng Henryes regne the dyed
sy: John Beauford þe erle of Somerset
that was capytayne of Calais / & was
buried at the abbey of the Toure byll-
on whose soule god haue mercy Amen.
¶ And in the same yere the lord Tho-
mas kyng Henryes sone wedded þe cou-
tesse of Somerset. ¶ And in this same
yere came the embassadours of Fraunce
in to Englonde fro the duke of Burgoyne
vnto the pryncer of Englonde kyng Hen-
ryes sone & heyrer for to haue helpe and

Heard of the of armes & archers against
the duke of Guyenne. And then went
out for the rule of Aquitaine / by Gilbert
Blundell / earl of Kent / & the lord Cob-
ham / by John Odbecell / & many other
good knyghtes & worthy squyers & men
of armes & good archers in to France / &
came to Parys to the duke of Burgoyne / &
there he receyved & welcomed these eng-
lysh lordes & all the other meyny. And
than it was done by to wyte the duke
of Guyenne was comen to saynt Clowe
fast by Parys wth a grete nomb^r of men
of armes & arbalastres / & thider went
our Englyshmen & fought with them /
& gaue the byrde of saynt Clowe / & there
they slew many Frenchmen and arba-
lastres / & the remenaunt fledde & wold no
longer abyde. And thā our englyshmen
came agayn to Parys / & there they toke
the keye of the duke & came safe agayne
in to Englonde / and the duke gaue them
grete gyftes. And anon after the duke of
Guyenne sent embassadours in to Eng-
londe to kyng Henry the. iiii. beserching
him of his helpe and socour agaynst his
deedly enemy the duke of Burgoyne. And
than the kyng made Thomas his sone
duke of Clarence & his other sone John
duke of Bedford / & his other sone Wil-
frey duke of Gloucester / and by Thomas
Beauforde earl of Dorset / and the duke of
Brenmarke he made duke of York. And
than the kyng ordeyned his sone by Thomas
duke of Clarence / for Thomas beauf-
orde earl of Dorset / & by John Comyngham
with many other lordes knyghtes and
squyers & men of armes & archers for to
go out see in to France in helpynge and
strengthenynge of the duke of Guyenne.
And these worthy lordes wth theyr ret-
tyns shipped at Hamton & sailed ouer the
see in to Flandres / & landed at Hogges.
And there mette wth them the lordes of Ham-
b^r & theyr lordynge wth. vii. M. men of

armes of Frenchmen & the fregeates
of armes wth them / & all were put to
flyght / & of them were take. vii. C. men
of armes & .iiij. C. boylers / without those
that were wayne in the felde. And so they
rode forth throug^h out all France & toke
castles & towones & slew many French-
men that withstode them / and toke ma-
ny prisoners as they rode / and so they
passed forth tyll they came to Burdeux
and there they rested them a whyle and
set the countree in peas / & rested tyll the
byrnage were redy to sayle. And than the
duke with his meyny came home in to
Englonde in safete thā he wold be god. And
in the same yere was the kynges coppe
chaunged throug^h out Englonde by the
kyng & his counseyle / that is to saye the
noble / halfe noble / & fowthynge of golde.
And in the. xiiij. yere of kyng Henrys
regne the fourth / he let make galas of
warre / for he hoped to haue passed the
grete see / & so forth to Jerusalem / & there
to haue ended his lyfe / but god byspered
hym soone after wth infirmitie & grete seke-
nes / that he myght not well endure no
whyle / so feeuently he was taken and
brought in bed at Westmynster in a fayre
chambre. And as he lay in his bed he as-
ked his chamberlayne what he called the
chambre the he lay in. And he answered &
sayd Jerusalem. And than he sayd the
prophecy sayd the he shold make an ende
the yere in Jerusalem. And than he made hym
redy vnto god and bysposed all his wyll
And soone after he died / & was caried by
water fro Westmynster in a barge vnto
Feuerham / & fro thens he was carped
to Caisterbury by londe wth moche tozche
lyght byrnyng in to the abbey of Chyche-
ster / & there he was entered & buried
besyde saynt Thomas of Caisterburys
shyrre. And thus ended the worthy kyng
Henry about mylent sondaye in the yere
of our lorde a. M. CCCC. and. xiiij. vpon

Whose soule god haue mercy. Amen.

Martin p. b. was pope after John
xiii. yere. This man was chosen
by the concyle of Constance / & the other
were deposed & stroue / & so came peas in
the churche the which longe tyme afore
was despyed & necessary for p defence of
the fayth. This was p myghtyest pope
that euer was of tyches / & a grete iudge
he edified townes / walles / stretes / & he
destroied heresy / & he did moche good
throughe the noble pryncce Sygysmund.
And he gadred moche money for to gete
p holy londe agayn / but deeth came vpon
hym & letted hym / & he made a counseyle
afore his deeth for that mater / & there he
decesed. ¶ Eugenius was pope after
Martin. xvi. yere. This Eugeny was
chosen peasibly after the deeth of Mar-
tin / & no man doubted but he was pope
But shortly after he was expelled from
Rome / for it was so that he fledde naked
Also he was cited to the concyle of Bas-
ilers & deposed / but he charged hym not
And for that began p stryfe agayne / the
which stode to his deeth / & those that fa-
uoured hym sayd he was worthy moche
louynge / & the contrary sayd those that
were agaynst hym / but what someuer
he was after he had taken the dignite
vpon hym / afore he was of grete absty-
nence & of good fame / & that he dyd after
that I leue to the iudgement of god.

¶ Circa annu dñi. M. CCC. xiiij.

Of kynge Henry the fyfth that
was kynge Henryes sone.

And after the deeth of king Henry
the fourth reigned kynge Henry
his sone that was borne at Monmouth
in Wales / that was a worthy kyng & a
gracious man and a grete conquerour.
And in p fyrst yere of his regne for grete

loue and goodnes he sent to the sterres of
Langley there as his father had do bury
kynge Rycharde the secunde / and let take
his body out of the erth agayn / & dyd do
bygge it to Westmynstre in a spall chare
couered with blacke velvet and banners
of dyuers armes about / & all the hoyses
drawing p chare were trapped in blacke
and beten with dyuers armes / & many
a torche brennyng by all the waye tyll
he came to Westmynstre / & there he let
make for hym a spall and a solempne en-
terement / & buried hym by quene Anne
his wyfe / as his owne desyre was / on p
further syde of saynt Edwardes shyrne
in p abbey of saynt Peters of Westmyn-
ster / vpon whose soule god haue mercy.

¶ And in this same yere were certayne
lollers taken & fals heretykes p had pur-
posed throughe false treason for to haue
slayne our kyng / & for to haue destroyed
all the clergy of p realme / & they myghe
haue had theyr false purpose. But our
lorde god wolde not suffre it / for in haste
our kyng had warnynge therof & of all
theyr fals ordinaunce & workynge / & came
soderly with his power to save Johns
withouth synthfride / & anon they toke a
certayn of the lollers & fals heretykes / &
brought them to p kynges presence / and
there they tolde all theyr fals purpose &
ordynaunce how they wolde haue done &
brought / yf they myght haue reigned &
had theyr wyll / & there they told which
were theyr capytayns & gournours / &
than p king comaunded them to the toun
of London / & than toke moe of them bothe
wim p cite & wout / & sent the to Newgate
& to bothe Costers. And than they were
brought in examination afore p clergy &
the kynges Justices / & there they were
couerte for theyr fals heresy / & dampned
before p Justice for theyr fals treason / &
this was theyr iudgement / p they wolde
be dyaunen fro p toun of London to saint

There was a there to be hangen & bent
on a gallows. And there was taken by
the king Henry the fifth for her self & the for
treason against the king & the realm: & he
was a man of the king & was comit for his
her self to be hanged & hanged before the
justice to be taken from the court of
London through the city to laynt Giles
felde & to be hanged & bent. And in the
seconde year of king Henryes regne he
held a counseile of all the lordes of the realm
at Westmynster & there he put hym this
demander & prayed & besought them of
the goodnes & of the good counseile &
good wyll to shewe hym as touchyng the
right & the right that he had to Normandy
Gascon & Guyen the whiche the king of
France whiche wrongfully & unrightfully
the whiche his ancestres before hym
had by true right of conquest & right heri-
tage the whiche Normandy Gascon &
Guyen the good king Edward of Wynde-
sor & his ancestres before hym had hol-
den all the tyme. And his lordes ga-
ve hym counseile to sende embassadours
to the king of France & his counseile that
he shold give by unto hym his right heri-
tage that is to say Normandy Gascon &
Guyen the whiche his predecessours had
holden afore hym or els he shold it wyne
with strengthe of swerde in shorte tyme
with the helpe of almighty god. And than
the Dolphyn of France answered to our
embassadours & sayd in this maner that
the king was over yonge & to tender of
age to make any warre as agaynst hym &
was not lyke yet to be a good warrpoure
to do & make suche a conquest there upon
hym. And somwhat in stome & despyte
he sent to hym a tonne full of tenes balles
because he shold have somwhat to playe
withall for hym & for his lordes for that
he shold become hym better than to make
any warre. And than anone our lordes
the embassadours toke the tyme le-

ue & came into Englonde agayne & tolde
the king & his counseile of the ungoodly
answere that they had of the Dolphyn & of
the present that whiche he had sente to our
king. And when the king had herde
the wordes & the answer of the Dolphyn
he was wondrous sore agrieved & ryght
evyll apayed towarde the frenschmen &
towarde the king & the Dolphyn and
thought to avenge hym on them as soone
as god wold sende hym grace & myght
And anone let make tenes balles for the
Dolphyn in all the haste that he myght &
they were grete gonstones for the Dol-
phyn to playe withall. And than anone
the king sent for all the lordes & helde a
grete counseile at Westmynster & told to
them the answer that they had of the Dol-
phyn & of his worthy present that he sent to
hym & to his lordes to playe withall. And
there the king & his lordes were accorded
that they shold be redy in armes with theyr
power in the best arraye that myght be done
and gete all the men of armes & archers
that myght be gotten & all other stuffe that
longed to warre & to be redy with all theyr
revenue to mete at Southhampton by
Lamasse nexte folowynge without any
delaye. Wherfore the king ordeyned his
navy of shippes with all maner stuffe &
bytyle that lodged to suche a warrpoure
of all maner ordynance in the haven of
Southhampton to the nombre of CCC.
and xx. sayles. And thā fell there a grete
dyscalle and a foule myschefe. For there
were the lordes whiche that the king
trusted moche on & through false coun-
seile they had purposed & ymagined the
kynge deth & thought to have slayne
hym & all his brotherne or he had taken
the see whiche the lordes were named
thus the firste was the erle of Cambridg
broder to the duke of York the seconde was
the lord Scrope tresourer of Englonde the
thyrde was sir Thomas Gray knyght of

the North costre. And these the lordes
also sayd for lucre of money had made a
promesse vnto þe frenschmen for to haue
sayne kyng Henry the fifth and all his
betherne by a false trayne hope only of
they had ben ware. But almyghty god
of his grete grace helde his holy hande
ouer them & saued them from these pe-
rillous meyn. And for to haue done this
they receyued of þe frenschmen a myllion
of gold. & that was there openly proued
And for they fals treason they were all
thye iudged to deth. & this was þe iudges
ment that they sholde be ladde through
Hampton & without northgate there to
be heded. And thus they ended they ly-
ues for they fals couetse and treason.
And anone as this was done the kyng
& all his meyn made them redy & went
to hypppe and sayled forth with. xv. hon-
dred hyppes. & arriued within Deyne
at Wyborne vpon our ladyes euen the
Assumpcion in Fozmandy w all his or-
dynaunce. & so went forth to Harflet. & he
besyged the towne all about by lande &
also by water. & sent to the capytayne of
the towne & charged hym to deliuer the
towne. And þe capytayne sayd that he de-
liuered hym none. ne none he wolde hy
yelde. but hadde hym do his best. And
than our kyng layde his ordinaunce vnto
the towne. that is to saye. gonnes. engy-
nes & tripgettes. and shotte & cast at the
walles & eke at the towne. & cast downe
bothe toures & towne & layde them on þe
erth. & there he played at the tenes with
his hard gonne stones. And they þe were
within þe towne whan they sholde playe
they longe way well away & alas that
ruer any suche tenes balles were made.
& cursed al tho þe warre began. & þe tyme
that euer they were boyn. And on the
moowe þe kyng let crye at euery gate of
the towne that euery man sholde be redy
on the moowe cry to make assaue to þe

towne. And William Boucher & John
Gast with. xj. other worthy burgeises
came to the kyng & besought hym of his
ryall pryncethode & power to withstande
his malice & destruccyon that he dyd to
them. and besought hym of. viij. dayes
respyte & trespase yf any rescouer myght
come to them. & eis to yelde by þe towne
to hym w all they goodes. And than the
kyng sent forth þe capytayne & kepte the
remenaunt styll w hym. And þe lord Gau-
corte þe was capytayne of þe towne went
forth to Roen in all þe haste vnto the Dol-
phyn for helpe & socour. but there was
none ne no man of rescouer. for the Dol-
phyn wolde not abyde. And thus this ca-
pytaine came agayne vnto the kyng &
yelded by þe towne & deliuered hym the
keys. And than he called his vncle þe erle
of Dorset & made hym capytayne of the
town of Harflet. & deliuered him þe keys
& bad hy go & put out all þe frensch people
bothe men womē & children. & stuffe his
town of Harflet w englyshe people. And
than þe kyng sente in to Englode & let crye
in euery good town of Englode. þe what
crafty mā wolde come thider & enhabyte
hym there in þe town he shold haue hous
& household to hy & to his heyyes for euer
more. And thider went many marthan-
tes & crafty mē. & enhabytet them there
to strengthe the towne. & were welcome.
And whā þe kyng sawe þe this town was
well stuffed bothe of bytayles & of men.
this worthy pryncer toke his leue & went
toward Calays by lond. & þe frenschmen
herde of his comynge. they thought for
to haue stopped hy his waye þe sholde
not passe that waye. in all þe haste þe they
myght brake al þe bridges where as any
passage was for hoys & man. in so moche
that there myght no man passe ouer the
ryuers neyther on hoys ne on fote. but yf
he shold haue ben drowned. And therfore
our kyng w all his people went & fought

his way sette by toward Paris / & there
was all þe reall power of France assem-
bled & ready to gyue hym batayle / & to
destroie all his people. But almyghty
god was his guyde & saued hym & all his
meyny / & defended hym of his enemyes
power & purpose thanked be god þe saued
so his owne kyngh & kynge in his ryght
full tyme. And than our kynge beholding
þe leynge þe grete multitude & nombre of
his enemyes to withstande his waye &
gyue hym batayle. Than the kynge w^{as}
inche herte & a good spiryte lyfte by his
handes to almyghty god / & besought hym
of his helpe / & þe daye to saue his true ser-
uautes. Than our kynge gathered all his
lordes & other people aboute & bad them
al to be of good chere / for they shold haue
a fayre & a gracious victory & the better
of all they enemyes / & prayed them to
make the redy to þe batayle / for he wolde
rather dye þe daye in the felde / than to be
taken of his enemyes / for he wolde neuer
put þe realme of Englonde to ransom for
his persone. And þe duke of Yorke fell on
his knees & besought þe kynge of a bone / þe
he wolde graunt hym þe daye þe backward
in his batayle / & the kynge graunted hym
his askyng / and sayd gramercy colyn of
yorke / & prayed hym to make hym redy.
And than badde he euery man to ordeyn
hym a stake of tre & sharpe bothe endes
that þe stake myght be pyght in þe erth a
slope / that they enemyes shold not ouer-
come them on horsback / for þe was they
fais purpose / & arayed them for to ouer-
ryde our meynye lodeyns at the first co-
mynge on of them at þe first brunt. And al
the nyght before þe batayle þe frenschmen
made many grete fyres & moche reuel
with howting & shewing / & played our
kynge & his lordes at þe dyse / & an archer
allwaye for a blanke of they money / for
they wend al had be theys. The morne
daye þe daye gan sprynge / & the kynge by

good aduysse let asape his batayle & his
wordes / & charged euery man to kepe
them hole together / & prayed them all to
be of good chere. And when they were re-
dy he asked what tyme of þe daye it was
& they said myne. Than sayd our kynge
now is good tyme / for al englonde prayeth
for us / & therefore be of good chere & let us
go to our iourney. And then he sayd in an
hipe voyce / in the name of almyghty god
& saynt George auant baner / & saynt Ge-
orge this daye thyne help. And than the
frenschmen came pychynge downe as
they wolde haue ouer rydden all our mey-
ny / but god and our archers made them
ryght soone to stamble / for our archers
shotte neuer arrowe amysse / but it per-
shed & brought to þe grounde bothe hors &
man / for they shotte þe daye for a wager.
And our stakes made them topple ouer
terre & the one ouer ouer / þe they laye on
hepes two spere length of heyghe. And
our kynge w^{as} his meyny & with his men
of armes & archers þe charged on them so
thynke with arrowes & layde on w^{as} stakes.
And our kynge with his handes fought
manly þe daye. And thus almyghty god
& saynt George brought our enemyes to
grounde / & gaue us that daye the victory.
There were slayne of frenschmen þe daye
in þe felde of Agincourt more than .xi. .th.
Without prysoners þe were take / & there
were nombred that daye of frenschmen
in the felde more than fyve score. .x. .th. But
god that daye fought for us. And after
came there spynges to our kynge that
there was a newe batayle of frenschmen
ordred redy for to sle on hym & came
towardes hym. And anon our kynge let
crye that euery man sholde see his pry-
soners that he had taken / & anon araye
the batayle agayne redy to fyght with
the frenschmen. And when the frensch-
men sawe that our men killed more
they prysoners / than they withdrew

them & make theyr batayle and al theyr
arraye. And thus our kyng as a worthy
conquerour had that daye the victory in
the feilde of Agincourt in Pycardy. And
than our kyng returned agayn wher
as the batayle was / for to se what peo-
ple were sayne of Englyshmen / and of
our there were butte þ they myght be holpen
And there were deed in þ feilde the duke
of Berry / the duke of Gloucestre / the duke
of Brabant / the erle of Sauoigne these
countable of France / and. viij. other erles
and the archbishop of Saunce / and of
good barons an. C. and mo. & of worthy
knights of grete alysaunce of cote ar-
mures. xv. hundred. And of Englyshmen
were deed þ daye the good duke of Yorke
and the erle of Suffolke / and of all other
Englyshmen there were not deed pas-
syng. xx. vij. hundred thanked be god. And
this batayle was on a frydaye / whiche
was saynt Cristyane & Crispinians day
in the moneth of October / & anon the
kyng commaunded to bury them / and the
duke of Yorke to be carryed forth w hym
& the erle of Suffolke. And there were
prysoners þ duke of Brytayne / the duke
of Burbon / the erle of Vendome / the erle
of Cibe / the erle of Richemond & sy. Bur-
gunde marshall of France / & many other
worthy lordes were taken there in this
batayle of Agincourt & were brought to
the towne of Calais / & so ouer the see w
the kyng in to Englonde & landed at Bo-
luer in Kent w all his prysoners in safetye
thanked be almyghty god / & so came to
Casterbury & offered at saynt Thomas
shyrne. And so forth he rode through the
countie of Kent the next waye to Citham
& there he rested tyll that he wolde come
to London. And than the Shyre of Lon-
don / the aldermen & Sheryues w all þ co-
muners & craftes came to þ blacke heth
well & moostly arrayed to welcome our
kyng wth dyuers melodyes / & thanked

almyghty god of his gracious victorye
that he shewed for hym. And so þ kyng &
his prysoners passed forth by them tyll he
came to saynt Thomas of Watering / &
there mette w hym all religious men w
processyon & welcomed hym. And so the
kyng came ryding wth his prysoners
through þ cite of London / wher as was
shewed many a sayre syght at all þ con-
dythes & at þ crosse in chepe as in heuen-
ly arraye of angels / archangels / patriar-
kes / prophetes & byrgyn / w diuers me-
lodyes senyng & syngynge to welcome
the kyng / & all the conditshes rennyng
wth hym / & the kyng passed forth to
saynt Pauls / & there mette w þ. xiiij.
bysshops reuisted & mytred w sensers to
welcome the kyng / & there they songe
for his gracious victorye Te deu lauda-
mus. And there the kyng offered / & after
toke his hors & rode to Westmyster / &
than the Shyre toke his leue of þ kyng
& rode home agayne. And in þ thyrde
yere of kyng Henrys reigne þ fyfth came
the emperour of Maynyn kyng of Rome
& of Hungary in to Englonde / & so to þ cite
of London. And the Shyre & the alder-
men w the Sheryues & worthy craftes of
London by the kynges comaundement
mette w hym on the blacke heth in þ best
aray that they coude on hoysbacke. And
there they welcomed hym & brought h
to London wth muche honour & grete
reuerence. And at saynt Thomas of Wa-
terynge there mette w hym the kyng w
all his lordes in good aray. And there
was a worthy metyng betwene þ empe-
rour & kyng Henry þ fyfth / & there they
kysed togyder & embraced eche other / &
than þ kyng toke þ emperour by þ hande
& so they came ryding through þ cite of
London unto saynt Pauls / & there they
myghted & offered / & all þ bysshops stode
reuisted w sensers in theyr handes sen-
synge to them. And than they toke theyr

hastid a rode to Westmynstre. And the kynge lodged the emperour in his olde palace. and there he rested hym a grette while. & all at þe kynge's cost. And soone after came þe duke of Holland in to Englonde to come & se þe emperour & speke wþ hym & wour kynge Henry of Englonde. & he was wourthwyl receyved & lodged in the byllshops Inn of Cip. & all at þe kynge's cost. And whan the emperour had well rested hym & seen þe londe in dyuers partyes & knowe the comodities. than by procelle of tyme he toke his leue of the kynge. but or he wente he was made a knyght of the garter. & receyved a waite the lyuier. And thā he thanked þe kynge & all his lordes. And than the kynge & he went ouer þe see to Calais & abode there longe tyme to haue an answer of the frenche kynge. & at the last it came and pleased hyf ryght nought. And so þe emperour toke his leue of þe kynge & passed south in goddes name. & our kynge came ouer agayn in to Englonde in all þe haste that he myght. & þe was on saynt Lubes euen that he came to Lambeth. & on the mondaye nexte after he came in to þe parliament at Westmynstre. ¶ In þe same yere was a grette berth of corne in englonde. but thāhed be god it lasted not longe.

And in the fourth yere of kynge Henryes reigne þe fyfthe he helde his parliament at Westmynstre in þe gynnyng of October. & lasted to the purification of our lady than nexte after. And there was graunted vnto hym to mapweyn his warres bothe of þe spirytualite & of the temporallite an hole tax & a duty. And than anone þe kynge passed wþ his lordes to make them redy for to foughth þe wþ his ryght. And anone he made a septe retynue. & charged all his men to be redy at Hamton in whyle. And whan nexte after he went any day.

And there the kynge made þe duke of Bedford protector & defender of his realme of Englonde in his absence. & charged hym to kepe his lordes and maynteyne bothe spirytual & temporal. And whan the kynge had thus done & let all thyng in his kynde. on saynt Georges daye he toke his hors at Westmynstre & came ryding to Hamton. & there he offred & toke his leue. & so rode south througþ þe cuntryng his leue of all maner of people. as well of poore as of riche. prayenge them all in generall to praye for hyf. And so he rode forth to saynt Georges. & there offred & toke his leue of the daye. charginge hym to kepe well his chambie. And so he rode forth to Hamton. & there abode tyll his retynue were redy & come for there was all his nauy & shippes in his ordynance gathered togyder and well husshed as longed to suche a ryall kynge wþ all maner of bytayles for suche a ryall copany as wel for hors as for man as longed for suche a warrour. that is to say gonnes. tripplites. engynes. solmes. battyles. byddges of lether. scalyng ladders. mallets. spades. mouelles. pyhes. paureys. bolmes & arrows. bowstringes & tonnes. chelles & pppes full of arrows as needed for suche a worthy warrour that no thyng was to lerte whā tyme came. thyder came to hyf shippes laden wþ gonnes & gonpowder. And whan this was redy & his retynue came. the kynge & all his lordes wþ all his ryall host went to shyppe & toke þe see & layled into Gournaby. & landed at Touner upon a masse baye than nexte after. & there he made a bilt. wþ gonnes at his landing. & than þe kynge heryng of many enemyes upon the see. that is to say. the grete Calakes. barker galleys & shippes þe were comyng to destroy his nauy. And anone he comadored þe rile of marche to be cheff chetecagne. & many other worthy lordes



[The text in this column is extremely dark and illegible, appearing as a solid black block.]

[The text in this column is also extremely dark and illegible, appearing as a solid black block.]



full glad / & so they went forth in haste & hope / & gooder & the place / & the kyng & his counseile had assigned / & they quyte them as good warryours to the kyng. Now will I tell you whiche were / & these captaynes & gouernours of / & cite of Bourn. Upon / Guy butler was cheif captayn bothe of / & cite & of the castell. Upon / Termegan he was captayn of port de laur. Upon / de la Roche was captayn of / & deluers. Upon / Anthony was leutenant to / Guy Butler. Henry Chastellen was captayn of the porte de la ponne. John Dantre was captayn of the porte de la castell. Upon / de laur was captayn of the porte de launt Dylart. The ballathe of / & Cyns he was captayn of the porte Martenulle. And graud Jakes a may cheif warryour he was captayn of all men of armes / and he was gouernour outward bothe on horsbacke and on foot of all men of armes whiche they pillied out of the cite of all / & portes he them arayed as they shoulde encounter in our meyn. And eche of the capitaynes hadde. ii. / & men of armes / and some moo. And at / & first compynge of our kyng there were nombred by heraldes unto. CCC. / & of men and women and chyldren / what poynt & othe. And amonge all these was many a mayfull man of his handes / & so they moued them whan they passed out of the cite bothe on horsbacke and on foot / for they came neuer at one gate gate alone / but at thre or foure gates / and at every gate two or thre thousand of good meyns haden armed and manfully encountered in our Englyshmen / & moche people layne dyngs tymes in gonnes / quarrells & other ordynance. And this siege durd. x. weekes / and euer they of the towne trusted to haue ben released / but they came none. And at the last they kepte so longe the towne that there dyd

many a thousande within the towne for default of meat of men & women & chyldren / for they had eten theyr horses / dogges and cattes that were in the towne. And oftentimes / & men of armes shoute out the poore people at the gates of the towne for spending of vitayles / & amonge our Englyshmen shoute them in to the towne agayne. So at the last the captayn of the towne sawe the myschefe / & that they were not released / & also the scarcete of vitayle / and that the people dyed for default of meat eury daye many thousandes / & also sawe poynt chyldren lye lyke as they had souked theyr mothers pappes and therre deyd. Than anon they sent to the kyng beseyching hym of his grace & mercy / and brought the keys of the towne unto / & kyng & dehytted the towne to hym / & all the shuyours boyded the towne in theyr houses & harnays / & the comyns of / & towne for to abyde & dwell still in / & towne / yerry to paye to hys & to his successors for all maner customes & see farmes & quatermes. And than the kyng entered in to the towne / & rested hym in the castell tyll the towne was set in rule & in gouernance.

Howe the kyng of Englonde was made inherytour & regent of fraunce / and how he wedded quene Katherine.

As anon after that Bourn was gotten / Depe & many othe to / & nes in baird Roymandy gaue them our without stroke or syege whan they vnderstode / & the kyng had gotte Bourn. Also this yere had ben a peas made & swome betwene / & duke of Burgoyne & the Wolapbyn / whiche were swome on goddes body that they shoulde loue & assyst eche other agaynst theyr enemyes. And after this contrary to this othe / the duke John of Burgoyne was layne and ptreuly

holy churche / in so ferforth that whan he was anoynted he sayd the seruyce with the prest / & at the verse of the psalme of *Miserere mei deus*. that was *Benigne fac fac in bona voluntate tua syon*: he cōfessetur muri hierusalem. he hadde tary there and sayd thus. O good lord. thou knowest that myn entent hath ben / & yet is / yf I might lyue to redifye þe wallis of Jerusalem. And than the prest proceeded forth & made an ende. And anone after this moost noble prince & victoruous kyng flour in his tyme of chrystruchynairy / whome all the worlde doubted / gaue his soule in to the handes of god & dyed & made an ende of his naturall lyfe at the foresayd Boys de Wincene helyde *Parys the. xxxvi. yere* of his age / vpon whose soule god haue mercy. Amen.

Then was the body enbawmed & cerryd & layde in a ryall chare / & an ymage lyke to hym was layde vpon the corpes open with diuers banners / & horses couered with the armes of Englobe & Fraunce & also the olde armes of saynt Edward saynt Edmond & other / with grete multitude of torches / with whome went þe kyng of Scotland & many other lordes whiche accompanied the body tyl it came into Westmynstre by London in Englonde. And in euery towne by þe waye he had solempnely his Dirige on the euen and masse on the morow / & moche almes was gyuē to poore people by the waye. And the. vii. daye of Nouember after þe corpes was brought through London with grete reuerence and solempnitye to Westmynstre where as he now lyeth / it was worshipfully buried / & after was layde in his tombe a ryall ymage lyke hymself of gyllt & gilt / whiche was made at þe cost of quene Katheryn. And thus ended and is entered & buried the noble kyng Henry the fyfth / on whose soule and all chrysten soules god haue mercy. Amen.

Of the lamer of kyng Henry the fyfth and what he ordeyned for kyng Richard and for hymselfe after his deeth.

There is to be noted that this kyng Henry þe fyfth was a noble pryncer after he was kyng & crowned / how be it before in his youth he had ben wythe recheles & spared no thyng of his lust ne besyres / but accomplished them after his lykyng. But as soone as he was crowned / anoynted and sacred / anone so deynly he was charged in to a newe man & set all his entent to lyue betrouously in maynteynyng of holy churche / destroyenge of heresykes / keepyng Justice & defendyng of his realme & subgettes. And for as moche as his fader had depoted by his labour the good kyng Richard / & ppytously made hym to dye / & for the offence done to him agaynst his leggaunce he had sent to Rome to be assayed thereof / for which offence our holy fader þe pope enioyned hym to make hym to be prayed for perpetually / & lyke as he had done to be taken fro hym his naturall lyfe / therfore he sholde do soude. iii. capers to burn perpetually about his body / that for the extynction of his bodily lyfe / his soule may euer be remembered & lyue in heuen in spiritual lyfe. And also þe sholde euery weke on the daye as it came about of his deeth haue a solepne masse of Requies & on the euen afore a Dirige with. ii. l. songs / & a dole to poore people allway on þe daye of. xi. wyllinges &. viii. pēns to be deled peny mele / & ones in þe yere at his annyversary his enteremet to be holden in the moost honest wyse / & to be deled þe daye. xx. poude in pēns to poore people / & to euery monthe. xx. wyllinges / whiche all these thynges perfourmed this noble kyng for his fader. for kyng Henry the fourth his fader perfourmed it not duringe his lyfe / whome as it was sayd

god created and thus a kyng to be dyed.
 And thus the noble pryncer he do call
 all the abbottes & priores of saynt De-
 metres orde in Englands & had them in
 the chapter house of Westmynster for the
 reformation of the orde. Wherin he had
 compynacyon / & also with byshoppes &
 men of the spirituallite / in so feruour that
 they doubted nye þ he wold have had þ
 tempesters out of theyr habes / wher-
 fore by the shurle labours & procuring
 of the spirituallite encouraged the kyng
 for to challenge Normandy & his ryght in
 Fraunce / to the entent to set hym a werke
 there / that he shold not seke occasyons to
 entre in to suche matters. And al his tyme
 after he laboured in þ werres in conque-
 ring a grete parte of þ realme of Fraunce
 that by the agreement of the kyng Char-
 les he had all the gouernance and rule
 of the realme of Fraunce / & he was pro-
 claimed regent & heyr of Fraunce. And
 so notwithstanding for all this grete
 warre that he had / yet he remembred
 his soule / and also that he was mortall
 and must dye / for whiche he ordeyned
 by his tyme the place of his sepul-
 ture where he is buried / and there is
 euery daye thre masses perpetually sungen
 in a chapel ouer his sepulture / of
 whiche the myghte masse and the tyme
 & the last masse shall be as it is assigne
 by hym / as it appereth by these verses
 folowynge.

Henrici mille quinti sunt hic tabulate.

Que successore sunt p monachos celebra.

Exe dñica.

(te.

Prima sit assuper de scito virginis alme
 Postea postrema qd de morte resurgēs.

Exe secunda.

Prima salutate de scito virginis extat
 Postea de scito laude postrema chapelis

Exe tertia.

Ulti de uari de virginis prima fatetur.

Commenat uari de uari uari maria.

Exe quarta.

Prima celebrat ad honore pneumatiz alme
 Ultima concepta demerit esse maria.

Exe quinta.

Semp prima coli debet de corpore xpi.
 Ultima sit facta de virginis purificata.

Exe sexta.

Concedet de prima celebrat de cruce scit
 Semp salutare fiet postrema marie.

Exe sabbato.

Des ad scito est prima colenda dignos
 Ultima de requie / p defunctis perit esse
 Semp erit media de proprietate dici.

And yet the noble kyng Henry þ fyfth
 founded two houses of religyon / that one
 is called Wyon belyde Wyatford of the
 orde of saynt Brigitte bothe of men and
 women. And on þ other syde of the riuer
 of Campe a house of monkes of Char-
 terhous / in whiche two places he is con-
 tynually prayed for nyght and daye / for
 ever whan they of Wyon receth they of
 the Charterhous do they scrupce / & in
 lyke wyse whan they of þ Charterhous
 receth the other gothe to / and by syn-
 ginge of the belles of epyer place eche
 knoweth whan they haue ended they
 scrupce / whiche be nobly endowed / & do
 dayly there grete almes dedes / as in the
 Charterhous certeyn chydren be soude
 to stole / & at Wyon certeyn almes gyuen
 dayly. And yet belyde all this he founded
 a recluse whiche shall be alway a priest
 to praye for him by þ sayd Charterhous
 which priest is sufficiently endowed for
 by þ & a seruante. And here may all prynces
 take ensample by this noble pryncer that
 reigned so lytell tyme / not fully .x. yere / &
 dyd so many noble actes as well for his
 soule to be perpetually prayed for / as in
 his mortall requies / & he beyng of his
 most lusty age despyred & eschewed synne
 & was a grete iustice / in so moche þ al þ
 prynces of christedom dyd hym & also of

londe. But soone after he was sayne to
returne home agayne in to Englonde &
lefte his wyfe & all his tresour & he had
brought in hym in a towne that is called
Spouns in Frenaud / whiche promysed
for to be true to hym. Afterward hapnyng
they deliuered the lady unto & duke of
Burgoyne / whiche sent her to Gaunt / &
from thens she escaped in a manes clo-
thyng & came in to zelande to a towne of
her owne called Brizze / & fro thens she
wente to a towne in Hollande called the
Gome / & there she was stronge ynough
and withstode & forsayd duke of Bur-
goyne. And soone after & duke of Glo-
cestre sent ouer see in to zelande the lord
fitzwater with certayn men of warre
and archers for to helpe & socour & for-
sayd duchesse of Hollade / whiche landed
at a place in zelande called Breders ha-
uen / where the lordes of & countree came
downe & fought with hym / & in conclu-
sion he was sayne to withdraue hym
& his company to & see agayne. But yet
he dwelt & hurte byuers lordes & moche
people of the same countree / & so returned
home agayne into Englonde in his com-
pany / & preyntyled no thyng. And also
this same yere & erle of Saleisbury / &
erle of Suffolke / & lord Wyllbye / & the
lord Seales with theyr retynue layde
syege to the cite of Agouns / the whiche
cite was yolden to them in many other
stronge towne & castels in & nombre of
xxvi. This ynter all Frenaud & a
grete parte of fraunce unto Olyuier
was vnder the obeyssaunce of & kynge of
Englonde / & all the remenaunt of fraunce
was in grete trybulacyon & myschere.

How there was lyke to haue ben a
grete fraye bytwene the cardynal and
the duke of Glocestre. And of the coro-
nacyon of kynge Henry the fyrth bothe
in Englonde and in fraunce.

In the fourth yere & same nyght &
the mayre of London John Cour-
tre had taken his charge / was a grete
watche in London for a fraye that was
bytwene & byshop of Wyndchestre & the
duke of Glocestre protectour. &c. For the
mayre w the people of & cite wold abyde
by the duke of Glocestre as protectour &
defendour of & realme. But by labour of
lordes that went bytwene / & in especial
by the labour of & pryncce of Berengale
there was a poyntement taken & there
was no harme done. And after & ba-
taye of Vernoye in Berche the duke of
Bedford came ouer in to Englonde. And
on Whytsonday this same yere at Ley-
cestre he dubbed kynge Henry knyght.
And forth with & sayd kynge Henry dub-
bed all these knyghtes whose names fo-
loweth / & is to wyte / & Rycharde duke
of Yorke / also & sone & heyr of & duke of
Bedforke / the erle of Oxford / the erle of
Westmerlonde / the sone & heyr of & erle
of Northumberland / & sone & heyr of &
erle of Armond / & lord Roos / & Jamys
butteler / the lord Marruas / & Henry
gray of Tankerulle / & William Acup /
lord Falconbrigg / & George Acup /
lord Latimer / the lord Welles / & lord
Berke / & sone & heyr of & lord Talbot /
& Rafe gray of Werke / & Robert bert /
& Rycharde gray / & Edmond Ronger-
ford / & Robert Winkfeld / & John but-
ler / & Raynold Cobba / & John pass-
ley / & Thomas Tunstall / & John chi-
dich / & Rafe langford / & William dury /
& William ap Thomas / & Rycharde
Carbonell / & Rycharde Wydrylle / &
John Shudclote / & William cheryn / &
William babington / & John anne / &
Gylbert Beauchamp. Also in the .ii.
yere the duke of Bedford in the durchelle
his wyfe wente ouer see to Calais / & a
lytel before went ouer Henry byshop of
Wyndchestre. And on our lady daye An-

revelation in our lady church at Calais
the bishop of Wyndesore when he
had sung mass was made Cardinal
and he kneeling before the high altar
the duke of Bedford set his hatte upon his
head / & there were his bulles redde / as
well of his charge as of the reioyng
of his benefices spirytual & temporal.
¶ And this same yere was grete habou
dauce of rayne / that the substance of hey
& also of corne was destroyed / for it ray
ned almost every other day. ¶ And this
same yere good erle of Salysbury s^r
Thomas Pontague layde syege unto
Olyuice / at whiche syege he was slay
ne with a goune he came out of his colone
on whose soule god haue mercy / for syth
that he was slayne englyshe men neuer
gate ne preyed in Fraunce / but euer
after began to lese lytell & lytell / tyll all
was lost. ¶ Also this same yere a Wy
ton murdered a good Wydowe in her bed
without filgate / whiche Wydowe sou
de hym for almes / & he bare awaye all
that she had. And after this he toke the
gryth of holy church at saynt Georges
in southwarke / & there toke the crosse &
forswore this tonde. And as he went it
happened he came by the place where
he dyd this cursed dede in his subbarbes
of London / & the women of the same pa
ryshe came out with staves and cancell
ding & scow & made an ende of him there
Notwithstanding he constables & ma
ny other men beyng present for to kepe
hym / for there were many women and
had no pyte. ¶ Also this same yere the
duke of Glocester with many gentylmen &
pemen toke his barge the vij. daie of
November at saynt Mary awrays for
to haue gone through London wydye
& through mysguardyng of the barge it
sundered on his pylles / and many men
were drowned / but the duke himself was
not hurt / he kept upon his pylles & so were saved

with helpe of men that were aboute the
wydye with castynge bolle ropes / by
the whiche ropes they saved themselves.
¶ This same yere on saynt Leonardes
daie kyng Henry beyng vij. yere olde
was crowned at Westminster / at whose
crownynge were made xxxvi. knyghtes
¶ This yere on saynt Georges day he pas
sed over his fer to Calais toward Fraunce
¶ Aboute this tyme & afore the realme
beyng in grete mysery & trybulacyon /
the Dolphyn to his party began to ma
ke warre & gate certayn places / & made
distresses upon englyshmen by his meane
of his capytayns / he is to saye / la Hery &
Boton de seynt rayles / & in especyall a
mayde whiche they named la pucelle de
dieu. This mayde rode lyke a man / and
was a valyaunt capytayn amonge them
& toke upon her many grete enterpryses
in so moche that they had a byleue for to ha
ue recovered all theyr losses by her. Not
withstanding at last after many grete
feates / by his helpe & prowesse of s^r John
Luxemburgh whiche was a noble ca
pytyn of the duke of Burgoyne & many
englyshe men pyrardes & burgonyons
whiche were of our party before he to
me of Compyne the xxij. daie of Maye
the foresayd pucelle was take in his felde
armed lyke a man / & many other capy
tayns with her / & were all brought to Roen
& there she was put in prison / & there she
was iudged by his lawe to be byent. And
than she sayd that she was with childe / wher
by she was respited a whyle. But in co
cluse it was founde that she was not with
childe / & than she was byent in Roen / &
the other capytayns were put to ransoun
& entreated as men of warre ben acusto
med. ¶ And this same yere about Can
delmasse Richard hunder a well pacher
was dampned for an heretike & byent at
Tours byll. ¶ And aboute mydient s^r
Thomas Baggeley priest & bycarpe of

Spauen in Essex besyde Walden was off
graded & shipped for an heretyke & went
in Smythfelde. And also in þe same yere
Whyles the kynge was in Fraunce there
were many heretykes & ioulers þe had
purposed to make a rising & call bylles
in many places. But blessed be god the
cappayne of them was taken / whose
name was Willia Maundenyll a weuer
of Wyndon & baylyf of the same towne
whiche named himselfe Iacke Sharp
of Wigmorestonde in Wales. And after
warde he was byheded at the foresayd
Wyndon in the Whytson weke on the
tewesday. This same yere þ. vi. daye
of December kynge Henry the. vi. was
crowned kynge of Fraunce at Parys in þe
chirche of our lady w grete solempnite
there beyng present the Cardynall of
Englonde / the duke of Bedfords / & many
other lordes of fraunce & of Englonde.
And after this crownacion & grete feest
holden at Parys / the kynge returned fro
thens to Roen / & so towarde Calais / &
the. ix. daye of february loded at Douer
whome all the comyns of Bent mette at
beramdown bytwene Caisterbury & Douer
all in reed hober / & so came forth tyll
he came to þe blache heth / where he was
mette with the Mayre John Welles w
all the craftes of London / clothed all in
Whyte / & so they brought hy vnto Lon-
don the. xxi. daye of the same moneth.
And this same yere was a restraynt
of the wolles of Calais made by þe sou-
dyours / bycause they were not payd of
theyr wages / wherfore þe duke of Bed-
fords regent of Fraunce beyng then capp-
ayne came to Calais the tewesdaye in
the reser weke. And on the morowe af-
ter many soudpours of the towne were
arrested & put in to warde. And in þe same
weke he rode to Terewyn / and by the
meane of þe byshop of Terewyn he wed-
ded the erles doughter of saynt Poule / &

came agayne to Calais. And the. xi.
daye of June on saynt Barnabers daye
there were soure soudpours of Calais
that were these causers of the restraynt
heded / that is to wyte / John Baddeler
John Lunday / Thomas Palmer / and
Thomas Talbot / & an hundred and. x.
banysshed the towne that same tyme /
and before were banysshed an hundred
and. xx. soudpours. And on mydsumer
even after came the lord regent and his
wyfe to London.

Aboute this tyme pope Martin
died / & after hym Eugeny the
fourth was pope. This mā was prais-
ly chosen in Rome by the Cardynalles
and was very & indubitate pope. But
shortly after he was put & expelled out
of Rome / in such maner that he was
sayne to see naked. In this same tyme
was the concyle of Basyle / to whiche
concyle he was cho cyted to come. And
bycause he came not / they deposed hym
But he tought not ne set not therby / but
gate the cyte of Rome & abode still pope
xviij. yere. This yere about Whytson
tyde the heretykes of Beaghe were de-
stroyed. for at two Journeys were de-
stroyed of them moo than. xxij. M. With
theyr capytaynes / that is to wyte / Pro-
capius / Saplico / and Lupus presbyter
Also there was taken on lyue mayster
Peers clarke an englyshman & an here-
tyke. Also this same yere was a grete
frost & a stronge durpuge. xi. weekes / for
it began on saynt Matheryus euē and
lasted vnto saynt Nicholas daye in
february. In whiche tyme þe byntage
that came fro Burdeux came on (Hoters
byll. This yere was the counscyle of
Arras / and a grete trayte bytwene the
kynge of Englonde & the kynge of Fraunce
where was assembled many grete loi-
des of bothe parties / at whiche coun-
saill

kyng of Englonde grete thynge/ by the meane of a legate that came fro Rome whiche was cardynall of saynt crose/ whiche offers were refused by the Cardynall of Englonde & other lordes that were there for þe kyng. Wherfore þe duke of Burgoyne whiche longe had ben engylshes sworne/ forsoke our partye and returned frendshipe by the meane of the foresayd legate/ & made a peas with þe frendshipe kyng/ receyvinge of the kyng for recompensyng of his fathers deth þe counte of poitou/ the lordshipp of Gacon/ with moche other as is specified in the sayd treaty. And so our embailladours came home agayn in worse case than they wente out. For they lost there the duke of Burgoyne whiche had ben with his burgonyous & picardes a synguler helpe in all þe conquest of Normandy & of Fraunce. ¶ This same yere was a grete batayle on the see bytwene the Jenewes & the kyng of Aragon/ of whiche batayle þe Jenewes had þe victory/ for they toke þe kyng of Aragon/ the kyng of Naverne/ & the grete mayster of saynt James in Calpe/ with. iij. C. knyghtes & squyers & moche other people. And this was on saynt Dominys daye. ¶ And this same yere were seen thre sonnes at ones/ & anon folowed þe chrysolde gouvernaunce in þe chyrche/ that is to wyte/ of Eugeny/ of the coneyle/ and of neutralite. ¶ Also this same yere M. CCCC. xxxiiij. was a passing grete wynde/ by whiche steeles/ houses/ and trees were overthrowen. ¶ About this tyme was an holy mayde in Holland called Lidwith/ whiche lyved only by myracle/ not eating any meet. ¶ This yere the duke of Burgoyne began his orde at Lys of the golden flect/ & ordeyned certayne knyghtes of þe same orde/ & made statutes & ordynances moche accordyng to the orde of the garter. ¶ Also this

same yere the frendshemen had enterprised to have stolen Calays in þe springe tyme/ for many boters of fraunce had safe condytes to come to Calays for to take herynge. And the soudpours of þe towne had a custom to come to þe chyrche & leue there staves standyng at þe chyrche doze whiche staves the frendshemen that were arayed by the fishers had purposed to have taken/ and so for to have doonne the towne/ but one of them save with a comyn woman þe nyght before/ & he tolde to her there counseyle. And she on þe morrow tolde it to the lewtenaunt/ whiche forthwith commaunded þe every man shold kepe his wepen in his hande/ sakyng tyme and other. And whan the frendshemen perceived this that they were mysappointed/ they sayled streyght to Depe/ and scale and toke that towne. ¶ And on Newyeres even after they toke Harflet And thus the engylshemen began to lese a lytell and a lytell in Normandy.

¶ How Calays & Guynes were besyged by þe duke of Burgoyne/ & how they were rescowed by þe duke of Glocestre.

¶ This yere through all Englonde was a grete noyse how the duke of Burgoyne wold come & besyge Calays/ wherfore þe erle of Mortayn with his army þe he had for to have gone to in to fraunce was contramaunded & charged that he shold go to Calays/ whiche was at that tyme well bitayled & maned/ for syr John Batclife was lewtenaunt of the kyng in þe towne/ & the baron of Dudley lewtenaunt of the castel. And the. ix. daye of July the duke of Burgoyne with all þe power of floures & moche other people came besyge Calays/ and set his syege about the towne/ & every towne of floures had there tentes by themselves. And this syege endured thre weekes. In the

meane whyle the duke of Glocestre beinge pectour of englonde toke þ moost parte of the lordes of englonde and went ouer the see to Calays for to rescowe the towne / or to fyght with the duke & his hoost yf they wolde abyde. This tyme London & euery good towne in englonde sent ouer the see to this rescowe certayn people well arrayed of the best & chosen men for the warre. And the seconde day of August the foresaid duke of Glocestre arryued at Calays with all his armye and. v. hondred shippes & moo. And the duke of Burgoyne & all his hoost þ laye in the syege / as soone as they espyed the sayles in the see / before they approched Calays haue / sodenly in a moynynge departed from þ syege / leuyng behynde hym moche stuffe & bytyle / and fledde into flaundres & pycardye. And in lyke wyse dyd the syege þ lay before Guynes where as they of Guynes toke the grete gonne of brasse called Wygeon / & many other grete gonnes & serpentynes. And whan the duke of Glocestre was arryued w all his hoost / he went in to flaundres / and was there. xij. dayes and dyd but lytell harme / excepte that he brent two sayre byllages Woperynge & Belle and other houses whiche were of noo strength / & so he returned home agayne. And this same yere þ kyng of Scotlode besyged Roxeburgh with moche people. But Syr Rafe Gray departed fro the castel and ordeyned for rescowe. But as soone as the kyng of Scotlande vnderstode of his departynge / sodenly he brake his syege & went his waye / and lefte moche ordynaunce behynde hym / where he gate no worshipp. In this same yere the seconde daye of January quene Katherine whiche was þ kynges moder & wyfe to kyng Henry the fyrth dyed & departed out of this worlde / and was broughte ryally through London /

and so to Westmynster / & there she lyeth worshipfully buried in our ladyes chapel. Also this yere the fourth daye of January fell do wne the gate with the toure on it on London brydge towarde Southwarke with two arches & all þ stode thereon. This same yere was a grete treaty holden bytwene Grauling & Calays bytwene the kyng & the duke of Burgoyne / where for the kyng was þ Cardmall of Englonde the duke of Norfolk / & many other lordes. And for the duke of Burgoyne was the duchesse havinge full power of her lode as regent & lady of his lordes / where was taken by the aduysle of bothe partyes an abstinence of warre for a certayne tyme in þ name of þ duchesse & not of the duke because he had gone from his othe & legasce that he had made to kyng Henry / therfore the kyng neuer wold wyte ne appoynt to haue to do with hym after / but all in the duchesse name. Also this same yere quene Jane dyed the seconde daye of July / whiche had ben wyfe to kyng Henry the fourth / & was carryed fro Bermondsey to Caisterbury / where she lyeth buried by kyng Henry her husbande. This same yere dyed all þ lions in the Toure of London the whiche had not ben seen many yeres before.

How Owen a squyer of Wales þ had wedded quene Katherine was arrested / & of the seysme dyed wne Eugeny & Felix.

In the .xvi. yere of kyng Henry dyed Sygysmonde Emperour of Amayn & knyght of the garter / whose enterment þ kyng kept at saynt Pauls in London ryally / where was made a ryall herse / and the kyng in his estate cladde in blew was at even at Wyge & on þ morow at masse. And after hym was electe & chosen Albert duke of

Of the which had wedded Margery
mondes daughter for to be Emperour.
This man was taken & receyved to be
king of Beme and Hungary because of
his wyfe þ was Margymondes dought-
ter / whiche left none other heire after
hym. This Albert was emperour but
one yere / for he was poisoned & so dyed
Some saye he dyed of a flux. but he was
a virtuous man & pitiful / so moche þ all
the people that knewe hym sayd that þ
woulde was not worthy to haue his pre-
sence. ¶ This yere one Owen a squier
of Wales a man of lowe birth (whiche
had many a day before secretly wedded
quene Katheryn & had by her. iij. sonnes
& one daughter) was taken & commaunded
to fleagate to pylson by þ duke of Glo-
cestre ptectour of the realme. And this
yere he brake the prison by the meane of
a preeft that was his chapelayn & after
was taken agayn by my lord Beuond
& brought agayne to fleagate & after
ward deliuered at large & one of his so-
nes afterward was made erle of Ryche-
mond & another erle of Denbroke & the
thyrde a monke of Westminster / whiche
monke dyed soone after. ¶ This same
yere also on Asewres day at Baynar-
des castell fell downe a stake of woode so
deynly at after none and sette thye men
imptcheuously & soule hurt other. ¶ Al-
so at Bedfords on a thersburthaye were
xviij. men murdered wout stroke by fal-
lyng downe of a stappe as they came out
of þ comyn hall & many soze hurt. ¶ In
the. xviij. yere sy Richard Beauchamp
the good erle of Warwyke dyed at Boen
he beyng þ tyme lieutenant of þ kyng
in Normandy & so thens his body was
brought to Warwyke / wher it was buryed
fully he lyeth in a new chapel on þ south
syde of þ quere. ¶ Also this yere was a
grette dearth of coyne in all englonde / for a
pound of wyte was worth. xl. pence in

many places of englonde & yet had they
not ynough / wherfore Steuen Broun
that tyme Mayor of London sente in to
France and brought to London certayne
shippes laden wte / whiche did moche
good to þ poore people / for coyne was so
scarce in englonde þ in some places of eng-
londe poore people made them breed of
ferne rotes. ¶ This yere þ generall con-
cyle of Basile deposed Eugeny & they
chose Felix þ was duke of Sauoy & thā
began þ scysme whiche endured vnto þ
yere of our lord. M.ccc. xviij. This Fe-
lix was a deuout ppre & sawe his sonnes
sone & after lyued an holy yf and was
chosen pope of þ concyle of Basile & Eu-
geny deposed. And so þ scysme was longe
tyme & this Felix had but lytel obediēce
because of þ neutralite / for þ moost part
& wel nygh all chrystendom obeyed & repu-
ted Eugeny for very pope / god knoweth
who was very pope of them bothe / for
bothe occupied during Eugeny's lyfe.
¶ This yere sy Richard Wyche bicare
of Hermetesworth was degraded of his
preeft hode at Baules & bent at four hill
as for an heretyke / on saynt Botulphes
day / how wel at his deth he died a good
chryst mā / wherfore after his deth mo-
che peple came to þ place where he was
bent & offered & made a hepe of stones &
set by a crosse of tre & held by for a saynt
tyl þ may & shewes by þ hysges commaū-
dement & byshopps destroyed it & made
there a dung hū. ¶ Also this yere þ shre-
ues of London set out of last Martyns þ
grād. b. pence / which afterward were
restored agayne to þ sentuary by þ kyn-
ges Justices. ¶ After Albert þ thyrde
Frederyk was chosen emperour. This
Frederyk duke of Ostryche was longe
emperour & dyfferred to be crowned at
Rome because of the scysme / but after þ
unite was had / he was crowned w the
imperyall dyademe wth grette gloze &

tristhe of pope Nicolas þ fourth. This was a peasyble mā/ quete & of singulcr patience/ not hatpng þ chyrche/ he webd þ kynge of Þoityngales doughter.

How the duchesse of Glocestre was arrested for treason/ & comytted to perpetual prison in the ple of Man/ & of the deth of mayster Roger Bolynbroke.

In this yere Elenore Cobham duchesse of Glocestre was arrested for certayn poyntes of treason layd agaynst her/ Where vpon she was examyned in saint Stephens chapel at Westmynster before þ archbishop of Canturbury/ & there she was enioyned to open penaunce for to go throug chepe berynge a taper in her hande/ & after to perpetual prison in the ple of Man/ vnder the keepynge of Syr Thomas Stanley. Also þ same tyme was arrested mayster Thomas Southwell a chanon of Westmynster/ mayster John Hume a chapelayn of the sayd lady/ mayster Roger Bolynbroke a clark blyng nygromancy/ & one Margery iourdemayn called þ wyche of Eye besyde Westmynster. These were arrested as for berynge of counseyle w the sayd duchesse of Glocestre. And as for mayster Thomas Southwell he dyed in þ Courte the nyght before he sholde haue ben reyned on þ morow. for he hymseife sayd þ he sholde dye in his bedde/ & not by iustyces. And in the .xx. yere mayster John Hume and mayster Roger Bolynbroke were brought to þ gylde hall in London & there before þ Mayre þ lordes & the Justices of Englonde were reyned and dampned bothe to be drawen hanged & quartered/ but mayster John Hume had his chartre & was pardoned by þ kyng/ but mayster Roger was drawen to Cisburyne/ where he cōfessed þ he dyed gyltles/ and neuer had trespassed in that he

dyed for. Notwithstādyng he was hangged heded and quartered/ on whose soule god haue mercy. And Margery iourdemayn was brynt in Smythfelde. Also this yere was a grete fraye in London in flete strete by nyght tyme/ bytome men of courte & men of London/ and byuers men slayne & some hurt/ & one Petibotell was chefe causer of þ mysgouernaunce & fraye. Also this yere at chosynge of þ Mayre of London the commons named Roberte Clopton & Raulyn Hollandetayllour. And þ aldermen toke Robert Clopton & brought hym at þ right hande of þ Mayre as þ custom is. And than certayne tayllours & other handecrafty men cryed nay nay not this man but Raulyn Hollād/ wherfore þ Mayre that was þadyss sent them þ so cryed to Newgate/ where they abode a grete while and were punysshed. In this same yere were dyuers embassadours sente in to Guyan for a maryage for the kynge for þ erles doughter of Armysnak the whiche was concluded/ but by the meanes of þ erle of Suffolk it was let & put aparte. And after this þ sayd erle of Suffolk went ouer see in to Fraunce/ & there he treated þ mariage betwene the kynge of Englonde & þ kynges doughter of Cecyle & of Iherusalem. And þ nette yere that mariage was fully concluded by whiche maryage the kyng sholde deliuer to her fader the duchy of Angre/ & the erledom of Mayne whiche was the key of Normādy. Than departed þ erle of Suffolke w his wyfe & diuers lordes and knyghtes in the moost ryall estate þ myght be out of Englonde wth newe chares & palfreys whiche wēt throug Chepe/ and so went ouer the see/ and receyued her/ & syden brought her in the lent after bryd Hampton/ where she loded & there was ryally receyued. And on Candelmasse euen before by a grete

trumpet of thondre & lyghtynge at as-
ter more shalowes depe was set on fyre
in the wyndes of þe wynde in the tymbre/
whiche was quenched by force of labour
& spectally by þe maye & masse priest of þe
Dolme in chape / whiche was thought
impossible / save only the grace of god.
¶ This yere was þe erle of Hereford ma-
de & create duke of Buckyngham / þe erle
of Warwyk duke of Warwyk / the erle of
Dorset markys of Dorset / & þe erle of Sou-
thfolke was made markys of Southfolke.

¶ Now kynge Henry wedded quene
Margarete / & of her crownyng.

This yere kynge Henry married at
Southwark quene Margarete /
and she came to London the xviij. daye
of Maye / & by the waye all the lordes of
Englonde receyved her worshipfully in
dyvers places / & in especial the duke of
Gloucester / & on the blache beth þe maye
with the aldermen / and all þe craftes in
blawe golmes brodyed with þe deuple
of chey / crafte / þe they might be knowen
mette with her to reed hodes & brought
her to London / where there dyvers pa-
gentes & countenances of dyvers bysso-
ryes / shewed in dyvers places of þe cty-
tyally and costly. ¶ And the .xxx. day of
Maye the foresayd quene was crowned
at Westmynster. And there was Justes
thre dayes durynge within þe sentuary
before the abbey. ¶ This yere þe pryour
of Kylmarn appealed þe erle of Armonth
of treason / whiche had a daye assygned
to them for to fyght in Smythfelde / & the
lystes were made and the felde dressed.
But when it came to poynt / the kynge
comanded þe they sholde not fyght / but
take þe quarrell in to his hande. And this
was done at the instance & labour of cer-
teyne prechers & doctours of London
and mayster Sybert Southyngton per-
son of saynt Andriwes in holborne and

other. ¶ Also this yere came a grete em-
balladour in to Englonde out of Fraunce
for to have concluded a perpetuall peas
but in cōclusyon it turned into a tremble
of a yere. ¶ About this tyme dyed saynt
Bernardyn a gray seere / whiche began
the newe reformatyon of þe ordie in ma-
ny places / in so moche that they þe were
reformed ben called Observantes / whi-
che Observantes ben grete encreased in
pysalpe & in Antayne. This Bernardyn
was canonysed by pope Nicolas the .v.
in the yere of our lord. M.ccc. l. Johe
de Capistrano was his dysciple / whi-
che pseyed moche to þe reformatyon of þe
ordie / for to whome god hath shewed ma-
ny a saye myracle. ¶ Also here is to be
noted þe from this tyme forwarde kynge
Henry neuer pseyed ne went forwarde
but fortune began to turne from him on
all tydes / as well in Fraunce / Normandy /
Guyen / as in Englonde. Some men hol-
de oppynon that kynge Henry gaue cō-
missyon plenarly to sye Edwarde Hull /
sye Robert Roos bene of saynt Seuerys-
nes / & other / to conclude a marriage for
hym with þe erle of Armynakes syster /
whiche was pmyssed as it was sayd &
cōcluded / but afterwarde it was broken
& he wedded quene Margarete as afore
is sayd / whiche was a dere marriage
for the realme of Englonde. For it was
knowen verily that for to have her was
depyered the duchy of Angeo & the erle
dom of Mayne / whiche was the key of
Normandy for the frenshmen to entre.
And about this þe sayd Markys of Sou-
thfolke asked in playne parliament .xv. &
an halfe to fetch her out of Fraunce. Loo
what a marriage was this / as to þe com-
paryson of þe other marriage of Armynak
for there shold have be depyered so ma-
ny castels & townes in Guyen / & so mo-
che golde shold have ben gyuen to her / þe
all englonde shold have ben thereby cury

of his colleye sente for them to London to whiche place the duke of York came the. xvi. daye of January with. xlii. C. men / & lodged by at Baynardes castell in his owne place. And the. xvi. daye of January came the erle of Salisbury with. v. C. men / & was lodged in therber his owne place. And then came the duke of Excestr & of Somersset with. viii. C. men / & laye about temple barre. And the erle of Northumberland / the lord Egremond and the lord Clifford with. xli. C. men / and lodged about the towne. ¶ And the Maye by tyme Gellray Boloyne / kepte grete watche with the comyns of the cite / & rode aboute the cite by Holborne & flete strete with. v. M. men well arayed & armed for to kepe the peas. ¶ And the. xiiij. daye of February the erle of Warwyk came to London fro Calais well beseen & worshypfully with. vi. C. men in reed Jackettes brodded with a ragged staffe behynde & before / and was lodged at the gray freres. ¶ And the. xviij. daye of March the king & the quene came to London. And there was a cocoyde & a peas made amonge these lordes / & they were set in peas. And on our ladyes day in March in the yere of our lord. M. ccc. lviij. the king & the quene & all these lordes went on procesyon at Paules in London / and anone after the king & the lordes departed. ¶ And in this yere was a grete frape in flete strete by some men of courte & men of the same strete. In whiche frape the quenes atturney was slayne.

¶ How the kynges houtholde made a frape agaynst the erle of Warwyk / and of the tourney at Bloiseth.

ALso this same yere as the erle of Warwyk was at counseyle at Westminster / all the kynges houtholde meyn gathered them toggyder for to haue

slayne the erle / but by the helpe of god & his frendes he recovered his barge / and escaped theyr euill enterpryse / how well the cokes came rennyng out w spyres and pestels agaynst hym. And the same daye he rode toward Warwyk / & soone after he gate hym a comysyon & wente ouer see to Calais. ¶ Soone after this the erle of Salysbury comynge to London was encounterd at Bloiseth w the lord Audley & moche other people ordeyned for to destroye hym. But he hauyng knowlege that he sholde be mette w / was accompanied w his two sones by Thomas & by John Newyll / & a grete filam shyp of good men. And so they fought to gyder / where the erle of Salysbury was the felde / & the lord Audley was slayne & many gentylmen of Cheshyre / & moche people hurte. And the erles two sones were hurte / & goynge homeward afters ward they were taken & had to Chestre by the quenes meyn. ¶ After Calixtus was pope / & was chosen this yere M. ccc. lviij. and he was called before Cneas an eloquent man and a poete laureate. He was embassadour of the emperours afore tyme. And he wrote in the colleye of Basyle a noble treaty for the auctoryte of the same. Also he canonysed saynt Katherine of Senys. This pope ordeyned grete indulgence & pardon to them that wolde go & warre agaynst the Turke / & wrote an epistle to the grete Turke / exhortynge hym to become chrysten. And in the ende he ordeyned a passage agaynst the Turke at Ankone / to whiche moche people dyed out of all parties of chrystendome / of whiche people he sent many home agayne / because they suffred not. And anone after he dyed at the sayd place of Ankone the yere of our lord. M. ccc. lxxiij. the. xiiij. daye of August.

¶ How Andrew Crollop and the lordes

spoures of Calays forsoke the duke of
Poyke and theyr mayster the erle of War-
wyk in the West countree.

The duke of poyke & erles of War-
wyk & of Salysbury sawe þe go-
uernance of þe realme stode moost by the
quene & her counseyle / & how þe grete pryn-
ces of þe londe were not called to counseyle
but set aparte / & not onely so / but it was
sayd through the realme that those said
lordes shoulde be destroyed utterly / as it
openly was shewed at Blozabeth by them
that wolde haue dayne þe erle of Salys-
bury. Than they for saluacyon of theyr
lyues / & also for þe comyn wele of the re-
alme thought to remedy these thynges
assembled them togider w moche people
& toke a felde in þe West countree / to whiche
the erle of Warwyk came fro Calays w
many of þe olde lordpoures / as Androuwe
Crollop & other / in whose wyldome as
for þe warre he moche trusted. And whā
they were thus assembled & made theyr
felde / the kyng sent out his comysyons
& preu seales vnto all þe lordes of his re-
alme / to come & wayte on hym in theyr
moost best defensible aray. And so euery
man came in suche wise þe kyng was
stronger & had more people than þe duke
of poyke & þe erles of Warwyk & of Salys-
bury. For it is here to be noted that eu-
ery lord in Englonde durst not disobey þe
quene / for she ruled praysefully all þe was
done about þe kyng / whiche was a good
& a well disposed man. And thā whā þe
kyng was comen to the place where as
they were / the duke of poyke & his felaw
shyp made theyr felde in þe strongest wyse
& purposed verily to haue byde & fought
but in þe nyght Androuwe Crollop & all þe
olde lordpoures of Calays w a grete se-
lousshyp sodenly departed out of þe du-
kes host / & wente streyght to þe kynges
host / where they were ioyously receyued

for they knewe þe entent of þe other lordes
& also þe maner of theyr felde. And than þe
duke of poyke w the other lordes seynge
them deterued / toke a counseyle shortly in
the same nyght / & departed from þe felde
leuyng behynde them the moost party
of theyr people to kepe þe felde tyll on the
morrowe. Than the duke of poyke w his
second sone departed through Wales to
ward Irlonde / leuyng his eldest sone þe
erle of March w the erles of Warwyk &
of Salysbury / whiche rode togider w
thre or foure persones streyght in to De-
uenshyre / & there by helpe & ayde of one
Denham a squyer gate for the a shyppe
whiche cost xi. score nobles / & w the same
shyppe sayled fro thens i to Gernesey / &
there restresshed them / & fro thens sayled
to Calais / where they were receyued in
to þe castell by þe posterne or they of þe tow-
ne wytt of it. And the duke of poyke toke
shyppynge in Wales & sayled ouer in to
Irlonde / where he was well receyued.

**How þe erles of March / Warwyk / &
Salysbury entred in to Calays / & how
the erle of Warwyk went in to Irlonde.**

Than kyng Henry beyng w his
host in þe felde not knowynge of
this sodenly departynge / on the morrowe
foude none in þe felde of þe said lordes / sent
out in all þe haste men for to folowe & pur-
sue after to take them / but they met not
with them as god wolde. And than the
kyng went to Ludlowe / & despoiled the
castell & the towne / & sent the duchesse of
poyke & her chyldren to þe duchesse of Bo-
kyngham her syster / where as she was
kept longe tyme after. And forthw the
kyng ordeyned the duke of Somerset to
be capytayn of Calays. And these other
lordes so departed as afoze is sayd were
proclaymed rebelles & grete traytours.
Than þe duke of Somerset toke to hym
all þe lordpoures þe departed from þe felde

and made hym reby in all the haste to go to Calays & take possession of his offyce. And when he came there he founde þe erle of Warwyk therein as capitayn & þe erles of Marche & of Salisbury also / & than he lounded by Seales & went to Guynes and there he was receyued. And it fortuneth that some of the shippes that came ouer with hym came in to Calays haven by theyr free wyll / for þe shippmen ought moze fauour to þe erle of Warwyk than to the duke of Somerset / in whiche shippes were taken dyuers men / as Jeyn Finkhpl / John felow / Raylles & Durser whiche were byheded soone after in Calays. And after this came men dayly ouer the see to these lordes to Calays / & began to were stronger & stronger / and they boiowed moche good of the staple. And on þe other syde þe duke of Somerset beyng in Guynes gate people to hym / whiche came out & scarmyshed wth them of Calays / & they of Calays wth them whiche endured many dayes. During this scarmyshynge moche people came ouer dayly vnto these lordes. Than on a tyme by þe aduise & counseyle of þe lordes of Calays sente ouer mayster Denham with a grete felawshipp to Sandwyche whiche toke the towne / & therein þe lordes Ryuers & þe lordes Seales his sone / & toke many shippes in the haven / & brought them all to Calays / wth whiche shippes many maryners of theyr free wyll came to Calays to serue the erle of Warwyk. And after this the erle of Warwyk by þe aduise of the lordes toke al his shippes & maned them well & sayled hymsele in to Irelande for to speke wth the duke of Poike & to take his aduise how they shold entre in to Englonde. And when he had ben there & done his cranbes / he returned agayn toward Calays / & brought wth hym his moder þe countesse of Salisbury. And compynge in þe west countre vpon the see

the duke of Excestre admyral of englonde beyng in þe grace of dieu accompanied wth many shippes of warre mette wth the erle of Warwyk & his flete / but they foughte not / for þe subsaunce of þe people beyng wth the duke of Excestre ought better wyll & fauour to þe erle of Warwyk than to hym / & they departed & came safe to Calays. Then þe kynges counseyle seyng þe these lordes had gotte those shippes fro Sandwyche & taken þe lordes Ryuers & his sone ordeyned a garnyson at Sandwyche to kepe þe towne / & made one Boufurd capitayn of þe towne / & þe no mane butayle ne marchaunt þe shold go to Flaunders shode go to Calais. Thā they of Calais seyng this / made ouer mayster Denham & many other to go to Sandwyche / & so they dyd / & assailed the towne by water & by londe / & gate it / & brought the capprayn ouer see & smote of his heed / & yet dayly men came ouer to them fro all parties.

How þe erles of Marche of Warwyk and of Salisbury entered in to Englonde And of the feide of Northampton where dyuers lordes were slayne.

And after this þe foresayd erles of Marche / Warwyk & Salisbury came ouer to Dover with moche people & there loded / to whom al þe countre dyd we & came to Londo all armed / & for to let þe lordes of þe kynges counseyle knowe theyr treuth & also theyr entent / assembled the & tolde them þe they enteded no harme to the kynges plone saue þe they wolde put from hym suche plones as were aboute hym. And so departed fro London with a grete purssauce toward Northampton where the kyng was accompanied with many lordes / & had made a stronge feide without þe towne. And there bothe parties met & was foughte a grete batayle. In whiche batayle were slayne þe duke

of Westmynster / & erle of Northfolke
the duke of Beaufort / & lord Greymond
& many knights & squyers & other also
the kyng hymselfe was taken in the
felde / & afterwarde broughte to London.
And anon after was a parliament at
Westmynster / duringe whiche parlia-
ment the duke of York came out of Ir-
lond / with the erle of Rutland / & dyng
with a grete felawshipp in to the palays
at Westmynster / & toke the kynges palays
And came in to the parliament chambr / &
there toke the kynges place / & claimed the
croune as his wyse emberytaunt & right
& call forth in wytyng his tittel / & also
how he was ryghtfull heyre / wherfore
was moche to do / but in conclusion it was
appoynted & concluded that kyng Henry
sholde reigne & be kyng duringe his natu-
rall lyfe / for as moche as he had be kyng
so longe & was possessed / & after his deeth
the duke of York sholde be kyng / & his
heyres kynges after hym / & forthwith
sholde be proclaimed heyre apparant / &
sholde also be protectour & regent of Eng-
lond duringe the kynges lyfe / w many
other thynges ordeyned in the same par-
liament / & the kyng Henry duringe his
lyfe went from his appoyntment or wy-
tyll concluded in the sayd parliament / he
shold be deposed / & the duke shold take the
croune & be kyng. All whiche thynges
were enacted by the auctorite of the same /
at whiche parliament the compyns of the re-
alme beyng assembled in the compyn hous
comynage & treatyng upon the tittel of the
sayd duke of York / sotheyll fell downe
the croune whiche henge than in the myd-
des of the sayd hous / whiche is the frayer
of the abbaye of Westmynster / whiche
was taken for a prodge or token that the
reigne of kyng Henry was ended. And
the croune whiche stode on the hyghest
point of the steeple in the castell of Douer
was also taken this same yere.

Then the duke of York was slayn / & of the
felde of Wakefeld / & of the second journey
at saynt Albons by the quene & the prince.

Then for as moche as the quene was
the prince her sone was in the north
& absent her fro the kyng / & obeyed not such
the thynges as were concluded in the par-
liament / it was ordeyned that the duke of
York as protectour shold go northward
to dyng in the quene / & subdue suche as
wolde not obey / to whom went the erle of
Salisbury / & Thomas Percy his son
ne / & moche people. And at Wakefeld in
Chyrmasseweke they were all over-
throwen & slayn by lordes of the quenes
party / & is to wyte / the duke of York was
slayn / the erle of Rutland / & Thomas
Percy & many moo / & the erle of Salisbu-
ry was taken & other / as John Harowe
of London capitayn & ruler of the foremen
& hanson of Hull / whiche were broughte
to Douer / & there after bithored & the
hodes sent to York & set upon the gates
And thus was the noble prince the duke of
York slayn / on whose soule god haue
mercy. And this tyme the erle of Marche
beyng in Shrewsbury hearing of the deeth
of his fader / desired ayde of the towne to
aunge his faders deeth / & so theyng went
to Wales / & at Cadeimas after he had a
batayle at Mortimers crosse agaynst the
erle of Denbroke & of Wylshyre / where the
erle of Marche had the victory. Then the
quene with those lordes of the north after the
they had distressed & slayn the duke of
York & his felawshipp came southward
with a grete multitude of people for to co-
me to the kyng & undo suche conclusyons
as had ben take before by the parliament.
Agaynst whose comynge the duke of Nor-
folke / the erle of Warwyk with moche peo-
ple & ordynance went to saynt Albons / &
lad kyng Henry with them / & there encoun-
tered togider in suche wyse & fought / so the

desyred to haue a passage to the Turke
And moche people of dyuers countreys
came to Rome & he gaue them his bless-
yng & sent them home agayne for they
were not sufficient for the Turkes host
and knowe after he decessed.

Dominus a benicyan was pope af-
ter pius. vi. yere. This Dominus
was chosen in the yere of our lord Iesu
Christ. M. ccc. and. lxxiii. And anone he
alowed the feest of the Presentacion of
our lady as pius dyd. This man was
a taughte man in cytytyennes / and he
sayd it was better to make felow chyn-
ges & hope them stedfastly / than for to
make many & soone reuoke them. And
he made a grete palays at saynt Mar-
kes / & he decessed so that he had ended it
in the yere of our lord Iesu Christ. M.
ccc. & lxxi. Cleodiff. the londe of Luke
was oppellid with many tribulacyons
and after in the yere of our lord Iesu
Christ. M. ccc. & lxxviii. betwixt it was
destroyed by Charles the duke of Bur-
goyne the whiche wedded dame Mar-
garete yster to kyng Edward the fourth
of Englonde. Also the same duke Char-
les curreid in to the londe of Selby & con-
quered it all. The yere of grace was
also charged by pope Paule for fauour
of mannes soules fro. xxv. yere into. xxv.
yere. And by cause of curtesnes haboun-
ded so fowre grace habounded as fowre.

Sixtus the fourth a Venetours &
a fere mynour was pope after
Paule. This man was generall in the
orde of the fere mynours so he was car-
dynall. And he was chosen in the yere of
our lord god. M. ccc. lxxi. and was cal-
led frasciscus de Manana. of good fame
and verruous. He was chosen cardynall
withouth his knowlege tyll he was ma-
de. And the same yere that he was cho-

sen pope the Turke had taken fro chry-
sten men two empyres and. iiii. kyngdomes.
xx. prouynces / and two hondred ci-
ties / and had destroyed men & women
withouth nombre. And that mured the
pope that he shold dyspose hym to go to
Wythlande hym. And for an army to be
made against the Turke the pope gaue
grete magnificence of portoun of the trea-
sour of the church bute all chrysten re-
almed that he myght ouercome some tra-
sour to Wythlande that myght leuynge
Turke. And in the tyme of Englonde
John abbot of Wyngton was the po-
pes legate to dispose this godly trasour
of the church bute euery faythfull man
that was disposed / and that wolde able
themselfe to receyue it.

Thus endeth the Cronicles of Eng-
londe with the trayer of tymes / compyl-
led in a boke. And was first imprynted
by one somtyme scole mayster of saynt
Albans / on whose soule god haue mer-
cy Amen. And now lately imprynted at
London / and diligently amended in dy-
uers places where as any faulte was / in
fifte strete / at the sygne of the Sonne /
by me Wynkyn de Worde in the yere of
our lord god. M. cccc. xxviij. the
ix. days of April.

110.921

...to some of the most famous of the world's great cities.



A circular library stamp from the University of Toronto Libraries. The text "UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO" is curved along the top inner edge, and "LIBRARIES" is curved along the bottom inner edge. In the center, the year "1964" is printed. The stamp is dark and somewhat faded.

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45
46
47
48
49
50
51
52
53
54
55
56
57
58
59
60
61
62
63
64
65
66
67
68
69
70
71
72
73
74
75
76
77
78
79
80
81
82
83
84
85
86
87
88
89
90
91
92
93
94
95
96
97
98
99
100



The descripcyon of Englonde.

There foloweth a lytell treatyse the whiche treateth of the
descripcyon of this londe/whiche of olde tyme was called Al-
byon / and after Byrtayne/and now Englonde/ and speketh
of the noblesse and worthynesse of the same.



The descripcyon of Englonde.

It is so that in many & diuers places the compo Cronycles of Englonde ben had & also now late empynted in flete strete at the signe of the Sonne. And for as moche as þe descripcyon of this londe whiche of olde tyme was named Albion and after Byrtayne is not descriued ne compuly had ne the noblenes & worthynes of þe same is not knowen. Therfore I entende to set in this boke the descripcyon of this sayd yle of Byrtayn & with the comodities of the same.

In the fyrst shall be tolde the names of the ylonde. Caplo. i.

Of the lctyrnge / boundynge / length and briede of Englonde. Ca. ii.

Of þe worthynes and prerogatyons. Capitulo. iij.

Of the meruaylles and of the wonders. Ca. iiii.

Of the chese partyes of the same londe. Ca. v.

Of the ylondes that ben therto adiacent. Ca. vi.

Of the kynges hys wayes and stretes. Ca. vii.

Of the famous ryuers and streames. Capitulo. viii.

Of auncient cytees & townes. Ca. ix.

Of prouynces and shyres. Ca. x.

Of the lawes & names of the lawes. Capitulo. xi.

Of kyngdomes & of boundes & marches bytvene them. Ca. xii.

Of bysshopyches & theys sees. Ca. xiii.

Of how many maner of people haue dwelled therein. Ca. xiiii.

Of the language / of maners & blage of the people of this londe. Ca. xv.

Of the londe of Wales. Ca. xvi.

Of the name / and why it is named Wales. Ca. xvii.

Of the commodities of the londe of Wales. Ca. xviii.

Of the maners and ryghtes of the wallshmen. Ca. xix.

Of the meruaylles and wonders of Wales. Ca. xx.

Of the descripcion of Scotlonde / som tyme named Albania. Ca. xxi.

Of þe descripcyon of Irlonde. Ca. xxii.

Of the boundynge of Irlonde. Ca. xxiii.

Of the gretenes and quantite of that londe. Ca. xxiiii.

Of the defautes of the londe. Ca. xxv.

Of them that fyrste enhabyted Irlonde. Ca. xxvi.

Of the condycions and maners of Irysshmen. Ca. xxvii.

Of the meruaylles and wonders of Irlonde. Ca. xxviii.

Of the meruaylles of sayntes of Irlonde. Ca. xxix.

Thus endeth the table.

The names of this ylonde. Caplo. j.



Iste (as Galfridus apth) this lode was called Albion after þe name of Albene þe eldest doughter of Dioctesyan / & had. xxxij. sisters / & they were the fyrst that enhabyted this londe / and bycause she was the eldest syster / she named this londe Albion after her owne name as the cronycles reherseth. Other saye that this londe was named Albion as it were þe whyte lode of whyte rockes about the clyues of þe see þe were seen fro ferre. Afterward Brutte conquered this londe & called it Byrtayn after his owne name. And thā saxons or Englysshmen conquered this londe & called it Anglia þe is Englonde. Or it is called Anglia of a quene þe owed this lode þe was named Angela / & was a noble dukes doughter of

The descripcyon of Englonde.

the Saxons. Or as p^{ro}ph^{et} sayth Echi. xii. Anglia hath þ name as it were an angle & a corner of the worlde. Or els as Beda sayth li. j. S^{an}c^t Grego^{ry} sawe engliſhe children to ſell at Rome & he accorded to the name of the londe and ſaid they ben ſorþly aungels for they^r faces ſhyn^e as aungels for the noblete of þ londe ſhone in the childrens faces. ¶ Alfre. The Bytyſſhe Anglia is called the oþer worlde and for grete plente of all good the grete Charles called it his owne chamb^{re}.

¶ Solinus. The edge of þ frenſſhe clyf ſholde be the ende of the worlde / yf the ylonde of Byrtayn ne were not / whiche is worthy to haue the name of an other worlde. ¶ Alfre. This ylonde is called iſula for it is in ſalo / that is the ſee / & is beten of with dyuers courſe of waters with ſtremes & with wawes of the ſee.

¶ Of the ſettyng^e / boundyng^e / length and b^{ro}de of Englonde. Ca. ii.

This Byrtayn is accounted a noble londe bothe in our ſto^{ry}es & alſo in the ſto^{ry}es of Grekes / & is ſet agaynſt Germania / Gallia / Fraunce / & ſpayne by twene þ north & þ weſt & þ ſee bytwene. This londe is ſyft^y myle from the clyf of the men that be called mo^{ri}ni geſſozico. ¶ Beda li. j. And for this ylonde lieth vnder the north heed of þ worlde / & it hath lyght & b^{ri}ght nyghtes in þ ſomer tyme ſo þ oftentymes at mydnyght men haue queſtyons & doubte whether it be euen tyme or dawnyng^e / þ is for þ tyme of the yere þ the ſonne goth not ferre vnder the erth by nyght but paſſeth by þ north ſyde & cometh ſoone in to þ eſt agayn. And therfore in þ ſomer ben they^r dayes full lōge of. xliiij. houres / & þ nyghtes of. vi. houres. And after in þ wynter ben longe nyghtes of. xliiij. houres & ſhor^t dayes of. vi. houres. Alſo in Armenia / Macedonia / Italia & in other lōdes of þ ſame line

the longeſt daye & lōgeſt nyght alſo is of xli. houres / & the ſhor^teſt day or nyght is of. ix. houres. ¶ Plini^{us} in meroe. That ylonde is chefe of blacke men / there is þ lōgeſt day. xli. houres. In Alexandria in Egypte of. xli. houres / in Pralye of. xli. houres / in Byrtayn of. xliiij. houres / in the ylonde named Tyle all the. vi. ſomer monethes is daye / & all the. vi. wynter monethes is nyght. ¶ Iſid. li. xli. Byrtayn is ſet wⁱth Ocean as it were about the worlde / & is ſet agaynſt Fraunce and ſpayne. ¶ Giraldus. Byrtayn is ind^olōge & larger in þ myddle thā in þ cōdes ¶ Dioſ^{cor}id^{us}. Byrtayn ſtretcheth in length out of þ ſouth i to þ north / & in þ ſouth^eſt it hath Fraunce / in þ ſouth ſpayne / in þ north Norway / & in þ weſt Hibernia þ is Irlande / whan ſhyppmen paſſe the nert clyf of þ lōde they ſe a cite þ h^{ig}ht Ruper mouth. Beda li. j. þ cite is now called of Engliſhmen Beptaceſtre. ¶ Solinus. Byrtayne is. liiij. C. myle of length / & it be met from þ clyf of Cotnes to þ angle of Calidon. ¶ Alfre. That is from Denwithſtrete. xli. myle beyonde Wyghelſ ſowe in Cornetwayle vnto Carnes þ is beyonde Scotlonde / & Byrtayn is more than. ii. C. myle b^{ro}de frō Hencuna þ is the bettermeſt place in Wales vnto Parnmouth i northſolke. ¶ Beda. Oncly out take þ longeſt out ſho^{ry}ng of diuers fo^{re}londeſ with the whiche Byrtayn is all about. xliiij. ſythe. lxx. thouſande pace.

¶ Of the worthynes and p^{ro}rogacyons. Capto. iij.

As Fraunce paſſeth Byrtayne / ſo Byrtayn paſſeth Irlande in ſayre weder and noblete / but not in helthe. ¶ Beda lib. i. for this ylonde is beſt to beſe ge^ord trees & fruytes / Burherne & beſtes / & wyne groweth therein in ſome places. The londe hath plente of fowles and of beſtes of dyuers maner of kynde

The descripcyon of Englonde.

The londe is plenteous and the see also. The londe is noble/ copious/ & ryche of noble Welles and ryuers/ with plente of fysh. There is grete plente of small fysh of samon & of eies. **Wubel.** de pon. li. iij. So þ the people in some place fede theyr swyne with fysh. **Seda** li. j. There ben oftentimes taken dolphyns for calues and baleyne grete fyshes as whales kynde/ and byuers maner shellysh/ amonge þ whiche shellysh ben muscles that whan they haue Margery perles of al maner of colour and hewe of roby & reed purpure & of blew & speery/ ally & moost of whyte. There is also plente of shellysh þ men dye therewith fyne reed/ þ recoures therof is wondrous fayre and stable/ & stayneth neuer with colde ne with hete/ with wete ne with drye/ but euer the older þ colour is the fayrer. There be also salt Welles & hote Welles therof remynge stremes of hote bathes departeth into dyuers places according for man & woman of all maner age olde or yonge. **Vasilius** sayeth. That þ water that renneth & passeth by baynes of certayn metall taketh i his course grete hete. This plonde is plenteous of baynes of metalles/ of bras/ of yren/ of leed/ of tynne/ & of syluer also. **Plin^{us}** li. vi. ca. vi. In this plonde vnder the rufte of the lode is foude good merle/ the thyftry of the farnes dyeth hys self therein. So þ euer the thycker þ fynde is merled þ better coyne it wyll bere. There is also an other maner whyte merle þ the londe is the better. **lyxx.** yere þ therewith is merled. **Wolm^{us}**. In this plonde groweth a stone that is called gagates/ þ if ye wyll knowe his faynes/ it is blacke as gemmes ben/ þ if ye wyll knowe his kynde/ it lyeneth in water/ & quencherh in oyle/ and as to his myght/ þ if the stone be frosh & shaled it holdeth what þ nigherh it standeth a stone that is so named.

Cyrol. li. x. There ben shepe that bere good wolle. There ben many hartes and wyld beestes & fewe wolues/ therfore shepe ben the surer wout heppng leste in the fynde. **Ca.** In this plonde also ben many cities & townes fayre & noble and ryche/ many grete ryuers & stremes w grete plete of fysh/ many fayre wodges & grete/ with ryght many beestes came and wyld. The erth of that londe is copious of metall ooze/ & of salt Welles/ of quarreys of marble of diuers maner stones/ of reed/ of whyte/ of softe & of harde of chalke & of whyte lyme. There is also whyte claye & reed for to make pottes/ crockes/ stenes & other vessel/ and bren tyle to couer the houses & chyrches/ as it were in the other samia/ that is named samos also. Flaunders loueth well þ wolle of this londe/ & Hollonde the skylles and felles of al maner beestes. **Guyen** þ yren & the leed. **Irlonde** the ooze & the salt. **All Europa** loueth & desyeth þ whyte metall of this londe. **Alfre.** **Britayn** hath ynough of al mater þ there nedeth to bie & sell/ or is nedefull to mannes vse/ there lacketh neyther salte nor yren. Therfore a verlespoure in his metre prayseth this londe in this maner. Englonde is a good londe fruytful of wolle/ but it is a corner. Englonde is full of playe/ free men well worthy to playe/ free men/ free tongues free hertes/ & free ben all theyr thynges/ theyr handes is moze free & better than theyr togue. Also Englonde is beauteous of londe/ floure of londes all aboute/ that lode is full payed w fruyte & good of his olme/ that londe releueth straunge men that hath nede thereto. And whā hunger greueth other londes/ that londe fedeth them. That londe bereth fruyte & coyne grete plente ynough. That londe is well at ease as long as men lyue in peas/ east & west in eche londe ben wel knownen the hauens of Englonde. Theyr shippes fou

The descripcyon of Englonde.

des & ofte helpeth many londes. They
meat & money men haue there more co-
myn alway. And for to lerne men gladly
gyue gyses. In londe & stonde Wyde
speaketh men of Englonde. Londe hony
mylike chese this ylonde therof shall bere
the pryce. This ylonde hath no hede of
other londes / al lodes must seke helpe at
this alone. Of the lyking of theyr Woun
might wonder kyng Salomon. The ry-
ches & there is an / wold desire Detania.

Of the meruayles & wonders.ca. iiii.

In Brytayne ben hote Welles well
arayed & adressed to þ bfe of man-
hode / maystresse of thole Welles is the
grette spyrte Minerva. In her hous the
fyre endureth alway that neuer chaun-
geth in to ashes / but there þ fyre baketh
it chaungeth in to stone clottes. ¶ Alfre.
In Brytayne ben many wonders / neuer
theles foure ben moost wonderfull / the
first is at Bercon / there bloweth so stronge
wynde out of the chynes of the erthe
that it casteth by agayne clothes þ men
cast in. The second is at Stonehenge be
syde Salysbury / there ben grette stones
& wonders huge / & be fered on hygh as
it were gates set vpon other gates. Ne-
uertheles it is not knowen clerely ne ap-
precyued how & wherefore they ben so
arered and so wonderfully hanged. The
thyrde is at Cherdhoke / there is a grette
holdwone vnder þ erth / often many men
haue walked therein / & haue seen ryuers
& streames / but no where can they fynde
none ende. The fourth is / that rayne is
seen reyled vpon hylls / & none spronge
about in the felides. Also there is a grette
ponde that conteyneth .xx. ylondes cou-
nable for men to dwel in / that ponde is
bedeiled about w fyre scoze roches / and
vpon every roche an egles nest / and the
scoze ryuers renne in to þ ponde / & none

of them all ren in to þ see but one. There
is a ponde closed aboute w Wall of tyle &
of stone. In that ponde men washe and
bache ryght soze / & curry man seith the
water hote or colde ryght as he wyll þ
seife. There ben salte Welles sette from
the see / & ben salte all þ weke longe vnto
laterdape at none / & freshe fro laterdape
at none vnto mondaye. The water of
these welles whan it is soden turneth in
to small salte sayze & whyte. Also there
is a ponde / the water therof hath won-
ders Werkynge / for though all an boost
stobe by the ponde & turned theyr faces
thyderwarde / the water wolde dawe
them violently towarde þ ponde & wete
all theyr clothes / and so sholde a hors be
drauen in the same wyse. And yf þ face
be turned awayne fro the water / the wa-
ter noyth not. There is a well that no
streame renneth fro neyther therro / & yet
foure maner of fyre ben taken therein
that well is but .xx. fote longe / & .xx. fote
broad / & not depe but to the knee / & closed
with hye bankes on every syde. In the
countree about Wynchestre is a denne or
a caue / out of that caue bloweth alway
a stronge wynde / so that no man may
endure to stande tofore þ denne or caue.
¶ There is also a ponde þ turneth free
in to yren yf it be therein a yere / & sores
ben shapen in to whetstones. Also there
is in the topp of an hyll buryis / curry
man that cometh & meteth that buryell
he shall fynde it euen of his owne length
& mesure. And yf a pylgrym knele ther-
to / anon he shall be all freshe & fele no
grette of Werynes. ¶ Sir. in top. fast by
the mynstre of Wymburney (that is not
ferre fro Bache) is a wode that bereyth
moche fruyte / yf the tress of that wode
fall in to water or grounde that is nygh
& lye there all a yere / the tress turne in
to stones. ¶ Sir. in itinere. Under þ cire
of Chestre renneth the ryuer Dee / that

The descripcyon of Englonde.

now departeth Englonde & Wales. That
riuer chaungeth curci moneth his fordes
as men of that countre tell / & leueth often
the chanel / but whether þ water drabwe
more toward Englonde or toward Wa
les / to what syde þ it be / that yere men
of that syde haue þ worst ende & be ouer
let. And men of that other syde shal haue
better ende & ben at theyr aboue. When
the water so chaungeth his course it bo
beth such happes. This riuer Dee ren
neth & cometh out of a lake that hyght
þymblemere. In this ryuer is grete
plente of samon / neuertheles in the lake
is neuer samon founde. ¶ Welhel. de re.
le. ii. Take hede how grete lyght and
bryghtnes hath ben shewed vpon Eng
lyshmen syth they fyrst turned to rygth
byleue. So þ of no men in ony prouynce
ben founden so many hole bodyes of men
after theyr dethe / in lykenes of eueria
kynges that shall be after the daye of
dome / as it well semeth in these holy
sayntes Cyndricke / Edmond the kyng /
Cyphere / Edgar / Cuthberte / and saynt
Edward / & many other / I trowe that it
be done by a speciall grace of almyghty
god / for the nation that is set as it were
withour the woode shoulde take hede to
buryenge of bodyes wout corrupcion &
rottyng / and ben the more bolde and
stedfast for to trust vpon the synall ar
syng of deid bodyes for to last euermore
after the daye of dome.

¶ Of the cheif partyes of the
same londe. Ca. v.

After the fyrst Byttes tyme the
plonde of Byttayne began for to
haue the pryncypall partyes / that ben
Loegria / Cambria that is Wales / & Al
bania that is now Scotlande. Loegria
hath that name of Loegrinus that was
a good lord & hyght Loegria as

it were Loegrinus londe. But now Loeg
ria is called Englonde. The boundes &
markes were therof somtyme þ frenche
see bothe by west & by south. ¶ Beda li. i.
ca. ii. And by north two armies of the see
that dyketh sette in to the londe eyther
agaynst other / but they reche not togy
der. The west arme of those twayne be
gyynnge aboute a two lytell myle fro þ
mynstre of Ebburpurge. In the west
syde of Denultron in þ arme is a towne þ
is called Gwydd / the west arme of these
twayne hath in the rygth syde a stronge
cite that hyght Diclud / whiche in theyr
language is called Clyntstone / and stans
deth vpon a ryuer þ is called Clynt also.
¶ Some men wolde mene that Loeg
ria endeth at Humble / & stretcheth no
ferther northwarde. The seconde party
of Byttayn is called Albania þ is Scot
londe / & hath that name of Albanactus
Byttes sone / & stretcheth fro þ foresayd
two armies of þ see northward vnto þ see
of Norway. Neuertheles the south par
tyes of Albania where as Pictes dwel
led somtyme / that lyeth from þ water of
Tweede vnto the scottyshe see. All þ lon
ged somtyme to þ kingdom of Northum
berlonde Byttayne the north syde of
Northumberlonde fro the fyrst tyme of
Englyshe kynges to þ tyme whā kyn
dus kyng of Scotland þ was Alpinus
sone dyd away þ Pictes / & so ioyned that
countre to þ kingdom of Scotlande. The
thyrde party of Byttayn is Wales Wal
lia that hyght Cambria also / & hath þ
name Cambria of Cambre Byttes sone
for he was prync of Wales. In þ west syde
Deuarne somtyme departed byt Wene
Englonde & Wales. But in þ north syde
the ryuer of Dee at Chestre / and in the
south the ryuer þ is named Uaga at the
castell of Strygelyn departeth Englonde
& Wales. Also kyng Offa for to haue a
dyssyncryon for euermore byt Wene the

The descriptyon of Englonde.

kynges of Englonde & of Wales made a longe dyche þæt stretcheth forth out of the south syde by Bristolwe bnder the hylles of Wales & euene & Dre almost to the hedes & into þæt mouth of þæt ryuer of Dee beyonde Chestre fast by the castell it renneth byt wene Colehyll & the mynstre of Basyngwerke into þæt see. This dyche is yet in many places seen. In saynt Edwards tyme Walshmen shold not passe that dyche wþ wepen vpon a grete payne And that was at þæt tyme Haroldes prouerynge/as it shall be sayd here after. But now in eyther sydes bothe of that halfe and of this halfe þæt dyche / & specially in the shires of Chestre / of Shrowesburp and of Herford in many places ben Englyssmen & Walshmen medled togyder.

Of the ylonde that ben therto
adiacent. Ca. vi.

Brytayne hath thre ylonde that ben nygh and longynge therto al without þæt ylonde & ylonde / as it were answerynge to the thre cheste parties of Brytayn. For the yle of Wyght logeth & lyeth to Loegria that is Englonde. The ylonde Mon that is called Angletria also longeth to Wales. And þæt ylonde Eubonia that hath two other names / & is called Menecia & Man also / whiche longeth to Scotlode. And all these thre ylonde / Wyght / Mon / & Man ben almost alyke moche & of quantite / of the whiche thre alarowe foloweth our speche. ¶ Beda li. i. ca. iij. Claudius sent Vaspasian⁹ and Vaspasianus wanne Wyght / and Wyght stretcheth out of the east in to þæt west. xxx. myle longe / & out of the south in to the north. xij. myle / and is in þæt east syde. vij. myle fro the south clyf of Brytayne / & thre myle in þæt west syde. ¶ Beda li. iij. ca. v. The mesure of this ylonde as Englyssmen gesse / is a thousande

housholdes & two hondred. ¶ Sir. in itinere. Mon that is called Angletria also is departed from north Wales by a short arme of the see as it were two myle brode. In Mon ben. CCC. towne & xij. and ben accepted for candredes that ben two hondredes. The ylonde is as it were xxx. myle longe / & xij. myle brode. Candredus is so moche londe as conteyneth an hondred towne / that name Candredus is made out of two languages / of Brytyshe & of Irysshe. In praryng of this ylonde Walshmen were wont to saye a prouerbe and an olde sawe. Mon Man kembry / that is to say in englysshe / that londe is so good / that it semeth þæt it wold fynde corne ynough for all þæt men of Wales. Therefore Virgils verses may be accordynge therto / as moche as gnawes / beestes longe Inneþ dawes / so moche este byngeth colde dewe in a nyght. In that arme of the see that departeth this londe & north Wales / is a swalowe that draweth shippes to it that sayeth by / & swaloweth them in ryght as doth Cirila & Caribdis þæt ben two peryllous places in the see of myddle erthe. Therefore men may not saye by this swalowe but slyly at a ful see. ¶ B. Of the mecrayles and wonders of the ylonde of Mon thou shalt fynde in the chapytre of Wales. ¶ Sir. in itinere. The thyrde ylonde þæt is called bothe Eubonia & Menecia that is Man standeth in the myddle betwene þæt Irysshe bishere & þæt scottyshe galloway as it were the nauell of the see. ¶ Beda li. ii. ca. ix. This ylonde Man conteyneth as it were two ylonde. The fyrste is southward the more countre / & the better corne londe / & conteyneth. ix. C. & ix. housholdes. The seconde conteyneth þæt space of CCC. and moo as Englyssmen gesse. ¶ Siral. in top. Somtyme was stryfe whether this ylonde Man shold long to Brytayne or to Ireland / & so / as moche as

The description of Englonde.

being about the wyes that were brought
thence to the sea there / it was judged that
the ylande of Britan sholde longe to Bry-
tany. ¶ In that ylande is fourplege &
wythetrast bled. for women there sell
to the puer wynde / as it were closed un-
der the knottes of thiede / so that þ more
wynde he wyll haue / þ more knottes he
must make. There often by daye tyme
men of that londe se men that ben berd
tofore hande byheded or hole / and what
deth they dyed. Alens set they feet
upon the feet of men of that londe for to
se suche syghtes as þ men of that londe
dote. ¶ Beda li. ij. Scottes dwelled first
in this ylande. ¶ Chanatos that is Ce-
net / and is an ylande besydes Kent / and
hath that name Chanatos of deth of ser-
pentes / for there be none / and the erthe
therof death serpentes borne in other ylan-
des. There is noble corne londe & ryght
fruytfull. It is supposed that this ylan-
de was halowed & blyssed of saynt Au-
stin the first doctour of Englyssmen /
for there he arryued first.

Of the kynges hie wapes and
streets. Ca. vii.

Molinarius was the xiiij. kyng
of Brytany / and was the first
that gaue them laue. He ordeyned that
plowmen sholdes / goodes temples and
bygh wapes that lede men to cytees &
colones sholde haue þ freidome of colour
so that euery man that wente to any of
them for socour or for trespass þ he had
done / sholde be safe for pursute of all his
enmyes. But afterward for the wapes
were vncertain / and stryfe was hap-
pyd betwixt the kyng that was þ
son of Molinarius / so to put a-
waye all stryfe and doubte / made four
bygh kynges wapes / pryncypled with
a croce / and freedom. And the wapes
were through the ylande. The first

and greatest of the four wapes is called
fosse / and stretcheth out of the south in
to the north / and begynneth from þ cor-
ner of Cornewalle and passeth forth by
Deuenshyre by Somerset / and forth besy-
des Ceterbury vpon Cotteswold besyde
Couentre vnto Lyncestre / and so forth
by Wynde playnes towarde Awarthe /
and endeth at Lyncolne. The seconde
chefe kynges hie wape is named Wat-
lyngstrete / and stretcheth thwarre ouer
fosse / out of the southeest in to the north
west / & begynneth at Douer / & passeth
by the myddle of Kent ouer Temse besy-
de London by Westmynster / and so
forth by saynt Albons in the west syde
by Donstable by Stratford by Colwre-
tre / by Wedom by south Lyleborne / by
Atherston vnto Sylbertes hyll / þ now
is called Wiekene / & forth by Seuarne /
and passeth besydes Wykestre / & than
forth to Stratton / and so forth by the
myddle of Wales vnto Caerphar / and
endeth at the Ireshe see. The thyrde
wape is called Crynnagestrete / & stre-
tcheth out of the westnorthwest in to the
eastsoutheast / & begynneth in Gwentia
that is saynt Danys londe in west Wa-
les / & stretcheth forth vnto Southam-
ton. The fourth is called Bakenyldstrete
& stretcheth forth by Wykestre by Wps-
combe / and by Birmyngham by Lech-
felde / by Derby / by Chesterfelde / by Por-
ke / and forth vnto Crynnouch.

Of the famous ryuers and
streets. Ca. viii.

There be the famous ryuers ren-
nynge through Britayn by þ whi-
che the ryuers marchantes of beyonde
the see comen in shippes in to Britayn
well ynough but of all maner of nacrons &
londe. These the ryuers ben Temse /
Seuarne / & Humbe. The see ebberth &

The descripcyon of Englonde.

Someth at these thre ryuers / and depar-
 ceth the thre prouinces of þe ylonde / as it
 were the thre kyngdomes aslonde. The
 thre partys ben Loegria / Cambria / &
 Northumbria / that is myddle Englonde
 Wales & Northumberlonde. ¶ **T**his
 name Camyse semeth made one name
 of two names of two ryuers / that ben
 Came & yse / for the ryuer of Came ren-
 neth besydes Dorchestre & falleth in yse /
 therfore all þe ryuer fro þe fyrst heed vnto
 the rest see is named Camyse or Temse.
 Temse begynneth besyde Ceterbury / that
 is. iij. myle by north Malmesbury / there
 the Temse spryngeth of a Well that ren-
 neth eastwarde & passeth the fosse / & de-
 parteth Glocestre shyre & Wysshyre / and
 draweth with hym many other Welles
 and streemes / and wereth grete at Gre-
 cestre / and passeth forth than towarde
 Hampton / & so forth by Oxforde / by Wal-
 lynforde / by Redyng / and by London.
 ¶ **W**ilhel. de pon. ca. ii. At the haucn of
 Sandwyche it falleth in to the east see /
 and holdeth his name. xl. myle beyonde
 London / & departeth in some place Kent
 and Essex / Westsex & Mercia / that is as
 it were a grete dele of myddle Englonde
 ¶ **S**. Seuarne is a ryuer of Brytayne / &
 is called Haberne in bytyshe / and hath
 that name Haberne of Haberne þe was
 Estryldes doughter. Guendolon þe que-
 ne drowned this Haberne therein / ther-
 fore the bytouns called þe ryuer Haberne
 after þe woman þe was drowned therein /
 but by corrupte latyn it is called Sabry-
 na / Seuarne in englyshe. Seuarne be-
 gynneth in the myddle of Wales / & pas-
 seth fyrst towarde þe east vnto Shrewes-
 bury / & than turneth southwarde vnto
 Wygmore / Worcester & Glocestre / & fal-
 leth in to the west see besydes Wyshowe
 and departeth in some place Englonde &
 Wales. ¶ **W**ilhel. de po. ii. iij. Seuarne
 is swyfte of streeme / moche fysh is ther

in / woodnes of the swolowynge & of the
 Whyllynge water catterth by a gadre to
 hepe grete hepes of grauell. Seuarne
 ofte aryseth & ouerfloweth the bankes.
 ¶ **H**umbre hath that name of Hum-
 bre kyng of Humes / for he was drowned
 therein / & renneth fyrst a croke out of the
 south syde of York / & than it departeth
 the prouince of Lyndsey þe longed some-
 tyme to the Mercies from the other con-
 tre Northumberlonde. Trent and Ous-
 renne in to Humbre and make the ryuer
 full grete. ¶ **T**revisa. The Mercies we-
 re men as it were of myddle Englonde /
 as it shall be sayd here after.

¶ **O**f auncient citees & townes. ca. ii.

¶ **T**he kyngdome of Brytayne was
 somtyme made saye w. xxviiij.
 noble citees wout ryght many castelles
 that were walled w. toures / with gates
 and w. barres strongly buylded. ¶ **A**fter
 these were þe names of the citees. Carr-
 lud þe is London. Caerbranke þe is York
 Caerkent that is Caüterbury. Caer-
 raikon that is Worcester. Caerliron þe
 is Leicester. Caerclon that is Glocestre.
 Caercolden that is Colchestre. Carrey
 that is Chychestre / sarons called it some-
 tyme Cissoncestre. Caercery that is Cir-
 cestre. Caerguent that is Wynechestre.
 Caergraute þe is Cambridg. Caerlell
 that is Lugubalia & Karlyll. Caerpois
 that is Porchestre. Caerdom þe is Dor-
 chestre. Caerludcoit that is Lyncolne &
 Lyndecolin. Caermaryn that is Mer-
 lins cite. Caerlegent that is Sierre &
 is vpon Temse not ferre from Redyng.
 Leon that is Caerleggon also / & hyght
 fyrst legerestre & now is named Chestre.
 Caerbathon that is Bathe / & hyght some-
 tyme Athamannus cite. Caerpaladour
 that is Exeton / þe now hyght Shastel-
 bury. ¶ **O**ther citees ben foude in cro

The description of Englonde.

wylles for understondyng of sayres of
 whom it shall folowe. ¶ Wilhel. de pon.
 London is a cytyll and a cyche cite vpon
 Campe. of burgysses. of riches of mar
 chauntes. of chaffre and marchaundyse.
 Therfore it is that somtyme whā derth
 of vytayles is in all Englonde. comynly
 at Londo it is best chepe. bycause of the
 byers & sellers þ ben at London. ¶ Gau
 fre. Byute þ fyrst kyng of Byttons buyl
 ded & cōpyed this cite of London þ fyrst
 cite. in remembraunce of the cite of Troy
 that was destroyed. and called it Troyn
 neweth & Trinouantū. þ is ne the Troy
 Afterward kyng Lud called it Caerlud
 after his own name. therfore þ Byttons
 had indignacion as Eplwas telleth. Af
 terward Englysshmen called þ cite Lon
 don. & yet after that Roymans called it
 Londres. & is named in latyn Lōdonia.
 Rudhudibras kyng Leyles sone was þ
 viij. kyng of Byttons. he buylded Caū
 terbury the cheste cite of Kent. & called it
 CaerKent. Afterward Englysshmen cal
 led it Dorobernia. but þ is not Douer þ
 standeth vpon þ clif of þ frenche see. & is
 fro this Douer. xij. englyshe myle. Af
 terward this Dorobernia was & is cal
 led Caūterbury. The same king Rudhu
 dibras buylded Wynchestre. & called it
 Caerwent. & after Englysshmen called
 it Wint. & Wynchestre after the name of
 one Wyne an Englysshman þ was bys
 shop there. All westsaxon was subiecte
 to hþ. the same kyng buylded Paladour
 that is Wexton þ now is called Shaftes
 bury. Byttons telleth þ an egie ppheryed
 there somtyme. Bladud Leyles sone a
 upgromancer was the. ix. kyng of Byt
 tons. he buylded Bath. & called it Caer
 bathon. Englysshme called it after Acha
 mans cite. But at þ last men called it
 Bathon. þ is Bath. ¶ Wilhel. de pō.
 Bathon is a cite wellet by & spryngeth
 of a well. & men wene þ Julius Ce

sar made there suche bathes. ¶ B. But
 Gaufre. monemutensis in his bytthe
 boke saith þ Bladud made those bathes
 bycause William hath not seen that by
 tthe boke wrote so by tellpnyng of other
 men. or by his own gessyng as he wrote
 other thynges not best auysidly. Ther
 fore it semeth moze sochly that Bladud
 made not þ hote bathes. ne Jul^{us} Cesar
 dyd suche a dede. though Bladud buyl
 ded & made the cite. but it accordeth bet
 ter to kyndly reason þ the water cenneth
 in the erth by haynes of bymstone & sul
 phur. & so it is kyndly made hote in that
 course & spryngeth by in dyuers places
 of þ cite. And so there ben hote bathes þ
 washten of ceters. sores & scabbes. ¶ Tre
 uisa. Though mē might by crafte make
 hote bathes for to endure longe ynough
 this accordeth well to reason & to phlo
 sophy þ treateth of hote welles & bathes
 that ben in diuers londes. though þ wa
 ter of this bath be moze troublly & sourer
 of sauour and of smell than other hote
 bathes ben that I haue seen at Acon in
 Amayn. And eyges in Sauoye whiche
 ben fayre & clere as ony well streame. I
 haue ben bathed therein & assayed them.
 ¶ B. Claud^{ius} Cesar maryed his dought
 ter to Arufragus kyng of Byttons. This
 Claudius Cesar buylded Glocestre in þ
 wedding of his doughter. Byttons called
 this cite fyrst after Claudius name. but
 afterward it was called Glocestre after
 one Glosta whiche was duke of þ coultre
 & stādeth vpon Seuarne in þ marche of
 Englonde & Wales. Wyowesbury is a ci
 te vpon Seuarne in þ marche of englonde
 & Wales. & is set vpon þ toppe of an hyll
 & it is called Wyowesbury of Wyowes &
 scupte þ grewe there somtyme on þ hyll.
 Byttons called it somtyme Pengwerne
 that is þ heerd of a fayre tree. Wyowes
 bury was somtyme þ heerd of Dowespe
 that stretcheth south toward ouer þ myd

The descripcyon of Englonde.

bell of Wales vnto þe Iryllhe see. Notyngham standeth vpon Trent / & somtyme hyght Notyngham þis is þe monnyng of Denes / for þe Danes dwelled there somtyme & dygged Denes and caues vnder harde stones & rockes & dwelled there.

L. Lyncolne is chefe of þe prouynce of Lyndesey / & was called somtyme Caerludroit / & afterwarde Lyndecoln. It is vncertayne who buylded fyrst this cite but yf it were kyg Lud / & so it semeth by menynge of þe name / for caer is bytyshe & is to saye a cite / & coit is a wode / & so it semeth þe Caerludroit is to saye Luddes wode towne. Kyg Leir was Bladuddes sone & buylded Lerpentre / as it were in þe myddle of Englonde vpon þe ryuer Sog and vpon folle the kynges hye waye.

W. Wilhel. de pon. lib. iij.

y Dyke is a grete cite in eyther syde of þe water of Ouse that semed as fayre as Rome vnto the tyme that kyg Wiliyam had w byennynge & syre defouled it & the coustree aboute / so that a pylgrym wolde now wepe and he sawe it / yf he had knowen it tofore.

G. Gaultre. Ebrancus the. v. kyg of Byrons buylded yorke & called it after his owne name Caerbranke. He buylded also two other citees / one in Scotlode & is called Edenburgh / & an other toward Scotlonde in the ende of Englonde & is called Alclud.

L. Edenburgh is a cite in the londe of Pictes bytwene þe ryuer of Tweede & the scottyshe see / & hyght somtyme þe castell of Maydens / & was called afterwarde Edenburgh of Edean kyng of Pictes / þe regned there in Egfridus tyme kyng of Northberlonde. Alclud was somtyme a noble cite / & is now well nygh vnknown to all Englyshmen. For vnder the Byrons & Pictes & Englyshme it was a noble cite to þe comynge of the Danes. But afterwarde about þe yere of our lordes

biij. C. lxx. it was destroyed whan þe Danes destroyed the coustree of Northberlonde. But in what place of Byron that cite Alclud was buylded / ourtours tell diuersly. Beda ii. i. sayth that it was buylded by West that arme of þe see that departeth bytwene the Byrons and the Pictes somtyme there Seuer? famous Wall endeth Westward / and so it semeth by hym that it is not ferre fro Caerley / for that cite is set at the ende of the wall. Other wyrters of storyes wyte that þe cite of Alclud is that cite that now is called Aldburgh / þis is to saye / an olde to wne / & standeth vpon the ryuer Ous not ferre fro Burghbrugge / that is. xv. myle Westward out of yorke / & it semeth that he proueth that by Gaultre in his booke of dedes of Byrons / he wyrteth þe Eldurus kyng of Byrons was ledged at the cite of Alclud bycause of solace and huntynge / & founde his broder Argalon maskynge in a wode nygh there besyde that hyght Calatery / but that wode Calatery whiche is Calters in Englyshe reacheth almoost to yorke / and stretcheth towarde þe north by Aldburgh in length by space of. xx. myle / þe moost dele of that wode is now throwen down & the londe tyllid. Other men wolde suppose þe Alclud was that cite that now is called Burgham in the north coustree of Westmerlonde fast by Camberlond / and standeth vpon þe ryuer Eden / the cite is there wonderly seene. Deme ye now where it is buylded.

T. Trevisa. It is not harde to assyle yf men take hede / that many townes bere one name / as Cartago i Africa & Cartago in Spayne. Newpore in Wales & Newport in þe paryshe of Barkeley / Wotten vnder egge & Wotton pasceth / Wyrewar wyke payne & Wyke in þe paryshe of Barkeley / & two shyre townes eyther is called Hampton / as Southampton & Northampton / so it semeth by

The description of Englonde.

the shippes that one Iclind was in York
shyre/ an other in Westmerlonde/ & one fast
by the ryght syde of þ west arme of þ see
that departeth Englonde & Scotlande/
But þ Iclind was a ryght stronge cyte
as Beda sayeth/ & þ cyte standerþ fast by
a ryuer þ is called Cliud/ & there is not
suche a ryuer in Yorkshyre nor in West-
merlonde as men of the countree tell me.
Some men saye that the ryuer Cliud is
now named Sulwache. Sulwache is
but. v. myle fro Carlepyll/ whiche is a ci-
te in þ countree of north Englonde toward þ
north west/ & hath an other name/ whi-
che is Luguball. Leyll the. vii. kynge of
Britons buylded Carlepyll. ¶ In this
cite is somwhat of þ famous wall that
passeth Northumberland. ¶ Wilhelm de
pon. In this cite is yet a thre chambred
hous made of balwe stones that neuer
myght be destroyed w tempest of weder
ne w breynynge of fyre. Also in þ countree
fast by Westmerlonde in þ front of a thre
chambred place is wypte in this maner
¶ Marij victori. What this wyptyng is to
saye I doubt somwhat/ but yf it were
so þ some of þ Combes laye there som-
tyme whan þ consull ¶ Marij had put hy
out of praly. But it semeth better þ it is
wypten in mynde of ¶ Marij kyng of Bri-
tons þ was Iruirag? sone. This ¶ Marij
ouercame in that place Rodryk kyng of
Pictes/ so sayth Gausfre in his bytyshe
boke/ William malmesbury sawe neuer
þ boke. ¶ Hagulstaldes chirche is a pla-
ce. lxxx. myle out of yorke north westward
the place is as it were destroyed/ so sayth
¶ Wilhelm. li. iii. de pon. That place longed
sometyme to þ bishopricke of yorke/ there
were somtyme houses w byce arches &
hautes in þ maner of Rome/ now þ place
is called Hetholdestham & Hegletham also
Beda li. iii. ca. i. sayth that þ place is fast
by þ longe wall of the werke of Rome in
the north halfe. ¶ There is difference

betwene the prouynce of Lyndesfar & the
chirche Lyndesfarne. for the prouynce of
Lyndesfar & Lyndesep is all one/ & lyeth
by cest Lyncolne/ & Lyncolne is the head
therof/ of the whiche sayth Beda li. iii.
ca. xi. that Seruulfus was first bisschop
there. But Beda lib. iii. ca. xxii. sayth þ
Lyndesfar chirche is an ylonde þ is called
holy ylonde in the ryuer of Tweede nexte
Barthok. And so it is gadred of Bedaes
lawes þ Tweede renneth in to þ famous
arme of þ see þ now departeth Englyssh
men & Scottes in þ cest halfe/ & in that
arme be thre ylondes/ þ one is Maytros
that now is called ¶ Bentos. Tha about
toward the west is Lyndesfarne chirche
that is called holy ylonde. Than þ thyrde
is aboue byward/ & is the ylonde farne
& is called also ferny ylonde. Than by-
warde aboue that two myle is a ryall ci-
te vpon þ byrnyke of Tweede whiche som-
tyme hight Sebamburgh þ is Bobbes
cite/ & now is called Samburg/ & hath
a ryght stronge castell. ¶ ¶ In icinere
Two cytees there ben eyther is called
Carlegyon & Carleon also/ one is De-
mercia in south Wales that is called Ca-
erulke/ also there the ryuer of Uske fal-
leth in to Seuerne fast by Glamorgan.
¶ Bessin? kyng of Britons somtyme buyl-
ded that cite/ & was somtyme the chefe
cyte of Demercia in south Wales. After-
warde in Claudius cesars tyme it was
called þ cite Legyons whan at þ prayer
of Genius the quene/ Vaspasianus and
Iruirag? were accorded/ & Legyons of
Rome were sent in to Irlonde/ tho was
Carleon a noble cyte & of grete auctori-
te/ and by the Romayns ryally buylded
and walled about with walles of byent
tyle. Grete noblesse þ was there in olde
tyme is there yet in many places seen/
as the grete palayles/ grautes toures/
noble baches/ reices of þ temples places
of the attres/ that were places hygh &

The description of Englonde.

ryall to stande and sit in and to beholde about. The places were allye closed in with walls that yet somdele standeth ryght myght close. And within þe walle and without is grete baylyngge under erth / water conduytes and wayes under erth / & it was also þe walle so wonderly made wth strapte syde wayes of brethynge that wonderly call by here. In this cite were somtyme thre noble churches / one was of saynt Julius þe martyr / & therein a grete company of virgins. That other was of saynt Jaron that was of þe orde of blacke chawons / þe church was ryght nobly oushred. The thyrde church was the chiefe moder church of all Wales / & the chiefe see. But afterwarde þe chiefe see was turned out of that cite in to Genevra that is saynt Davids londe in West Wales. In this Caerleon was Amphibal^{us} boine þe taught saynt Albon. There þe messengers of Rome came to geete Drithurg tounre / yf it is lesull to bylde Trevisa / yf Girald^{us} was in doubt whether it were lesull to bylde or noe / it were a wonder to bylde as men wolde wene for to have electioun in mynde & ever be in doubt yf all his booke were such / What loze were therein / & namely whyle he maketh none evydence / for in neyther syde he telleth what metheth hym so to saye. ¶ There is an other cite of Legrons there his Cronycles were betrayed as it is clerely known by þe syde theppere of this boke. ¶ Trevisa. That is to understande in the lareyn wyrryng. For he þe made it in lareyn turned it not in to Englyshe in þe same place that it was first in lareyn. The understondyng of þe that made this Cronycles is thus wyrtten in lareyn in þe begynnyng of this boke. *Præsentem Cronicam compilavit frater Ranulph^{us} Cestrensis monachus.* That is to saye in Englyshe. Wyder Ranulph monke of Chestre compiled & made this

boke of the Cronycles. ¶ The cite of Legrons that is Chestre standeth in the Marche of Englonde toward Wales by threwe two armes of the see þe ben named De & Owersee. This cite in tyme of Brytons was heere & chiefe cite of all Wembria that is North Wales. The founder of this cite is unknownen. For who þe seeth the foundementes of þe grete bones wold rather wene þe it were Romayns werke or werke of gyauntes / than it were set by workyngge of Brytons. This cite somtyme in Brityshe speche byght Caerthleon / Legecestria in lareyn / & Chestre in Englyshe / & þe cite of Legrons also. For there lape a wynter þe legrons of knyghtes that Julius Cesar sent for to wynter Irland. And after Claudius Cesar sent Legrons out of that cite for to wynter þe plonde þe he called Orcades. What cunct Wylliam Shalmesbury by testyngge of other men mente of this cite. This cite hath plere of lyeuode of come of flesche of fysh / & specially of pyce of samon. This cite receyvet grete marchandise and sendeth out also. Also mygh this cite ben salt welles / metall & oore. For humbers destroyed this cite somtyme. But afterwarde Cleda lady of Mercia buylded it agayn / & made it moche more. In this same cite ben wayes under the erth with halwes & stone werke wonderly wrought / thre chambere werkes / grete bones grauen with olde menes names therein. There is also Julius Cezars name wonderly grauen in stone and other noble menes also wth the wyrryng about. This is the cite that Ethelrude kyng of Northumberlonde destroyed / and after that there fast by mygh two thousande monkes of the mynster of Bangor. This is the cite that kyng Edgar came thyder somtyme wth his knynges þe were subgers to hym. I mette brekethe out in this manner in praysyng this cite. Chestre callid

The description of Englonde.

to londe / as it were / many take it of a ca-
 sill. It is unknowne what man day-
 ded this our name. The legendarie chens
 bright with the name of Legreous. Also
 Wallthe and Engilthe holde this out of
 grete payre. Shornes on Bookes semeth
 Werthe Hercules all. There linge with
 myght to dure þe þe is byght. Upon
 small Bookes / set upon grete ben at ones.
 There under grounde / loyng double
 boue is folde. That helpeþ in foudes
 many men of Westerne londes. Iylthe
 fleshe and come lowe / this Cite colone
 hard yowde. Whyppeþ & chafare / see
 Werthe byþerth yough there. Godesal
 there is / that was Emperour of this.
 And south Henry kyng / rethe is there
 dwellyng. Of kyng Harald / polwer
 is there yet y halde. Bachus and Mer-
 curius / Mars and Venus. Also Lauer-
 na / Procheus and Pluto / regne there in
 the colone. **C**ronica. God wote what
 this is to mene / but portes in theyr ma-
 ner speche sayne as though every kynde
 crafte & spuryng had a dyuers god ene-
 rythe from other. And so they sayned a
 god of barayle & of fyghtyng & called þe
 Mars / and a god of couertyl & richesse &
 marchauntyl / & called hym Mercurius
 And so Bachus is called god of wyne.
 Venus goddesse of loue & beaute. Lauer-
 na god of thefte & of robbery. Procheus
 god of falsheþe & of gyle / & Pluto god of
 hell. And so it semeth that these verbes
 wolde mene that these foresayd goddes
 regne & ben serued in Chestre. Mars in
 fyghtyng & cockyng. Mercurius with
 couertyl & richesse. Bachus with grete
 wyþyng. Venus in loue & beaute. Lauer-
 na in thefte & robbery. Procheus in fals-
 heþe & gyle. This is Pluto not instructed
 that is god of hell. **E**n. There Babylon
 lye. Many myght þat crouþ the moze.

Of shippes and shypes. C. x.

The hede that Englonde conteyn-
 eth. North shype & shippes / þe
 north ben called shippes / & shippes. Cap-
 taine of þe shippe. **C**hilde. These ben
 the names of þe shippes & shippes. Kent
 shippe / Northshyre / Southshyre / Dorset
 shippe that hath his name of a bare oke þe
 is in the forest at Wyndesore / for at þe bare
 oke men of that shippe were to come
 togyder and make theyr treatyres / and
 there take consyle & aduys. Also Wyl-
 shippe that hight somtyme the prynces
 of Demet / Demet / Dorset / Druen
 shippe that now is called Devon in la-
 tin. These. ix. south shippes the Cample
 departeth fro the other dele of Englonde
 which were somtyme governed & ruled
 by the Westsaxon lawe. Cestex / Wyndesore
 shippe / Northshyre / Northfolke / Hertford
 shippe / Huntingdon shippe / Northampton
 shippe / Cambridge shippe / Bedfordshyre /
 Bedfordham shippe / Lecestre shippe / Der-
 by shippe / Nottingham shippe / Lincolne
 shippe / Yorkeshippe / Durham shippe. Also
 chumberlonde / Caerlepe shippe / in Cum-
 berlonde / Appleby shippe / with Westmer
 londe / Lancastre shippe that conteyneth
 fyue tyll shippes. These. xv. North and
 Cest shippes were somtyme governed &
 ruled by the lawe called Mercia in latin
 & Mearche in Engilthe. It is to
 wyte that þe shippe stretcheth from þe
 ryuer of Humber unto þe ryuer of Teyl
 And yet in þe shippe ben. xii. hondre-
 des / hondred & candred is all one. Can-
 dred is one shippe made of malthe and
 Icelthe / & is to menuge a courtes that
 conteyneth an hondred colones / & is also
 in Engilthe called Wepentake / for som-
 tyme in the comyng of a wyne lorde ca-
 uantes were wont to yelde by theyr woe-
 pen in fynde of homage. Durham shippe
 stretcheth fro the ryuer of Teyl unto þe
 ryuer of Tyne. And so to speche properly
 of Northumberlonde it stretcheth fro the

Colligations of number and
marked by these items. CL 11.

A the byngdomes of Bytayne. Sothe
withouth deperceyng. Hele and all
one byngdom to the Bytayne. From the
first Bytute unto Julius Ceyars tyme/
and fro Julius Ceyars tyme unto the
actus tyme this londe was under try-
bute to þe Romayns. Somethynge byn-
nes they buy of þe same londe fro Julius
rus was the last pyrrus Cynicus succesi-
four of Bytayne sayles and Romayns
reigned in Bytayne. After wards the Mas-
trayns leide of theyre reynunge in Byt-
tayne/ because it was fere from Rome
and for grete besynes that they had on þe
other syde. Then Sextus and Ptolemy
by mylkyng of Sparitulus the tyrant
purshed Bytayne & warred there with
grete strength of men of armes longe
tyme/ but the tyme that the seapowre
came as the purshing of the Bytayne ag-
gaynst the seares & put out Corneus
the Bytish byng with his shutes and
the Bytayne with luth they purshed
byng Carthage and drew them out of
England into Bytish. But so þe seapowre
was byngpoynted & carry byngpoynt
in his strength made him a byng. And
he bynged England in to fere byng
byng. Somethynge after wards the
first byngpoynted in byngpoynted
and all in to one byngpoynt. In lute the
pyrrus Bytish. Somethynge
afterwards byngpoynted in lute the Bytish
byngpoynted the lute byngpoynted

Thus the cynges that in thys tyme
 shuld reigne in england, that were born
 naturally charyte and curte, & yett more
 that after tyme became better and longer
 more so manerful. The after tyme they
 must have comen into this tyme, but
 how longe they shall regne we dar not to
 knowe nor change it is not to knowe. ¶
 The first kyng of england was a thetys
 markes maker & baronnes. When they
 began, & how longe they endured, here
 shall I somwhat shortly tell. ¶ Alfre.
 The first kyngdome was þe kyngdome
 of here, þe which fro the east Ocean
 unto þe ryver of Tamys. There reigned
 the first Englysh, & began to regne by
 the accomynge of Dionys the yere of
 our lordes a. d. lxx. that kyngdome durd
 in. d. lxxij. yere. ch. viij. unto þe tyme
 that kyng Baluys the dead out out, and
 Eghert kyng of Westsaxon ioyned that
 kyngdom to his owne. The second kyng
 domes was of Southsaxon, that had in
 the east tyme here, in the south the see, &
 the flet of Humber, in the West Hamthyr
 & in the north the river, there Eila reigned
 first in his tyme. He began to regne
 the yere after the comynge of þe Angles
 mccc. lxx. But that kyngdome within
 thys tyme passed into the other kyng-
 domes. The thyrde kyngdome was of
 Eastsaxon, & had in the east tyme the see,
 in the West the coltre of London, in the
 south the see, & in þe north Southfolke.
 The kynges of this countee of Westsaxon
 fro the first Incheesters tyme unto þe tyme
 of the Normans were a. kynges, the which
 the Normans subiecte themselves to other kyng-
 domes. Thus what tyme it was a. longe tyme
 they were knowne to be kynges of england, & so
 as the tyme of the kynges of West
 Saxons in england kyngdomes as it is now.
 The fourth kyngdome was of Kent, they
 first comen into Southfolke & South
 Saxe, and partly in the east tyme, and in the

The description of Englonde.

north syde the see / & in þe north west Cam
bridge shyre / in þe west saynt Edmundes
byche & herfordshyre / & in þe south Essex.
And this kyngdom durde under thre
kynges / unto the tyme þat kyng Edward
was slayne. And then the Danes toke
vnyngfully both the kyngdomes of east
Angles and of east Saxen. Afterwarde
the Danes were put out and byrren:
Waye / or made subgette. And then the
elder kyng Edward toyned bothe the
kyngdomes to his owne. The fyfth kyng
dome was of Westsaxon / & durde longest
of all these kyngdomes / & had in the east
syde southsaxon / in the north Campe /
in the south & in the west the see Dorean.
In that kyngdom reigned Wertryth in
his sonne Henryke / & began to reigne the
yere of our lord god. b. C. and. xix. and
then after the comynge of Angles. lxxi.
so sayth Denys the other kyngdomes
passed in to this kyngdom. The sixth
kyngdom was of Mercia / & was gre-
test of all. The marches & the meres ther
of were in the west syde of the ryuer De
laffe by Chestre / and Seuarne falle by
Wharfedale unto Wyke / in þe east
the east see / in the south Campe unto
London / in the north the ryuer of Hum-
ber / and so westwarde and downwarde
unto the ryuer Merse unto the corner of
Dorham / there Humber falleth in to the
west see. Wenda Wybbes sonne reigned
first in this kyngdom in the yere of our
lord Jhesu Chyyst. b. C. xxi. so sayth
Denys / and fro the comynge of Angles
an hundred. lxxii. yere. This kyngdom
durede under. xliii. kynges aboue two
hundred. lxxii. yere / unto þat last Colwille
the Danes toke þe kyngdom to hepe
tohan Burdard the kyng was put out /
but the elder Colward the kyng put out
the Danes / and toyned the kyngdom of
Mercia to his owne kyngdom. After
thysle at the begynnyng this kyng-

dom of Mercia was departed in to thre
In West Mercia / in myddell Mercia / &
east Mercia. The. vii. kyngdomes was
Northanhumbry / þis the kyngdom
of Northumberland / the meres & mar-
ches therof were by west & by east the see
of Dorean / by south þe ryuer of Humber /
and so downwarde toward the west by þe
ende of the shires of Northham and of
Derby unto the ryuer of Merse / and by
north the Scotres see / that byght south
in Scotres / werres in Britayn / þe Scot
tylde see in Englyshe. This kyngdom
of Northumberland was first deled in
two prouynces. That one was þe south
syde & byght Deyra / & that other was þe
north syde & byght Bernicia / as it were
two kyngdomes / & the ryuer departed
these two kyngdomes that tyme / for the
kyngdom of Deyra was from þe ryuer
of Humber unto the ryuer of Tyne. The
kyngdom of Bernicia was fro Tyne to
the Northfolke see. And whan Pictres
dwelled there as Beda saith ii. iii. ca. ii.
That Arian þe holy man conuerted men
of the south syde. Ioa the kyng reigned
there first / & began to reigne the yere of
our lord. b. C. x. lvi. so sayth Denys.
In Deyra reigned kyng Elle the yere of
our lord. b. C. clix. These two kyngo-
mes were other whyle (as it is sayd) de-
parted bytwene two kinges / & samtyne
all hole under one kyng / and durede as it
were. xx. Englyshe kynges. CCC. xxi.
yere. At þat last Oswaldus and Elle were
slayne in the. ix. yere of thei kyngdom
the Danes toke them / & Northumber-
londe was voyde wout kyng. lvi. yere
Then afterwarde the Danes reigned in
Northumberland. cxx. vi. yere / unto the
comynge of þe kyngdom. Thesleone made
subgette the kynges / Danes / Northfolke
& Walshe / & reigned first alone in Eng-
londe / & helde þe kyngdom of Englonde
all hole and all oore kyngdomes that were

Spelling of English.

The rest of our topic, viz. C. 17. 11. 12. That
crust of species have temporary number is
more by nature the programme of species
and the beginning of the humbersons
that may be effected in the manner that
by this property of the species: that is
as much to say as a tree is a being in
itself, for it depends on humbersons in
another. This it is proven in C. 17. 11. 12.
of Henry & Alfred & King Edward & al-
der failed a collection of species in the
humbersons, but the species is from
the crust of species having this type.

Of bythopyches and of they
fres. Cal. cul.

Unius was the first kyng christened of þe Byrons / in his tyme were thre archbyschoppes sees in Byrtayne / one was at London / another at Yorke / & the thyrde at Caerul the cite of Legrus in Giamorgan / that cite is now called Caerlcon. To these archbyschoppes sees were subgette .xx.iiij. byschops / & were called flammies. To the archbyschoppes see of London was subgette Coyme Waile & all myddell Englobe unto Dumber. To Yorke all Northumberlonde fro the bove of Dumber both all & northide. To Caerlcon all Wales / there were in Wales .liij. byschops / & now ben but .iiij. The Seuerne departed Englonde and Wales. ¶ Withel. de pon. lib. iiij. But in the Sacons tyme though saynt Gregory had graunted London the pccullege of the archbyschoppes see / neuertheless saint Austyn that was sent in to Englonde by saynt Gregory turned þe archbyschoppes see out of London in to Caisterbury. After saynt Gregoryes days at þe prayer of kyng Ethelbryht & caryns & burgess / bish of Caisterbury / there þe archbyschoppes see was turned into north / since that in þe tyme of king Offa kyng of Mern was turned the see out of Caisterbury / & became

[illegible]

The descripcyon of Englonde.

bysshops in Englonde and all in Wales
The pyymate of poppe hath but two sul
frigans in Englonde. þ ben þ bysshops of
Canterbury of Durham. Of all these sees
and chaungynge of theyr places I shall
shewe you here folowynge. Take hede in
the begynnyng of theyr churche in Eng
londe bysshops ordeyned theyr sees i lowe
places & symple þ were couenable for co
templacyon for prayers & deuocyo. But
in Wyllyam conquerours tyme by dome
of lawe canon it was ordeyned that bys
shops shoulde come out of small towner in
to grete citis. therfore was þ see of Woy
chestre chalyged to Lyncolne. Lychfelde
to Chestre. Eborford to Rydwiche. Wyke
borne to Salysbury. Welles to Bathe.
Cornwale to Excestre. and Wicheley to
Chichestre. The bysshop of Rochester
had no parlyshe but he is the archebys
shops chaplaine of Canterbury. whiche þ
see of Canterbury was first ordeyned by
saint Austyn. & chalyged yet neuer his pla
ce. Chichestre hath under hym onely Wyke
see & þ yle of Wyght. & had his see first in
Wicheley in the tyme of the archebysshop
Theodow. & þ see dured there. ccc. xxxiii.
yere. Under. cc. bysshops fro þ fyrst Wil
freds tyme to þ last Wygande at þ cōmañ
dement of kynge Wyllyam conquerour
chalyged þ see fro Wicheley to Chichestre.

De episcopis octoſcalis. Wilhelmus

The mynde that all þ prouince of
Westſaxon had alway one bysshop
fro þ begynnyng into Theodowus tyme
by graunt of king Ida kyng of Westſaxon
the fyrst Birinus ordeyned a see at Woy
chestre that is a symple towe by south
Oxſode beſyde Walyngford bytwene þ
metynge to grete of Teme and Tame.
When Birinus was ded. then Wulfſtun
the kyng ordeyned a see at Wyncheſtre
as þis later had purpoſed. theſe Agi-

bert a frendſyman was fyrst bysshop of
all the prouince of Westſaxon. fro þ tyme
thereto & the ſee of Woycheſtre perteyned
to the pryncer of Mercia. þ cite ſandeth
Wythun Teme. & the Teme departeth
bytwene Mercia & Westſaxon. After that
Agilbert was put out of Wyncheſtre. þ
the hyght Winton. then was there an
Englyſhe bysshop þ was called Wyne.
Some men ſuppole þ this cite hath the
name of this Wyne. and is called Wynn
cheſtre. as it were Wyne cite. At þ laſt he
was put out. & after hym came Leuther
ius þ ſonſayd Agilberts neywe. After
Leutherius. Beda a Wyke was bysshop
there. When he was ded Theodowus þ
archebysshop ordeyned two bysshops to
the pryncer of Westſaxon. Daniel at Wynn
cheſtre. to þ were ſubget two countreis
Southery & Southamſhyre. & to hym
were ſubgete. vi. countreis. Barſhyre.
Wylſhyre. Domeset. Woyſetſhyre. De
uenſhyre & Cornwale. & Teme. It
ſemeth by this that Westſaxon cōtreyed
Southery. Southamſhyre. Woyſetſhy
re. Deuenſhyre & Cornwale. & Wil
hel. Afterward in elder Edwardes tyme
to theſe two ſees were ordeyned by com
mañdement of formoſus þ pope. iii. oðer
ſees. at Welles for Domeset. at Winton
for Deuenſhyre. & at ſaynt German for
Cornwale. Not longe afterwarde the
ſyxt ſee was ſet at Ramelſbury for Wyl
ſhyre. At þ laſt by cōmañdement of kyng
Wyllyam conquerour all theſe ſees (ſawe
Wyncheſtre) were turned & chalyged out
of ſmall towner in to grete Cytis. ſay
Wykeborne and Ramelſbury were tur
ned in to Salysbury. Now to that ſee is
ſubgete Barſhyre. Wylſhyre & Woyſet
The ſee of Welles was turned to Bathe
thereto is now ſubgete all Domeset.
The ſees of Winton and of Cornwale
were chalyged to Excestre. thereto is ſub
gete Deuenſhyre & Cornwale.

3. **Scholarship of Excellence.**

[illegible]

© 1994 by the University of Chicago Press

Despite the banishment of the language of difference from all our great institutions, it is hard to do in more than a passing way, and especially to give birth to a new style, to be able to do it. I am king of speech, he challenges, and the English for the Committee on the Language of the House of Representatives. I am king of speech, he challenges, and the English for the Committee on the Language of the House of Representatives. I am king of speech, he challenges, and the English for the Committee on the Language of the House of Representatives.

[illegible]

The description of Englonde.

in Cogars tyme byshop Aelfricus was
ned bothe byshoppyches together of Ches
tre & Lyndesfar byple his lyl endured.

De episcopis Northumbrianis.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Also the tyme byshop Aelfricus was

prosperous of Northumbrian.

Paulinus helde fyrst þe see & was ordey

ned of þe byshop of Caisterbury & helde

that see of porke. vii. yere. Afterwarde

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

Wihel. de pond. c. xi.

rupter with some hunter made this

done after that Wulfred had ben byshop

of porke & Cumber at Hagustalde chir

che & Cate at Lyndesfar churche þe

is called hely gloude in þe riuer of Tweede

Bydanus soude fyrst þe see. And Thredo

rus made Cuthbertus byshop of Beroun

that was comen agayn out of Lyndesfar

Wulfred had be abbot of Beroun. Thero

donus sente Crundwynus to the londe of

Wicres in the endes of Englonde fast by

Scottode in a place þe byght Candida ca

sa & Wihertne also there saynt Ruman

a Byton was fyrst souder and doctour.

But all these sees outtake porke sayled

lytell & lytell for þe see of Candida casa

is called way that the longed to Englonde

& dures many yeres under x. byshops

into þe had no power by destroyinge of

the Wicres. The sees of Hagustalde & of

Lyndesfar was somtyme all one under

ix. byshops aboute lxxx. yere & dured

into þe conyng of the Danes. In that

tyme under Hyngar & Hudda Arduf the

byshop went longe aboute with saynt

Cuthbertes body into hyng Aluredes tyme

me þe yuge of Westsaxon & the see of Lyndesfar

was set at Hunegestre þe is called

Hunyngsburch also that place is cal

led now Abbessford byon Tweede. At the

last the xvi. yere of hyng Egberts yuge

Cogars sone that he was chaunged to

Durham & saynt Cuthbertes body was

brought thider by þe conyng of Edmond

the byshop & fro þe tyme forwarde þe sees

of Hagustalde & Lyndesfar sayled bette

ly. The fyrst hyng Henry in the ix. yere

of his regne made the newe see at Caer

leyll. The archebyshop of Caisterbury

hath under hym. xii. byshops in Eng

londe & iii. in Wales. he hath Rochester

under hym & þe hath under þe a part

in Kent alone. London hath under hym

Essex. Wyndesore & halfe Norfolke &

Chycheestre hath under hym Southse

Chycheestre hath under hym Southse

Chycheestre hath under hym Southse

Chycheestre hath under hym Southse

Chycheestre hath under hym Southse

The description of Englonde.

none gets. For Irlonde as Scottes sayd
 myghte not sustayne bothe people. Scot-
 tes sent the Pictes to the north syde of
 Englonde & beyghet them helpe agaynst
 the Brytons & were theyr enemyes / yf
 they wolde cryle / & take them wyues of
 theyr daughters / upon suche condycyon
 yf doubte fell / who wolde haue ryght to
 be kynge / they wolde rather chole hy of
 the moders side than of faders syde / of
 the women kynne rather than of men
 kynne. **Causre.** In Maspatyan & em-
 perours tyme whan Mart^r Arminagus
 was kynge of Brytons / one Rodryk
 kynge of Pictes came out of Scicia & be-
 gan to destroye Scotlonde. Marus the
 kynge of this Rodryk / & gaue p north
 party of Scotlonde p hight Cathenesia
 to the men that were come with Rodryk
 & were overcome by hym / for to dwell in
 But these men had no wyues / ne none
 myght haue of p nation of Brytons / ther-
 fore they sayled in to Irlonde / & toke to
 theyr wyues Iryshe mēnes daughters
 by p couenaunt that p moders blode shold
 be put tofore in successyon of heritage.
Cir. ca. xlii. Auertheles Dirin^r sup
 the gylt laph p Pictes agatiles p had
 some dwelling place about p waters of
 Scicia / & they ben called Pictes of per-
 tynge & symptynge of woundes / therfore
 they are called Pictes as peyned men.
 These men and these gothes ben all one
 people. For whan Marimus the tyraunt
 was gone out of Brytayne in to Fraunce
 for to occupy p empyre. Than Gratian^r
 and Valentinianus p were brethren &
 folowes of the empyre brought these go-
 thes out of Scicia w grete gyften / w an-
 teryng & saye by helpe in to the north
 coūtre of Brytayne. For they were stal-
 worth & strong men of armes. And so
 these shewes and bybours were made
 men of londe & of coūtre & dwellen in the
 north coūtre / & helde there cytres & tow-

nes. **Causre.** Carandus the tyraunt
 of Rome Bassianus / and gaue the Pictes a
 dwelling place in Albama that is Scot-
 londe / there they dwelled longe tyme af-
 terward & medled with Brytons. **Cir.**
 Than lēth the Pictes occupyed fyrst the
 north syde of Scotlonde / it seemeth p the
 dwelling place p this Carandus gaue
 them is p south syde of Scotlonde / that
 stretcheth from the thwarre ouer walle
 of Romayns werke to p Scottyshe see /
 and conteyneth Galleway and Lodonua
 that is Lodelway. **Ctherfore Bede lib.**
iii. ca. ii. speket in this maner. **Puman**
 the holy man conuerted p south Pictes.
 Afterward the Saxons came & made p
 coūtre longe to Brenicia the north party
 of Northumberlonde / vnto p tyme that
 kynabius Alpinus some kynge of Scot-
 londe put out p Pictes / & made p coūtre
 that lyeth betwene Tweede & the Scot-
 tyshe see long to his kyngdom. **Beda**
li. i. ca. i. Afterward longe tyme p Scot-
 tes were led by duke Benda / & came out
 of Irlonde that is the propre countre of
 Scottes / & with loue & with strengthe
 made them a place fast by the Pictes in
 the north syde of the arme of the see that
 byeth in to the londe in the west syde /
 that departed in olde tyme bywene Bri-
 tons & Pictes. Of this duke Benda the
 Scottes had p name & were called Dal-
 reidm^r / as it were Bendars parte / for in
 theyr speche a parte is called dal. **Cir.**
xxi. The Pictes myght haue no wyues
 of Brytons / but they toke them wyues
 of Irysh Scottes / and promysed them
 saye for to dwell with them / & graūced
 them a londe by p see syde / there p see is
 narowe. That londe is now called Galle-
 way. **Varianus.** Iryshe Scottes lon-
 ded at Argall p is Scottes cyf for Scot-
 tes lounded there for to do harme to p Bri-
 tons / for p place is next to Irlond for to
 come a londe in Brytayne. **Beda.** And

The description of Englonde.

In the Scottes after þe Dardans & Pictes made þe thre people dwelling in Brytayne. ¶ Then after þe come þe Saxons at the porsenge of the Dardans to helpe them agaynst þe Scottes & Pictes. And the Dardans were soon put out into Wales / & the Saxons occupied the londe lytell & lytell / & este more in the Scottyshe see. And so the Saxons made the fourth maner of men in þe plonde of Brytayne. ¶ Beda lib. ii. ca. ix. for the Saxons & Angles came out of Germania / yet some Brytons that dwel yngh call them shortly Germanys. ¶ Beda. Auctheles aboute þe yere of our lord. viij. C. Egbartus kyng of Westsaxon comadord & bad al men call þe men of þe londe Englyshmen. ¶ After. Then after that the Danes pursued the londe aboute a. ii. C. yere / that is to saye / fro þe forseyd Egbartus tyme vnto saynt Edwarde tyme / & made þe fyfth maner of people in þe plonde / but they sayled afterwarde. At the last came Roymann vnto duke Wyllyam & subdued Englyshmen & yet kepe they þe londe / & they made the syxth people in þe plonde. But in the fyfth kynges Henryes tyme came many Flemynghes & receyued a dwellyng place for a tyme helyde Dardans in the West syde of Englonde / & made the french people in the plonde. Auctheles by comadement of the same kynges they were put there & dweluen in Hawerfordes syde in þe West syde of Wales. ¶ Beda. And so in to in Brytayne Danes & Pictes sayle all out / and fyne nacyons dwell therein / that ben Scottes in Albanie / that is Scotlande. Brytains in Cambria / & in Wales / but that Flemynghes dwell in þe West Wales. And Roymann & Englyshmen ben medled in al þe plonde / for it is now doubte in howeys hom and in what maner they were put ather & destroyed out of Brytayne. For it is to beknowen both þe Pictes were destroyed & sayled. ¶ Beda. i. ca. viij.

Brytains had heryng occupied both Dardans / & peas was made & established with þe Pictes / then þe Scottes þe came with the Pictes / & the Pictes were nobler of dedes and better men of armes though they were lesse in nombor than þe Scottes. Then the Scottes haunge therof eny turned to theyr natural treason þe they haue ofte bich. For in treason they passe other men / & be traytours as it were by kynde / for they mayed all the Pictes / & specially the gretest of them to a leest / & wayted theyr tyme when the Pictes were merry and had well dyonke they dyne by nayles þe helde by holome benches vnder the Pictes / & the Pictes bulwarked so deply fell in ouer þe hammer in to a wonderfull pyefall. Then þe Scottes fell on þe Pictes & slewe them / & leste none alyue. And so of two maner people the better warryours were al destroyed. But the other that ben þe Scottes / whiche ben traytours all vnto þe Pictes toke ptyce by that fals treason / for they toke all that londe / and holde it yet vnto this tyme / & call it Scotlande after theyr owne name. In kynges Egarus tyme kynadins Alpinus son was duke & lord of the Scottes / and warred in Pictelonde & destroyed the Pictes. He warred syxe tymes in Dardans / & toke all þe londe that is bytwene Tweede & þe Scottyshe see with wynges & with strengthe.

¶ Of the languages of maners & blage of the people of that londe. ¶ Beda.

As it is knowen how many maner of people ben in that plonde there ben also in many languages and songys. Auctheles Wyllyam and Scottes that ben not made with other nacyons kepe yet theyr language & speche. But yet þe Scottes that were formerly confederate and dwelled with the Pictes dyne found that after theyr speche.

The descripcyon of Englonde.

But the Flemyngeſ þ dwell in the weſt ſyde of Wales haue leſte theyr ſtraunge ſpeche & ſpeke lyke to ſaxons. Alſo Englyſhmen though they had fro þ begynnyng eþre maner of ſpeeches ſoutherne northerne / & myddle ſpeche in þ myddle of the londe / as they come of eþre maner of people of Germania. Neuertheles by comixcyon & medlynge fyrſt w Danes & after ward w Normans / in many thyngeſ þ couētree language is appayzed / for ſome ble ſtraūge blaſpynge / chyteryng harrynge / garrynge & gryſbytyng. This appayzing of þ language cometh of two thyngeſ. One bycauſe þ children þ go to ſcole lerne to ſpeke fyrſt englyſhe / & thā ben compelled to coſtrue theyr leſſons in frenſhe / & that hath bē bleſed ſyth þ Normans came in to Englonde. Alſo gentylmens children ben lerned & taughte from theyr outh to ſpeke frenſhe / & vpon diſhmen wyll couēterſeyte & lyken them ſelfe to gentylmen / and are beſy to ſpeke frenſhe for to be more ſet by / wherfore it is ſayd by a comyn puerbe. Iacke wold be a gentylman yf he coude ſpeke frenſhe.

Creuiſa. This was moche bleſed tofore the grete deeth / but ſyth it is ſomdele chaūged / for ſy John Cornewayle a mayſter of grāmer chaūged þ techynge of grāmer ſcole & coſtruecyon of frenſhe in to englyſhe. And other ſcole mayſterſ ble þ ſame waye now / in the yere of our lord. M. CCC. lxxxv. the. ix. yere of king Rycharde þ ſeconde / & leue all frenſhe in ſcoles & ble all coſtruecyon in englyſhe wherin they haue auauantage one waye / that is þ they lerne the ſooner theyr grāmer / & in another diſauauantage / for now they lerne no frenſhe / nor can none / whiche is hurte to them þ ſhall paſſe the ſer. And alſo gentylmen haue moche leſte to teche theyr chyldren to ſpeke frenſhe.

CB. It ſemetþ a grete wonder þ Englyſhmen haue ſo grete diuerſite in theyr

owne language in ſowne & in ſpeking of it / whiche is all in one ylonde. And þ language of Normandy is comen out of an other londe / & hath one maner ſowne amonge all other þ ſpeke it in Englonde / for a man of kent / ſoutherne / weſterne & northerne men ſpeke frenſhe all lyke in ſowne & ſpeche / but they can not ſpeke theyr englyſhe ſo.

Creuiſa. Neuertheleſſe there ben as many diuers maner of frenſhe in the realme of fraunce / as diuers englyſhe in þ realme of Englonde.

CB. Alſo of the ſoutherd tongue whiche is departed in eþre is grete wonder / for men of þ ceſt wth men of þ weſt accorde better in ſowynge of eþer ſpeche / than men of þ north w men of þ ſouth. Therfore it is þ men of merce þ ben of myddle Englonde as it w:re partyners wth þ endes / vnderſtande better the ſyde languages northerne & ſoutherne / than northerne & ſoutherne vnderſtande eþer other.

CWulhel. de pon. li. iii. All þ language of the northumbries & ſpecially at York is ſo ſharpe ſpytynge / frotyng & vnſhappe / þ we ſoutherne men may beneth vnderſtāde þ language. I ſuppoſe the cauſe be þ they be nigh to þ alyens þ ſpeke ſtraūgely. Alſo þ kynges of Englonde abyde & dwell more in þ ſouth couētree thā in þ north couētree / bycauſe there is better come londe / more people / more noble citees / & more phytable hauens in the ſouth couētree than in þ north couētree.

C De gentis huius moribus.
Et. in itinere.

How þ maners & doynge of Walſh men & of Scottes ben tofore ſom what declared. Now I purpoſe to tell & declare þ condicions of þ myddle people of Englonde. But the Flemyngeſ þ ben in þ weſt ſyde of Wales ben now all turned as they were Englyſhmen / bycauſe they company wth Englyſhmen. And

The description of Englonde.

they be myghty & stronge to fyght / and
ben the moost enemyes that Walshmen
haue / and be marchantys & clothyng
& ben full redy to put themselfe in ad-
uencures & to peryll in þe see & londe bycause
of grete wyppynge / & ben redy somtyme
to the plow / & somtyme to dedes of ar-
mes whan tyme and place arerh. It se-
meth of these men a grete wonder þ in a
bone of a werbers ryght sholder whan
the flesshe is soden away and not rosted
they knowe what hath be done / is done
and shall be done / as it were by spiryte
of prophete & wonderfull crafte. They
tell what is done in ferre countrees / to-
kens of peas or of warre / the state of the
realme / the ryng of men & spousebryche /
suche thynges they declare certayne of
tokens & sygnes that is in suche a shol-
der bone. ¶ But the Englyshmen þ
dwel in Englonde ben medled in þe plowde
and ben ferre from the places that they
sponge of fyrst turne to the contrary be-
des lyghtly without entyngne of any
other men by theyr owne assent. And be
easly also vnpacient of peas / enemyes of
besynes / and full of scourh. ¶ Wihel. de
pen. li. iii. sayth. That whan they haue
destroied theyr enemyes all to þe grounde
than they fyght with themselves and see
eche other / as a boyde and an empye sto-
mah werbeth in it selfe. ¶ A. Fewer the
lille men of the south ben easyer & moze
myde than men of þe north. For they be
moze vnsable / moze cruell / and moze vn-
easly. The myddle men ben parteners w
bothe. Also they ble them to glotony moze
than other men / & ben moze cossewe
in meet & clothyng. ¶ Ben suppose that
they take þe byce of kyng Harpynoght
that was a Dane. For he hadde set forth
twopes double melle at dyner & at souper
me. These men ben spedfull on hoys &
a lye / able & redy to all maner dedes of
warre / & ben bound to haue byctory and

martry in every fyght where no terr-
sor is walkyng / and ben curpous & can
well tell dedes & wordes that they haue
sen. And they go in byuers londe / vn-
neth ben ony men ryche in theyr owne
londe or moze gracypous in ferre and in
strange londe / they can better wyne &
gete newe than kepe theyr owne herp-
tage. Therefore it is that they be spradde
in wyde / & wene þe every londe is theyr
owne. The men ben able to all maner of
seyght & wytte / but tofore þe dede blon-
derunge & hasty / & moze wysse after the
dede than tofore / & leue of lyghtly what
they haue begon. ¶ Solin^o li. vi. Ther-
fore Eugenius the pope sayd / that Eng-
lyshmen were able to do what euer they
wold / & to be set & put tofore all other /
ne were þe lyght wytte letterh. And as
Hampball sayd that þe Romayns myght
not be ouercome but in theyr owne countre
so Englyshmen may not be ouercome in
strange londe / but in theyr owne countre
they be lyghtly ouercomen. ¶ A. These
men despyse theyr owne & praple other
men / & vnneth be pleased w theyr owne
estate / what befallerh other men þe they
wyl gladly take to themselves. Therefore
it is þe a yeman arapth him as a squyer
a squyer as a knyght / a knyght as a du-
ke / a duke as a kyng. Yet some go about
& wyl be lyke to all maner state & be in no
state / for they take every degre þe be of no
degre / for in betyng outward they be min-
strels & heraldes / in talkyng grete spee-
hers / in etyng & drynyng glotous / in ga-
dryng of carell hucksters & cauerners /
in arape turnmentours / in wyppynge
Begi / in trausye Camali / in takyng
hede w deual / herdes wardenapall / in
chirches mawmets / in courtes chondre
only / in fuyllage of clergy & in prybes
they knowege themselves clerkes. ¶ Cres-
nisa. As touchyng þe recines of laryn / as
Begi / Camali / w deual / wardenapall / ye

The description of Wales.

must vnderstande them as þe poetes feyned of them. Argus was an herbe and kepte beestes / he had an hondred eyen / Argus was also a shyppe / a shipman / a chapman / & so Argus myghte se before and behynde & on euery syde. Therfore he that is wyle & ware & can se that he be not deceyued / may be called Argus. And so the cronycle sayth in plurell nombre þe Englysshmen ben Argi / that is to saye / they se about where as wymping is. That other worde Cantali / the poete feyneth that Cantalus slewe his owne sone / wherfore he is dampned to perpetual penance / and he standeth alwaye in water vp to the nether lyppe / & hath alwaye rype apples & noble fruyte hanginge downe to the ouer lyppe. But the fruyte nor the water may not come vnto his mouth. He is so holden & staideth by twene meet & drynke / and may neyther ete nor drynke / & is euer an hongred and a thyrst / that woo is hym aloue by this maner lyknes of Cantalus / they that do right nought there as is moche to do in euery syde ben called Cantali. It seemeth that it is to say in trausple they be Cantali / for they do ryght nought there to. The thyrde worde is Dedali / take hede that Dedalus was a subtyll and a slye man. And therfore by lyknes they that ben subtyll and slye / they ben called Dedali. And the fourth worde is Dardaniapali / ye shall vnderstode þe Dardaniapali was kynge of Assyrens / and was full vchaste / & bled hym for to lye softe. And by a maner of lyknes of hym they that lyue vchastly be called Dardaniapali. ¶ But amonge all Englysshmen meted togyders is so grete a charynge & diuersite of clothyng & of aray and so many maners & byuers shappes that well nygh is there nyght knownen by his clothyng and his aray of what someuer degree that he be. Therof pro-

phetyed an holy Anker in kynge Egafredes tyme in this maner. Henry. ii. of. Englysshmen for as moche as they vse them to drunkennes / to treason / & to rechelesnes of goddes hous / first by Dames / & than by Popmans / & at þe thyrde tyme by þe Scottes that they holde the moost wretched and leest worth of all other they shall be ouercomē. Than the worlde shall be so vnsable & so diuers & varyable that þe vnsableness of thoughtes shall be betokened by many maner dyuersytes of clothyng.

¶ Here foloweth the description
of the londe of Wales.

¶ Of the londe of Wales. Ca. i. b.

NOW this boke taketh in honde
Wales after Englonde
So take I my tales
And wende in to Wales
To that noble stode
Of Pryamus blode
Knowlege for to wyne
Of grete Juppeters kynne
For to haue in mynde
Dardanus kynde
In these fourc rytles I sonde
To tell the state of that londe
Cause of the men I shall tell
And than prayse the londe and well
Than I shall wyte with my pen
All the maners of the men
Than I shall sonde
To tell mcruaples of the londe.

¶ Of the name / and wherfore it
is named Wales. Ca. i. b.

Wales now is called Wallia
And somtyme it bygh Cambria
For Camber Bryes son
Was prynce / and there byd won
C ij

The description of Wales.

Then Wallia was to men
 For Gwalter the quene
 In pynne of charyte
 Was wedded to her myde
 And of that lande Gwalon
 Withyn a myle of the town
 And put to. l. l. a.
 And then Walte fynde Wallia
 And though this lande
 Be moche lesse than Englonde
 As good giede is one as other
 In the doughter as in the mother.

Of the commodities of the
 lande of Wales. Ca. viij.

A though that lande be lyte
 It is full of corne and of fruyte
 And hath grete plenty of wyg
 Of fleshe and eke of fysh
 Of bestes tame and wyde
 Of hoys shepe open myde
 Good lande for all sedes
 For corne gras and herbes that spedes
 There ben wodes and medes
 Herbes and floures there spedes
 There ben ryuers and welles
 Valeys and also hylls
 Valeys bynge forth flood
 And hylls metals good
 Cooll groweth vnder lande
 And gras aboute at honde
 There tyme is copious
 And felattes for hous
 Hony and mylke whyte
 There is depnte and not lyte
 Of braber meete and ale
 As grete plenty in that bale
 And all that nedeth to the lyue
 That lande byngeth forth ryue
 But of grete rycheffe to be draue
 And doct many in shepe saue
 It is a counte small
 As though god fysh of all

Spede that lande so fele
 To be seler of all bele
 Wales is belid by
 A water that byghte Cwy
 South Wales from the south
 Cwy drieth in places full couth
 The south byghte Demicia
 And the other Venedocia
 The fysh shoth and arowes beres
 That other drieth all with speres
 In Wales how it be
 Were somtyme courtes thre
 At Carmarthyn was that one
 And that other was in Pon
 The thyrde was in Dowsy
 In Degwern þ now is Shrowesbury
 There were bysshops seuen
 And now ben foure euen
 Under Saxons all at honde
 Somtyme vnder princes of that lande.

Of the maners and ryghtes of
 the Wallshmen. Ca. xij.

A the maner luyng of that lande
 As well dyners from Englonde
 In meet and drynke and clothyng
 And many other doyng
 They ben clothed wondrous well
 In a shyte and in a mantell
 A cryspe breeche well sayne
 Bothe in wynde and in rayne
 In this clothyng they be bolde
 Though the weder be ryght colde
 Withoute shetes alwaye
 Euermore in this araye
 They go fyght playe and lepe
 Stande spt lye and slepe
 Withoute surcot gowne cote and krytell
 Withoute iopen tabarde cloke or bell
 Withoute lace & chaplet þ chey lappes
 Withoute hode hatte or cappes
 Thus arayed gone the legges
 And alwaye with bare legges

The description of Wales.

They kepe none other goynge
 Though they mete with the kynge
 With arrowes and shote spres
 They fight with them that them dres
 They fyght better yf they nede
 Whan they go than whan they ryde
 In stede of castell and toure
 They take wodes & marrys for socour
 Whan they seen it is to do
 In fyghtrynge they wolde be a go
 Gylas sayth they ben varyable
 In peas and not stable
 If men aske why it be
 It is no wonder for to se
 Though men put out of londe
 To put out other wolde fonde
 But all for nought at this stounde
 For all many wodes ben at grounde
 And put the see amonge
 Ben castels buylded stronge
 The men may dure longe byn ete
 And lone well comune mete
 They can ete and be mury
 Without grete cury
 They ete breed colde and hote
 Of barley and of ote
 Brode cakes rounde and thynne
 As well semeth so grete kynne
 Solde they ete breed of whete
 And selde they done ones ete
 They haue gruell to potage
 And lekes kynde to companage
 Also butter mylke and chese
 yshape endlonge and corner wese
 Suche messes they ete swill
 And that maketh them drynke well
 Meete and ale that hath myght
 Theron they spende daye and nyght
 Euer the redet is the wyne
 They holde it the more syne
 Whan they drynke at the ale
 They tell many a lewde tale
 For whan drynke is in handlyng
 They ben full of tanglyng

At meet and after the
 They solace is salte and leke
 The husbonde in his wyfe
 Telleth that a grete pryse
 To gyue a caudion with growle
 To them that syt at his mele
 He delecth his meet at mele
 And gyueth eury man his dele
 And all the ourt pluse
 He kepeth to his owne ble
 Therfore they haue woo
 And myshappes also
 They ete hote samon alway
 All though physyke saye nay
 They houses ben lowe with all
 And made of perdes small
 Not as in cyters nygh
 But sette asonder and not to hygh
 Whan all is eten at home
 Tha to they neyghbours wyll they cos
 And ete what they may synde & se (me
 And than retorne home aye
 The lyfe is yole that they ledes
 In brennyng sepyng & such dedes
 Walshmen ble with they myght
 To welthe they gheskes fter a nyght
 If he well be they feet all and some
 Than they knowe p they be welcome
 They lyue so casely in a route
 That seldom they bere purse aboute
 At they byrche out and home
 They hange they money and combe
 It is wonder they be so hende
 And hare cracke at nether ende
 And without ony coze
 Wake they wardrope at the doze
 They haue in grete mangery
 Harpe tabour & pype for myndtrally
 They bere corps with sorowes grete
 And blowe lowe hornes of gbete
 They prayse fast Troyan blode
 For therof came all they brode
 Aygh kynne they wyll be
 Though they passe an hondred degre

The description of Wales.

These other men they wyl them dryght
 And worship prelates w they myght
 As angels of heuen ryght
 Thei worship seruantes of god almyght
 Othe gyld was this brode
 And perned batayle all for wode
 For speryus prophete
 And othe for sorcerye
 Best in manners of Brytons
 For company of Barons
 Ben turned to better ryght
 That is known as clere as lyght
 They tyl gardyns feide and townes
 And drawe them to good townes
 They ryde armed as wolde god
 And go phosed and yshodde
 And syt sayre at theyr mele
 And slepe in beddes sayre and wele
 So they seme now in mynde
 More englyshmen than waulste kynde
 If men are why they now do so
 More than they be wont to do
 They lyuen in more pees
 Bycause of theyr ryches
 For theyr catell sholde stake
 If they used othe make
 Byde of losse of theyr good
 Make them now full of mowe
 All in one it is brought
 Haue nothryng and dyde nought
 The poete sayth a sawe of preste
 The fote man syngeth tofore the theste
 And is bolder on the waye
 Than the hoys man ryche and gaye

Of the meruayles and wonder of Wales. C. 11.

A Here is a pole at Brechnok
 Therin of fyshes is many a flock
 Othe he chaungeth his helme on cop
 And beteth about a gardyn crop
 Othe tyme hold it be
 And of howe there shalte thou se

When the pole is frowe it is wonder
 Of the noyle that is there under
 If the paynee of the londe hate
 Brydes synges well mery note
 As mery as they can
 And syngen for none other man
 Besydes Caricon
 Two myle fro the colun
 Is a roche well hyght of leem
 Hyght agaynst the sonne beem
 Goldesyl that roche hyght
 For it shyneth as golde full hyght
 Suche a flour in stone is nought
 Withouth fruyte yf it were sought
 If men coude by crafte vndo
 The baynes of the erth & come therto
 Many benefyte of kynde
 Ben now hyd fro mannes mynde
 And ben unbeknownen yet
 For defaute of mannes wyte
 Grete tresour is hyd in grounde
 And after this it shall be founde
 By grete study and besynes
 Of them that come after vs
 That olde men had by grete nede
 We haue by besy dede. **C. Ceuila.**
 In booke ye may rede
 That kynde sayleth not at nede
 When no man had crafte in mynde
 Than of crafte halpe god and kynde
 When no eccher was in londe
 Men of crafte by goddes honde
 They that had crafte so then
 Taught forth crafte to other men
 Some crafte that came not yet in place
 Some men shall haue by goddes grace
C. 12. In plonde is with noyle & strye
 In west Wales at Hardysle
 Fast by Seuarne stonde
 Barry hyght that plonde
 In the hygher syde in a chene
 Shalte thou here wonder deue
 And dyuerse noyle also
 If thou put thyne eere to

The descripyon of Wales.

Poyse of leues and of wynde
 Poyse of metals thou shalt fynde
 Frotynge of yren & whetstones þu shalt
 Hetynge of ouens than with fyre (here
 All this may well be
 By walwes of the see
 That beeth in thare
 With suche nysle and fare
 At Penbryke in a stede
 Fendes do ofte quede
 And chroweth foule thynges inne
 And despyseth also synne
 Neyther crafte ne bedes may
 Do thens that sorowe away
 Whan it greueth soo
 To the men it bodech woo
 At Cricynar in West Wales
 Is a wonders burpales
 Euery man that cometh it to se
 Semeth it euen as moche as he
 Hole wepen there a nyght
 Shall be broken o: daye lyght
 At Remyn in north Wales
 A lytell plonde there is
 That is called Bardysay
 Monkes dwell there alway
 Men lyue so longe in that hurst
 That the oldest dyeth furst
 Men saye that Merlyn there burped is
 That hyght also Siluestris
 There were Merlyns tweyne
 And propheted beyne
 One hyght Ambrose and Merlyn
 And was gotten by a gobelyn
 In Demicia at Carmarthyn
 Under kynge Morpgeryn
 He tolde his propheye
 Euen in Snowdonpe
 At the heed of the water of Conelway
 In the syde of mount cerry
 Dynas embrys in Malleshe
 Ambrose hyll in Engylshe
 Kynge Morpger late on
 The water syde and was full of wone

Than Ambrose Merlyn propheted
 Tofoze hyll byghte cho **C**reusa.
 What wythe wolde wene
 That a fende myght gete a chyld
 Some men wolde wene
 That he may no suche werke wende
 That fende that goth a nyght
 Women full oft to gyle
 Incubus is named by nyght
 And gyleth men other whyle
 Succubus is chat wyght
 God graunte vs none suche byle
 Who that cometh in her gyle
 Wonders happe shall he myle
 With wonders debe
 Bothe men and women se
 Fendes wyll kepe
 With crafte and bynge an hepe
 So fendes wyld
 May make women bere chyld
 Yet neuer in mynde
 Was chyld of fendes kynde
 For withoute epe
 There myght no suche chyld be
 Clergy maketh mynde
 Deth seeth no fendes kynde
 But deth seeth Merlyn
 Merlyn was ergo no gobelyn
 Another Merlyn of Albyn londe
 That now is named Scotlonde
 And he had names two
 Siluestris and Calidonyus also
 Of that wode Calidony
 For there he tolde his propheye
 And hyght Siluestris as well
 For whan he was in batell
 And sawe aboue a gryfety kynde
 And fell anone out of his mynde
 And anone more abode
 But ranne anone into the wode
Creusa. Siluestris is wode
 Oher wyld of mode
 Oher elles
 That as the wode he dwelles

The description of Wales.

With grete cherches of piers to the sea
 And churches all of stremes in the sea
 Behind at one hepe
 In to a water depe
 Yet amozome that stone
 Was seen erly in Bon
 A choyle helde hym selfe full sygh
 And bounde this stone to his thygh
 His thygh was rotten or dape
 And the stone went awaye
 If men done lecherie
 Sygh that stone by
 Swote cometh of that stone
 But chyldre cometh there none
 There is a roche ryght wonderly
 The roche of herynge by countrey
 Though there erpe any man boyme
 And blowe also with an hoyme
 Royle there though thou abyde
 Thou shalt here none in this syde
 There is another ylonde
 Fast by Bon at bonde
 Hermytes there ben ryue
 If ony of them done stryue
 All the myce that may be gete
 Come and ete all they mete
 Than ceasech neuer that woo
 Tyll the stryfe cease also
 As men in this londe
 Ben angry as in Irlonde
 So sayntes of this countray
 Ben also wyrtchessull alway
 Also in this londe
 In Irlonde and in Scotlonde
 Ben belles and staves
 That in woyshepp men haues
 And ben woyshepped so then
 Of clerkes and of leude men
 That dyen also
 To liue on any of tho
 Scalle eyther bell
 As it were the gospell
 At Basyngwerke is a well
 That water hyght as men tell

Under hygge Arthur
 Openly and not so close
 As Spectyn Ambrose
 There ben hylls in Scotlande
 That ben wonderfull grete
 With hygge as grete a waye
 As a man may go a daye
 And hyght erpe in Wales
 Another hylls in Englyshe
 In these hylls there is
 Leese ynough for all bestes of Wales
 These hylls on top beres
 Two grete sphe wares
 Concynd in that one ponde
 Greuech with the wynde an ponde
 As though it dpe storme
 And nygher to the bymme
 So that herdes haue grete wonder
 And wene that y wonderment under
 In that other is perche and sphe
 Every one erpe is
 So farerth all well
 In Albania the myllwell
 In Rutlonde by Cerynwell
 There is a lytell well
 That floweth not allwaye
 As the see floweth a daye
 But somtyme it is drye
 And somtyme full by the eye
 There is in north Wales
 In Bon that hyght Anglesia
 A stone accordyng well
 As it were a mannes thygh
 How sette sure that stone
 Be boyme of any man
 On nyght it goeth home his waye
 That he foune by allaye
 Hugh the son of the Northbury
 In cyne of the first Henry
 For he wolde the wyche synne
 That stone is another hegan bynde

The descripcyon of Scotlonde.

It spryngeth so soze as men may se
 What is cast in it throweth aye
 Therof spryngeth a grete stronde
 It were ynough for all that londe
 Seke at that place
 Haue bothe hele and grace
 In the Welle ofter than ones
 Ben founde reed spercle stones
 In token of the blode reed
 That the mayde Wenefrede
 Shedde at that pyt
 Whan her throte was kyt
 He that dyd that dede
 Hath sorowe on his sede
 His chyldren at all soundes
 Barke as whelpes and houndes
 To praye to that mayde for grace
 Ryght at that Welle place
 Eyther in Shrowesburp strete
 There that mayde resteth swete.

Of the descripcyon of Scotlonde
 somtyme named Albania. Ca. xxi.

It is a comyn sawe that the countre
 whiche is now named Scotlonde
 is an outstretchynge of the north syde of
 Britayn & is departed in the south syde
 from Britayn wth armes of p^r see & on the
 other syde it is becleped wth the see. This
 londe hyght somtyme Albania & had p^r
 name of Albanact^r p^r was kynge Brites
 sone. for Albanact^r dwelled fyrst therein
 or of p^r prouynce Albania p^r is a countre of
 Scicia and nygh to Amazona. therfore
 Scottes ben called as it were Scyttes
 for they came out of Scicia. Afterward
 that londe hyght Pictavia. for p^r Pictes
 regned therein. M. CCC. lx. yere. And at
 the last hyght Hibernia as Irlande hyght
 C. Sir. in top. for many thynges / one is
 for affinite & alie p^r was bytwene them &
 Irysshmen. for they toke their wyues of
 Irlande & p^r is openly seen in their byleue
 in clothynge / in language & in speche / in

wepen / and in maners. Another thyng is
 for Irysshmen dwelled there somtyme.
 Beda li. i. Out of Irlande p^r is p^r p^r
 countre of Scottes came Irysshmen wth
 theyr duke p^r was called Renda & wth
 loue & wth strength made them chefe sees
 & citees besydes p^r Pictes in p^r north syde
 C. Sir. Now the londe is shortly called
 Scotlonde of Scottes that came out of
 Irlande & regned therein. CCC. xv. yere
 vnto reed Wyllyams tyme p^r was Mal-
 colyns broder. C. B. Many cytydes we
 haue of this Scotlonde p^r it is ofter called
 and hyght Hibernia as Irlande bothe.
 C. Therfore Beda li. ii. ca. xi. sayth that
 Laurence archebysshop of Dunbar was
 archebysshop of Scottes p^r dwelled in an
 ylonde that hyght Hibernia & is next to
 Britayn. Beda li. iii. ca. xxvii. sayth pe-
 sylence of moze yn bare doun Hibernia
 Also li. iii. ca. ii. sayth that the Scottes p^r
 dwelled in p^r south syde of Hibernia. Also
 li. iii. ca. iii. he sayth p^r Clad was a pong
 lyng & letned p^r rule of monkes in Hiber-
 nia. Also li. iii. ca. xxij. Egfridus kynge
 of Northuberlonde destroyed Hibernia.
 Also li. iii. ca. xv. the moost deir of Scot-
 tes in Hibernia & in p^r same chappere he
 called Hibernia properly named p^r West
 ylonde is an hōdyed myle from eueryche
 Britayn & departerth wth the see bytwene
 & called Hibernia p^r countre p^r now is cal-
 led Scotlōde. there he telleth p^r Iuanuā
 abbot of this ylonde sayled to Hibernia
 for to teche Irysshmen p^r lawfull Cester
 dape & at p^r last came agayne in to Scot-
 londe. C. viii. c. xli. lib. xiii. Men of this
 Scotlonde ben named Scottes in theyr
 own lāguage & Pictes also. for somtyme
 theyr bodpes were peynted i this maner
 They wold somtyme wth a sharpe edged
 tole prycke & kerue theyr own bodpes &
 make thereon dyuers figures & shapen
 & peynt them wth ynke or wth other peyn-
 ture or colour / and bycause they were so

The descripcyon of Irlonde.

peyned they were called *Picti* / that is
to say peyned. ¶ *Croesus*. Scottes
be lyght of herte / straunge and wyde
ynough / but by mychyng of Englyshe
men they ben moche amended / they ben
cruell upon theyr enemyes / & hate bon-
dage moost of any thyng / & holde for a
foule shouth yf a man dye in his bedde / &
grette worship yf he dye in þe felde. They
ben lytell of meet & may fast longe / & ete
felde whan þe sonne is up / and ete fleshe
fyllde milke & fruyte more than breed / &
though they be fayr of shappe / they ben
defouled and made vylemely ynough w
theyr owne clothyng / they prayse fast þe
blages of theyr owne forefaders / & despise
le other mennes doyng / theyr lande is
fruytfull ynough in pasture / gardyns &
feldes. ¶ *Str. de p. ca. xliij.* The pyces
of Scottes as þe kynges of Spayne ben
not wont to be anoynted ne crowned. In
this Scotlode is solapne & grette mynde
of saynt Andrew þe apostle / for saynt An-
drew had þe north parties of þe worlde /
Scottes & Pictes to his lre for to preche &
couerte þe people to Christes blysse / & at
þe last he was martyred in Achaia in Gre-
cia in a cite named *Parras* / & his bones
were kepte. ¶ *Cal. p. ere* vnto Constanti-
nus þe emperours tyme / & thā they were
translated into Constantynople / & kepte
there. ¶ *Cal. p. ere* vnto Theodosius þe em-
perours tyme / & than King *Uing* kyng of Pi-
ctes in Scotlode destroyed a grette parte
of Britayn / & was beset w a grette hoost
of Wyrons in a felde called *Warke* / & he
herde saynt Andrew speke to hym in this
maner. King *Uing* here þe me Christes
apostle. I prayse þe helpe & socour whan
thou hast ouercomen thyne enemyes by
my helpe / thou shalt gree þe thynde dele
of thy herytage in almes to almyghy
god & to þe worship of saynt Andrew. And
the signe of þe crosse went to lout his hoost
on the thyrde day he had victory / & so cur-

ned home agayn & deied his heritage as
he was bidden / & for he was uncertayne
what cite he shold dele for saynt Andrew
he fasted .iij. dayes / he & his men prayed
saynt Andrew that he wolde shewe hym
what place he shold chose. And one of þe
wardens þe kepte the body of saynt An-
drew in Constantinople was warned in
his slepe þe he shold go in to a place wher
der an aungell wolde lode hym / & so he came
in to Scotlode with .viij. felowes to the
toppe of an hyll named *Ragmont*. The
same houre lyght of heuen beshone & be-
cleped þe king of Pictes þe was comyng
w his hoost to a place called *Carceuan*.
There anone were heled many seke me.
There mette w the kyng *Regulus* the
monke of Constantynople with the rely-
kes of saynt Andrew. There is founded
a chyrche in þe worship of saynt Andrew
that is heed of all the chyrches in þe lon-
de of Pictes. To this chyrche come pyl-
gryms out of byuers lodes. There was
Regulus fyrst abbot & gadred monkes.
And so all the tenth londe that the kyng
had assygned hym / he departed it in by-
uers places amonge abbeyes.

Of þe descripcyon of Irlonde. ca. xxiij.

Ibernia that is Irlode / & was of
olde tyme incorporate in to þe lord-
ship of Britayn / so sayth *Str.* in sua pop.
Wher he descriueth it at full / yet is it
woorth & semeth to prayse that londe w
large praysyng / for to come to clere & full
knowledge of þe londe these tytles þe solow
open the waye. Therefore I shall tell of þe
place & strede of þe lond how grette & what
maner londe it is / wherof þe londe hath
plente / and wherof it hath defaute / also
what men haue dwelled therein fyrst / of
maners of men of that londe / of þe won-
ders of that londe / and of woorthynes of
holloers & sayntes of that londe.

The descripcyon of Irlonde.

Of the holdyng of Irlonde. Ca. xxiiij.

Irlonde is the last of all þ west ylon-
des & hyght Hibernia of one Hibe-
rus of Spayne þ was Hermonius bro-
der for these two bretherne gate & won
that londe by conquest. **O** it is called Hi-
bernia of þ ryuer Hiberus þ is in þ west
ende of Spayne & þ londe hyght Scot-
lode also for Scottes dwelled there som
tyme or they came in to þ other Scotlode
that longed to Bytayne / therfore it is
wryten in þ Martyloge. Suche a dape
in Scotlonde saynt Byde was boyn / &
that was in Irlonde. This lode hath in
the southerst syde Spayne thre dayes
saylunge thens a syde halfe / & hath in þ
erst syde þ more Bytayne / thens a days
saylunge / in the west syde þ endles Oc-
cean / and in the north syde þ londe thre
dayes saylunge thens. **C** Solinus. But
the see that is bytwene Bytayne & Ir-
londe is all þ yere full of grete wawes &
bneasy / that men may selde sayle sykers
ly / bytwene þ see is. C. xx. myle brode.

Of the gretenes and qualite of that
londe. Ca. xxv.

Irlonde is an ylonde gretest after
Bytayne / & stretcheth northward
fro Brendas hylles vnto þ londe Colubi-
na / & cōteyneth. viij. dayes iourney / eues-
ry iourney. xl. myle / & fro Deuelin to Pa-
trykes hylles & to þ see in þ syde in brede
liij. iourneys / & Irlonde is narrower in þ
myddle than in the endes / all other wyle
than Bytayne is / as Irlonde is shorter
northward than Bytayne / so is it longer
southward / the londe is not playne / but
full of moystaynes / of hylles / of wodes /
of marays / & of mores / the londe is softe
rayny / wyndy / & lowe by þ see syde / & w-
in hilly & sondy. **C** Solinus. There is
grete piente of noble pasture and of leese
therfore þ bestes must be ofte dyue out

of theyr pasture lest they ete ouer moche
for they sholde spende themselves þ they
myght ete at theyr wyl. **C** Solinus. Men of
that londe haue comynly theyr helth / &
strangers haue oft a peryous flure / by
cause of þ moisture of þ meet. The flesshe
of kpen is there hollom / & stownes flesshe
vnhollosom. Men of þ londe haue no feuer
but onely þ feuer ague / and that ryght
seide. Therfore the hollomnes of þ londe
& the clennes out of venym is worth all
the boost & richesse of trees / of herbes / of
spycery / of ryche clothes / & of peryous
stones of the rest londes. The cause of þ
helth & hollomnes of þ londe is þ attē-
perate hete & colde that is therein. In q-
bus reb⁹ sufficit. In this londe ben moo
kpen than oxen / more pasture than corne
more grasse than seed / there is piente of
samon / of lamprays / of eels / & of oother
see fyssh. Of egles / of cranes / of pycoks
of cutlewes / of sparowhawkes / of go-
hawkes / & of gentyll fawcons. Of w-
ues & ryght shrewed myce / there ben as
tercoppes / blode soukers / restes þ do no
harne / there ben fayres lytell of body &
ful hardy & stronge / there ben barnacles
foules lyke wyld gees / whiche growe
wonderly vpon trees / as it were nature
wrought agaynst kynde. Men of rely-
gyon ete barnacles vpon fastyng dayes
bycause they be not engendred w flesshe
wherin as me thþketh they ete / for rea-
son is agaynst þ / for yf a man had eten of
Adā's legge he had ete flesshe / & yet Adā
was not engendred of fader nor moder /
but þ flesshe cometh wonderly of þ erce.
In this lode is piente of hony & of mylke
of vine & of vynerdes. **C** Solinus. & yf
wyte þ Irlode hath no bees. Aeuerebe-
lesse it were better wryten þ Irlode had
bees & no vynerdes. **C** Beda sayth þ
there is grete hūtyng to roobuckes / & it
is knowen þ there be none. It is no won-
der of Beda / for he neuer sawe þ londe /

The description of Trionde.

And some men tolde of suche tales. Also
there groweth that stone Sparagon / &
is called Iris also / as it were the rayne
beles / yf that stone be holden agaynst þ
sone / anone it shall shewe a raynbowe.
There is also founden a stone þ is called
Sagathes / & whyte margery perles.

Of the defaute of the londe. Ca. xxv.

In hete comes ben there full small
brimeth cleined in mānes hande
referred me / all beestes be smaller there
than in other lōdes. There lacketh well
nygh al maner freshe water fyllbe þ is
not gendred in the see. There lacketh vn
kynde faucons / gerfaucons / perryche /
felauf / nyghtryngales and pyes. There
lacketh also Roo & Bucke / & Alepyles /
Montes / and other benymous beestes.
Therefore some men sayne & that fauou-
rably þ saynt Patryck cleined þ londe of
woymes & of benymous beestes. But it
is more probable & skylfull þ this londe
was from þ begynnyng alwaye wout
suche woymes / for benymous beestes &
woymes dye there anone yf men bynge
them thyder out of other lōdes. Also be-
nym and popson brought thyder out of
other lōdes / lese they malyce as soone
as it passeth the myddle of the see. Also
poum & erth of that londe call & solwen
in other lōdes dyspue away woymes / so
ferdour that yf a curse of þ londe be put
about a woyme it sleeth hym or maketh
hym thyrll that erth for to escape away.
In that londe cockes crowe but lytell to-
loue daye / so that the fyrst crowyng of
cockes in that londe & the thirde in other
lōdes ben lyke sette tofore the daye.

Of them that fyrst inhabytet Trionde. Ca. xxvj.

Oratio sayth that Casera Does
were dyd the stone & slode w the

men & fyrr women into that plonde / &
dwelled therein fyrr the last yere tofore
Does slode. But afterwarde Barthola-
mus shewes sone that came of Iaphet
Does sone came thider w his thre sones
by happe or by crafte. CCC. yere after
Does slode / & dwelled there & encreaced
to þ nombre of. ix. ap. men / & afterwarde
for stenge of careyng of gyastres þ they
had sayne / they dyed all saue one Rua-
nus that lyued. ap. b. C. yere vnto saynt
Patrykes tyme / & enformed þ holy man
of the foresayd men / & of all the boynges
and dedes. Than the thyrde tyme came
thyder Aimeth out of Scicia w his. iiii.
sones / and dwelled there. CC. xvi. yere.
And at þ last of his offsprynge by dyuers
myshappes of warre & of moeyne they
were cleue destroyed and the londe leste
boyde. CC. yere after. The fourth tyme
b. dukes that were brytherne Gandius
Genandus / Sagadus / Rutheragus &
Blautus / of the sayd Aimethes succes-
sours came out of Scicia & occupied that
lōde & deled it in. b. partyes / & euery par-
tye cōteyneth. xxij. candiedes. A candiede
is a coustree þ conteyneth an. C. townes /
& they set a stone in the myddle of þ lond
as it were in the nauell and begynnyng
of. b. kyngdomes. At the last Blautus
was made kyng of all þ lond. The fyfth
tyme wohan this nacyon was. xxx. yere
to gyder they wered feble. foure noble
men that were Spilestus þ hys ges sones
came out of Spayne w many other in a
nauy of. xl. shyppes / &. ii. of þ moysthest
of these. iiii. brytherne þ hyght Hyber⁹ &
Hermon deled þ lōde bytweene them two
But afterwarde couenante was made by
twene them boche & Hyber⁹ was sayne
Than Hermon was kyng of all þ londe.
And from his tyme to þ fyrst Patrykes
tyme were kynges of þ nacyon. C. xxxi.
And so fro þ compage of Hybernensis vnto
þ fyrst Patryk were. ap. viij. C. yere.

The description of Irlonde.

They had that name Hibernensis & Hibernia of þe foiesayd Hiberus / or els of Hiberus a ruet of Spayne. They were called also Gacels & Scottes of one Gacelus þe was Phenis neuewe. This Gacelus coude speke many languages after the languages that were made at Semproths Toure / and wedded one Scotta Pharoes daughter. Of these dukes came þe Hibernensis. When laye þe this Gacelus made þe Iryshe language / & called it Gacelal / as it were a language gathered of all languages & tongues. At the last Belinus kyng of Britayn had a sone and hyght Gurgucius that came out of Denmarke / at the ylonde's Dyades he founde men that were called Basciensis / and were comen thyder out of Spayne / these men prayed & besought to haue a place to dwell in. And þe kyng sent them to Irlonde that was the boyde & waste & ordeyned & sent to them dukes & capytayns of his own. And so it semeth þe Irlonde shold longe to Britayne by ryght of olde tyme. From þe fyrst saynt Patryk into Fedliundius þe kynges tyme. cccc. yere regned. xxxij. kynges eueryche after other in Irlonde. In this fedliundius tyme Turgesius duke and capytayne of Nozway brought thyder men of Nozway & occupied þe lond / & made in many places depe dyches and castels / sengle / double & treble / & many wardes strongly walled / & many of them stande yet all hole / but the Iryshmen retche not of castels / for they take woodes for castels / & marays & mores for castell dyches. But at þe last Turgesius dyed by gylefulness of women. And Englyshmen saye that Gurmudus wan Irlonde & made those dyches / & made no mencyon of Turgesius. And Iryshmen speke of Turgesius & knowe not of Gurmudus. Therefore it is to wyte that Gurmudus had wonne Britayn & dwelled therein / & sent Turge-

sius with grete strengthe into Irlonde for to wyne þe lond / & because Turgesius was capytayne & leder of þe biage & iourney and seen amonge them / therefore Iryshmen speke moche of hy as a noble man þe was seen in þe lond & known. At the last whā Gurmudus was sayne in France Turgesius loued þe kynges daughter of Irlonde / & her fader behyght Turgesius þe he wolde sende her hy to þe latherin with. x. maydens / & Turgesius promised to mete there w. x. of þe noblest men þe he had / & held couenaunt & thought no gyle / but there came. x. yonge berdeles men clothed lyke women with shorte swerdes vnder theyr clothes / and fell on Turgesius & slewe hym ryght there / & so he was traytoursly sayne after he had regned. xxx. yere. Not longe after this bretherne / Amclanus / Stracus & Juonius came in to Irlonde with theyr men out of Nozway as it had ben for loue of peas & of marchaundyse / & dwelled by þe see syde by assent of Iryshmen þe were alwaye ydle as Haules knyghtes / and the Nozways buylded thre citres / Deuelin / Waterford & Lymerych / & encreased & after they rebelled agaynst men of that lond & brought fyrst sparthes in to Irlonde. So fro Turgesius tyme into Rodericks tyme kyng of Connacia þe was the last þe was kyng of all þe lond were. xviij. kynges in Irlonde / & so þe kynges þe regned in Irlonde fro the Hermous tyme into the last Rodericks tyme were in all. C. lxxi. kynges that were not crowned neyther enoynted / ne by lawe of heritag / but by myght / maistry and strength of armes. The stonde Henry kyng of Englonde made this Roderick subgett the yere of kynges Henryes age. xl. and of his regne xviij. the yere of our lord. xi. C. lxxi.

Of the condycions and maners
of Irlonde.

Ca. xxviij.

D i

The description of Irlonde.

Sithins sayth þ men of this lande
ben straunge of nacyon / housles
and grette fighters / and account ryght a
wyngge all one thyng / a ben syngle of
clothyng / scarce of meat / cruel of herte /
angry of speche / a dymketh fyrst blode of
best men that ben dayne / a than washe
theyr vilages thurwith / and holde them
payed with fleshe and fruyte in stede of
meat / a with myke in stede of drynke / a
bse moche playenge a ydlenes and hum-
spunge / and trauayle but lytell. In theyr
chyldehode they ben harde nourysed a
harde fedde / a they ben vylemely of man-
ners a of clothyng / a haue breche a ho-
sen alone of wolles / a straye hodes that
stretcheth a cubyte ouer the sholders be-
hynde / and soldyges in stede of mantels
a of clokes. Also theyr bse no labels / boo-
tes ne spurres whan they ryde / but they
dryue theyr hores w a chambred yerde
in the ouer ende. In stede of byttes with
trenches and of byrdels of rest / theyr bse
byrdels that lette not theyr hores to ete
theyr meet / theyr fyght vnarmed naked
in body / neuertheles with two darters a
spetes / and with brode sparthes they
fyght w one hande. These men forsake
cyllyng of londe / and kepe pasture for
beestes. Theyr bse longe berdes a longe
lockes hangyng downe behynde theyr
hedes / theyr bse no crafte of steele / of wolle
of metall / nor of marthaufse / but gyue
them to ydlenes a to slouth / a reken rest
for lyhyng / and for fredome for rycheesse.
And though Scotlande the doughter of
Irlonde bse harpe / tymbre / and tabour.
Neuertheles Iryshe men be connyng
in two maner instrumentes of musyke /
in harpe and tymbre þ is armed w wyre
and strenges of brasse / on whiche instru-
mentes though they playe hastily and
dowly they make ryght mery armony
a melody with chyche tunes / werbles
and songs / and begyn from bernoll / and

playe secretly under byme solone on the
grette strenges / and turne agayne into
the same / so that the grette party of the
crafter hyderth the crafter as it wolde seme
as though the crafter so hydde sholde be
ashamed yf it were take. These men ben
of euyl maners in theyr lyuynge / they
paye no rythynges / they wedde lawf-
ly / they spare not theyr alpes / but þ bro-
der weddeth the broders wyfe / they ben
bely to betraye theyr neyghbours / and
other they bere sparthes in theyr hādes
in stede of staves / a fyght agaynst them
that trust moost to them / these men ben
barbare a busedfast / trechours a gyles
full / who that delceth with them nedeth
moze to beware of gyle than of crafter / of
peas than of braynyng bondes / of hony
than of gall / of malysse than of knyght-
hode / they haue suche maners þ they be
not strōge in warre a in batayle / ne true
in peas / they become gollepes to them þ
theyr wyll falsly betraye in þ golleprede a
holy kynrede / eueryche dymketh others
blode whan it is shedde / they loue som-
dele theyr nourysse and theyr playfres
whiche that souke þ same mylke þ they
souked whā they were chyliden / a they
pursue theyr bretherne / theyr cosyns / a
theyr other kynne / a despise theyr kynne
whyles they lyue / a auenge theyr deth
whan they ben dayne. So longe hath þ
vylage of euyl custome endured amonge
them / that it hath gotten þ mapstry ouer
them / a turneth treason in to kynde / so
ferforth þ they ben traytours by nature.
And alpens and men of straunge londes þ
dwel amōge them solowynge theyr ma-
ners that knoweth there is none but he is
belmetted w theyr treason also. Amonge
them many men pylle lyttynge / and
women standynge. There ben many
men in that londe soule shapen in lym-
mes a in body / for in theyr lymmes they
lacke the bryefte of kynde. So that no

The Betrayal of Friends.

[illegible]

Of the mercuries and wonders
of Irlonde. Ca. xviii.

¶ Any man tell that in þe north ponde
of Trionbe is þe ponde of life. In
that ponde no man may dye but when
they be olde & breved louth geete liuemes
they be boyme out in to the next ponde &
there dye. ¶ There is an other ponde in
Trionbe þe no woman therein may bre a
childe but yet she may corrup. ¶ And
there is an ponde in which no yere be-
by may laste. In Cilhoua þe is Cilhoua
is an ponde that a lady woumship departed
withouyn. In þe one ponde is ouer dailie

bewene goddardship of sinners / in that
 other party grete lykynge & comfort of
 holy aungels. There is also sayne pho-
 typhes purgatory / that thus shewes as
 his power to conferme his preaching &
 howe sohan he preached to myghty men that
 muste by cheppen & by workes / & of hope
 of byllie that good men shall receyue for
 cheppen holy dedes. He telleth that whoso
 suffereth & paynes of purgatory (yf he
 enioyned hym for penance) he shal neuer
 suffer the paynes of hell / but he dye sy-
 nfully without repentance of synne as for
 sample is for synne ful at the ende of this
 chappere. ¶ **Creusa.** But truly no man
 may be saved but yf he be very repentant
 what somer penance he do / & every
 man that is very repentant at his lyues
 ende shal be sekely saved though he ne-
 uer here of sayne photyphes purgatory.
 There is an yllonde in Conuicia Isle /
 is in þe see of Conuicia beloued by lady
 Brandon. þe hartyng wiper therin ned to
 dyen ben not buryed but be kepte out of
 the erth & ever not. In Samaria is a
 well. whoso þe wasteth hym in the wa-
 ter of þe well / he shal weye hope on his
 hert. There is an ocher well in Cilconia
 whoso somer is wasten therein he shal
 neuer weye hope afterwarde. There is
 a well in Spodire or Spanonia. yf any
 man touche þe well / none shal fall grete
 rayne in all that yowrneye / & that rayne
 shal neuer cease tyl a pitei þe is a cleue
 mayden syngi a masse in a chapel that
 is full by & byllie þe water / & with mythe
 of a colue that is of our yere besprunge þe
 well / and so reconcile the well in this
 strange manner. At Syndalcan aboute
 the citty of Syne they wye wyches
 be supplied as it were apple trees / and
 ben more holowen than saury. That ho-
 ly Syne haughe such their apples by
 pynnes for to hylde his childe þe was the

[illegible][illegible]

The description of Irlonde.

In byng Irlonde tyme byng of Eng-
lond a myghty þyght Owayne com
into Irlonde þer was purgatory & same
agayn & thence came after buryng his
lyfe in the wyke of the abbey of Aiden-
lis that is of þe pope of Cytrau & thide
many thunders that he had seen in þe
erthys purgatory. That place is called
Þerthys purgatory and the church is
named Begis. No man is enownd for
to go into that purgatory but consyler
that he thowe not come therin but take
vpon hym other penance. And yf a man
have sowed & be stable and wyl nedes
go therin he shall syt & go to the byshop
and thyn he shall be sene with letters to
the pypour of þe place & they bothe shall
consyle hym to leue. And yf he wyl ne-
des go therto he shall be in prayers & in
fastyng. x. dayes and after. x. dayes
he shall be housled & lade to the doye of
the purgatory with procession & letany
and yet he shall be consylered to leue it &
yf he be fadfast and wyl leue the doye
shall be opened & he bylled & go in god-
des name & bode forth his waye and
the doye shall be fast thence tyll the nexte
daye and whan the eynt is the pypour
shall come and open the doye and yf the
man be comen he leueth hym in to þe chur-
che with procession and there he shall be
x. dayes in prayers and fastyng.

Of the manerlyes of sayntes of Irlonde. Ca. xxix.

Here Stral' maketh mynde that
as men of this nacyon ben more
angry than other men & more hasty for
to take wyche they be almyr
so sayntes & halowes of this londe ben
more wychefull than sayntes of other
londes. Clerkes of this londe ben chaste
and saye many prayers & done grete ab-
synence & daye & nyght al wyche so is

acrosses for a myracle & they repect
not there as wyche regneth and ben the
sen out of abbeyes in to the clerge & some
as monkes sholde. But they þe ben cury
of them ben wofle of all other. No good
men amonge them though they ben but
frye ben good at þe best. Prelates of that
countre ben full dwyn in correction of
trespace and besy in contemplacyon and
not in prytyng of goddes wyche. Ther
fore it is that all þe sayntes of that londe
ben chelours and no martyrs amonge
them & no wonder for al the prelates of
this londe clerkes and prelates sholde do
is to them benknown. Therfore whan
was put agaynst the byshop of Cassil
how it myght be that so many sayntes
ben in Irlonde & neuer a martyr amonge
them all sythen þe men be so froward
and so angry & the prelates so recheles
and slowe in correction of trespass. The
byshop answered frowardly ynough &
sayd. Our men ben froward and angry
ynough to themselfe but to goddes ser-
uantes they ley neuer hade but to them
grete reuerence & worship but enghylly
men come in to this londe that can make
martyrs & were wote to be that crafte
¶ The byshop sayd so because þe byng
Henry the seconde was thowme comen
in to Irlonde first help after the martyr
dome of saynt Thomas of Canturbury.
¶ Sir. In this londe in Wales & in Irlonde
ben belles and staves with croked
hedes & other suche thynges for retyches
in grete reuerence & worship. so þe men of
this londe darde more for to stode vpon
one of those belles & golden staves than
vpon the gospels. The cheif of all suche
retyches is holden Iesus staffe that is at
Dundryn with þe whiche staffe they say
that þe bynt saynt þerthys drowe þe wof-
mes out of Irlond. ¶ Aug. de ci. dei. ca.
viij. yf men are how it may be þe bynt
maner of derles & of byntes bynde that

